

CHRISTIAN DOCTRINES

FOURTH EDITION

2026

Jeffrey F. Addicott

*Imprimatur
Press*

CHRISTIAN DOCTRINES

Fourth Edition

2026

Christian Doctrine Ministries

Dr. Jeffrey F. Addicott, B.A., J.D., LL.M.(2), S.J.D.,
Lieutenant Colonel (U.S. Army, Ret.)
&
Professor of Law

The Christian (Bible) Doctrines set out in this study guide are designed to accompany the Bible classes taught by Dr. Jeffrey F. Addicott, and are compiled from the author's personal notes, taken from Bible lessons taught by R. B. Thieme, Jr., Pastor of Berachah Church, Houston, Texas (1950-2003), as well as the author's own studies. Certain theological terms, vocabulary, and graphics are used with permission from R. B. Thieme, Jr., Bible Ministries. All rights reserved.

“For what does the Scripture say?”

ROMANS 4:3

ImPrimatur **Press**

8111 LBJ Freeway
Suite 1325
Dallas, Texas 75251

Telephone: (800) 811-6725
Facsimile: (214) 879-9939

E-mail: Books@ImprimaturPress.com
www.ImprimaturPress.com

Copyright © 2026
by
Dr. Jeffrey F. Addicott

Printed in the United States of America

ISBN 978-1-60503-178-1

— ABOUT THE MINISTRY —

Established in 2009, Christian Doctrine Ministries is a non-denominational grace church composed of Believers in the LORD Jesus Christ and is open to any serious student interested in learning the categorical Bible Doctrines of Christianity – “*the mind of Christ*” [1 Cor. 2:14-16]. Bible classes are taught by Dr. Jeffrey F. Addicott, Lieutenant Colonel (U.S. Army, Ret.), Professor of Law, B.A., J.D., LL.M.(2), S.J.D. Apart from his own studying and teaching, Addicott has over 30 years of academic doctrinal training under the ministry of Pastor/Teacher, R. B. Thieme, Jr.

— STRUCTURE OF MATERIALS —

The Doctrines herein are categorical in nature, set out and arranged by individual topics, e.g., @@@ SALVATION. In turn, many of the Christian Doctrines link together, requiring a constructivist approach in cross referencing one or more. Unless otherwise indicated, the New American Standard Version of the Bible is used throughout. Selected Greek and Hebrew words are color coded in “purple,” along with their definitions which are taken primarily from *Thayer’s Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament: Coded with Strong’s Concordance, and Brown-Driver-Briggs’* and *The Interlinear Bible: Hebrew Greek English, Jay P. Green, Sr. Translator*. In addition, the author has added commentary to certain words and passages as indicated in “orange.” Finally, selected Biblical verses cited within individual Doctrines are not exhaustive.

— FINANCIAL POLICY —

Christian Doctrine Ministries is a grace ministry and operates entirely on voluntary contributions [2 Cor. 9:7-8]. There is no financial charge for any materials, to include this book which is available upon request (as well as the hyper-linked electronic format of *Christian Doctrines*).

Previously recorded Bible lessons taught by Dr. Addicott can be downloaded at ChristianDoctrineMinistries.com. Professor Addicott can be contacted at (210) 887-0429 or jaddicott@stmarytx.edu; ChristianDoctrineMinistries@gmail.com.

— DEDICATION —

The author acknowledges with great appreciation all those who assisted in editing, reviewing, and organizing these materials.

This book is dedicated to all positive [+P] volition **Winner** Believers who have faithfully performed their duty before the LORD by advancing in their spiritual life to spiritual maturity and “holding the high ground” as commanded.

JOHN 11:25-26

Jesus said to her, “I am the resurrection [*anastasis* – those who believe in Him will receive an eternal resurrection body] and the life; he who believes in Me will live even if he dies, and everyone who lives and believes in Me will never die. Do you believe this?”

JEREMIAH 9:23-24

Thus says the LORD, “Let not a wise man boast of his wisdom, and let not the mighty man boast of his might, let not a rich man boast of his riches; but let him who boasts boast of this, that he understands and knows [*yada* (to learn to know)] Me [God as revealed in the Bible will propel the adolescent Believer to spiritual maturity], that I am the LORD who exercises lovingkindness [*chesed* (mercy) – grace in action], justice and righteousness [the two attributes of His Holiness as revealed in the Trinity] on earth; for I delight in these things [because God is only impressed with Divine Good, the Believer who produces Divine Good by reaching spiritual maturity glorifies God],” declares the LORD.

2 PETER 3:18

But grow [*auxano* (to cause to grow) – the positive [+P] volition Believer must reach spiritual maturity] in the grace and knowledge [*gnosis* (the deeper more perfect and enlarged knowledge) – understanding the full realm of Bible Doctrine] of our LORD and Savior Jesus Christ. To Him *be* the glory, both now and to the day of eternity. Amen.

— DOCTRINAL STATEMENT —

- We believe in the absolute verbal and plenary inspiration of the @@@ **BIBLE**, the mind of Christ and the Word of God, by the ministry of God the @@@ **HOLY SPIRIT** – Heb. 4:12; 2 Tim. 3:16; 2 Pet. 1:20-21; Jn. 6:63.
- We believe in God’s absolute Perfect character of Holiness consisting of His Righteousness [**+R**] and Justice and in the co-equality of the three members of the God-head, God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit, as set out in the @@@ **TRINITY** – Rev. 1:4-6; 2 Cor. 13:14; Matt. 28:19.
- We believe in the @@@ **OLD SIN NATURE** which resides in all humans and the total depravity of man who is born into the status of spiritual @@@ **DEATH**, an enemy of God, and under His wrath and curse – Rom. 5:12; Matt. 25:41.
- We believe in the primacy of human free will, but that God’s Directive Will in the @@@ **PLAN OF GOD** is for all humans to receive @@@ **SALVATION** and spend all eternity with Him in @@@ **HEAVEN** and for all subsequent Believers to reach spiritual @@@ **MATURITY** in their lifetime – 1 Tim. 2:3-4.
- We believe in @@@ **SALVATION** by @@@ **GRACE** and that no one can achieve relationship with Perfect God by means of any system of merit, @@@ **RELIGION**, morality, ritual, or works of human good – Eph. 2:8-9; Rom. 11:6.
- We believe in the efficacious work of the LORD Jesus Christ, the God/man in @@@ **HYPOSTATIC UNION**, who suffered the unique substitutionary spiritual @@@ **DEATH** on the @@@ **CROSS** for the @@@ **SIN** of all mankind – past, present, and future – thereby satisfying the Perfect Righteousness and Justice of God under @@@ **SOTERIOLOGY** and providing @@@ **SALVATION** to all those humans on positive [**+P**] volition who believe in Him by means of a single non-meritorious act of @@@ **FAITH** alone in Christ alone, such exhale of faith made efficacious for salvation solely by the work of God the @@@ **HOLY SPIRIT** – Jn. 3:16, 18, 36; Acts 4:12; Eph. 2:8-9; 1 Tim. 4:10.
- We believe in the bodily @@@ **RESURRECTION** of Jesus Christ from the grave, His ascension and @@@ **FOOTSTOOL** session at the right hand of God the Father, His future @@@ **RAPTURE** of the Church, His 2nd Advent to the earth, His Millennium reign, and the creation of a new @@@ **HEAVEN** and new earth – 1 Cor. 15:20; Lk. 20:42-43; Acts 1:11; 2 Cor. 3:7; 2 Pet. 3:7-13.

- We believe in the @@@ **ETERNAL SECURITY** of the Believer, now and in eternity, and the Great White Throne @@@ **JUDGMENT** for the unBeliever who will be judged and separated into the lake of fire along with all unsaved angels – Jn. 14:2; Rev. 20:11-15; Ps. 1:5; Matt. 10:28; 25:41.
 - We believe in the @@@ **REBOUND** technique as the @@@ **GRACE** means for the Believer to gain Fellowship/Filling and temporal spirituality with God the @@@ **HOLY SPIRIT** – 1 Jn. 1:9; 1 Cor. 11:30-31; Ps. 32:5.
 - We believe in @@@ **DISPENSATIONS** as established by God for human history and in the @@@ **MYSTERY** doctrines of the Church Age where all Believers are in @@@ **UNION WITH CHRIST** and Royal Ambassadors to the @@@ **WORLD** in @@@ **WITNESSING**, who respect the @@@ **PRIVACY** and @@@ **FREEDOM** of all fellow humans while serving as Royal Priests who represent themselves before God – 1 Pet. 2:9; 2 Cor. 5:20.
 - We believe in the ongoing @@@ **ANGELIC CONFLICT** and Satan's rulership of the @@@ **WORLD**, all under the fact that God controls @@@ **HISTORY** but allows human volition to operate and @@@ **SUFFERING** to occur in the context of the @@@ **PLAN OF GOD** – Eph. 6:12; 1 Cor. 10:13.
 - We believe that the @@@ **CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE** requires the Church Age Believer to glorify God in the @@@ **ANGELIC CONFLICT** by advancing to spiritual @@@ **MATURITY** and receiving @@@ **REWARDS** in time and also eternal @@@ **REWARDS** at the Judgment Seat of Christ, by means of learning and applying @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**, the mind of LORD Jesus Christ, such knowledge acquired through the faithful teaching of a prepared @@@ **PASTOR/TEACHER** – 2 Pet. 3:18; 1 Cor. 2:16; 3:10-15; 5:12; 1 Tim. 4:16.
-

— TABLE OF CONTENTS —

INTRODUCTION	13
ADULTERY/FORNICATION.....	17
ANGELS.....	20
ANGELIC CONFLICT	30
APOSTLES	45
AUTHORITY.....	49
BAPTISM.....	54
BIBLE.....	60
BIBLE DOCTRINE.....	71
BLOOD OF CHRIST	83
CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.....	88
CHRISTOPHANY	106
CIRCUMCISION	109
CORNERSTONE.....	113
COSMIC SYSTEMS	117
COVENANTS	124
CROSS.....	127
CUP.....	140
DEATH.....	144
DEMONISM	156
DISPENSATIONS	165
DIVINE DYNASPHERE.....	178
DIVINE GUIDANCE	179
DIVINE INSTITUTIONS	186
DIVORCE	194
DRINKING & EATING.....	198
EDIFICATION COMPLEX OF THE SOUL	203
EMOTION	207
ENEMY	209

ETERNAL SECURITY	211
FAITH	222
FEAR	230
FOOTSTOOL	236
FORTY THINGS AT SALVATION	240
FREEDOM	247
GIFTS	250
GIVING	254
GOOD	259
GRACE	275
HAPPINESS	283
HEATHENISM	288
HEAVEN	296
HELL	302
HISTORY	310
HOLY SPIRIT	314
HYPOSTATIC UNION/CHRIST	326
INDWELLING OF CHRIST	342
JEALOUSY	346
JUDGMENT	349
LEAVEN	355
LIFE	357
LOVE	364
MANNA	374
MARRIAGE	376
MATURITY	386
MEMORY	394
METAMORPHOSE	398
MIRACLES	401
MONEY	409
MOSAIC LAW & JEWISH HOLY DAYS	414

MYSTERY	422
NEW SPECIES	430
OLD SIN NATURE	432
OPEN DOOR	441
OPERATION Z	444
OVERVIEW	451
PASTOR/TEACHER	452
PIVOT & CLIENT NATION	466
PLAN OF GOD & DIVINE DECREES	473
POVERTY	485
PRAYER	487
PRIVACY & JUDGING	495
PROBLEMS	500
PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES	504
RAPTURE & SECOND ADVENT	514
REBOUND	522
RELIGION	536
REPENT	544
RESURRECTION	547
REVERSIONISM	558
REVOLUTION	567
REWARDS	568
RUNNING	582
SABBATH	584
SALT	587
SALVATION	589
SEPARATION	605
SIN	609
SIN UNTO DEATH	617
SLEEP	623
SOTERIOLOGY	626

SOUL & SPIRIT	639
SUFFERING	656
THANKSGIVING	671
THEOPHANY	674
TIME	678
TRINITY	687
UNION WITH CHRIST	713
UNLIMITED ATONEMENT	716
WALKING	721
WAR	728
WATER	733
WEeping	736
WITNESSING	739
WORDS	744
WORLD	747

— INTRODUCTION —

“*What is truth?*”¹

God does not “*hide the ball*,” and yet, in the brief sojourn of mankind seven major religions have set out in writing their beliefs about the plan, purpose, and will of “God.” Specifically, these works are Hinduism’s *Mahabharata*, Judaism’s *Tanakh*, Confucianism’s *Analects*, Taoism’s *Tao Te Ching*, Buddhism’s *Dhammapada*, Islam’s *Koran*, and Christianity’s *New Testament*.

Religious books are not for the study of life sciences or history, but rather writings that claim to reveal the truth about God and His plan and purpose for mankind. In this regard, Hindus, Muslims, Confucians, Taoists, Buddhists, Christians, and Jews, each claim that their book best reveals God(s) and offers the correct answer to the meaning of life. Such being the case one can hardly help but to pose the ultimate question: Which religion, if any, is correct? In other words: *What is the truth?*

Surprisingly, the predominant factor one encounters in studying the matter of truth revolves around the astonishing amount of apathy that exists—most people simply have no desire to challenge themselves to even frame the question. Content to incorporate as their own whatever religious system they were born into—no matter how illogical or ill-conceived—independent thinking has little, if anything, to do with how the mass of humanity comes to personalize a belief about God. For instance, you are a Hindu for no other reason except that your parents are Hindus.

Nevertheless, in each generation there are those who find this follow-the-leader approach wholly unsatisfactory. These are the *truth-seekers*—men and women who base their personal beliefs about God not on the happenstance of their cultural birthright or other social factors, but on a foundation of intrinsic truth and objective reality. Indeed, there is absolutely no subject more important to which the human mind can address itself. Furthermore, unlike the Roman governor Pontius Pilate who disingenuously asked Jesus of Nazareth, “*What is truth?*” and then refused to intellectually consider the answer, the *truth-seeker* embraces honest scrutiny and is not discouraged by the fact that various world religions compete for validity.

¹ John 18:38. “*Pilate said to Him, “What is truth?” And when he had said this, he went out again to the Jews, and said to them, “I find no guilt in Him.”*” Pontius Pilate was the Roman Procurator of Judea, A.D. 26-36. He personally found Jesus of Nazareth not guilty of any crime against Rome, and yet ordered Jesus to be executed.

So, what can be said about the origin of religious ideas? As long as humans have looked out into the night sky, it is axiomatic that truth-seekers have given a great deal of thought about what constitutes the true nature of their Creator. However, because no amount of human intellect or reason can do more than acknowledge the existence of God, by necessity His person and plan must be revealed directly by God to the truth-seeker. Accordingly, if one accepts the premise that God exists, it is entirely reasonable to assume two essential follow-on points. First, God makes sense, He does not obscure the truth. Second, in a fashion compatible with the language and culture of a particular historical time frame, God purposefully reveals Himself to those individuals who desire to know Him—the *truth-seekers*—anyone exercising positive [+P] volition in their soul towards God.

Unfortunately, from a historical perspective, much of this God-directed activity to the truth-seeker is difficult to chronicle as the vast majority of human experience vis-à-vis the true God is based on oral traditions, leaving few traces of record. We can only say with certainty that archeological discoveries associated with some of the earliest human living sites demonstrate a belief in an afterlife—evidence of animal sacrifices, burial goods, and the like. However, the specific beliefs various people held about God is unknowable. When they sacrificed an animal, for example, what meaning did they attach to the ritual? Therefore, meaningful information about God’s revelations can only be found in the historic period, when people developed writing and recorded things, an era that did not begin until a mere 5,000 years ago in the Tigris-Euphrates River Valley.

As stated, seven major religions have produced written records to stand for consideration about the person and plan of God. While these religions may share basic themes in form and function, in the context of the ultimate concern—how to obtain an eternal relationship with God in the afterlife—all religions fall into one of two fixed and diametrically opposed categories which can be labeled as either “*works-religion*” or “*grace-religion*.”

Before describing the two opposing sides—*works* or *grace*—it is efficacious to list what all religions share as commonalities. While anyone who has taken the time to engage in the study of comparative religion knows, it is nearly impossible to catalog all the many sub-groupings that reside in each of them. There are, however, certain bright-line generalities that emerge in comparing the mainstream tenants. Thus, apart from all the things that can be said about Hinduism, Buddhism, Confucianism, Taoism, Islam, Judaism, or Christianity, when one boils each of them down to their bottom lines, to their core beliefs, four central themes are shared:

1. All major religions agree that the basic nature of man either is or becomes tainted with “sin,” rendering mankind morally flawed and unacceptable to the superior essence/being of God(s).
2. All major religions embrace the same moral laws for how one should behave. Thus, all religions prohibit such wrongs as murder, larceny, lying, brawling, and hatred while encouraging love, self-discipline, charity, and helping the less fortunate.
3. All major religions have a system of overt rituals specifically designed to assist the adherent with understanding and learning the tenants of the belief system.
4. All major religions hold that the primary goal of the belief system is for the human soul to obtain an eternal union with God(s) in the afterlife [Heaven], and to avoid an afterlife that is separated from God [Hell].

The real issue that sharply and forever divides the various religions rests in point #4, the mechanics of how one fulfills the goal of obtaining a union with God in time and in the forever afterlife. This is called “*salvation*” [Acts 4:12], the delivering of the adherent from the realm of mortal life on earth to an eternal union with God in Heaven—the Kingdom of Heaven. As previously stated, in this regard there are two, and only two, diametrically opposed answers for how this is achieved: (1) by a system of human morality and deeds to gain the approbation of God, called *human works*; or (2) through a system of God’s solo action to provide salvation, called *grace*. Note: religious beliefs that advocate a mixture of human work with Divine work as a means of salvation still fall under the first classification of human works.

In short, those religions that teach that the method by which man achieves eternal union with God is via human morality, rituals, and good works are properly termed *works-religion*. Because all the major religions of the world, except Biblical Christianity, ignore or distort the premise that God is Perfect, they seamlessly slip into the extraordinarily large “*works*” camp, simultaneously ignoring the absolute fact that Perfect and Holy God cannot “waive” sin. Instead, Christianity rests solely on the person and work of the God/man Jesus of Nazareth, the Messiah/Christ, who alone by His independent work on the cross canceled out all human sin in order to provide a free and equal opportunity for every human that ever lived to have eternal union with his Creator, Perfect God.

In summary, Biblical Christianity [*Tanakh* and *New Testament*] holds that an irrevocable relationship with God is automatically achieved when anyone personally *accepts* by a simple act of belief the work of the LORD Jesus Christ who, by His substitutionary Spiritual Death on a Roman cross circa A.D. 30, suffered God's righteous and just penalty for *all* human sins—past, present, and future—thereby breaking down the barrier between Perfect God and imperfect man and providing equal opportunity for all humans to be reconciled to their Creator simply by a single non-meritorious act of faith. In other words, with human sin now forever removed as a barrier between Perfect God and imperfect man, at the moment of faith alone in Christ alone Perfect God imputes His own Perfect Righteousness [**+R**] to the now born-again Believer, instantaneously and irrevocably taking him from spiritual death and putting him into the family of God with a forever eternal life in Heaven.

2 CORINTHIANS 5:21

He [**God the Father**] made Him [**Jesus Christ**] who knew no sin [*hamartia – Jesus never committed a sin and had no Old Sin*] *to be* sin [**He took the judgment for all sin while on the Roman cross**] on our behalf [*hyper (as a substitute for)*], so that we might become the righteousness [*dikaiosune – God's Perfect Righteousness* **+R**] is imputed to the Believer at the point of salvation making him acceptable to the Perfect Trinity] of God in Him.

As previously delineated, the materials set out in this book are designed to assist the serious Believer who desires to reach “**maturity**” [Heb. 6:1] by means of acquiring the basic and then advanced “**knowledge of our LORD and Savior Jesus Christ**” [2 Pet. 3:18]. While one decision in a moment of time from a *truth-seeker* to believe in the Messiah/Christ Jesus results in eternal salvation—“**Everyone who is of the truth hears My voice**” [Jn. 18:37]—it takes thousands of disciplined decisions on a consistent basis over time for a Believer to “**grow in grace**” [2 Pet. 3:18] and reach spiritual maturity, by learning and applying accurate Bible teaching.

1 PETER 2:2

Like newborn babies, long for the pure milk of the word [*logikos (spoken word) – Bible Doctrine*], so that by it you may grow in respect to [**learning about**] salvation [*soteria (to deliver) – to deliver the positive* **+P**] volition Believer from the state of a baby Believer to the state of adulthood at spiritual maturity].

@@@ ADULTERY/FORNICATION

- (1) **Definition.** Adultery/Fornication [A/F] refers to one who engages in sexual relations with a member of the opposite sex outside of marriage. It is a sin.
- (2) **An Overt Sin.** The Bible prohibits both adultery and fornication. “*You know the commandments, ‘Do not commit adultery’*” [Lk. 18:20]. “*You adulteress wife, who takes strangers instead of her husband!*” [Ezk. 16:32]; Ex. 20:14; Deut. 5:18; Heb. 13:4; Rom. 2:22. Per the Mosaic Law, both “*the adulterer and the adulteress shall surely be put to death*” [Lev. 20:10]. But see, “*On the evidence of two witnesses or three witnesses, he who is to die shall be put to death; he shall not be put to death on the evidence of one witness*” [Deut. 17:6]; Matt. 18:16.

HEBREWS 13:4

Marriage *is to be held* in honor [*timios* (as a great price)] among all, and the marriage bed [*koite* (the place for having sexual intercourse)] *is to be* undefiled [*amiantos* (unsoiled)]; for fornicators and adulterers God will judge [*krino – Divine Discipline Suffering*].

EXODUS 20:14

You shall not commit adultery [*naaph* (unlawful sexual intercourse with the wife of another man)].

- (3) **A Mental Attitude Sin.** Mental A/F [lusting for illicit sexual intercourse] is also a sin. It comes from succumbing to temptations from the lust pattern of the Old Sin Nature. See Job 31:9-12. Note: the appreciation of beauty in the opposite sex is not equivalent to sinful “*lust*” [Matt. 5:27-28].

MATTHEW 5:27-28

You have heard that it was said, “You Shall Not Commit Adultery [*moicheuo* (unlawful sexual intercourse with another man’s wife) – the Mosaic Law]”; but I [*Jesus*] say to you that everyone who looks at [*blepo* (to gaze upon)] a woman [*gune*] with lust [*epithumeo* (to covet; to lust after; to desire)] for her has already committed adultery [*moicheuo – a mental attitude sin*] with her in his heart.

JOB 31:9-12

If my [Job's] heart has been enticed by a woman, or I have lurked at my neighbor's doorway, may my wife grind [*tachan* (to grind in sexual intercourse like a concubine)] for another [the wife desires sex with another man], and let others kneel down over her [have sexual relations with her]. For that [if Job held the mental attitude sin of adultery] would be a lustful crime; moreover, it would be [if Job did commit the physical act of adultery] an iniquity *punishable* by judges. For it would be fire that consumes to Abaddon, and would uproot all my increase.

- (4) **Source of Suffering.** A/F causes “scar tissue” on the human soul which can result in permanent damage to one's capacity to enjoy sexual relations. Left unchecked, A/F is a source of great self-induced suffering. The Believer must “*flee*” [1 Cor. 6:18] from this temptation. See Prov. 6:32; Eph. 4:19; 5:3.

PROVERBS 6:32

The one who commits adultery [*naaph*] with a woman is lacking [*chaser* (in need of)] sense; he who would destroy [*shachath* (to ruin; to corrupt)] himself does it.

1 CORINTHIANS 6:18

Flee [*pheugo* (to run away quickly)] immorality [*porneia* (illicit sexual intercourse)]. Every *other* sin that a man commits is outside the body, but the immoral [*porneuo* (to prostitute one's body to the lust of another)] man sins against his own body [the capacity for a normal sexual and love relationship is destroyed].

- (5) **Restoring Capacity.** Only Rebound and the intake of maximum amounts of Bible Doctrine over time can restore the capacity for normalcy for those Believers who had regularly engaged in A/F.
- (6) **Cause for Divorce.** Adultery is a legitimate cause for divorce as the mental and emotional consequences can quickly destroy the marriage relationship. In particular, as the leader/initiator, the husband is extremely vulnerable in his role if he discovers that his wife, the responder, has committed adultery with another man. See Matt. 5:32; 19:9; Lk. 16:18.

- (7) **Describes Apostasy.** A/F is used in the Bible to describe spiritual apostasy against God and reversionism of the Believer, particularly in the context of the Client Nation to God going astray from the mandates of Bible Doctrine. *“But come here, you sons of a sorceress, offspring of an adulterer and a prostitute”* [Isa. 57:3-10]; Hos. 1:1-3; Jer. 2; 3:8-10; Ezk. 16:20, 23:37-43; 32:24-28; Lev. 20:5; Rev. 17:1-5. See @@@ PIVOT & CLIENT NATION.

JEREMIAH 3:8-9

And I saw that for all the adulteries of faithless Israel, I had sent her away and given her a writ of divorce [the Northern Kingdom of Israel was completely destroyed by the Assyrians in 721 B.C.], yet her treacherous sister Judah [the Southern Kingdom of Judah] did not fear; but she went and was a harlot [zanah (to commit fornication) – Judah also rejected Bible Doctrine] also. Because of the lightness of her harlotry, she polluted the land and committed adultery with stones and trees [the heathen worship of idols included sex orgies and human sacrifices conducted generally at altars in the open natural environment, usually on hilltops].

EZEKIEL 16:20

Moreover, you [Southern Kingdom of Judah] took your sons and daughters whom you had borne to Me [God’s Client Nation] and sacrificed them to idols to be devoured. Were your harlotries so small a matter?

- (8) **Avoiding Adultery/Fornication.** Faithfulness to God, i.e., maximum Bible Doctrine circulating in the human soul, avoids actual, mental, or spiritual A/F. Just as a normal wife responds in respect to her husband, all Believers are supposed to respond to God with respect and love. See Rom. 7:2-6; Isa. 54:5.

ISAIAH 54:5

For your husband [baal (to marry; to rule over) – God is the husband and the Jews are the wife] is your Maker, whose name is the LORD of hosts [tsaba (an army) – Jesus Christ]; and your Redeemer [gaal (to redeem by payment) – Jesus Christ’s work on the cross to provide salvation] is the Holy One of Israel, who is called the God of all the earth.

@@@ ANGELS

- (1) **Definition.** When the Greek word *aggelos* (messenger) is translated it refers to a communicator or messenger, as in the identification of the seven human Pastor/Teachers heading the seven major churches in Asia Minor described in *Revelation* chapters 2-3. However, when the word *aggelos* is transliterated, it refers to literal *angels*, a special class of created beings with free will. *“I saw the LORD sitting on His throne, and all the host of heaven standing by Him ... and one said this while another said that. Then a spirit came forward ... and said ‘I will entice him’”* [1 Kngs. 22:19-23]. Other terms used to describe angels in the Bible include: *“stars”* or *“morning stars”* [Rev. 12:4; Ps. 148:3; Job 38:7; Jdg. 5:20]; *“sons of god”* or *“god”* [Gen. 6:2; Job 1:6; 38:7; 2 Cor. 4:4]; *“spirits”* [1 Tim. 4:1; Lk. 10:20; Job 26:5; 1 Sam. 16:14; Rev. 1:4; 3:1]; *“rulers,” “world forces,” “powers”* [Eph. 6:12]; *“princes”* [Dan. 10:13; Eph. 2:2]; *“chariots of God”* [Ps. 68:17]; and *“sons of the mighty”* [Ps. 89:6].
- (2) **Numbers.** Angels were brought into existence by God at some time before humans and are mentioned throughout the Bible. God created an *incredible number* of them. *“I heard the voice of many angels ... the number of them was myriads of myriads, and thousands of thousands”* [Rev. 5:11; cf. Ps. 68:17]; Dan. 7:10; Lk. 12:13; Jer. 33:22; Matt. 26:53; Ps. 148:2, 5.

PSALM 148:2, 5

Praise Him, all His angels; praise Him, all His [angelic] hosts [*tsaba* (armies of angelic beings)]! ... Let them [angels] praise the name of the LORD, for He commanded and they were created.

JEREMIAH 33:22

As the host [*tsaba* (the army of angelic beings)] of heaven cannot be counted and the sand of the sea cannot be measured, so I [God] will multiply the descendants of David My servant and the Levites who minister to Me.

- (3) **Superiority of Angels.** Angels are far *superior in form and function to mortal Believers in time but not in eternity*. See Ps. 8:3-5; Heb. 2:7-8; 2 Pet. 2:11. In fact, some angels travel at unfathomable speeds across the universe to include going to and from the Third Heaven during the Angelic Conflict [Job 1:6-12]. See *supra* (9). See @@@ HEAVEN.

HEBREWS 2:7-8

You [**God**] have made him for a little while [**Jesus in His incarnation**] lower than the angels; You have crowned him with glory [*doxa*] and honor [*time*], and have appointed him over the works of Your hands; You have put all things in subjection under his feet. For in subjecting all things to him, He left nothing that is not subject to him. But now [**in time**] we do not yet see all things subjected to him [**the Angelic Conflict continues in human history**].

- (4) **Saved and Fallen.** All angels *divide into one of two categories*: **Saved** or **Fallen**. At the start of the Angelic Conflict, long before the creation of man, angels exercised their free will and split into two camps with huge numbers following a senior angel's [Lucifer/Satan] rebellion against God. This angelic rebellion was put down and in a subsequent God-directed trial He then judged, convicted, and sentenced Satan and the Fallen angels to separation in the "*eternal fire*" [Matt. 25:41]. Accordingly, all angels are now distinguished and set into their eternal state of being – Saved and Fallen [aka unsaved]. See Rev. 12:4, 7; Heb. 1:4-14; 2:16; Col. 1:20; 2:14-15. The sentence from the original trial of the Fallen angels will be carried out at the future Great White Throne Judgment and all of them will be cast into the "*lake of fire*" [Rev. 20:10] where they will reside forever. See @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT.

HEBREWS 2:16

For assuredly He does not give help [*epilambanomai* (to secure one from peril)] to angels [*aggelos* – all angels are already fixed in place for their eternal state as either Saved or Fallen], but He gives help [**unBeliever humans can still accept salvation**] to the descendant of Abraham [**a metaphor; all humans on positive [+P] volition will receive salvation**].

- (a) **Saved Angels.** Saved angels are also termed as "*holy angels*" [Mk. 8:38] and "*elect angels*" [1 Tim. 5:21].
- (b) **Fallen Angels.** Fallen angels [unsaved angels] are subdivided into Confined demons [2 Pet. 2:4; Jude 6; Gen. 6:1-9] and Operational demons [Mk. 5:1-20; 1 Cor. 10:20-2]. Under Satan's control, only Operational demons are currently at work on the earth to actively participate in the Angelic Conflict – "*deceitful spirits and doctrines of demons*" [1 Tim. 4:1]; Heb. 2:2.

HEBREWS 2:2

For if the word spoken through angels [*aggelos* – Saved angels actually taught Bible Doctrine to humans in past times] proved unalterable [*bebaios* (stable; firm) – Bible Doctrine taught by Saved angles is unalterable], and every transgression [*parabasis* (the breach of a ratified law)] and disobedience received a just penalty [*misthapodosia* (payment of wages due) – God’s Judgment on Fallen angels is also unalterable].

- (5) **Command Structure.** There is a command and rank structure for Saved and Fallen angels. Fallen angels are under Satan’s control and Saved angels are under Jesus Christ. *See* 2 Pet. 2:10-11; Ps. 91:11-12; Matt. 13:41; Rev. 7:2.
- (6) **Types of Saved Angels.** Saved angels are divided into *two broad subgroups* [crossover exists]: the **Army Group** [Job 19:12; Judg. 5:20; Rev. 12:7] and the **Heralds [Messenger] Group**. Both function under strict orders from God and operate to: (1) oppose Satan’s actions on the earth; (2) assist in controlling history as God directs; and (3) serve various needs of Believers.

(a) **The Army Group.**

1. **LORD of Hosts.** In the Old Testament, Jesus Christ is called in Hebrew *Jehovah tsaba* (LORD of the armies), generally translated as the “**LORD of hosts**” – e.g., Isa. 6:3; 1 Sam. 17:45. However, the phrase should be translated: “LORD of the Armies.” He is the Commander in Chief of the Army Group of Angels.
2. **Archangels.** These are the highest in rank of the Elect angels and are called *seraphim* (six wings) [Rev. 4:8; 12:7; Isa. 6:2; Dan. 8:16; 9:21; 10:21; 12:1; Jude 9; Lk. 1:19, 26]. The wings are a designation of their supreme rank. The Bible identifies two: Michael and Gabriel. Michael, called the “**Prince of Israel**” [Dan. 10:21], commands an army of angels who defend Israel against Satanic forces. Michael also fought with Satan over the body of Moses [2 Pet. 2:11; Jude 9] and will defend Israel in the Tribulation [Dan. 12:1; Rev. 12:7]. Gabriel explained to Daniel the vision of the Ram and the He-Goat [Dan. 8:16]. Gabriel was also sent to both Zacharias and Mary to announce respectively, the birth of John the Baptist and Jesus of Nazareth [Lk. 1:19-38].

3. **The 24 Elders.** These are General Staff Officer angels stationed in the Third Heaven [Rev. 4:9-11; 5:6].
4. **Strong Angels and Cherubim.** Other high-ranking angels, *cherubim* (four wings). See Rev. 5:2. Gen. 3:24. See *infra* 6.
5. **Rank and File Angels.** These are the most numerous and are called the “*hosts*” [Jos. 5:15; Ps. 103:21; 148:2; Lk. 2:13; Heb. 1:14]. These *tsaba* angels are wingless [lower rank]. Some destroyed Sodom and her sister cities at God’s direction [Gen. 19:1, 13], others will gather and throw unBelievers into Hell at the 2nd Advent of Jesus Christ [Matt. 13:49-50]. See *infra* 6.
6. **Watcher/Patrol/Killer/Ministering.** Under strict orders from God, certain angles directly *participate in the control of human history* in the Angelic Conflict. These “*watcher*” [Dan. 4:23]; “*patrol*” [Zech. 1:9-11]; “*killer*” [Num. 22:33; 2 Kngs. 6:17]; and “*ministering*” [Lk. 1:13] angels deal with humans and demons. “*God sent an angel to Jerusalem to destroy it*” [1 Chron. 21:15]. “*When the angel stretched out his hand toward Jerusalem to destroy it, the LORD ... said to the angel who destroyed the people ... ‘It is enough! Now relax your hand!’*” [2 Sam. 24:16]. “*Or do you think that ... He will at once put at My disposal more than twelve legions of angels?*” [Matt. 26:53]; Ezk. 1:4-25; 9:2-11; 10:3-22; Zech. 6:1-8; Dan. 10:13; Rev. 12:7.

EZEKIEL 1:11-15

Such were their faces [**Patrolling angels**]. Their wings were spread out above; each had two touching another *being* [**indicates coordination**], and two covering their bodies [**obedience to orders**]. And each went straight forward; wherever the spirit was about to go [**as the Holy Spirit directs**], without turning as they went. In the midst of the living beings [**chay – angels**] there was something that looked like burning coals of fire, like torches darting back and forth among the living beings. The fire was bright, and lightning was flashing from the fire [**activity in the Plan of God**]. And the living beings ran to and fro like bolts of lightning. Now as I [**Ezekiel**] looked at the living beings, behold, there was one wheel on the earth beside the living beings, for *each of the four of them* [**wheels represent history as it unfolds in the Plan of God**].

ZECHARIAH 1:9-11

Then I [**Zechariah's vision**] said, "My lord [**adon** (lord; master) – **this is a communicating angel**], what are these [**other angels waiting to give a report**]?" ... And the man who was standing among the myrtle trees [**this is Jesus Christ in a Theophany**] answered and said, "These are whom the LORD [**Jehovah** (the self-existing one) – **God the Holy Spirit**] has sent to patrol the earth." So they answered the angel [**malak**] of the LORD [**Jehovah – Jesus Christ**] who was standing among the myrtle trees and said, "We have patrolled the earth, and behold, all the earth is peaceful and quiet [**these reconnaissance and combat Patrolling angels directly engage in controlling history and opposing Satanic forays directed against Believers and unBelievers**]."

(b) **The Heralds** [Messenger] **Group.**

1. **Angel of the LORD.** Jesus Christ as the "**angel of the LORD**" is also the Commander in Chief of the Heralds Group of Angels.
2. **The Living Creatures.** Termed as "**beasts**" in the King James Bible but correctly denominated as "**living creatures**" in most modern translations, the Living Creatures are high-ranking **seraphim**. See Rev. 4:6-8; 5:2; Isa. 6:1-10.

ISAIAH 6:1-10

:1-2

"**death**" – This would be circa 740 B.C.

"**six wings**" – These are the **seraphim** senior Saved angelic high-ranking general officers per Rev. 4:6-8.

"**face**" – Covering of the face is a sign of humility.

"**feet**" – Covering of the feet recognizes their obedience to superior authority in the Plan of God. See @@@ **PLAN OF GOD**.

"**flew**" – Mobility to communicate certain Bible Doctrines and perform other duties as assigned.

:3

"**Holy, Holy, Holy**" – Holy consists of the Righteousness and Justice of God. However, each repetition of "**Holy**" here refers to the LORD Jesus Christ "**Who Was And Who Is And Who Is To Come**" [Rev. 4:8], not the Trinity.

:6-7

“**burning coal**” – Angelic communicator tells Isaiah to keep communicating. Symbolic of Rebound which cleanses Isaiah for service to God, the burning coal from the altar is the place of judgment for sin.

3. **Cherubim** [*cherubim (four wings)*]. Other high-ranking angels [Ps. 18:10; 2 Sam. 22:11].
 4. **Rank and File.** Messenger angels [Gen. 19:13; Ezk. 9:1; 10:6; Rev. 7:1; 8:6; Ps. 103:21; Heb. 1:14]. There were various “ministering” angels included amongst all the Saved angels that passed in review when Jesus was born [Lk. 2:8-14].
- (7) **Appearance of Angels.** Angels are generally invisible to humans, but some appeared in the Old Testament and the Apostolic era of the early Church Age as humans. *See* Col. 2:18; Heb. 13:2; Gen. 6:2.

HEBREWS 13:2

Do not neglect to show hospitality to strangers, for by this some have entertained [*xenizo (to receive as a guest)*] angels without knowing it [*lanthano (to be hidden)*].

- (8) **Teaching Angels.** Some angels taught Bible Doctrine to a few people in the Old Testament and to the Apostles in the early Church Age – “**the word spoken through angels**” [Heb. 2:2]; Deut. 33:2; Ps. 68:17; Dan. 8:16; Acts 7:38, 53; 10:3-19; 11:5-18; Gal. 3:19.

ACTS 7:53

You who received the law [**the Mosaic Law**] as ordained [*diatage (a disposition)*] by angels, and *yet* did not keep it.

- (9) **Positional Superiority.** All Believers in the Church Age are “positionally” superior to angels based on the future fact that the Believer will have a resurrection body in eternity far above the bodily structure of all angels [as well as all Old Testament Believers]. In addition, as part of their eternal “**rewards**” [1 Cor. 3:14] certain **Winner** Believers will also be in command of angels. *See* 1 Jn. 3:1-2; Lk. 10:20; 1 Cor. 6:3; Phil. 3:21.

LUKE 10:20

Nevertheless do not rejoice in this, that the spirits [angels] are subject [hupotasso] to you [the Believer in his resurrection body will have a superior position], but rejoice that your names are recorded [eggrapho (to engrave) – in the salvation Book of Life for eternal security] in heaven.

1 CORINTHIANS 6:3

Do you [Believers] not know that we will judge [krino (to determine, resolve, decree)] angels? How much more matters of this life?

- (10) **Observed Jesus Christ.** Angels closely observed every movement of Jesus Christ while He was on the earth. See 1 Tim. 3:16.

1 TIMOTHY 3:16

By common confession [homologoumenos (by consent of all; without controversy)], great is the mystery of godliness [eusebeia – the full mystery doctrines of the Church Age]: He [Jesus Christ] who was revealed [phaneroo (to make manifest)] in the flesh, was vindicated [dikaioo (to render righteous)] in [by] the [Holy] Spirit, seen by angels [aggelos], proclaimed [kerusso (to publish)] among the nations, believed on [pisteuo] in the world [kosmos – some in every generation will accept the free gift of salvation], taken up [anambano – the resurrection and acceptance of Jesus Christ by God the Father per Operation Footstool] in glory [doxa – the essence of the Holy Trinity].

- (11) **Observe Believers.** Angels, both Saved and Fallen, *watch Believers with intense interest*, but for different reasons – “*we have become a spectacle to the world, both to angels and to men*” [1 Cor. 4:9]; 1 Tim. 5:21; 1 Pet. 1:12; Rev. 12:10; 1 Cor. 6:3; 11:10. Saved angels have “*joy in heaven over one sinner (unBeliever) who repents than over ninety-nine righteous persons who need no repentance (already saved)*” [Lk. 15:7-10] because that human is entered as a new basic exhibit in the Angelic Conflict’s appellate trial. In addition, Saved angels observe and track all positive [+P] volition Believers as they move towards spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1]. Interestingly, Saved angels also sit in on Bible classes conducted by certain Pastor/Teachers to see “*things into which angels long to look*” [1 Pet. 1:12]; Eph. 3:10-11.

1 PETER 1:12

It was revealed to them [the Old Testament prophets who wrote the many Biblical predictions concerning the coming Messiah under the inspiration of God the Holy Spirit] that they were not serving themselves, but you, in these things which now have been announced to you through those [Peter and other Believers] who preached the gospel to you by the Holy Spirit sent from heaven—things into which angels long [*epithumeo* (to have a desire for)] to look [*parakupto* (to stoop over a thing to look carefully) – Saved angels have an intense interest in the unfolding Plan of God].

1 CORINTHIANS 4:9

For, I [Paul] think, God has exhibited [*apodeiknumi* (to prove what kind of person anyone is)] us apostles last of all, as men condemned to death; because we have become a spectacle [*theatron* (a place in which games and dramatic spectacles are exhibited)] to the world, both to angels and to men [their deaths testified to the truth of the resurrection of Jesus Christ and Bible Doctrine].

- (12) **Demons War Against Believers.** Under Satan's own command and control system Operational demons *track, record, oppose, and set traps* for various Believers as part of the “*schemes of the devil*” [Eph. 6:10-17] in order to entangle Believers in the “*snare of the devil*” which is the Cosmic Systems [2 Tim. 2:26]; 1 Pet. 5:8-9; Lk. 22:31. Furthermore, Satan also opposes Believers when they sin and “*accuses them before our God day and night*” [Rev. 12:10]. See @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT; @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS.

1 PETER 5:8-9

Be of sober *spirit*, be on the alert. Your adversary [*antidikos* (an opponent in a lawsuit) – in the Angelic Conflict], the devil, prowls around like a roaring [*oruomai* – Satan uses fear as a tool of attack] lion, seeking someone to devour [*katapino* (to swallow up; to destroy) – Satan wants all Believers to live in the Cosmic Systems]. But resist him, firm in *your* faith [*pistis* – apply Bible Doctrine], knowing that the same experiences of suffering [*pathema* – Divine Suffering for Blessing to the positive [+P] volition Believer] are being accomplished by your brethren who are in the world [*kosmos* – Satan is the ruler of the world but he cannot stop the Believer from reaching maturity].

EPHESIANS 6:10-17

Finally, be strong [*endunamoo* (endure with strength)] in the LORD and in the strength of His might. Put on the full armor [*panoplia* (complete military battle gear)] of God, so that you will be able to stand firm [*histemi*] against the schemes [*methodeia*] of the devil [*Satan is the ruler of the world but God controls history*]. For our struggle [*pale* (to wrestle) – in the Angelic Conflict] is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers [*arche* – officer demons], against the powers [*exousia* – rank and file demons], against the world forces [*kosmokrator* – senior officer demons] of this darkness [*skotos* – the Cosmic Systems], against the spiritual forces of wickedness [*poneria*] in the heavenly [*epouranios* (existing in heaven)] places. Therefore, take up the full armor of God, so that you will be able to resist [*anthistemi*] in the evil day, and having done everything, to stand firm. Stand firm therefore, having girded [*suit up as a soldier for battle*] your loins [*osphus* (the hip)] with truth [*Bible Doctrine*], and having put on the breastplate of righteousness [*dikaiosune* – God’s Righteousness [+R]], and having shod your feet with the preparation of the gospel [*euaggelion* (good news)] of peace [*eirene* – Soteriology]; in addition to all, taking up the shield of faith [*pistis* – Faith/Rest] with which you will be able to extinguish [*sbennumi* (to quench)] all the flaming arrows of the evil one. And take the helmet of salvation [*soterion* (he who embodies this salvation) – Jesus Christ provided salvation], and the sword of the [*Holy*] Spirit, which is the word of God.

REVELATION 12:10

Then I heard a loud voice in heaven, saying, “Now the salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – the Plan of God is coming to its completion], and the power, and the kingdom of our God and the authority of His Christ have come, for the accuser of our brethren [*all Believers are accused by Satan*] has been thrown down [*Satan is cast out of Heaven at mid-point of the Tribulation*], he who accuses [*kategoreo* (to make an accusation before a judge)] them before our God day and night.”

LUKE 22:31

Simon, Simon [*Jesus is speaking to Peter*], behold, Satan has demanded permission to sift [*siniazo*] you like wheat [*to personally administer extreme Divine Discipline to Peter*].

- (13) **Guardian Angels.** Each Believer has a Saved *guardian angel* [Zech. 1:9-10; Heb. 1:14; Ps. 34:7; 91:11]. Described as a “*wall of fire*” [Zech. 2:5] and a “*hedge ... on every side*” [Job 1:10], they protect the Believer from harm in normal activities over the course of his life [Ezk. 9:3-5]. In fact, the guardian angel is assigned at the Believer’s birth, as God always knew in eternity past every person that would “*believe in the LORD Jesus Christ*” [Acts 16:31]. For “*the LORD knows those who are His*” [2 Tim. 2:19]. “*Every plant which My heavenly Father did not plant shall be uprooted*” [Matt. 15:13]; 18:10, 19.

MATTHEW 18:10

See that you do not despise one of these little ones [*children then around Jesus who are or would be Believers in the future*], for I say to you that their angels in heaven continually see the face of My Father who is in heaven.

PSALM 91:11

For He will give His angels charge [*tsavah (to give orders)*] concerning you [*the Believer*], to guard [*shamar (to keep watch)*] you in all your ways.

EZEKIEL 9:3-5

Then the glory of the God of Israel went up from the cherub [*a Patrolling angel in Ezekiel’s vision*] on which it had been, to the threshold of the temple. And He called to the man clothed in linen [*a senior Patrolling angel*] at whose loins was the writing case [*symbolic of God’s control of history*]. The LORD [*Jehovah*] said to him, “Go through the midst of the city [*Jerusalem*], *even* through the midst of Jerusalem, and put a mark on the foreheads of the men who sigh and groan over all the abominations [*those mature Believers are marked for protection and spared*] which are being committed in its midst.” But to the others [*these are Killer angels*] He said in my hearing, “Go through the city after him and strike; do not let your eye have pity and do not spare [*Jerusalem was obliterated by the Chaldeans in 586 B.C.*].”

- (14) **Church Angels.** Every Church has a senior guardian angel assigned for protection and oversight. They report directly to God. For example, in Rev. 1:4; 3:1, each of the major seven churches in Asia Minor had an assigned angel [*pneuma (spirit)*] with specific oversight responsibilities.
-

@@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT

- (1) **Definition.** At some point in the distant past [before the creation of humans], the most senior ranked angel in Heaven, Lucifer, *committed the sin of arrogance* and led over one third of all angels in a revolt against God. The revolt was quashed and the Fallen angels were tried and sentenced to separation from God to the “*lake of fire*” [Rev. 20:10-15]. Satan *objected to the sentence and God granted an appeal*. The revolt and the continuing appellate process is named the *Angelic Conflict* [2 Pet. 2:4; Rev. 12:4]. Currently, Satan is “*the ruler of this world*,” [Jn. 12:31] but God controls history and limits his powers via the restraining ministry of the Holy Spirit.

REVELATION 12:4

And his tail [*Satan, called the dragon*] swept away a third of the stars [*Fallen angels*] of heaven and threw [*ballo*] them to the earth [*ge (the land mass of the earth)*] – these Fallen angels are no longer identified with Heaven, although some are still allowed to enter Heaven until the middle of the Tribulation when Heaven is closed to all of them]. And the dragon stood before the woman who was about to give birth, so that when she gave birth he might devour her child [*Satan devoted great effort in his vain attempts to stop Jesus’ birth*].

2 PETER 2:4

For if God did not spare angels when they sinned [*refers to the demons of Gen. 6:1-4, but also to all demons*], but cast them into hell [*tartaroo (the abode of the wicked)*] – Tartarus is a compartment of Hell] and committed them to pits of darkness [*zophos (used of the darkness of the nether world)*], reserved for judgment [*final sentence execution at the Great White Throne Judgment for the demons of Gen. 6:1-4, and all Fallen angels to the lake of fire*].

- (2) **Lucifer.** When angels were created in eternity past the top angel named Lucifer, Latin for “*star of the morning*” [Isa. 14:12], a *cherubim* (four wings), was appointed by God as the chief guardian at the very throne of God in the Third Heaven. Currently, he remains as the highest-ranking demon angel with post-fall titles of “*Satan*” [*ha satan (adversary)*], “*Devil*” [*diabolos (slanderer)*], “*Serpent*” [*ophis*], and “*Dragon*” [*drakon*]. See Rev. 20:2; Jn. 8:44-45. Satan is limited by God in what he can do; the Devil is a finite being. He is never referred to again in the Scripture as Lucifer.

- (3) **The Lake of Fire.** When Lucifer sinned, he lost his high position in Heaven and along with all Fallen angels, in the wake of the quashed revolt, he was tried, judged, and *sentenced to an eternal state of complete separation* from God in the “*lake of fire*” [Rev. 20:10-15] – “*the ruler of this world has been judged*” [Jn. 16:11]; Matt. 25:41; Jn. 16:8-11; Rom. 16:20.

MATTHEW 25:41

Then He [*Jesus Christ*] will also say to those on His left [*unBelievers in the Tribulation*], Depart from Me, accursed ones, into the eternal fire [*pur – the Lake of Fire*] which has been prepared [*hetoimazo (to make the necessary preparations)*] – although the sentence to the Lake of Fire was given to demons long before human history began, it has not yet been executed pending the conclusion of the Angelic Conflict] for the devil [*diabolos (the slanderer) – Satan*] and his angels [*aggelos – the Fallen angels*].

JOHN 16:8-9, 11

And He [*God the Holy Spirit*], when He comes [*at the start of the Church Age*], will convict the world [*kosmos*] concerning sin and righteousness [*dikaiosisune (righteousness; the condition acceptable to God; the doctrine concerning the way in which a man may attain a state approved of God)*] and judgment [*krisis (a judicial ruling)*]; concerning sin, because they do not believe in Me [*the unpardonable sin is disbelief in Jesus Christ*] ... and concerning judgment, because the ruler [*archon (commander)*] of this world [*kosmos – Satan is the ruler of the world*] has been judged [*krino (to put asunder)*] – Satan was judged at his pre-historic trial and the work of Jesus on the cross sealed his fate].

- (4) **Satan Appeals.** *Satan objected to his sentence.* A reconstruction of Satan’s objection to God’s just trial and sentence to the Lake of Fire can be drawn from Gen. 3:1-5 [Satan deceived Eve about God’s fairness]; Ezk. 28:11-18; cf. Jn. 8:44-45 and 1 Jn. 3:8. In short, Satan cried unfair: “*How can a loving God send His creatures to the Lake of Fire?*” Satan completely ignores the attributes of the Trinity regarding God’s Perfect Holiness [consisting of His Righteousness [+R] and Justice] and seeks to distort and lie about what God’s Perfect love really entails. Later, when God created volitional man and woman and they subsequently committed sin, Satan amended his appeal with: “*Why weren’t fallen Adam and Eve also sentenced to the Lake of Fire?*”

JOHN 8:44-45

You [**unBeliever religious leaders**] are of *your* father the devil [*diabolos* (slanderer) – **Satan**], and you want to do the desires of your father. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – **Bible Doctrine**] because there is no truth in him. Whenever he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own *nature*, for he is a liar and the father of lies [**promoting human good and religion**]. But because I speak the truth, you do not believe Me.

- (5) **Appeal Granted.** God granted Satan’s appeal and the Angelic Conflict entered its *appellate stage*. “*Your adversary* [*antidikos* (an opponent in a lawsuit) – **in the Angelic Conflict**], *the devil*” [1 Pet. 5:8]. God now provides countless rebuttal witnesses in *two specific categories*: (1) all Believers are immediately entered into evidence as *basic witness exhibits*; and (2) those few **Winner** Believers who reach spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1] are entered into evidence as *subject matter expert witness exhibits*. Both groups testify of God’s fantastic grace which unequivocally refutes Satan’s false objection about His fairness and lack of love [Isa. 43:10; Job 1:8]. In truth, under the Plan of God, God desires salvation for all mankind and the Trinity did *all the work* necessary to make this a reality. **The Bottom Line:** *Volitional creatures go to Hell because they reject God’s grace. It is they who intentionally choose to separate themselves from their Creator.*
- (6) **Man Created.** As part of the Angelic Conflict, man, a physically inferior creature to angels, was *created to resolve* Satan’s false objection regarding God’s love and fairness [Col. 2:15]. While large categories of animal and plant life existed on the earth before mankind was created only human beings were given a living soul with free will [Ps. 8:3-5; Heb. 2:5-7]. Satan, a finite being, quickly recognized this factor – humans were like angels in the possession of a volition – and targeted Adam and his wife in the perfect environment of the Garden of Eden to get them to sin against God. *See* Job 1:8. Accordingly, the Bible reveals that man was created for two reasons:
 - (a) **Resolve Satan’s False Objection.** *See supra* (4) and (5).
 - (b) **Share God’s Happiness.** In “*bringing many sons to glory*” [Heb. 2:10]. In His absolute Sovereignty, God desired to share His eternal life and perfect Happiness with Believers. *See* Isa. 43:7; Ezk. 18:23.

EZEKIEL 18:23

“Do I have any pleasure in the death of the wicked,” declares the LORD God, [the Directive Will of God is that all people should receive salvation] “rather than that he should turn from his ways and live?”

HEBREWS 2:10

For it was fitting for Him [God], for whom are all things, and through whom are all things, in bringing many sons to glory [doxa – all Believers], to perfect [teleioo (to make perfect)] the author [archegos (the chief leader) – Jesus Christ] of their salvation [soteria (deliverance) – into the Kingdom of Heaven] through [dia (by means of)] sufferings [pathema – the unfathomable sufferings of Jesus under Spiritual Death on the cross for human salvation].

ISAIAH 43:7

Everyone [the Believer] who is called by My name [God’s Righteousness imputed to the Believer], and whom I have created [bara (to make something out of nothing) – the human soul] for My glory, whom I have formed [yatsar (formed) – biological life], even whom I have made [awah – a human being].

(7) **Human & Angelic Volition.** Human volition is now *tested* in the same manner as angelic volition was tested, i.e., when Fallen angels were given their opportunity to be saved prior to the sentencing set out in Matt. 25:41. Since all angels are *forever locked into their permanent status* of Saved and Fallen the issue has shifted to the “human volition” of unBelievers and the continued supremacy of God’s grace solution for salvation.

- (a) **Start in Perfection.** Both man and angels started off in perfection.
- (b) **Spiritual Death.** Both man and Fallen angels suffered Spiritual Death [separation from God] through negative [-N] volitional choices.
- (c) **Salvation.** God provided the *opportunity for salvation* for both humans and angels by non-meritorious positive [+P] volition. Note: the grace mechanics for angelic redemption is not revealed, but they “*received a just penalty*” when they rejected God’s grace [Heb. 2:2; Col. 1:20]; [Jesus Christ is also called the Angel of the LORD].

COLOSSIANS 1:20

And through [*dia* (by means of)] Him [*Jesus Christ*] to reconcile [*apokatalasso* (to bring back a former state of harmony) – the barrier between God and man is removed under Soteriology] all things to Himself, having made peace [*eirenopoieo* – between Perfect God and imperfect man] through the blood [*aima* – the substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus Christ] of His cross; through Him, *I say*, whether things on earth [*ge*] or things in heaven [*ouranos*].

- (d) **Two Types.** Like angels, mankind is also divided into two categories: *Believers and unBelievers* [Jn. 3:18]. However, unlike all Fallen angels the living human unBeliever still has the opportunity to be saved, right up to the point of his Physical Death. See @@@ DEATH.
- (e) **Lake of Fire.** Called *Tophet* and *Gehenna*, the “*lake of fire*” [Rev. 20:10-15] awaits all Fallen angels, unBeliever humans, and the Nephilim [the half human/angelic beings of Gen. 6:1-4]. See Heb. 2:2; Jn. 3:36; Col. 2:14-15; 2 Pet. 2:4; Mk. 9:48-49.
- (8) **Deaths of Adam and Eve.** Adam and Eve *suffered two deaths* – first spiritual and later physical – as a consequence of their first sin against God.
 - (a) **Deaths.** God instructed Adam and his wife in the Garden of Eden, who were created perfect and therefore allowed to have Fellowship with Perfect God, that the *day* they ate of the forbidden fruit they would suffer Spiritual Death and then Physical Death [Gen. 2:17; Rom. 5:12]. In the warning of Gen. 2:16-17, the Hebrew word *muth* is repeated back-to-back in the sentence. Their eventual *physical death*, the second use of *muth*, followed their immediate *spiritual death*, the first use of *muth*. Thus, Adam and Eve died spiritually at the very moment that they ate of the forbidden fruit, but they did not die physically until hundreds of years later [Gen. 5:5]. Again, Spiritual Death – “*the wages of sin is [spiritual] death*” [Rom. 6:23] – is *separation from God*. In short, Perfect God cannot allow imperfect man to have fellowship with Him. As long as Adam and Eve were in a state of perfection in the Garden then the Trinity’s attribute of Holiness was not compromised. However, once they committed that single sin they were “*accursed*” [Matt. 25:41] and the Justice of God could only condemn them.

GENESIS 2:16-17

The LORD God commanded the man, saying, “From any tree [*ets*] of the garden you may eat freely; but from the tree of the knowledge of good [*tob*] and evil [*ra* – human good] you shall not eat [*disobeying God is a sin*], for in the day [*yom*] that you eat from it you will surely [*muth* (die) – Spiritual Death] die [*muth* (die) – Physical Death; i.e., dying *spiritually* you will die *physically*].”

- (b) **The Promise.** Unsaved Adam and Eve believed in *the promise* of the coming “*virgin*” [Isa. 7:14] born Savior, “*born of a woman*” [Gal. 4:4-5], “*her seed*” [Gen. 3:15], and were immediately saved, which nullified the false objection by Satan that God is unfair [Rom. 6:23]. In fact, God’s love motivated Him to provide equal opportunity for *all* humans to be saved under grace, a fact that untold numbers have accepted. In addition, **Winner** Believers who reach spiritual maturity in their lifetime further glorify God [Isa. 43:10; Eph. 4:13; Job 1:8].

ROMANS 6:23

For the wages [*opsonion* (a soldier’s pay)] of sin is death [*thanatos* (death with the result of going to hell) – Spiritual Death], but the free gift [*charisma* (to receive without merit of his own)] of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our LORD [*salvation is available to all who believe in Christ*].

ISAIAH 43:10

“You are My witnesses [*ed* (a witness that provides testimony) – the Believer in the Angelic Conflict],” declares the LORD, “And My servant whom I have chosen [*bachar* (to elect) – Jesus Christ], So that you may know [*yada* (to learn to know)] and believe [*aman*] Me And understand that I am He. Before Me there was no God formed, And there will be none after Me [*Satan’s desire to be God*].”

JOB 1:8

The LORD said to Satan, “Have you considered My servant Job? For there is no one like him on the earth, a blameless and upright man [*Job had reached spiritual maturity*], fearing God and turning away from evil [*ra*].”

PROSECUTION CASE – *All Old Testament and Church Age Believers.* Under the doctrine of unlimited atonement Jesus Christ bore all the sins – past, present, and future – of all humans who lived or would ever live, while He was on the cross, absolutely demonstrating God’s desire that all humans should be saved and refuting Satan’s false argument that God is unfair. Thus, all who believe in Jesus Christ are entered as basic appellate witness exhibits to demonstrate that God saves all who respond to His grace offer. In addition, those positive [+P] volition **Winner** Believers who reach spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1], like Job and Paul, are entered as special subject matter expert witness exhibits showing Satan that Bible Doctrine is supreme.

DEFENSE CASE – *The Seven Year Tribulation.* At the Rapture of the Church the restraining ministry of God the Holy Spirit is completely removed from the earth and Satan is given a free hand to create his version of “perfect fellowship/environment.” This objective was part of Satan’s “*I will*” desires per Isa. 14:13-14. Satan’s attempt at rulership under his own demon possessed human “*antichrist*” [1 Jn. 2:18] utterly fails and unprecedented violence upon the human race follows at the mid-point of the Tribulation. *See* Dan. 9:27; 2 Thess. 2:3-4; Rev. 12:7-12; 13:1-10.

PROSECUTION SUMMATION – *The 1,000 Year Millennium.* Satan, his demons, and all unBelievers are taken off the earth at the 2nd Advent of Jesus Christ. Satan is confined in Hell. God then sets up a true perfect environment on the earth. Predictably, unBelievers born to the parents of Believers who entered the Millennium will soon inhabit the earth in huge numbers. However, perfect environment under human good cannot provide salvation to those billions of people born in the Millennium, thereby proving once again that perfect environment never solves the problem of how sinful man can gain a relationship with Perfect God apart from the Plan of God [Rev. 20:1-6].

DEFENSE SUMMATION – *The Gog and Magog Revolution.* At the end of the Millennium, Satan is released from his confinement and engages in overt violence and revolution in a distorted attempt to lead humans in an attack on Jerusalem to destroy Jesus Christ. Satan’s mind is perpetually locked in a state of absolute arrogance and his battle cry of “equality” – it is not fair that Jesus Christ and the Jews should rule the earth – is the final act of his desperation. The revolt is squashed by fire, and his original sentence to the “*lake of fire*” that was given in Matt. 25:41, is finally carried out coterminous with the Great White Throne Judgment. *See* Rev. 20:7-10; Isa. 43:10.

- (9) **Sentence Carried Out.** At the conclusion of Satan’s appeal trial, the Devil and all his demons are sent to the “*lake of fire*” [Rev. 20:10, 14-15] per the *original just sentence* given by God in Matt. 25:41 – “*into the eternal fire.*”

REVELATION 20:10

And the devil [*diabolos* (the slanderer) – Satan] who deceived them was thrown into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are also; and they will be tormented day and night forever and ever [*aion* – this future final appellate judgment and sentence will conclude Operation Footstool].

- (10) **Satan’s Three Falls.** The Bible records three “falls” for Satan: (1) his fall from perfection to imperfection; (2) his fall from the Third Heaven in the middle of the Tribulation; and (3) his final fall into the eternal Lake of Fire.

ISAIAH 14:1-17

[written by Isaiah (ministry from 742-681 B.C.), Southern Kingdom of Judah].

BACKGROUND: Assyria and Egypt were fighting for control of the Levant with Israel, Judah, Syria, and many other city-States caught in the middle. Isaiah goes to King Ahaz and tells him to trust the LORD for deliverance from the attacking armies of Israel and Syria, but King Ahaz trusts in demons instead [Isa. 8:19]. Evil men tell Ahaz to steal money from the Temple and then bribe Assyria to attack rivals Syria and Israel. Assyria takes the bribe and destroys Israel in 721 B.C., but then, not too many years later, attacks Judah as well. However, under the rule of King Hezekiah, God destroys a massive Assyrian army under Sennacherib in 701 B.C., at the very gates of Jerusalem [Isa. 14:25-28; 37:36; 2 Kngs. 19:35-37; 2 Chron. 32:21-22]. In addition, Isa. 14:1-11 goes on to predict God’s punishment of the Chaldean Empire [Babylon] who would destroy Judah in 586 B.C. Thus, as is often the case in prophecy, the sureness of God’s judgment on Assyria and Babylon is directly compared with Satan’s sure future final judgment to the Lake of Fire. See Isa. 14:18-32.

:12

2nd Fall of Satan. The information presented on the “falls” of Satan are put in logical order, not chronological order.

“fallen” – *napel*. This is the **2nd Fall of Satan** which will occur in the Tribulation where the Devil will be cast out of Heaven for good. See Rev. 12:7-9; Lk. 10:18.

“*star of the morning*” – “Lucifer” *was* his name [KJV]. In 2 Cor. 11:14, he disguises himself as “*an angel of light*,” recalling that the serpent in the Garden of Eden was called *machash* (light). See Gen. 3:13-14.

:13-14

1st Fall of Satan. Information on the initial or **1st Fall of Satan** from a state of perfection to imperfection. Apparently, when the Angelic Conflict began the planet earth was Satan’s main HQ. See Rev. 12:4; Ezk. 28:11-18; Isa. 14:1-32.

“*you said*” – *amar*. Satan, a super genius, was already chief amongst all the angels, but the mental attitude sin of arrogance destroyed his mind. Satan’s arrogant boast of “*I will*” is stated five times as this creature sought to deify himself. “*For I am holier than you (God)!*” [Isa. 65:5]. Satan “*hates*” [Jn. 3:19-20] God with every fiber of his being, an attitude now reflected in the Cosmic Systems where vain men seek only self-sufficiency.

1. “*I will ascend to heaven.*” Satan’s desire to elevate himself far above his current status.
2. “*I will raise my throne above the stars of God.*” Satan’s desire to rule all the angels. See Job 38:7; Jude 13; Rev. 12:3-4.
3. “*I will sit on the mount of assembly In the recesses of the north.*” Satan’s desire to rule over the entire earth. See Ps. 48:2.
4. “*I will ascend above the heights of the clouds.*” This phrase stands for the Divine presence [Ex. 16:10; 40:38; Matt. 24:30; 1 Kngs. 8:10; Ps. 104:3; Acts 1:9; Isa. 19:1; Rev. 1:7]. Amazingly, this reflects Satan’s desire to function as God.
5. “*I will make myself like the Most High.*” Satan’s desire to actually have God’s essence.

:15-16

3rd Fall of Satan. Information on the final destination of Satan.

“*thrust down*” – *yaradh*. A specific place called the “*lake of fire*” awaits Satan and his demons at this future **3rd Fall of Satan**. See Matt. 25:41; Rev. 20:10, 12-15.

:17

“world like a wilderness” – The **1st Fall of Satan** caused disastrous conditions for the entire earth [Rom. 8:20-22]. The earth became locked in an ice pack per Gen. 1:2, but at some point, God the Holy Spirit caused it to melt and restored meaningful living things per the six days of the restoration of life on the earth recorded in Gen. 1:2-2:6. Later, man’s Fall through the decision of Adam and Eve to sin against God also had its own negative impact on nature [Gen. 3:17-19]. See @@@ **WORLD**.

EZEKIEL 28:11-18

[written by Ezekiel (ministry from 583-571 B.C.) to the 10,000 Jews living in exile in Babylon and to the Jews living in the Southern Kingdom of Judah prior its total destruction in 586 B.C., by the Chaldeans].

BACKGROUND: Compares the coming Divine judgment on the city-state of Tyre, for its anti-Semitism, to the surety of Satan’s final judgment. Tyre’s King was under demon influence. The city-state of Tyre had great glamour.

:12

“You had the seal of perfection” – Idiom for Lucifer’s perfection in form.

“full of wisdom and perfect in beauty” – Satan is a super genius.

:13-15

“in Eden” – Satan was allowed to come into the Garden of Eden.

“every precious stone” – these listings of stones are seen three times in the Bible: (1) Ex. 28:17 [Jewish priests, Holy of Holies]; (2) Rev. 21:19-20 [the New Jerusalem]; and (3) Ezk. 28:13 [prehistoric Garden of Eden].

“on the day you were created” – Satan was the most intelligent and glamorous of all the angels created by God.

“you were the anointed cherub” – A special four-winged angel guarding God’s Throne. Note: no six-winged Saved angels existed at this time.

“you were blameless in your ways From the day you were created” – Perfect.

“Until unrighteousness was found in you” – Satan’s mental attitude sin came from his own negative [-N] volition. This records the **1st Fall of Satan**.

:16-17

“And you sinned; Therefore I have cast you as profane” – Lk. 10:18; Rev. 12:7-9. The **2nd Fall of Satan** has not yet occurred; it takes place when Satan is cast onto the earth from the Third Heaven never to return. This action happens in the middle of the Tribulation.

REVELATION 12:7-9

And there was a war in heaven [*the middle of the Tribulation*], Michael and his angels waging war with the dragon. The dragon and his angels [*demons*] waged war, and they were not strong enough, and there was no longer a place found for them in heaven. And the great dragon was thrown down, the serpent of old who is called the devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was thrown down to the earth, and his angels were thrown down with him.

:18-19

“And you will cease to be forever” – **3rd Fall of Satan**. Satan is cast from the earth into the eternal *“lake of fire”* [Rev. 20:10; Matt. 25:41].

- (11) **Rulership of the World.** Since the Fall of Adam and his wife, *“the whole world lies in the power of the evil one”* [1 Jn. 5:19]. Satan gained *rulership of the entire world*, but not man’s volition. In turn, the Holy Spirit and the Divine Institutions restrain Satan to certain parameters of historical activity. See Lk. 4:5-7; 2 Cor. 4:4; Eph. 2:2; Jn. 12:31; 14:30; 16:11.
- (12) **Attacks on Messiah.** Satan initially concentrated great effort on attacking the bloodline of the *promised coming Messiah* [Gen. 6:1-4] and then turned all his forces upon Jesus Christ while He was on the earth in the incarnation [Jn. 15:20]. When Jesus arrived as a baby and grew up, Satan’s singular goal was to get Him to commit a sin and/or not to go to the cross.
- (13) **Satan’s Present Strategy.** Believers in the Church Age are now *the target* of Satan’s main attacks as he seeks to suck them into the Cosmic Systems via *“the schemes of the Devil”* [Eph. 6:11]; 1 Pet. 1:12; 3:17; Eph. 3:13; 6:10-17; Jn. 15:18; Rev. 2:13. Indeed, he distorts God’s truth and *“disguises himself as an angel of light”* and *“his servants also disguise themselves as servants of righteousness”* [2 Cor. 11:14] promoting the evil of religion and human good. The question: *Will the Believer stay faithful to Bible Doctrine, or will he squander his time on earth by whitewashing the Devil’s world under human good activities and allowing his Old Sin Nature to control him?*
 - (a) **Appears in Heaven.** Satan is allowed by God to appear from time to time in the Third Heaven at *angelic convocations* where he openly *“accuses”* Believers before God of their misconduct and sin. See Rev. 12:7-10; Job 1:6-8; Zech. 3:1-3; Lk. 22:31; 1 Jn. 2:1.

ZECHARIAH 3:1-3

Then he [a saved angel] showed me [Zechariah the Prophet] Joshua the high priest standing before the angel of the LORD [Jesus Christ as a Theophany], and Satan standing at his right hand to accuse him [Satan was accusing Joshua of sins and failures]. The LORD [Christ] said to Satan, “The LORD [God the Father] rebuke you Satan! Indeed, the LORD who has chosen Jerusalem [God controls history] rebuke you! Is this not a brand plucked from the fire [Joshua is a Believer plucked from Hell by the grace of God in salvation]?” Now Joshua was clothed with filthy [tso (human excrement) – Joshua’s personal sin] garments and standing before the angel [Joshua needed to Rebound].

JOB 1:6-8

Now there was a day when the sons of God [angels] came to present themselves before the LORD [in Heaven], and Satan also came among them. The LORD said to Satan, “From where do you come?” Then Satan answered the LORD and said, “From roaming about on the earth and walking around on it [Satan arrogantly emphasizes his rulership of the world, going wherever he pleases].” The LORD said to Satan, “Have you considered My servant Job [God calls Job to Satan’s attention as part of the Angelic Conflict]? For there is no one like him on the earth, a blameless and upright man, fearing God and turning away from evil [Job was the most mature Believer on earth].”

REVELATION 12:10

Then I heard a loud voice in heaven, saying, “Now the salvation [soteria (to deliver) – the Plan of God nears completion], and the power, and the kingdom of our God and the authority of His Christ have come, for the accuser of our brethren [Satan] has been thrown down [Satan is cast out of Heaven at the mid-point of the Tribulation], he who accuses [kategoreo (to make an accusation before a judge)] them before our God day and night.”

- (b) **False Doctrine.** Satan attempts to get Believers to “pay attention to *deceitful spirits and doctrine of demons*” to *suck them into the Cosmic Systems* [1 Tim. 4:1; 1 Thess. 2:18; Eph. 4:1; Jas. 4:7-8. *See infra* (14).
- (c) **Causes Fear.** Satan attempts, “*like a roaring lion*,” to cause worry and fear in Believers. *See* 1 Pet. 5:7-9; Heb. 2:13-15. *See infra* (14).

- (d) **Blinds Believers.** Satan seeks to *blind Believers* to the truth of Bible Doctrine. *See* Gen. 3:4-5; Col. 2:8; Rev. 2:13. *See infra* (14).
 - (e) **Blinds UnBelievers.** Satan seeks to *blind unBelievers* to the Gospel and uses religion as a primary tool to do so. *“In whose case the god of this world has blinded the minds of the unbelieving so that they might not see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God”* [2 Cor. 4:4].
 - (f) **Opposes Divine Institutions.** Satan seeks to turn all people against each and every aspect of the Divine Institutions. *See infra* (14).
- (14) **Spiritual Warfare.** Apart from the never-ending internal fight *“against”* [Gal. 5:16-17] the Old Sin Nature which *“wages war against the soul”* [1 Pet. 2:11] in order to make the Believer a *“prisoner of the law of sin”* [Rom. 7:23], Believers are constantly warned about the dangers of a *second spiritual “war”* [2 Cor. 10:3] waged against them by Satan and his Cosmic Systems. Accordingly, as a *“good soldier of Christ Jesus”* [2 Tim. 2:3-4] the *mature Believer* is commanded to *“fight the good fight”* [1 Tim. 1:18] in the Angelic Conflict by putting on the *“full armor of God”* [Eph. 6:12-17] in *“our struggle”* to glorify God. Of course, all successful combat actions in dealing with *“the flaming arrows of the evil one”* envision that the Believer is *“able to resist in the evil day, and having done everything, to stand firm”* because he is an experienced fighter who has learned and can apply the full realm of Bible Doctrine. In other words, He can properly wield his combat *“sword,”* the *“word of God”* [Heb. 4:12], in order to *“overcome the evil one”* [1 Jn. 2:14]. Just as Jesus defeated every temptation hurled at him by Satan through Scripture – *“it is written”* [Matt. 4:4] – we also *“are destroying speculations and every lofty thing raised up against the knowledge of God, and we are taking every thought captive to the obedience of Christ”* [2 Cor. 10:3-5].

2 CORINTHIANS 10:3-5

For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war [*strateuomai* (to make a military expedition)] according to the flesh, for the weapons of our warfare are not of the flesh, but divinely powerful for the destruction of fortresses [*the evil of Satan’s Cosmic Systems and religion*]. *We are* destroying speculations and every lofty thing raised up against the knowledge of God [*Bible Doctrine*], and *we are* taking every thought captive to the obedience of Christ.

EPHESIANS 6:12-17

For our struggle [*pale* (to wrestle) – in the Angelic Conflict] is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers [*arche* – officer demons], against the powers [*exousia* – rank and file demons], against the world forces [*kosmokrator* – senior officer demons] of this darkness [*skotos* – the Cosmic Systems], against the spiritual forces of wickedness in the heavenly [*epouranios* (existing in heaven)] places. Therefore, take up the full armor of God, so that you will be able to resist [*anthistemi*] in the evil day, and having done everything, to stand firm. Stand firm therefore, having girded your loins [*osphus* (the hip)] with truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – the truth is Bible Doctrine], and having put on the breastplate of righteousness [*dikaiousune* – God’s Righteousness [+R]], and having shod your feet with the preparation of the gospel [*euaggelion* (good news)] of peace [*eirene*]; in addition to all, taking up the shield of faith [*pistis* – Faith/Rest] with which you will be able to extinguish [*sbennumi* (to quench)] all the flaming arrows of the evil one. And take the helmet of salvation [*soterion* (he who embodies this salvation) – Jesus Christ alone provided our salvation], and the sword [*machaira*] of the [Holy] Spirit, which is the word of God.

- (15) **Already Defeated.** Satan was *defeated by the work of Jesus Christ* on the cross two thousand years ago, but locked-in arrogance blocks him from understanding that his appeal is lost, for “*the ruler of this world has been judged*” [Jn. 16:11]; Col. 2:15; Heb. 2:14; Rom. 16:20. Thus, he continues to wage an unseen war that pits his demons in “gun-battles” against God’s angels who carry out their responsibilities of controlling human history. See Dan. 10:10-14; Rev. 12:7-9; Ezk. 1:4-25; 9:2-11; 10:3-22; Zech. 1:9-11; 6:1-8. Of course, the Devil also continues to attack Believers. See *supra* (13) and (14).

DANIEL 10:13

But the prince [*sar* (ruler) – an angel] of the kingdom of Persia [*Satan’s demon general officer assigned to oversee events in Persia*] was withstanding [*amad* (to stand firm against)] me [*the angel Gabriel who had been dispatched by God to Daniel to give a prophecy*] for twenty-one days [*the demon forces successfully held up Gabriel*]; then behold, Michael [*the senior Army group angel*], one of the chief princes, came to help me, for I had been left there with the kings [*melek* (demons) – the many rank and file demons supporting the general officer demon] of Persia.

REVELATION 12:7

And there was a war in heaven [*ouranos* – in the middle of the Tribulation], Michael and his angels waging war with the dragon. The dragon and his angels waged war.

- (16) **God Controls History.** God allows the world to continue as it now is in order to let grace *run its full course* until the “*body in Christ*” [Rom. 12:5] is complete [Heb. 2:10; Eph. 3:17-19]. Although Satan is allowed to attack and accuse Believers as part of the Angelic Conflict, the Devil, a finite creature, has no knowledge about the outcome of each case, e.g., he did not know that Job would pass the testings that Satan was allowed by God to administer.
- (17) **Answers Three Questions.** The doctrine of the Angelic Conflict answers three questions.
- (a) *Why mankind was created?* “*To make His power known, endured with much patience vessels of wrath prepared for destruction (resolve Satan’s false appeal in the Angelic Conflict)*” [Rom. 9:22]; Eph. 3:10.
 - (b) *Why there is sin in the world?* “*Just as through one man (Adam) sin entered into the world, and death through sin, and so death spread to all men, because all sinned*” [Rom. 5:12].
 - (c) *Why there is suffering in the world?* “*He ... did not create it a waste place*” [Isa. 45:18]; Isa. 14:16-17; Rom. 8:19-22.

ROMANS 8:19-22

For the anxious longing [*apokaradokia* (persistent expectation)] of the creation [*the natural world*] waits eagerly for the revealing of the sons of God [*Believers in their resurrection bodies will accompany Jesus Christ at His 2nd Advent*]. For the creation was subjected to futility [*mataiotes* (depravity) – *due to the impact of demon and human sin*], not willingly, but because of Him who subjected it [*Permissive Will of God allowed the Angelic Conflict*], in hope that the creation itself also will be set free [*perfect environment will exist in the Millennium*] from its slavery to corruption into the freedom of the glory of the children of God. For we know that the whole creation groans [*sustenazo* (to groan together)] and suffers the pains of childbirth together until now.

@@@ APOSTLES

- (1) **Definition.** The Greek word *apostolos* is used in *two senses* in the original meaning: Type One, as a senior military admiral or supreme leader, or Type Two, as a colonial representative leading citizens to or in a foreign territory. The Bible also employs *apostolos* with two similar distinctions.
- (2) **Disciples to Israel.** Jesus' 12 disciples to Israel included Judas Iscariot [an unBeliever]. Jesus sent them out to Israel [Matt. 10:2-4]. Except for Judas, all of these disciples later became Type One Apostles in the early Church Age.
- (3) **Type One Apostles.** The Type One Apostle was a special designation to a male Believer who had *supreme authority* over the developing local Churches in the early Church Age. The Type One Apostle was limited to the first century A.D. only and was designed to carry the early Church until the completion of the Bible, circa A.D. 96. See 1 Cor. 13:10; Eph. 4:11.

EPHESIANS 4:11

And He [the Holy Spirit] gave some *as* apostles [*apostolos*], and some *as* prophets, and some *as* evangelists [*euaggelistes* (the bringer of good news)], and some *as* pastors and teachers [*poimen kai didaskalos* – the Church Age Pastor/Teacher].

- (4) **Type Two Apostles.** Type Two Apostles were those men whose primary mission was to *establish new churches* during the early Church period: Barnabas [Acts 14:14; Gal. 2:9]; Apollos [1 Cor. 4:6, 9]; Epaphroditus [Phil. 2:25]; Silas and Timothy [1 Thess. 1:1; 2:6]; James [1 Cor. 15:7; Gal. 1:19]; Titus [2 Cor. 8:23]; Andronicus; and Junias [Rom. 16:7].
- (5) **Eyewitness to Resurrected Christ.** Every Type One Apostle had to be an eyewitness to the *resurrected LORD Jesus Christ*. See Eph. 4:8; Acts 1:22; 1 Cor. 9:1; 15:7-10; 1 Tim. 1:12-16. See @@@ RESURRECTION.

ACTS 1:22

Beginning with the baptism of John until the day that He [Jesus] was taken up from us—one of these *must* become a witness with us [Peter and the others] of His resurrection [*anastasis*].

- (6) **The Twelve.** Paul and the eleven other former disciples of Jesus were Type One Apostles. There were only 12 and the nomenclature “*the 12*” [Jn. 20:24-29] was sometimes used as a designation even though there were only 11 members, until Paul later filled the empty slot [Paul was saved circa A.D. 33].
- (a) **Roster.** A roster of the Apostles is found in Acts 1:13 [lists eleven, minus Paul]. “*Peter and John and James and Andrew, Philip and Thomas, Bartholomew (also called Nathaniel) and Matthew, James the son of Alphaeus, and Simon the Zealot (also called Simon the Canaanite), and Judas the son of James (also called Thaddaeus).*” Note: Matthias was not the replacement for Judas Iscariot. God chose Saul of Tarsus, “*Paul*,” as the replacement [Acts 23-26]. Although God had not selected Matthias, Peter as the leader of the early Church in Jerusalem acted in legalism and orchestrated the appointment of Matthias as the replacement for Judas. Luke merely recorded this incident of presumptive legalism on the part of Peter in Acts 1:23-26.
- (b) **Paul.** Paul was appointed by God the Holy Spirit as the *senior Apostle* of “*the 12*” during the pre-Canon Church. “*He appeared to me also*” [1 Cor. 15:7-10]. “*I consider myself not in the least inferior to the most eminent apostles*” [2 Cor. 11:5]; 2 Pet. 3:14-16; Tit. 1:1; Col. 1:1. “*He considered me faithful, putting me in service*” [1 Tim. 1:12], “*just as I teach everywhere in every church*” [1 Cor. 4:15].

TITUS 1:1

Paul, a bond-servant [*doulos (slave)*] of God and an apostle of Jesus Christ, for the faith [*pistis – the teaching and writing of the mystery doctrines*] of those chosen [*eklektos – God always knew who would believe in Christ*] of God and the knowledge [*epignosis (full knowledge)*] of the truth [*aletheia – Bible Doctrine given to the Believer*] which is according to godliness [*eusebeia (respect for God) – so the Believer can reach spiritual maturity*].

1 CORINTHIANS 15:10

But by the grace of God I am [*Paul*] what I am, and His grace toward me did not prove vain [*kenos (empty)*]; but I labored [*kopiao (to labor with wearisome effort)*] even more than all of them [*the other 11 Apostles*], yet not I, but the grace [*charis*] of God with me.

- (c) **Powers.** At first, the 12 Type One Apostles performed many miracles and spoke in tongues. These *temporary spiritual gifts* established their supreme authority over any given group of Believers as predicted by Jesus: “*greater works (miracles) than these (in quantity) he will do*” [Jn. 14:12]; Col. 1:1; Acts 5:15-16; 16:16-18; 19:11-12; 28:8-9.

ACTS 19:11-12

God was performing extraordinary miracles by the hands of Paul, so that handkerchiefs or aprons were even carried from his body to the sick, and the diseases left them and the evil spirits went out [*ekporeuomai (to depart)*].

ACTS 5:15-16

To such an extent that they even carried the sick out into the streets and laid them on cots and pallets, so that when Peter came by at least his shadow might fall on any one of them. Also, the people from the cities in the vicinity of Jerusalem were coming together, bringing people who were sick or afflicted with unclean spirits, and they were all being healed.

- (d) **Gifts Removed.** All of the spectacular *gifts were removed* during the lifetime of the Apostles. For example, in Acts 19:11-12, the Apostle Paul could heal human sickness at will. Then in Phil. 2:27 and 2 Tim. 4:20, Paul has lost the gift of healing entirely, acknowledging that he was obliged to leave behind certain sick people on his traveling team.

2 TIMOTHY 4:20

Erastus remained in Corinth, but Trophimus I [**Paul**] left sick [*astheneo*] at Miletus [**Paul could not heal him**].

- (e) **Cutoff.** Paul anticipated the departure of all short-term supernatural gifts and miracles in 1 Cor. 12:8-10, and gave the *cutoff sign* for these early Church Age phenomenon: “*when the perfect comes (the completed Bible), the partial will be done away*” [1 Cor. 13:8-10]. The completed New Testament of the Bible occurred circa A.D. 96, with the book of *Revelation*. So too, with the completed canon of Scripture both Type One and Type Two Apostles all ceased to exist. No one has the gift of Apostle today [1 Cor. 4:9].

1 CORINTHIANS 13:8-10

Love [*agape* – *impersonal love*] never fails [*pipto* (phased out)]; but if *there are gifts* of prophecy [*propheteia*], they will be done away [*katargeo* (abolished; ceased; canceled out)]; if *there are* tongues [*glossa* (the language or dialect used by a particular people)], they will cease [*pauo* (to stop)]; if *there is* [*the gift of*] knowledge [*gnosis*], it will be done away [*katargeo*]. For we [*Believers*] know [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] in part [*in the pre-canon period of the Church Age*] and we prophesy in part; but when the perfect [*teleios* (completed) – the word *teleios* is in the neuter which refers to a thing and not a person, i.e., the completed Bible] comes [*Revelation was written in A.D. 96 and completed the Bible*], the partial [*meros* – the temporary spectacular gifts of the early Church] will be done away [*katargeo* (to render inoperative)].

- (7) **Witness to Men and Angels.** Bold claims require bold evidence. The central message emanating from all of the Apostles was that they had personally witnessed with their own eyes, ears, and touch, the resurrected Jesus of Nazareth – the LORD Jesus Christ. All of them, with the exception of John, *died violent deaths* for that unwavering pronouncement and bravely exhibited this powerful testimonial evidence for the truth of the risen Savior to both angels and men. Without question, their manner of death provides convincing evidence for the truth of their assertions. In short, while a person might willingly die for what they believe to be true, *they will not die for what they know is a lie*, particularly cowards. Indeed, eleven of the Apostles, who were formally not brave people per the Gospels, all died gruesome deaths for their eyewitness testimony about encountering on many occasions the resurrected Jesus Christ [1 Cor. 4:9]. If these men objectively knew that they were lying, they would not have willingly suffered such horrible and painful deaths.

1 CORINTHIANS 4:9

For, I [*Paul*] think, God has exhibited [*apodeiknumi* (to prove what kind of person anyone is)] us apostles last of all [*Paul recognized that the spiritual gift of Apostle was limited to his day*], as men condemned to death [*epithanatos* (doomed to death)]; because we have become a spectacle [*theatron* (a place in which games and dramatic spectacles are exhibited)] to the world, both to angels and to men [*their deaths confirmed the truth*].

@@@ AUTHORITY

- (1) **Definition.** The doctrine of authority refers to the legal power given by God whereby certain members of the human race have *jurisdiction over and responsibility for others*. It also refers to the supreme and *unalterable authority of Bible Doctrine for the Believer*. Accordingly, legitimate God-ordained authority exists and functions in two main categories in life and across all of human history: (1) Authority in the Divine Institutions; and (2) Authority in the realm of Bible Doctrine. See @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.
- (2) **Divine Institutions.** In the Divine Institutions proper authority protects human freedom, but there is always a delicate balance between freedom and authority. Freedom without authority is *anarchy* and authority without freedom is *tyranny*. Accordingly, for the Divine Institutions to function properly, privacy must be respected and protected.
- (3) **Biblical Terminology.** The primary words in the Bible used for authority include:
 - (a) *hupakouo* (to harken to a command). See Matt. 8:27; Lk. 8:25; Rom. 6:14-15; Eph. 6:1; Col. 3:20, 22; 1 Pet. 3:6.

LUKE 8:25

And He [Jesus] said to them [the disciples], “Where is your faith [*pistis* – the lack of Bible Doctrine retained in their soul and the failure to apply Faith/Rest to the problems associated with the storm on the Sea of Galilee]?” They were fearful [*phobeo* (afraid; dread; terror)] and amazed, saying to one another, “Who then is this, that He commands even the winds and the water, and they obey [*hupakouo* (to harken to a command)] Him?”

- (b) *hupotasso* (to be under absolute authority). See Jas. 4:7; 1 Pet. 5:5; Col. 3:18; 1 Cor. 14:32; Rom. 8:20; Eph. 5:22. This is the strongest Greek word for authority.

COLOSSIANS 3:18

Wives, be subject [*hupotasso*] to your husbands, as is fitting [*aneko* (to pertain to what is due) – God established the institution of marriage] in the LORD.

- (c) *peitho* (to obey). See Gal. 5:7; Heb. 13:17; Jas. 3:3.

GALATIANS 5:7

You [Believers in Galatia] were running well [in the Christian Way of Life]; who hindered you from obeying [*peitho*] the truth [their own negative [-N] volition]?

(4) Types of Authority.

- (a) **God's Authority.** God controls history under the Plan of God. *The Bible* is His absolute authority for the Believer [Jos. 1:8].
- (b) **Pastor/Teacher.** In the *local non-denominational Church*, the authority rests with the Pastor/Teacher. See 2 Cor. 10:8; Heb. 13:7; Isa. 54:17; 1 Thess. 5:12.

1 THESSALONIANS 5:12

But we [Paul's team] request you, brethren, that you appreciate those who diligently labor [*kopiaio* (to grow weary) – Pastor/Teacher who studies and teaches on a consistent basis] among you, and have charge over [*proistemi* (to preside over)] you in the LORD and give you instruction.

- (c) **Self.** Volitional self-“*discipline*” [1 Tim. 4:7] to learn God's truth is the key to the Believer's advance to spiritual maturity. “*Everyone who is of the truth hears My voice*” [Jn. 18:37]; 1 Cor. 9:24-27.

1 TIMOTHY 4:7

But have nothing to do with worldly fables fit only for old women. On the other hand, discipline [*gumnazo* (to practice for the games)] yourself for the purpose of godliness [*eusebeia* – reaching spiritual maturity].

(d) Authority in the Divine Institutions.

1. **Husband Over Wife.** In marriage, “*being under the authority of your husband*” [Num. 5:20], the wife obeys her husband. See Eph. 5:22; Col. 3:18; 1 Pet. 3:1-6; 1 Tim. 2:11-12. See *infra* (10).

2. **Parents Over Children.** *“Train up a child in the way he should go, even when he is old he will not depart from it”* [Prov. 22:6]. Both parents have authority over their minor children – *“we had earthly fathers to discipline us”* [Heb. 12:9-11]; *“my mother, who used to instruct me”* [S.S. 8:2]. See Col. 3:20; Deut. 6:6-9; 7:9. Such authority does not authorize abuse – *“do not provoke your children to anger, but bring them up in the discipline and instruction of the LORD”* [Eph. 6:1-4]. Children are spoiled by a *lack of training/discipline* from their parents not by giving them material things. *“A wise son makes a father glad, But a foolish son is a grief to his mother”* [Prov. 10:1].

COLOSSIANS 3:20

Children, be obedient [*hupakouo* (to harken to a command)] to your parents in all things, for this is well-pleasing to the LORD.

3. **Government Over Citizen.** Believers should *pray for those* in authority, e.g., that the person in charge will be “challenged” to follow the Divine Institutions. Believers must be *model citizens*. See Rom. 13:1-7; 1 Pet. 2:13-14; 1 Tim. 2:1-2.

1 PETER 2:13-14

Submit yourselves for the LORD’s sake to every human institution, whether to a king as the one in authority, or to governors [*hegemon* (a leader)] as sent by him for the punishment of evildoers and the praise of those who do right.

- (e) **Teacher.** Teacher over the student in academics. See Prov. 5:13.
 - (f) **Employer over Employee.** The employer, male or female, is the boss over the employee. See Eph. 6:5; Col. 3:22-25; Prov. 31:13-18, 24.
 - (g) **Military.** The entire rank structure is based on chains of command authority to prepare the soldier for the stress of combat [Neh. 4:13-15].
- (5) **Over Nature.** God has complete control over nature. *“I shall give you rains in their season, so that the land will yield it produce”* [Lev. 26:4]. See Job 5:10; 28:25-27; 36:26-33; Ps. 135:7; 147:8; 148:8; Jer. 10:13; Lk. 8:25.

JOB 5:10

He [**God**] gives rain on the earth and sends water on the fields.

- (6) **Over History.** God has *absolute authority* over time, space, and history to include all categories of angels. *“It is He who changes the times and the epochs; He removes kings and establishes kings”* [Dan. 2:21].
- (7) **Arrogance Rejects Authority.** Arrogance attacks all forms of legitimate authority. God “*opposes*” [1 Pet. 5:5-6] the Believer on negative [**-N**] volition who rejects lawful authority. See Jas. 4:6; Prov. 3:34; Heb. 13:7, 17.
- (8) **Adam and Eve.** Although Eve was deceived by Satan [1 Tim. 2:14], she committed the first sin stemming from her rejection of God’s authority [Gen. 3:16]. On the other hand, because *Adam’s sin was intentional*, he not only suffered Spiritual Death, like Eve, but the Old Sin Nature is now passed down genetically from Adam [the male in copulation] to all subsequent humans [1 Cor. 15:22; Col. 1:13-14]. See @@@ SIN.

1 CORINTHIANS 15:22

For as in Adam all die [*apothnesko (of eternal death) – Spiritual Death*], so also in Christ all will be made alive [*those who accept the gift of salvation*].

GENESIS 3:16

To the woman He [**God**] said, “I will greatly multiply your pain in childbirth, in pain you will bring forth children; yet your desire [*teshuqah*] will be for your husband, and he will rule [*mashal*] over you.”

COLOSSIANS 1:13-14

For He rescued us [**Believers**] from the domain of darkness [*skotos – Spiritual Death*], and transferred us to the kingdom [*basileia (royal domain)*] of His beloved Son, in whom we have redemption, the forgiveness of sins.

- (9) **Orientation to Authority.** Authority orientation is key to a healthy society and Christian growth. However, the full benefits from authority must come from the *true consent* of the person that is under that authority.

- (10) **Exercising Authority.** Those who exercise authority must exhibit *humility, patience, and sacrifice*. A good leader places the concerns of those under his care above his own wants and needs. See 2 Cor. 1:24; 1 Pet. 5:3; Eph. 5:25, 28. See @@@ MARRIAGE.

1 PETER 5:3

Nor yet as lording it over those allotted to your [the Pastor/Teacher] charge, but proving to be examples to the flock [Believers in the congregation].

EPHESIANS 5:28

So husbands ought also to love [*agapao (to love dearly)*] their own wives as their own bodies. He who loves his own wife loves himself.

- (11) **Jesus Christ Submitted.** “*For I have come down from heaven, not to do My own will, but the will of Him who sent me*” [Jn. 6:38]. Jesus Christ rejected calls to maintain His eternal and absolute “equality” with the other members of the Trinity and opted instead to submit to the authority of the Father’s Plan of God to take on the form of a true human in hypostatic union in order to go to the cross and provide the opportunity for salvation to all mankind. See Lk. 4:11-12; Heb. 2:14-15; Phil. 2:6-9; Jn. 10:34-38; 1 Tim. 4:10. See @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION.
- (12) **Disobey Authority.** The Believer must resist government commands when they *directly conflict with certain Bible Doctrine* dogmas, e.g., witnessing about Jesus [Acts 4:18-20; 5:29]; bowing to an image [Dan. 3:16-19]; praying to idols [Dan. 6:10]; and murdering infants [Ex. 1:17].

ACTS 4:18-20

And when they [the Jewish High Council] had summoned them [Peter and John], they commanded them not to speak or teach [*didasko (to hold discourse)*] at all in the name of Jesus. But Peter and John answered and said to them, “Whether it is right in the sight of God to give heed to you rather than to God, you be the judge; for we cannot stop speaking about what we have seen [*horao (a panoramic view)*] and heard [*akouo – Jesus Christ’s actual and historical resurrection from the dead*].”

@@@ BAPTISM

- (1) **Definition.** The English word *baptize* is a transliteration of the Greek word *baptizo* (to identify something with something else). The central meaning of baptize is an identification of one thing with another so that it is altered in some fashion. For example, Homer used the word to associate the weapon that pierced the eye of the Cyclops with the deed itself. Herodotus used the word to describe the new nature of a Greek soldier's spear as he dipped it into a bowl of pig's blood while "passing in review" of his commanding officer. Indeed, many Greek dramas would use the word *baptizo* to describe a person that had become drunk with wine as being "baptized," i.e., "identified" with the effects of the wine.
- (2) **John's Baptism.** John's Baptism – [WET]. John the Baptist as the Herald of the Messiah *carried the title* of Elijah [Mal. 3:1; 4:5; Lk. 7:27-28]. John's water baptism, where Believers "*were being baptized by him in the Jordan River, as they confessed their sins* (Rebound)" [Matt. 3:6] represented the physical arrival of the Kingdom of God to humanity by means of the 1st Advent of Jesus Christ and the start of His *three-year earthly ministry*. See Matt. 3:1-10; Jn. 1:25-33; Acts 19:4-5. John's ritual went beyond the Temple's washing rituals, and he would baptize only those who were *already* Believers. He would fully immerse the person under the water and then bring them up. Again, the ritual identified the Believer with the imminent coming of the Messiah, it was not for salvation. See also, Jn. 3:22 cf. Jn. 4:1-2, where Jesus' disciples performed water baptisms for the same purpose. [RITUAL].

MATTHEW 3:5-6

Then Jerusalem was going out to him [John the Baptist], and all Judea and all the district around the Jordan; and they were being baptized [*baptizo*] by him in the Jordan River, as they confessed [*exomologeo* (to acknowledge)] their sins [*hamarita* – positive [+P] volition born again Believers using the Rebound technique].

- (3) **Jesus' Baptism.** Jesus' Baptism – [WET]. Represented Jesus Christ's agreement to willingly *identify Himself* completely with the Plan of God to provide salvation by dying on the cross. Going into the water represented Jesus' death on the cross and coming up out of the water represented His resurrection from the dead [Matt. 3:13-17]. [RITUAL].

MATTHEW 3:13-17

Then Jesus arrived from Galilee at the Jordan *coming* to John, to be baptized [*baptizo*] by him. But John tried to prevent Him, saying, “I have need to be baptized by You, and do You come to me?” But Jesus answering said to him, “Permit *it* at this time; for in this way it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness [*the Plan of God*].” Then he permitted Him. After being baptized, Jesus came up immediately from the water [*hudo*]; and behold, the heavens were opened, and he saw the [*Holy*] Spirit of God descending as a dove *and* lighting on Him, and behold, a voice out of the heavens said, “This is My [*God the Father*] beloved Son, in whom I am well-pleased.”

- (4) **Believer’s Baptism.** Believer’s Baptism – [*WET*]. This ritual was purely an identification of a person already a Believer with the death of Jesus Christ on the cross. This is a *teaching tool for learning about Soteriology* and never a requirement for salvation. See Acts 8:36-38; 10:47-48; 16:33 [Gentiles who were baptized *after* believing in Christ]; Acts 22:16 [Saul, a Jew, was baptized *after* he was already saved per Acts 9:18; 22:8-11]. [*RITUAL*]. See @@@ SOTERIOLOGY.

ACTS 10:47-48

“Surely no one can refuse the water for these to be baptized [*baptizo*] who have received the Holy Spirit just as we *did*, can he [*Peter speaking to Jewish Believers*]?” And he ordered them to be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ. Then they [*Gentile Believers*] asked him to stay on for a few days.

- (a) **Seldom Mentioned.** The Believer’s water baptism ritual is only mentioned in the book of *Acts* and then once in 1 Cor. 1:11-18. Before the Bible was completed this baptism also put emphasis on teaching about Union with Christ. See @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST.
- (b) **Not Required For Salvation.** The Believer’s water baptism is *never a requirement for salvation* in any of the dispensations, Old Testament or New Testament. As a teaching tool for the early Church, it was optional for the Believer. In fact, it was actually a source of strife, as in *1st Corinthians* where Paul commented on how he couldn’t even recall all those he had water baptized, “*beyond that, I do not know whether I baptized any other*” [1 Cor. 1:16].

- (c) **Mark.** The added passage in Mk. 16:16, indicating water baptism as a requirement for salvation is *absolutely false*. The entire section of Mk. 16:9-20 [also speaking about snake handling and drinking poison] is not found in any of the oldest manuscripts of *Mark*.
- (d) **LORD's Supper.** The only ritual *commanded* for the Church Age is the communion supper instituted by Jesus Christ on the night He was betrayed. "*For as often as you eat this bread and drink the cup, you proclaim the LORD's death until He comes*" [1 Cor. 11:24-26].
- (5) **Red Sea Baptism.** The Baptism of Moses – [DRY]. An identification of the Exodus Jews with the Cloud [Jesus Christ] as a Theophany [1 Cor. 10:1-2]. Note: only the pursuing Egyptians went completely under the actual water and died, "*not even one of them remained*" [Ex. 14:24-28]. [REAL].

1 CORINTHIANS 10:1-2

For I [Paul] do not want you to be unaware, brethren, that our fathers [the Jews] were all under the cloud and all passed through the sea; and all were baptized [baptizo] into Moses in the cloud and in the sea.

- (6) **Baptism of the Cross.** Baptism of the Cross – [DRY]. *Jesus is identified with all the sins of the world* [Matt. 20:22-23; 26:28, 39, 42; Lk. 12:50]. This unique baptism occurred only once at the cross. See @@@ CUP, where Jesus Christ identifies himself with sin by drinking from a "*cup*" [Mk. 10:38] that held all human sin – past, present, and future. [REAL]. See @@@ CROSS.

LUKE 12:50

But I [Jesus] have a baptism [baptizo] to undergo [Jesus will be identified with all the sins of the world], and how distressed [sunecho (to be pressed on every side)] I am until it is accomplished [teleo (to bring to a close; to finish)].

- (7) **Baptism of Fire.** Baptism of Fire – [DRY]. All unBelievers then on the earth at the 2nd Advent of Jesus Christ are *identified with fire*. All unBelievers are removed from the earth, and the 1,000-year rule of Christ begins [Isa. 24:6; Lk. 3:16-17; 2 Thess. 1:7-9; Matt. 3:11; 25:31-46]. The "*coming of the Son of Man will be just like the days of Noah*" [Matt. 24:36-41], where Believers are left on earth and all unBelievers are taken away. [REAL].

LUKE 3:16-17

John [John the Baptist] answered and said to them all [Believers and unBelievers], “As for me, I baptize [baptizo] you with water [hudor]; but One [Jesus Christ] is coming who is mightier than I, and I am not fit to untie the thong of His sandals; He will baptize [baptizo] you with the Holy Spirit and fire [pur]. His winnowing fork is in His hand to thoroughly clear His threshing floor, and to gather the wheat [Believers] into His barn [apotheke (a storehouse) – only Believers go into the Millennium and Heaven]; but He will burn [katakaio (consume by fire)] up the chaff [unBelievers] with unquenchable [asbestos (of eternal hell fire) – Hell] fire.”

ISAIAH 24:6

Therefore, a curse devours [akal (to eat up)] the earth [erets], and those who live in it are held guilty. Therefore, the inhabitants of the earth are burned, and few men are left [only the remaining Believers go into the Millennium].

(8) **Baptism of Holy Spirit.** Baptism of the Holy Spirit – [DRY]. [REAL].

- (a) **A New Thing.** The Baptism of the Holy Spirit never occurred in the Old Testament and is part of the mystery doctrines for the Church Age only. The Holy Spirit now *Indwells every Believer* in the Church Age. At His ascension, Jesus predicted that this dry baptism would first occur, “*not many days from now*” [Acts 1:5]. The start of the Church Age was ten days later on the day of Pentecost. See Jn. 14:16-17; 15:26.

ACTS 1:5

For John [John the Baptist] baptized [baptizo] with water, but you [Believers] will be baptized [baptizo] with the Holy Spirit not many days from now [ten days later].

- (b) **Grand Opening.** The dry baptism of the Holy Spirit signaled the *grand opening of the Church Age*. See Matt. 16:15; Acts 1:5; 2:3; 11:15-17 [showing the Gentile Pentecost]. The spectacular signs and temporary special gifts that accompanied the Holy Spirit’s dry baptism of some selected Believers at this fabulous announcement to the world was a very short-lived overt manifestation.

- (c) **Mechanics.** The mechanics of the dry baptism of the Holy Spirit post Pentecost era. It is neither seen nor felt [1 Cor. 12:13]. The dry baptism of the Holy Spirit occurs at the moment of faith in Jesus Christ [Col. 2:12; Eph. 1:13; Tit. 3:5; Gal. 3:26-29]. Again, the spectacular dry baptism results of flames of fire, miracles, etc., were only extant for some Believers at the very beginning of the Church Age.
- (d) **Equality.** The dry baptism of God the Holy Spirit is a sign of the *unification/equality* of all Believers in the Church Age. Indeed, the only equality in the world is provided by God where every Believer has equal opportunity to reach spiritual maturity and become a subject matter expert witness exhibit to glorify God [Eph. 4:4-5; Gal. 3:26-29].

GALATIANS 3:26-29

For you are all sons [*uihos*] of God through faith [*pistis – the means of salvation is by faith alone*] in Christ Jesus. For all of you who were baptized [*baptizo*] into Christ [*dry baptism of the Holy Spirit*] have clothed yourselves with Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek [*hellen*], there is neither slave nor free man, there is neither male nor female; for you are all one in Christ Jesus. And if you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham's descendants, heirs [*kleronomos (one who receives his allotted portion by right of sonship)*] according to promise [*epaggelia (the act of promising a good) – salvation by grace*].

EPHESIANS 4:4-5

There is one body [*soma – all Believers are in Union with Christ*] and one [*Holy*] Spirit, just as also you were called [*kaleo (to utter with a loud voice)*] in one hope [*elpis (confidence)*] of your calling; one LORD [*kurios (God) – Jesus Christ the Savior*], one faith [*pistis – salvation by faith alone in Christ*], one baptism [*baptisma – the dry baptism mechanics of the Holy Spirit at salvation*].

- (e) **Resolves the Angelic Conflict.** The Devil's back is broken! In the Old Testament the Holy Spirit only *regenerated* all Believers, e.g., the woman was renamed Eve to show that she had eternal life. There was no dry baptism of the Holy Spirit in the Old Testament. See Heb. 2:7-15; Col. 2:15. See @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT.

- (f) **Retroactive.** The Holy Spirit's dry baptism marks a retroactive identification with Christ in His death. *See* Rom. 6:3-4; Col. 2:12; 3:1. *See* @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST.

COLOSSIANS 2:12

Having been buried with Him [Jesus Christ] in baptism [*baptisma* – Holy Spirit's], in which you [all Believers] were also raised up with [*sunegeiro* (to cause to raise together)] Him through faith [*pistis* – salvation by faith alone in Christ alone] in the working [*energeia* (superhuman power)] of God, who raised Him [Jesus Christ] from the dead.

- (g) **Positional Truth.** The dry baptism of God the Holy Spirit is the basis of Current Positional Truth [Eph. 1:3-6; 2:6; Col. 2:10; 1 Cor. 12:13].

1 CORINTHIANS 12:13

For by one [Holy] Spirit we were all baptized [*baptizo*] into one body, whether Jews or Greeks [*hellen*], whether slaves or free, and we were all made to drink of one Spirit [*saving ministry of the Holy Spirit*].

- (h) **Permanent.** The Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit *never departs* the Believer, but He can be grieved and quenched by the Believer as to Fellowship/Filling in time. *See* Eph. 4:30; 1 Thess. 5:19.
- (9) **The Great Commission.** The Great Commission – [DRY]. In Matt. 28:19, the resurrected LORD Jesus Christ gives the future Apostles for the Church Age the command to identify [baptize], new Believers and Churches with the *teaching of the full realm of Bible Doctrine*. [REAL]. *See* @@@ WITNESSING.

MATTHEW 28:19

Go therefore [the resurrected Jesus Christ speaking to the future Apostles] and make disciples [*matheteuo* (students)] of all the nations [*ethnos*], baptizing [*baptizo* – the identification of Church Age Believers with the full Plan of God to reach spiritual maturity] them in the name of the Father [*pater*] and the Son [*uihos*] and the Holy Spirit [the Trinity and the primacy of Bible Doctrine].

@@@ BIBLE

- (1) **Definition.** The Bible is a collection of writings by human authors inspired by God the Holy Spirit to *reveal God's truth* to humans, the earliest being the *Pentateuch* or *Torah* [the first five books of the Bible written by Moses circa 1,400 B.C.] and the last written by John in A.D. 96. The Bible is divided into the Old Testament and the New Testament under the concept of the progression of Divine revelation to man under the Plan of God.
 - (a) **Old Testament.** The last book of the Old Testament is *Malachi* written around 450 B.C., from the kingdom of Judea, the Jews having come out of the Babylonian captivity [586-516 B.C.] via the Persians.
 - (b) **New Testament.** New Testament books were all written between circa A.D. 40 to 96. The writers were all eyewitnesses to Jesus Christ in the flesh or the direct and contemporary associates of eyewitnesses, e.g., Luke and Mark. Numerous recovered copies and tens of thousands of fragments of manuscripts date back almost to the very time of the *autographs*, making the Bible purer in content than any other book from antiquity – in a form that is well over 99.75 percent accurate!
 - (c) **Translation.** One of the best modern English translations is the New American Standard Bible, although the King James Bible is a wonderfully accurate translation if one understands the old English.
- (2) **New Testament Greek.** *Koine* (common) Greek [Common Greek] is the original written language of the New Testament books [*Matthew* may have been written in both Aramaic and Greek]. Although most of the writers spoke Aramaic they wrote in *Koine* Greek, the international language of the day in the eastern part of the Roman Empire [Latin was used in the western half].
- (3) **The Very Word of God.** The Bible is inerrant and is the inspired Word of God per *infra* (8). *Jesus endorsed* all the Old Testament scriptures, to include the *Torah* written by Moses [Ex. 24:4]. “*If you believed Moses, you would believe Me, for he wrote about Me*” [Jn. 5:46]. Jesus always responded to His testings [and in His teachings] with Bible verses from the Old Testament – “*it is written*” [Matt. 4:7]. Thus, “*the Scripture cannot be broken*” [Jn. 10:35] and is dogmatic without error in the original autographs. Further, every Greek verb has three parts making communication precise.

TENSE – kind of action:

- (a) Present = Continuous Action.
(also Imperfect)
- (b) Perfect = Completed Action.
- (c) Aorist = Occurring Action.

VOICE – relationship of the verb to the subject:

- (a) Active = Subject produces the action of the Verb.
- (b) Passive = Subject receives the action of the Verb.
- (c) Middle = Subject is benefited by the action of the Verb.

MOOD – relationship of the verb to reality:

- (a) Indicative = Actual reality.
- (b) Subjunctive = Reality is only a potential.
- (c) Imperative = A command.
- (d) Optative = Expression of a desire or wish.

SYNTAX – the way words are arranged in a sentence, e.g., conditional clauses:

- (a) First Class Condition [FCC] = Assumed true. “If” – *ei* + the verb in the indicative. *See, e.g., Col. 3:1.*
 - (b) Second Class Condition [SCC] = Assumed not true. “If” – *ei* + imperfect tense, aorist, or pluperfect. The *ean* is always put in front.
 - (c) Third Class Condition [TCC] = Maybe it is true, and maybe it is false. “If” – *ean* + verb in the subjunctive mood. *See, e.g., 1 Jn. 1:9.*
 - (d) Fourth Class Condition = I wish it were true, but it is not true. “If” – *ei* = verb in the optative mood. *See, e.g., 1 Pet. 3:14.*
- (4) **Granville Sharp Rule.** If two or more nouns are joined by the conjunction *kai* (and) and only the first noun has a definite article, then all subsequent nouns refer to the same thing. *See, e.g., Eph. 3:18.*
- (5) **Etymology.** The study of the meaning of words, e.g., *plerooma* has three meanings (to fill up a deficiency; to fully influence; to possess something).
- (6) **Hermeneutics.** Hermeneutics is the study of the methodological principles of interpretation.
- (a) **Isagogical.** Bible verses must be interpreted in the time in which they were written. This provides accurate understanding.

- (b) **Categorical.** Subject matter of Scripture must be compared to other subject matter of Scripture and then set out in fixed categories of truth. Thus, the term “Bible Doctrine” refers to the existence of interlocking categories of God’s truth found throughout all the books of the Bible [see Heb. 6:1-3 for a listing of basic Christian Doctrines]. Indeed, learning the categories of Bible Doctrine is how the Believer grows to maturity, “*until we all attain the unity of the faith, and the knowledge of the Son of God, to a mature man*” [Eph. 4:13]. Thus, it is critical that the Believer metabolizes the Bible Doctrines therein so that he can actualize the comforting power of Scripture to the exigencies of his life so that “*my mind instructs me in the night*” [Ps. 16:7]; Jos. 1:8-9.

JOSHUA 1:8-9

This book of the law shall not depart from your mouth, but you shall meditate on it day and night, so that you may be careful [*shamar (to keep watch)*] to do according to all that is written in it; for then you will make your way prosperous [*rewards in time and eternity*], and then you will have success. Have I [*God*] not commanded you? Be strong and courageous! Do not tremble or be dismayed, for the LORD your God is with you wherever you go.

- (c) **Exegetical.** To accurately interpret the meaning of the original text the Pastor/Teacher must know the original languages or rely on another trusted language expert that knows them.
- (d) **Law of Unity.** All Scripture fits together perfectly as “*every word of God is tested*” [Prov. 30:5]. There are no contradictions whatsoever found in the Bible. All God’s words are entirely true, unalterable, and eternal in all that they reveal! “*The sum of your word is truth, And every one of your righteous ordinances is everlasting*” [Ps. 119:160]. As Jesus Christ stated: “*Do not think that I came to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I did not come to abolish but to fulfill*” [Matt. 5:17].
- (e) **Progression of the Bible.** Scripture is progressive in revelation. For instance, revelations about the person and mission of the coming Messiah Jesus Christ began as the “*seed*” of the woman in Gen. 3:15 [Isa. 7:14] and became more and more numerous and precise throughout the Old Testament writings, e.g., naming the place of His birth, “*Bethlehem*” [Mic. 5:2] and manner of His death [Ps. 22].

-
- (f) **Law of First Mention.** The first time that a word appears in a body of text determines the predominant meaning of that word when it is next encountered in the same text.
 - (g) **Proper Interpretation.** The true object of accurate interpretation is to appreciate the exact thoughts of the writer of the document. “*For what does the Scripture say?*” [Rom. 4:3; Gal. 4:30]; “*Have you not read ...?*” [Matt. 19:4]. Accordingly, for the strict constructionist the only goal and true issue is: “What did the *writer* think and express [the Holy Spirit inspiring him to pen the words]?” It is never: “What do *you* think?” Liberal scholars reject this approach and superimpose their own thoughts washed in human good or emotion on what *they* want the Bible to mean. Living in the Cosmic Systems they erroneously think only in terms of self-sufficiency and arrogance.
 - (h) **Plenary Aspects.** While all Scripture in the Word of God is absolutely true some portions of Bible Doctrine *hold deeper truths* and value than others. For example, understanding the doctrine of salvation by grace is incalculably more important than understanding the workings of the Divine Institutions.
 - (i) **Law of Reoccurrence.** Bible Doctrines are repeated over and over throughout the books of the Bible. Repetition is necessary to assist the Believer to learn the materials and concepts, until they are *reflexive in nature*. “*O how I love Your law! It is my meditation all the day. Your commandments make me wiser than my enemies, for they are ever mine*” [Ps. 119:97-98]; Jos. 1:8; Ps. 1:2.
- (7) **Content of Scripture.**
- (a) **Revelation of the Word.** The Holy Spirit directed the writers of the Bible so that without setting aside their human mind, personality, background, or vocabulary God’s complete message is recorded with perfect accuracy in the original languages. It is *theopneustos* (God-breathed) to the human author. In short, once finalized and set out in writing, every single word – “*all Scripture is inspired by God*” – is *exactly as God intends it to be* [2 Tim. 3:16-17]. See 2 Sam. 23:2-3; Isa. 59:21; Job 32:18; Acts 4:24-25; 28:25; Mk. 12:36; Jer. 1:6-9; Matt. 22:42-44; Mic. 3:8; Heb. 3:7; Ps. 119:160; Jn. 17:17.

2 TIMOTHY 3:16-17

All Scripture is inspired by God [*theopneustos* (God-breathed)] and profitable for teaching [*didaskalia* – the prepared Pastor/Teacher], for reproof [*elegchos* (a proof; evidence)], for correction [*epanorthosis* (restoration to an upright state)], for training [*paideia* (the whole education of children)] in righteousness [*dikaiosune* – learning the Plan of God]; so that the man of God [positive [+P] volition Believer] may be adequate, equipped [*exartizo* (to furnish perfectly)] for every good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] work.

JEREMIAH 1:6-9

Then I [Jeremiah] said, “Alas, LORD [*adonay*] God! Behold, I do not know how to speak [he was called to be a Prophet to Judah], because I am a youth.” But the LORD [*Jehovah*] said to me, “Do not say, ‘I am a youth,’ because everywhere I send you, you shall go, and all that I command you, you shall speak. Do not be afraid of them, for I am with you to deliver you,” declares the LORD. Then the LORD stretched out His hand and touched my mouth, and the LORD said to me, “Behold, I have put My words in your mouth.”

- (b) **Communication.** God communicated every book in the Bible to individual writers in a variety of ways to include: (1) direct words – “*then I heard the voice of the LORD*” [Isa. 6:8-10]; Acts 28:25; (2) dreams – “*the LORD appeared to Solomon in a dream at night*” [1 Kngs. 3:5]; Num. 12:6; Gen. 15:12; 31:10-13, 24; Dan. 10:9; Joel 2:28; Matt. 1:20-24; 2:12-13; Acts 1:20-24]; (3) visions – “*the vision of Isaiah*” [Isa. 1:1]; 1 Kngs. 22:19; Joel 2:28; Dan. 7:13; Ezk. 1:3; and (4) teaching angels – “*the word spoken through angels*” [Heb. 2:2]; Dan. 8:16; Deut. 33:2; Acts 7:38, 53; 10:3-19; 11:5-18; Gal. 3:19; Ps. 68:17; Heb. 2:2; 2 Pet. 3:1-2; Rev. 1:1.

2 PETER 3:1-2

This is now, beloved, the second letter I [Peter] am writing to you in which I am stirring up your sincere mind by way of reminder, that you should remember [*mimnesko* (to be recalled to mind)] the words spoken beforehand by the holy prophets and the commandment of the LORD and Savior *spoken* by your apostles [the content of the Bible].

- (c) **Church Age.** With the completed Bible, God only *speaks in the Church Age through His written word* which is taught via the prepared Pastor/Teacher to Believers. See 1 Cor. 13:8-10.

1 CORINTHIANS 13:8-10

Love [*agape – impersonal love*] never fails [*pipto (phased out)*]; but if *there are gifts of prophecy*, they will be done away [*katargeo (abolished; ceased; canceled out)*]; if *there are tongues*, they will cease [*pauo (to stop)*]; if *there is [the gift of] knowledge*, it will be done away. For we [**Believers**] know in part [*in the pre-canon period of the Church Age*] and we prophesy in part; but when the perfect [*teleios (completed) – the word teleios is in the neuter which refers to a thing and not a person, i.e., the completed Bible*] comes [*Revelation was written in A.D. 96 and completed the Bible*], the partial [*meros – the temporary spectacular gifts of the early Church*] will be done away [*katargeo*].

- (d) **Inspiration of the Bible.** Per *supra* (7)(a), God the Holy Spirit directed the writers of the Bible to produce the text in the original languages. “*The Spirit of the LORD spoke by me (David), and His word was on my tongue*” [2 Sam. 23:2]; 2 Pet. 1:20-21; Isa. 30:8; Eph. 3:3-5; Rev. 1:3, 11, 19; 2:1, 8, 12, 18; 3:1, 7, 14. For example, Paul knew at the time that he was producing Holy Scripture as part of the Bible [1 Thess. 4:15; 5:27]. Further, Paul confirmed both Old and New Testament passages as part of the Holy Scripture per 1 Tim. 5:18, when he quoted both Deut. 25:4 [about muzzling the ox] and Lk. 10:7 [Jesus’ recorded words about the laborer and his wages]. Peter also knew that both his and Paul’s writings were inspired by the Holy Spirit – “*as also our beloved brother Paul, according to the wisdom given him wrote to you, as also in all his letters*” [2 Pet. 3:15-16]. Isaiah, whose teaching and writing ministry extended for over four decades, referred to his previous writings as part of “*the book of the LORD*” [Isa. 34:16]. Finally, all such inspiration ended with the completed canon of Scripture in A.D. 96 [Rev. 22:18-19].

1 THESSALONIANS 5:27

I [**Paul**] adjure [*horkizo (solemnly implore)*] you by the LORD to have this letter [*epistole – the letter Paul wrote under inspiration of the Holy Spirit*] read [*anaginosko (to know accurately) – by a Pastor/Teacher*] to all the brethren.

ISAIAH 30:8

Now go, write it [**the Word of God communicated to Isaiah**] on a tablet before them and inscribe it on a scroll, that it [**Bible Doctrine**] may serve in the time to come as a witness forever.

2 PETER 1:20-21

But know this first of all, that no prophecy of Scripture is *a matter* of one's own interpretation [*epilysis*], for no prophecy was ever made by an act of human will, but men moved by the Holy Spirit spoke from God.

EPHESIANS 3:3-5

That by revelation there was made known to me [**Paul**] the mystery, as I wrote before in brief. By referring to this, when you read you can understand my insight into the mystery of Christ [**Paul knew he was writing portions of the New Testament**], which in other generations was not made known to the sons of men, as it has now been revealed to His holy apostles and prophets in [*by*] the Spirit [**all of the Bible is inspired by the Holy Spirit**].

- (e) **Interpretation and Communication.** This function is now provided to the Believer through the *gift of the prepared Pastor/Teacher*.
- (8) **The Trinity.** All three members of the Trinity think *exactly alike* in terms of the Bible. “***Is not My word like fire, declares the LORD?***” [Jer. 23:29]. The phrase, “***Thus says the LORD,***” or its equivalent, appears over 2,000 times in the Old Testament showing that the words come directly from God; the New Testament refers to Old Testament passages over 300 times. Again, Jesus Christ endorsed the absolute veracity of the Old Testament. “***Then beginning with Moses and with all the prophets, He explained to them the things concerning Himself in all the Scriptures***” [Lk. 24:25-27]; Jn. 5:39-47! Further, the slight changes to certain Old Testament passages quoted anew in New Testament passages simply means that the Holy Spirit *intends to amplify or record new truths*, e.g., Amos 9:1; cf. Acts 15:16.
- (a) **Word of God.** The Bible reflects the unchangeable thoughts of God the Father. “***For the word of God is living and active and sharper than any two-edged sword***” [Heb. 4:12]; Lk. 24:25-27.

HEBREWS 4:12

For the word of God is living and active [*energes* (powerful)] and sharper than any two-edged sword, and piercing as far as the division of soul [*psuche*] and spirit [*pneuma* – the human spirit], of both joints and marrow, and able to judge the thoughts and intentions of the heart.

LUKE 24:25-27

And He [*Jesus*] said to them, “O foolish men and slow of heart to believe [*pisteuo*] in all that the prophets have spoken! Was it not necessary for the Christ to suffer these things and to enter into His glory?” Then beginning with Moses and with all the prophets, He explained [*di hermeneuo* (to unfold the meaning)] to them the things concerning Himself in all the Scriptures.

- (b) **Mind of Christ.** The Bible is the very eternal “*mind*” of the LORD Jesus Christ [1 Cor. 2:14-16]. “*His name is called the Word of God*” [Rev. 19:13] which constitutes what is labeled as “*the fullness of Christ*” [Eph. 4:13], a mindset of decision making which Believers are commanded to “*all attain*.” See Rev. 19:11-16; Gal. 4:19.

1 CORINTHIANS 2:14-16

But a natural [*psuchikos* (soulish) – the unBeliever has a soul but no human spirit] man does not accept the things of the Spirit of God [the author of Bible Doctrine], for they are foolishness to him; and he cannot understand them, because they are spiritually appraised. But he who is spiritual [*pneumatikos* (relating to the human spirit) – the Believer has a human spirit] appraises all things, yet he himself is appraised by no one [Law of Liberty]. For who has known the mind of the LORD [the thinking of Jesus Christ], that he will instruct Him? But we have the mind of Christ [Pastor/Teachers ready to teach].

- (c) **Holy Spirit.** “*All Scripture is inspired by God*” [2 Tim. 3:16-17] – *theopneustos* (God-breathed). The words of the Bible constitute the very thoughts of God the Holy Spirit, “*the sword of the (Holy) Spirit, which is the word of God*” [Eph. 6:17]; 2 Pet. 1:20-21; 1 Cor. 2:11. Further, the Holy Spirit is *directly responsible* for making the full scope of Bible Doctrine available by means of a prepared Pastor/Teacher to any Believer that desires to learn and thereby grow to spiritual maturity.

1 CORINTHIANS 2:11

For who among men knows the *thoughts* of a man except the spirit [*pneuma*] of the man which is in him [*only Believers have a human spirit*]? Even so the *thoughts* of God no one knows except the Spirit of God [*the Holy Spirit provides the thoughts of the Trinity through the Bible*].

- (9) **Corrupted Passages.** There were very few scriptural errors in the first widespread printed version of the English Bible – the King James Bible. By far and away, the largest and most insidious is Mk. 16:9-20. These verses are not in any of the oldest manuscripts of *Mark* and are not mentioned at all by the early Church fathers [the first and second century letters are so extensive with quotations that one could reconstruct a complete New Testament].
- (10) **Command to Learn.** The Bible is God's *strict academic textbook*, not a good luck charm. God commands that mastering the Bible must be the Believer's top priority so that he can be "*conformed to the image of His Son*" [Rom. 8:29]. "*For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments; and His commandments are not burdensome*" [1 Jn. 5:3]. "*If anyone comes to Me, and does not hate his own father and mother and wife and children and brothers and sisters, yes, and even his own life, he cannot be My disciple*" [Lk. 14:26]. See Matt. 4:4; 1 Pet. 2:2; Heb. 5:12-14; 13:9; 1 Tim. 4:6; Jn. 4:14; 2 Pet. 3:17-18; 2 Tim. 2:15.

2 TIMOTHY 2:15

Be diligent [*spoudazo* (to exert one's self) – *the consistent study of Bible Doctrine as the number one priority in life*] to present yourself approved to God as a workman who does not need to be ashamed [*anepaischuntos* – *at the Judgment Seat of Christ Believers are evaluated for rewards*], accurately handling the word of truth [*aletheia* – *applying Doctrine to life's problems*].

- (11) **Defends the Believer.** The Bible is the Believer's *absolute defense* against the influences of the Cosmic Systems [Eph. 6:17]. See @@@ DEMONISM.

EPHESIANS 6:17

And take the helmet of salvation [*soterion* (he who embodies this salvation)], and the sword of the [*Holy*] Spirit, which is the word of God.

- (12) **Power of God's Word Exists Forever.** The Bible is the eternal “*power of God*” [2 Tim. 1:7-8] that reveals His glory and truth to mankind. This “*power*” is the Believer’s absolute authority [Ps. 138:2] for his life and the only means to reach the status of a “*mature man*” [Eph. 4:13; Heb. 5:14]. Accordingly, as the “*mind of Christ*” [1 Cor. 2:16], “*the words of the LORD are pure words*” [Ps. 12:6] which existed “*from everlasting*” [Prov. 8:23] and *exist forever and ever*. See Prov. 8:1-36; 1 Pet. 1:23-25; Isa. 40:8.

ISAIAH 40:8

The grass withers, the flower fades, but the word of our God stands forever.

1 PETER 1:23-25

For you have been born again not of seed which is perishable but imperishable, *that is*, through the living and enduring word of God. For, “All flesh is like grass, and all its glory like the flower of grass. The grass withers, and the flower falls off, but the word of the LORD [Bible Doctrine] endures [*meno (to remain)*] forever [*aion (eternity)*].” And this is the word which was preached to you.

- (13) **Bible Explains.** Apart from revealing the three main categories of truth – the Divine Institutions, the Gospel, and Bible Doctrine – the Bible extends to:
- (a) **The Unknown Past.** For example, God originally made the earth perfect and “*did not create it a waste place*” [Isa. 45:18]. But at Satan’s 1st Fall in the Angelic Conflict the earth was locked in an ice pack where “*darkness was over the surface of the deep (water)*” [Gen. 1:1-2]; Rom. 8:20-22. During this unknown time there was no energy on the earth and no rational creature lived there. See @@@ WORLD.
 - (b) **Ancient History.** Although the Bible is not a history book, all events described are absolutely accurate.
 - (c) **The Divine Institutions.** This category of God’s Truth is designed for all mankind to observe, Believers and unBelievers.
 - (d) **The Gospel.** This category of God’s Truth reveals the mechanics of salvation and is designed for the unBeliever. See Gal. 3:22.

GALATIANS 3:22

But the Scripture has shut up everyone under sin [it clearly shows that man is a sinner and God is Perfect], so that the promise by faith [salvation faith] in Jesus Christ might be given to those who believe [*pisteuo* – saving faith].

- (e) **Maturity.** Truths for **Winner** Believer to reach maturity [Eph. 4:13].
 - (f) **Records Falsehoods.** The Bible records various falsehoods and lies as they were uttered, e.g., Satan's in Gen. 3:4.
 - (g) **Prophetic Passages.** Hundreds of detailed and specific prophecies.
- (14) **Opposition Techniques.** Opposition techniques to the Bible include: (1) name calling; (2) human viewpoint; (3) superiority of human morality; (4) religion; (5) card stacking techniques, mixing truth with error; (6) bandwagon approach, i.e., all scholars agree; and (7) so-called “new Divine revelations,” falsely claiming extra-Biblical writings, teachings, or man-made traditions as essential supplements to the Word of God. “*See to it that no one takes you captive through philosophy and empty deception, according to the tradition of men, according to the elementary principles of the world, rather than according to Christ*” [Col. 2:8]; Rev. 22:18-19; Prov. 30:5-6; Mk. 7:6-9.

PROVERBS 30:5-6

Every word of God is tested; He is a shield to those who take refuge in Him. Do not add to His words Or He will reprove you, and you will be proved a liar.

MARK 7:6-9

And He [Jesus] said to them [the Pharisees and religious scribes], “Rightly did Isaiah prophesy of you hypocrites, as it is written: ‘This people honors Me with their lips, but their heart is far away from Me. But in vain do they worship Me, teaching as doctrines the precepts of men.’ Neglecting the commandment of God [Bible Doctrine], you hold to the tradition of men.” He was also saying to them, “You are experts at setting aside the commandment of God in order to keep your tradition.”

@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE

- (1) **Definition.** The highest virtue in the Christian Way of Life is for the Believer to gain the full knowledge of all the dogmatically fixed categories of God's revealed truths in the Bible, termed *Bible Doctrine* – the “*mind of Christ*” [1 Cor. 2:16]; Jer. 9:23-24; Eph. 3:18. Bible Doctrine is “*better than gold, even pure gold*” [Prov. 8:19]. These truths in the Bible fall into *three categories*:
 - (a) **Category I Truth** – **The Divine Institutions**. This is designed for all mankind to employ in living their lives on the earth.
 - (b) **Category II Truth** – **Gospel of Salvation**. Designed for the unBeliever to be saved.
 - (c) **Category III Truth** – **All Bible Doctrine**. Designed for the positive [+P] volition **Winner** Believer to reach spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1].
- (2) **Exists Forever.** “*From everlasting I (Bible Doctrine) was established*” [Prov. 8:23]. Jesus Christ affirmed: “*Heaven and earth will pass away, but My words will not pass away*” [Matt. 24:35]. Its power reveals the only path for salvation and union with God [Jn. 5:39-40; 1 Pet. 1:23-25; 1 Cor. 2:16].

1 PETER 1:23-25

For you have been born again [*anagennao* – by faith in Jesus Christ] not of seed which is perishable but imperishable, *that is*, through the living and enduring word of God. For, “All flesh is like grass, and all its glory like the flower of grass. The grass withers, and the flower falls off, but the word of the LORD endures forever.” And this is the word which was preached to you.

JOHN 5:39-40

You search the Scriptures because you think that in them you have eternal life; it is these that testify about Me [**Jesus Christ the Savior**]; and you are unwilling to come to Me so that you may have life.

- (3) **Related to the Trinity.** Bible Doctrine directly relates to *all three members* of the Trinity [Matt. 28:13]: (1) God the Father [Heb. 4:12]; (2) God the Son [1 Cor. 2:16]; and (3) God the Holy Spirit [2 Tim. 3:16; 2 Pet. 1:21].

- (4) **Command to Learn.** The Believer is *commanded to learn* the full realm of the various categories of Bible Doctrine so that he can reach spiritual maturity and receive rewards which glorify God. See Prov. 8:8-11, 33; 23:12; 2 Tim. 2:15; Col. 1:10-11; Deut. 6:6-7; Matt. 4:4; Philp. 2:5; Jn. 8:31-32.

PROVERBS 23:12

Apply your heart [*leb (mind)*] to discipline [*set proper priorities in life to reach spiritual maturity*] and your ears to words of knowledge [*Bible Doctrine*].

2 TIMOTHY 2:15

Be diligent [*spoudazo (to hasten)*] to present yourself approved [*dokimos (acceptable)*] to God as a workman who does not need to be ashamed [*anepaischuntos (having no cause to be ashamed)*] – at the Judgment Seat of Christ only those Believers who reach some level of spiritual maturity will receive rewards], accurately handling [*orthotomeo (to cut straight)*] the word of truth [*aletheia – the positive [+P] volition Believer applying Bible Doctrine to problems in life in the Angelic Conflict*].

JOHN 8:31-32

So Jesus was saying to those Jews who had believed [*pisteuo*] Him, “If you continue in My word [*the Believer who is on positive [+P] volition to learn Bible Doctrine*], then you are truly disciples of Mine; and you will know the truth [*Bible Doctrine produces discernment*], and the truth will make you free [*eleutheroo – from the thinking of the Cosmic Systems and human good*].”

MATTHEW 4:4

But He [*Jesus*] answered and said, “It is written, ‘Man shall not live on bread alone, but on every word [*Bible Doctrine*] that proceeds [*ekporeuomai (to go forth)*] out of the mouth of God.’”

PHILIPPIANS 2:5

Have this [*mental*] attitude [*phroneo (to have understanding; wisdom)*] – the positive [*+P*] volition Believer is commanded to think Bible Doctrine in his decision making processes] in yourselves which was also in Christ Jesus.

DEUTERONOMY 6:6-7

These words [**Bible Doctrine**], which I am commanding you today, shall be on your heart [**leb (mind)**]. You shall teach them diligently to your sons and shall talk of them when you sit in your house and when you walk by the way and when you lie down and when you rise up.

PROVERBS 8:8-11, 33

All the utterances of my mouth [**Bible Doctrine**] are in righteousness; there is nothing crooked or perverted in them. They are all straightforward to him who understands, and right to those who find knowledge [**the positive [+P] volition Believer**]. Take my instruction and not silver, and knowledge rather than choicest gold. For wisdom is better than jewels; and all desirable things cannot compare with her. ... Heed instruction and be wise [**by reaching spiritual maturity**], and do not neglect *it*.

- (5) **Pastor/Teacher.** The spiritual gift of Pastor/Teacher is given to certain undeserving male Believers. Their sole responsibility before the LORD is to **accurately communicate Bible Doctrine** in a local Church on a consistent basis over the course of time so that the positive [+P] volition **Winner Believer** can grow to “**maturity**” [Heb. 6:1]. The Pastor/Teacher must never force the volition or violate the privacy of the hearer in his communication of the Word. See Prov. 8:34-36; 1 Tim. 4:16; Isa. 28:10; Eccl. 12:9.

1 TIMOTHY 4:16

Pay close attention to yourself [**Pastor/Teacher Timothy's personal spiritual growth**] and to your teaching [**didaskalia (that which is taught) – Bible Doctrine**]; persevere in these things, for as you do this you will ensure salvation [**sozo (to deliver) – to deliver the baby Believer to the spiritually mature Believer**] both for yourself and for those who hear [**akouo**] you [**Timothy will also grow**].

ECCLESIASTES 12:9

In addition to being a wise man, the Preacher [**Solomon**] also taught the people knowledge [**Bible Doctrine**]; and he pondered, searched out and arranged many proverbs.

PROVERBS 8:34-36

“Blessed is the man [Believer desiring knowledge of Bible Doctrine] who listens to me [Bible Doctrine], Watching [*shaqad* (to watch; be alert)] daily [*yom* – thousands of decisions are required to reach maturity] at my gates, Waiting at my doorposts [public Bible classes were held at the city gates]. For he who finds me finds life, And obtains favor from the LORD. But he who sins against me injures himself; All those who hate me love death.”

- (6) **Born Again Baby.** All new Believers begin the Christian life as “*born again*” [1 Pet. 1:23] “*infants*” [1 Cor. 3:1-2; 1 Pet. 2:2], totally ignorant of even the basics of Christianity. Naturally, all Believers must *learn* Bible Doctrine from their prepared Pastor/Teacher – from the basics to the advanced concepts – so that they can gradually grow up in their spiritual life to reach “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1], applying the Doctrines they retain to the problems and testings in life and thereby glorifying God in the Plan of God. Again, the advanced Doctrines are built upon the basic Doctrines – “*precept upon precept*” [Isa. 28:10]; Heb. 5:11-14; 6:12; Deut. 6:6-9; 2 Pet. 2:1-5; 3:17-18; Ps. 19:7-9; Jas. 1:2-4.

ISAIAH 28:10 (KJV)

For precept [*tsav* (ordinance) – a category of Bible Doctrine] must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line [*qav* (measuring line)] upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little [Bible Doctrine builds on itself].

1 PETER 2:2

Like newborn babies, long for the pure milk of the word [*logikos* (spoken word) – Bible Doctrine], so that by it you may grow [*auxano*] in respect to [learning about] salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – deliver the positive [+P] volition Believer from a baby Believer to the status of spiritual maturity].

2 PETER 3:18

But grow [*auxano* (to cause to grow) – the positive [+P] volition Believer must reach spiritual maturity] in the grace and knowledge [*gnosis* (the deeper more perfect and enlarged knowledge) – understanding the full realm of Bible Doctrine] of our LORD and Savior Jesus Christ. To Him *be* the glory, both now and to the day of eternity. Amen.

HEBREWS 5:13-14

For everyone who partakes *only* of milk [*learning basic Bible Doctrine only*] is not accustomed to the word of righteousness [*dikaosune – the negative Believer cannot metabolize advanced Doctrine*], for he is an infant [*nepios (little child; infant)*]. But solid food is for the mature [*the positive Believer moving towards maturity*], who because of practice [*hexis (a habit whether of body or mind)*] have their senses [*aistheterion (faculty of the mind for perceiving)*] trained [*gumnazo (to exercise vigorously) – the positive [+P] volition Believer's self-discipline to make Bible Doctrine the number one priority in time*] to discern [*diakrisis (judging)*] good [*kaloss (precious; excellent) – Divine Good*] and evil [*kakos (wicked) – of human good*].

1 CORINTHIANS 3:1-2

And I [*Paul*], brethren, could not speak [*laleo*] to you as to spiritual men [*pneumatikos (relating to the human spirit) – Believers at some level of spiritual maturity*], but as to men of flesh [*sarkinos – under the influence of the Old Sin Nature the negative [-N] volition Believer acts and thinks exactly like the unBeliever*], as to infants [*nepios (an infant) – baby Believers*] in Christ. I gave you milk [*gala*] to drink, not solid food [*Paul could not give the Loser Believers advanced Bible Doctrine*]; for you were not yet able *to receive it*. Indeed, even now you are not yet able.

- (7) **Faithfulness to Bible Doctrine.** The key to the **Winner** Believer attaining maturity is *faithfulness in the daily intake and study* of Bible Doctrine [Matt. 25:21; Eph. 1:1; Heb. 10:36; 1 Tim. 4:8]. God reveals Bible Doctrine to the positive [+P] Believer [Phil. 3:15; 1 Chron. 28:9; Matt. 7:7; Prov. 8:17; Ps. 119:97; Jer. 15:16], but the *road to reach maturity is progressive* over time – “*for this we labor and strive*” [1 Tim. 4:10]. “*Therefore we do not lose heart, but though our outer man is decaying (biological life), yet our inner man (the soul) is being renewed day by day (spiritual growth)*” [2 Cor. 4:16].

JEREMIAH 15:16

Your words [*Bible Doctrine is the “mind of Christ”*] were found and I ate [*akal (to eat; devour) – the teachable positive [+P] volition Believer*] them, and Your words became for me a joy and the delight of my heart [*lebab (inner man; soul)*]; for I have been called by Your name, O LORD God of hosts.

PSALM 119:97

O how I [the positive [+P] volition Believer] love Your law [*torah* – Bible Doctrine]! It is my meditation all the day.

PROVERBS 8:17

“I [God] love those who love me [Bible Doctrine]; and those who diligently seek [*shachar* (to look earnestly for) – positive [+P] volition Believer] me will find me.”

- (8) **Categories Retained.** Through the workings of *Operation Z*, the Holy Spirit ensures that Bible Doctrine is metabolized and stored in the human soul/spirit of the Believer in *fixed categories*, e.g., the doctrine of Salvation, the doctrine of the Trinity, the doctrine of the Hypostatic Union. These categories constitute the building block materials for the construction of the Edification Complex of the Soul in the Believer in order that “*the man of God may be adequate, equipped for every [Divine] good work*” [2 Tim. 3:17] so that he may fully “*know the love of Christ which surpasses all knowledge*” [Eph. 3:18-19]. See Heb. 6:1-3; Gal. 3:26-28; Col. 1:27-28; Eph. 1:4-5, 11; 2 Tim. 1:13; 2:15; 1 Tim. 4:16; Rom. 12:2; 1 Pet. 3:15; Prov. 8:33; 23:12; 24:3; 2 Pet. 1:1-4; 1 Chron. 28:9; Ps. 90:12; 119:97; Jn. 8:31-31; Lk. 8:25.

HEBREWS 6:1-3

Therefore leaving the elementary [*arche* (beginning; origin)] teaching [*logos* (what is declared) – the basic categories of Bible Doctrine] about [1] the Christ [*christos* (the anointed one) – the person and work of the LORD Jesus Christ in hypostatic union], let us press on to maturity [*teleiotes* (the state of the more intelligent) – the positive [+P] volition Believer’s goal is to reach spiritual maturity], not laying again a foundation of [2] repentance [*metanoia* (a change of mind)] from dead [*nekros*] works [*ergon* – the change of mind about the false claim of salvation by human works of religion] and [3] of faith [*pistis* – Faith/Rest] toward God, [4] of instruction about washings and laying on of hands [Rebound], and [5] the resurrection [*anastasis*] of the dead [*nekros* – the first resurrection for Believers; the second resurrection for unBelievers] and [6] eternal [*aionios* (without beginning and without end)] judgment [*krima* – the Great White Throne Judgment for the unBeliever]. And this we will do, if God permits [*epitrepo* (to allow to happen)].

2 TIMOTHY 3:16-17

All Scripture is inspired by God [*theopneustos* (God-breathed) – God the Holy Spirit via Operation Z] and profitable for teaching [*didaskalia* – the prepared Pastor/Teacher teaches from the Bible], for reproof [*elegchos* (a proof; evidence)], for correction [*epanorthosis* (restoration to an upright state)], for training in righteousness [*dikaiosune* – learning the Plan of God]; so that the man of God [positive [+P] volition Believer] may be adequate [*artios* (fitted) – reach spiritual maturity], equipped [*exartizo* (to furnish perfectly)] for every good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] work.

EPHESIANS 3:18-19

May be able to comprehend with all the saints [*hagios* (set apart ones) – all Believers are in Union with Christ] what is the breadth and length and height and depth [the full realm of Bible Doctrine], and to know the love of Christ [the Believer cannot love what he does not know] which surpasses knowledge [*gnosis* – this super knowledge is *epignosis*], that you may be filled up to all the fullness of God [positive [+P] volition Believer is able to reach maturity].

- (9) **Suffering for Blessing.** In His grace provisions to advance the Believer to the highest level of spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1], God provides and directs “*testing*” [Jas. 1:3] aka Divine Suffering for Blessing. “*No temptation has overtaken you but such as is common to man; and God is faithful, who will not allow you to be tempted beyond what you are able, but with the temptation will provide the way of escape also, so that you will be able to endure it*” [1 Cor. 10:13]. See 1 Tim. 2:4; Ps. 119:11, 15-16; Heb. 6:10; 10:35-36; 1 Cor. 9:24; Phil. 3:12-16; 4:11; 2 Tim. 2:2; Col. 2:7.

HEBREWS 10:35-36

Therefore, do not throw away [*apoballo* (to cast away as worthless)] your confidence [Bible Doctrine], which has a great reward [*misthapodosia* (payment of wages due) – the Believer reaching maturity results in fantastic eternal rewards]. For you [positive [+P] volition Believer] have need of endurance [*hupomneo* (steadfastness) – Divine Suffering for Blessing accelerates spiritual growth], so that when you have done the will of God, you may receive [*kolumbano* (to carry away, bear off)] what was promised [rewards at the Judgment Seat of Christ].

- (10) **Seeing the Divine Viewpoint.** To develop the capacity to actually *love God* the Believer must master all the categories of Bible Doctrine for “*without faith it is impossible to please Him*” [Heb. 11:6]; Ps. 119:130; Isa. 55:7-9. For example, while Peter was an eyewitness to the transfiguration of Jesus, the “*prophetic word*” of Bible Doctrine was “*more sure*” [2 Pet. 1:16-21] to him than what he had seen with his own eyes. In short, Bible Doctrine allows the Believer to actually *see* his Creator, to “*look ... at the things which are not seen*” [2 Cor. 4:18] and to then “*walk by faith, not by sight*” [2 Cor. 5:7] in navigating his life in the Devil’s world. Again, per *supra* (7), the process of learning Bible Doctrine is progressive and requires daily choices to study the Word. While salvation requires only one good decision in time, reaching spiritual maturity requires thousands of positive [+P] volition decisions by the Believer. Believers must constantly “*prepare your minds for action*” [1 Pet. 1:13]. See Matt. 22:29; Jn. 13:17; 14:23; Jer. 15:16; Ps. 119:165.

JOHN 14:23

Jesus answered and said to him, “If anyone loves [*agapao (to love dearly)*] Me, he will keep My word [*logos – Bible Doctrine*]; and My Father will love [*agapao (to love dearly)*] him, and We will come to him and make Our abode [*mone (a dwelling place) – Fellowship with the Believer*] with him [*Believer’s rewards in this life and in the eternal state of being*].”

JOHN 13:17

If you [*Believer*] know these things [*Bible Doctrine*], you are blessed if you do [*poieo – apply that Bible Doctrine to life*] them.

MATTHEW 22:29

But Jesus answered and said to them, “You are mistaken, not understanding the Scriptures [*graphe – Bible Doctrine*] nor the power of God.”

- (11) **Results of Bible Doctrine.** Advanced knowledge of Bible Doctrine leads to spiritual adulthood and is the basis for *temporal and eternal rewards*.
- (a) **Confidence.** Bible Doctrine gives the Believer confidence to face the exigencies of life by using “*the sword of the (Holy) Spirit, which is the word of God*” [Eph. 6:17]. See 2 Cor. 4:7-8; Heb. 10:35-36; Ps. 119:11.

- (b) **Divine Viewpoint and Protection.** Bible Doctrine allows the Believer to reflect the power of the *Divine viewpoint* and not the human viewpoint in his decisions while living in the Devil's world, "*so that your faith would not rest on the wisdom of men, but on the power of God*" [1 Cor. 2:5]. Bible Doctrine will also insulate the Believer from harm. "*Acquire wisdom! Acquire understanding! Do not forget nor turn away from the words of my mouth. Do not forsake her, and she will guard you; Love her, and she will watch over you*" [Prov. 4:5-6]. See Jas. 1:8; Ps. 119:165; Isa. 55:7-8; 2 Cor. 10:5; 1 Cor. 2:5.

PSALM 119:165

Those who love Your law [Bible Doctrine] have great peace, and nothing causes them to stumble.

- (c) **Divine Good.** Bible Doctrine allows for the production of Divine Good and effective witnessing to the unBeliever. See Isa. 26:3-4; 1 Pet. 3:15.

1 PETER 3:15

But sanctify Christ as LORD in your hearts, always *being* ready to make a defense [*apologia* (verbal defense)] to everyone who asks you to give an account for the hope [*elpis* (confident expectation)] that is in you, yet with gentleness [*prautes* (mildness of disposition) – use the problem solving devices given to the Believer by God] and reverence [*phobos* (respect)].

- (d) **Guidance.** Doctrine provides Divine guidance. See Rom. 12:2-3.
- (e) **Rewards.** Doctrine leads to vast rewards now and in eternity. "*To endow those who love me (Bible Doctrine) with wealth, that I may fill their treasures*" [Prov. 8:21]; 1 Cor. 2:9. Further, the **Winner** Believer *glorifies God* as a subject matter expert witness in the Angelic Conflict. See Heb. 10:35-36; 11:9-10, 13; Jas. 1:25; cf. Jas. 2:12-13; 1 Tim. 4:8.

1 TIMOTHY 4:8

For bodily discipline is only of little profit, but godliness [*eusebeia* – attaining maturity] is profitable for all things, since it holds promise for the present life [temporal blessings] and also for the life to come [eternal blessings].

- (f) **Occupation with Christ.** Doctrine leads to occupation with Christ and the *ability to love God*. See Phil. 3:10; Eph. 3:19; Heb. 12:2-3.
- (g) **Blunts Sin.** Doctrine blunts sin. “*With all my heart I have sought You; Do not let me wander from your commandments*” [Ps. 119:11].
- (12) **Avoid Reversionism.** The positive [+P] volition Believer avoids falling into the traps of reversionism [Phil. 2:3-14; Gal. 1:6-9; Prov. 8:36]. The so-called Christian “service” concepts of emotional activity, good deeds, and improved levels of morality are not the Christian Way of Life.

GALATIANS 1:6-8

I [Paul] am amazed that you [Believers in Galatia] are so quickly deserting Him [teaching ministry of the Holy Spirit] who called you by the grace of Christ, for a different gospel; which is *really* not another; only there are some who are disturbing [tarasso (to cause commotion; to agitate)] you and want to distort [false teachers] the gospel of Christ [salvation by grace]. But even if we [Paul and his traveling seminary team], or an angel from heaven, should preach to you a gospel contrary to what we have preached to you, he is to be accursed [anathema – the sin unto death]!

PROVERBS 8:36

“But he who sins against me [rejection of Bible Doctrine] injures himself; all those who hate me love death [maveth (death by violence) – the sin unto death for the Believer and Spiritual Death for the unBeliever].”

- (13) **Synonyms for Bible Doctrine.** The Bible employs many teaching tools and phrases regarding the importance of Bible Doctrine.
 - (a) **Redeem the Time.** See Eph. 5:16-18; Col. 4:5.
 - (b) **Construct an Altar in the Soul & Spirit.** See Heb. 13:10.
 - (c) **Carry the Cross.** To follow Jesus Christ, the Believer will must put Bible Doctrine as his *first priority* when he stands for God’s truth in the Devil’s world. Any suffering serves to accelerate his momentum and spiritual growth. See Matt. 10:38-40; Mk. 8:34; Lk. 9:23; 14:27.

MATTHEW 10:38-40

And he [**the Believer**] who does not take his cross [*stauros* – **Divine Suffering for Blessing**] and follow after Me [**Jesus Christ**] is not worthy of Me. He who has found his life [*psuche* (soul) – **the Believer saved by grace**] will lose [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely)] it [**the positive [+P] volition Believer who rejects the Cosmic Systems**], and he who has lost his life [**this same positive [+P] volition Believer to Bible Doctrine who rejects the Cosmic Systems**] for My sake will find it [**temporal and eternal rewards bestowed**].

- (d) **Build an Edification Complex of the Soul.** See Eph. 4:15-16.
 - (e) **Greater Grace.** The “*greater grace*” [Jas. 4:6]; Acts 4:33; Rom. 5:17.
 - (f) **Military Terms.** To “*keep standing firm*” [Gal. 5:1]; Eph. 6:11, 13.
 - (g) **Salt.** The Word is the preservative salt that Believers can become in the world. See Matt. 5:13; Mk. 9:15; Lk. 14:34; Col. 4:6.
 - (h) **Outside the World.** Living “*outside the camp*” [Heb. 13:13] of the Devil’s world. Legalism hates the truth, and the Believer understands that he will generally be *rejected by mainstream society*.
 - (i) **Other Terminology.** Such as *chakmah* (wisdom); *epignosis* (full knowledge); *sunesis* (understanding); and *alethea* (truth).
- (14) **Bottom Line.** The primary issue in the Christian Way of Life is growth to spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1]. Thus, the daily battle for control of the Believer’s soul is between the temptation of the OSN vs. the Filling of the Holy Spirit. Inevitably, without a steady concentration on Bible Doctrine the Believer will be sucked into the Cosmic Systems. See 2 Cor. 11:3.

2 CORINTHIANS 11:3

But I [**Paul**] am afraid that, as the serpent [**Satan**] deceived Eve by his craftiness [*panourgia* (a specious or false wisdom) – **the evil of human good**], your minds will be led astray from the simplicity [*haplotes* (mental honesty)] and purity [*hagnotes* (uprightness of lifestyle) – **the Christian Way of Life**] of devotion to Christ.

- (15) **Accomplish the Plan of God.** Bible Doctrine will accomplish its goals in every precise and exact manner as ordained by God [Isa. 55:11]. There are *absolutely no mistakes in the Plan of God* who in eternity past decreed that all the things that would come into existence would come into existence, “*just as He chose us in Him before the foundation of the world*” [Eph. 1:4]. See @@@ PLAN OF GOD.

ISAIAH 55:11

So will My word [*dabar – Bible Doctrine*] be which goes forth from My mouth; it will not return to Me empty [*reyqam (in an empty condition)*], without accomplishing what I desire [*chaphets (to delight in) – the Plan of God*], and without succeeding *in the matter* for which I sent it.

- (16) **Not for Sale.** Never make money an issue in the presentation of the Gospel or Bible Doctrine as do some “*men of depraved mind and deprived of the truth, who suppose that godliness is a means of gain*” [1 Tim. 6:3-10]. Pastor/Teachers do their job for the LORD, “*not for sordid gain*” [1 Pet. 5:2]; Mic. 3:11-12; Prov. 23:23; 1 Pet. 5:2; Matt. 6:24; 2 Cor. 11:7-8. See @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER.

MICAH 3:11

Her leaders pronounce judgment for a bribe, her priests instruct [*yarah (to teach)*] for a price [*mechiyr (payment)*] and her prophets divine for money [*keseeph (silver coins) – charging money for their actions*]. Yet they lean on the LORD saying, “Is not the LORD in our midst? Calamity [*ra (evil)*] will not come upon us.”

- (17) **Jesus’ Last Words.** The last words of the LORD Jesus Christ from the cross were about the *primacy of Bible Doctrine*. See Ps. 31:5; cf. Lk. 23:46.

PSALM 31:5

Into Your [*God the Father*] hand I [*Jesus Christ*] commit [*paqad (to look after)*] my spirit [*ruach – His human spirit*]; You have ransomed [*padah (to rescue; redeem; ransom) – Soteriology*] me, O LORD, God of truth [*emeth (truth; faithfulness) – Bible Doctrine*].

@@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST

- (1) **Definition.** The Blood of Christ is a *figurative* concept to denote the propitiatory work of Jesus on the cross. It draws from the bloody animal sacrifices of the Old Testament used to teach about His Spiritual Death.
- (2) **Blood.** The primary Biblical words for blood are *aima* [Greek] and *dam* [Hebrew]. Animals lack a soul. Blood is said to be the seat of “animal life,” “*the life of the flesh (animal) is in the blood*” [Lev. 17:11]. In contrast, man’s “human life” is his invisible soul [Gen. 2:7; Job 33:4]. See @@@ LIFE.
- (3) **Eating Blood.** In the Old Testament dispensation eating/drinking animal blood *represented salvation by human works* and was prohibited [Lev. 17:10-11; Gen. 9:3-4]. Eating cooked flesh [the Passover lamb] represented the Believer’s recognition in the saving work of the Messiah by faith in the LORD.

GENESIS 9:3-4

Every moving thing that is alive [*animals*] shall be food for you; I [*God*] give all to you, as *I gave* the green plant. Only you shall not eat flesh with its life, *that is*, its blood [*dam*].

- (4) **Representative Analogy.** Per the Mosaic Law the sacrificial animal killed by the Levitical priests represented *the person and salvation work of the coming Messiah*. “*Behold the Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world*” [Jn. 1:29, 36]. Thus, the sacrificial animal had to be:
 - (a) **Innocent.** Not dangerous to mankind, not a wild animal; “*you shall bring your offering of animals from the herd or the flock*” [Lev. 1:2].
 - (b) **No Defects.** Without “*blemish or any defect*” [Deut. 17:1; Lev. 1:3]. Born with no Old Sin Nature and having no personal sin, Jesus of Nazareth was perfect in His humanity and qualified to be a substitute.

DEUTERONOMY 17:1

You shall not sacrifice to the LORD your God an ox or a sheep which has a blemish *or* any defect, for that is a detestable thing [*only a perfect human, Jesus, can be the sacrifice for all sin*] to the LORD your God.

- (5) **Bloody Levitical Offerings.** The many Old Testament Levitical offerings and rituals [see Lev. 1–7] *were saturated with the blood* of innocent [no blemish or defect] animals. After putting the animal on an altar and cutting its throat with a knife, the creature died a violent, painful, and gory death as the life in the animal's blood literally drained out during the ceremony. These animals were *slaughtered in such a brutal manner* in order to teach about Soteriology and the awful, required price that the perfect future Messiah [Jesus Christ] would pay in full for all human sin by His substitutionary Spiritual Death. Other rituals dealt with Rebound. For those rituals involving individual offerings, the specific type of animal or food offered up depended on the economic status of the Believer. These teaching tools are no longer extant for the Church Age. *See* Heb. 9:19-25; Ps. 22:1; Isa. 53:9.
- (a) **The Burnt Offering.** Represented the *work of Christ on the cross* [Expiation and Propitiation]. Except for the skin, the entire male animal was burned up as a sweet aroma to God. *See* Lev. 1:1-17; Ps. 40.
 - (b) **The Food Offering.** Represented the *perfection of Christ*, qualified to go to the cross. No blood used in the ceremony. *See* Lev. 2:1-16.
 - (c) **The Peace Offering.** Represented *reconciliation* between Perfect God and imperfect man made possible by Jesus Christ. *See* Lev. 3:1-17.
 - (d) **The Sin Offering.** Represented the *awful price of salvation*. The entire bullock was burnt up outside the camp. *See* Lev. 4:1-35.
 - (e) **The Trespass or Guilt Offering.** Represented the use of Rebound for the ongoing sins of the Believer. *See* Lev. 5:1–6:30; Heb. 9:6-7; 13-14.

HEBREWS 9:13-14

For if the blood of goats and bulls and the ashes of a heifer sprinkling those who have been defiled sanctify for the cleaning of the flesh, how much more will the blood of Christ, who through [*dia* (with; by means of)] the eternal [*Holy*] Spirit offered [*prosphero* (to bring a present or a thing)] Himself without blemish [*amomos* (morally without fault) – as a perfect human Jesus was qualified to go to the cross] to God, cleanse your conscience from dead works [*ergon* – the lies of human good and religion] to serve the living God [*the Believer serves God by learning and applying Bible Doctrine*]?

- (6) **Did Not Bleed to Death.** Jesus Christ did not die physically on the cross by *bleeding to death* [Lk. 23:46; Matt. 27:50; Jn. 10:18; 19:30-34]. If the literal blood of Jesus Christ was a real analogy to the animal sacrifices of the Old Testament, then it would be a case of a literal bleeding to death of the animal for a literal bleeding to death of Jesus Christ. This was not the case. Jesus was obviously quite lucid at the point of His Physical Death and He certainly did not die by loss of blood. In fact, Jesus Christ voluntarily dismissed His human soul and spirit once His mission of sin bearing was fully accomplished and He then immediately died physically.
- (a) **Leaned Forward.** After suffering the judgment of all sin on the cross, Jesus leaned forward – “*bowed His head*” – so blood in the head drained into the right and left ventricles of the heart. His diaphragm cut off the blood from going into the abdomen. Jesus Christ then dismissed His soul and human spirit. *See Jn. 19:28-30.*

JOHN 19:30

Therefore when Jesus had received the sour wine, He said, “It is finished [*teleo* (to complete; mission accomplished) – during the past three hours Jesus Christ had suffered Spiritual Death for the sins of all humans]!” And He bowed [*klino* (to incline)] His head and gave up His [*human*] spirit [*pneuma* – His human spirit went to Heaven, His body to the grave, and His soul to Paradise in Hell].

- (b) **Roman Spear.** Clots of “*blood and water came out*” [Jn. 19:34-35] of Jesus’ body when the Roman soldier thrust his long spear into Jesus’ *pleura* (side) to determine Physical Death. This clear serum indicates that there was no pumping of blood in His body which is absolute proof that a sudden Physical Death had already occurred without the loss of significant amounts of blood.
- (c) **Blood in Body.** Since *Jesus’ blood was still in His body* after Physical Death, He did not bleed to death. Again, His Physical Death was accomplished by His own volition and not caused by bleeding to death [Jn. 10:18; Lk. 23:46; Matt. 27:50]. Accordingly, no human being “killed” Jesus Christ, although the Jewish leadership certainly plotted and wanted to murder Him, and the Roman governor wrongfully authorized His death after finding Jesus not guilty under Roman law.

- (7) **Soteriology.** The doctrine of the Blood of Christ portrays the various aspects of Soteriology. For example: (1) Expiation – “*washed ... in the blood*” [Rev. 7:14]; “*released us from our sins by His blood*” [Rev. 1:5]; (2) Propitiation – Jesus Christ paid the full price for all sin as demanded by God’s Holiness as “*the God of peace, who brought up from the dead the great Shepherd of the sheep through the blood of the eternal covenant, even Jesus our LORD*” [Heb. 13:20; Rom. 3:2-26]; and (3) Redemption and Reconciliation, the Believer is bought with a price, “*through the redemption which is in Christ Jesus*” [Rom. 3:24; 5:8-11]. See 1 Pet. 1:18-19; Col. 1:14, 19-22; Rev. 5:9. See @@@ SOTERIOLOGY.

COLOSSIANS 1:20

And through [*dia* (by means of)] Him [*the humanity of Christ*] to reconcile [*apokatalasso* (to bring back a former state of harmony) – *the barrier between Perfect God and imperfect man is removed*] all things to Himself, having made peace [*eirenopoieo* – *only His work can bring harmony between Perfect God and imperfect man*] through the blood of His cross; through Him, *I say*, whether things on earth [*ge* – *all humanity*] or things in heaven [*the Trinity*].

REVELATION 5:9

And they [*angels*] sang a new song, saying, “Worthy are You [*Jesus Christ*] to take the book and to break its seals; for You were slain [*sphazo* (to put to death by violence)], and purchased [*agorazo* (to do business in the market place) – *under Soteriology God is satisfied with the price Jesus Christ paid on the cross*] for God with Your blood [*aima* – *substitutionary spirit death of Jesus Christ*] men [*Believers*] from every tribe [*phule* (Jewish tribes)] and tongue [*glossa* (language)] and people and nation.”

1 PETER 1:18-19

Knowing that you were not redeemed [*lutroo* (to release on receipt of a ransom)] with perishable things like silver or gold from your futile [*mataios* (empty; devoid of force)] way of life [*the evil of religion cannot provide salvation*] inherited from your forefathers, but with precious blood [*aima* – *the substitutionary Spiritual Death*], as of a lamb unblemished and spotless [*aspilos* – *Jesus was Perfect in His humanity and thus qualified to go to the cross*], *the blood* of Christ.

- (8) **Jewish Passover Fulfilled.** The Old Testament Jewish ritual of the Passover, which also taught salvation, was completely fulfilled at the cross. Now the Believer observes the *LORD's Supper* which is the only mandated Church Age ritual, "*do this in remembrance of Me*" [1 Cor. 11:23-26], which is designed for the Believer to concentrate on the person and work of the LORD Jesus Christ. See Matt. 26:26-28; 1 Cor. 5:7.
- (9) **Fellowship in Time.** The "*blood of Jesus*" [1 Jn. 1:7] Christ is the absolute basis for the use of Rebound. See 1 Jn. 1:9; Col. 2:14-15; Lev. 4-5.

1 JOHN 1:7

But if [Third Class Condition – maybe the Believer will or maybe he won't] we walk [*peripateo* – a lifestyle] in the Light as He Himself is in the Light [the Trinity is Perfect], we have fellowship with one another, and the blood [the substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus Christ paid for our sins] of Jesus His Son cleanses us from all sin [*hamartia* – Rebound is possible because of the work of Jesus Christ on the cross].

- (10) **Christ Died Twice.** Jesus Christ *died twice on the cross*: *thanatos* (spiritual death) and *nekros* (physical death). See prophecy of the Savior at Isa. 53:9, where the word *maveth* (death) [cf. Ezk. 28:10], is in the plural. See also Heb. 9:17; 1 Pet. 2:10; 2 Cor. 5:21; Rom. 8:11. In short, the Believer will die only once at his Physical Death [unless he is taken up alive to get his resurrection body at the Rapture of the Church], he will never die "*the second death*" [Rev. 21:8] of Spiritual Death. See @@@ DEATH; @@@ CROSS; @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION.
- (11) **Mystery Doctrine.** The Blood of Christ is related to the mystery doctrines of the Church Age in terms of the new covenant of Union with Christ for the Royal Family of God. See 1 Cor. 11:15, 25. See @@@ MYSTERY.

1 CORINTHIANS 11:25

In the same way He [Jesus] took the cup also after supper, saying, "This cup is the new covenant [*diatheke* (a compact) – the Church Age mystery of Union with Christ] in My blood [*aima* – the substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus Christ]; do this, as often as you drink it, in remembrance of Me."

@@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE

- (1) **Definition.** The Christian Way of Life [CWL] refers to all the things that God has provided for the Believer in the Angelic Conflict with the ultimate goal, through God's Predestination and Election input, of growing up from a *spiritual baby at the point of salvation to a spiritual adult* [Matt. 11:28-30; Rom. 8:28-30; Ps. 16:3]. This process requires learning and applying Bible Doctrine – “*for I have learned*” [Phil. 4:11]. *See infra* (15). As in all things in the Believer's life he is to do his assigned duty “*heartily, as for the LORD ... knowing that from the LORD you will receive the reward of the inheritance. It is the LORD Christ whom you serve*” [Col. 3:23-24]. God loves all Believers with a maximum love – “*As for the saints who are on the earth, they are the majestic ones in whom is all my delight*” [Ps. 16:3]. However, the Believer cannot get off the ground in his CWL without living his life under the unwavering realization that “*without faith it is impossible to please Him, for he who comes to God must believe that He is and that He is a rewarder of those who seek Him*” [Heb. 11:6].

MATTHEW 11:28-30

“Come to Me, all who are weary and heavy-laden, and I will give you rest. Take My yoke upon you and learn [*manthano* (to learn by use and practice)] from Me, for I am gentle and humble in heart, and you will find rest for your souls [*salvation and growth*]. For My yoke is easy and My burden is light.”

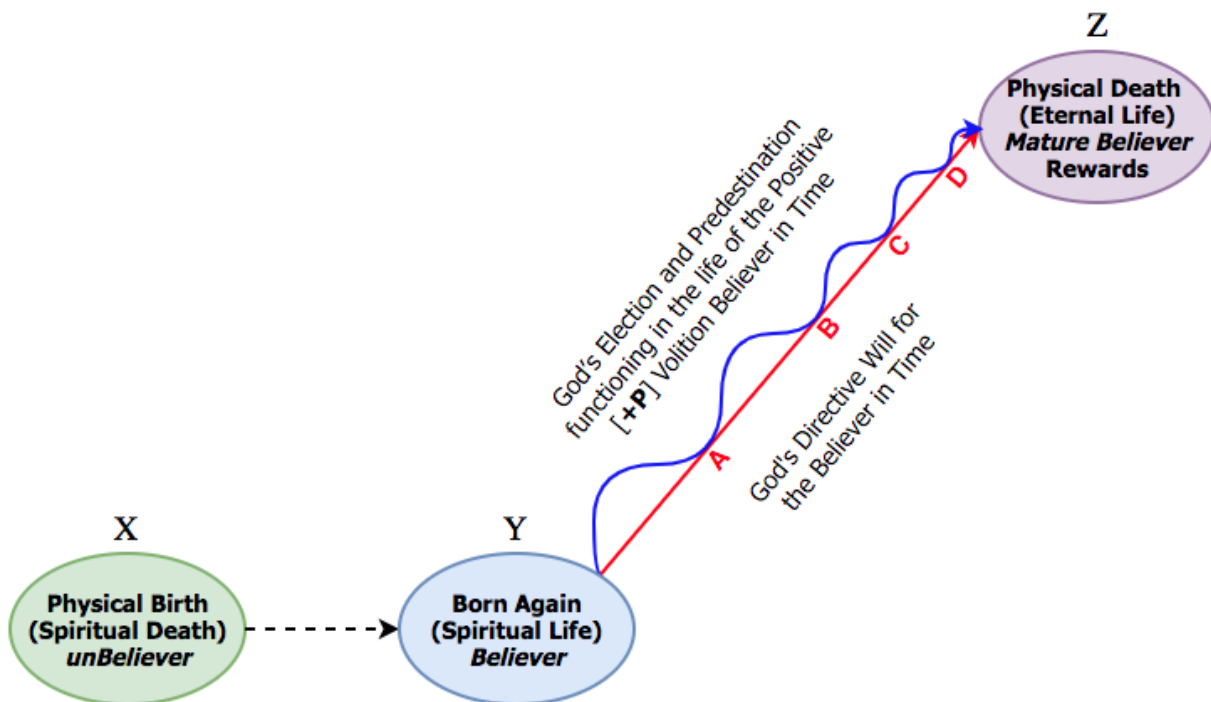
- (2) **New Creature.** At salvation, the newly branded Christian is “*born again*” [1 Pet. 1:23] as a “*new creature*” [2 Cor. 5:17]; Eph. 2:10; Gal. 5:15.

2 CORINTHIANS 5:17

Therefore if anyone is in Christ, *he is* a new creature; the old things [*the power of the Old Sin Nature and death*] passed away; behold, new things have come.

- (3) **New Environment.** The “*new creature*” of the Church Age requires a new environment. Living and growing inside of the Divine Dynasphere constitutes this new supernatural environment, completely dependent on the grace of God minus any human good. While the New Testament reveals this mystery doctrine, the Old Testament was also “*written for our instruction*” [1 Cor. 10:11-13] and has great value to the Church Age Believer. *See* Heb. 11:1-40.

- (4) **God's Directive Will.** Per the diagram below, God's Directive Will for the Believer is for him to reach spiritual adulthood or maturity [represented by the **RED** straight 45-degree upward line] which was chartered out by God in eternity past. However, since the Believer still possesses an Old Sin Nature and commits personal sin and human good throughout his life, it is absolutely impossible for him to travel along God's straight Directive Will **RED** line – every sin puts him off the **RED** line. Only Jesus Christ in His humanity stayed completely on God's **RED** line for His entire life. Thus, in eternity past, knowing every failure of the Believer, God's Predestination and Election worked together for the absolute good of the positive **[+P]** volition Believer to nevertheless advance him to spiritual maturity. Accordingly, the wavy **BLUE** line represents the *actual life path* of the **Winner** Believer moving forward via Rebound and intake of Bible Doctrine, intersecting God's **RED** line and reaching various progressive growth points in his life, from **A** to **D** on the diagram. In stark contrast, the **Loser** negative **[-N]** volition Believer will aimlessly drift about in the Cosmic Systems all his life and not advance in spiritual growth and receive little, if any, rewards. *See Rom. 8:28-30.*



– Tracking the Positive **[+P]** Volition **Winner** Believer –

- (5) **Supernatural Way of Life.** The CWL centers on the Believer's *spirituality*, a supernatural phenomenon that is only available to the Believer. This CWL spirituality has an *absolute* as well as a *relative* meaning. The *absolute* side of spirituality is achieved by Rebound which instantly "Fills" and places the Believer into Fellowship with God the Holy Spirit. The *relative* side of spirituality refers to the Believer's steady spiritual growth to maturity. See Col. 3:17, 23-24; Heb. 6:1-3; 1 Pet. 1:14-16; Rom. 8:6; 13:1-10. Note: spiritual growth is far beyond the requirement for the Christian to be a moral and law-abiding citizen who observes the mandates of the Divine Institutions.
- (a) **Spirituality.** From the *power source of the Holy Spirit*, spirituality [*absolute* and *relative*] accomplishes five objectives: (1) partnership with God [2 Pet. 1:4]; (2) imitation of God [Eph. 5:1; Matt. 5:48]; (3) glorification of Jesus Christ [Jn. 7:39; 16:14; 1 Cor. 6:19-20; Col. 3:4]; (4) true fulfillment of the Mosaic Law [Gal. 5:18, 23; Rom. 8:2-4; 6:14; 10:4; 13:8]; and (5) resolving the Angelic Conflict.
- (b) **The Believer's Choice. Priority!** The Christian either lives the spiritual life of God or the life of arrogance under the control of his OSN. "*Watch over your heart with all diligence, For from it flow the springs of life*" [Prov. 4:23]. "*If anyone comes to Me, and does not hate his own father and mother and wife and children and brothers and sisters, yes, and even his own life, he cannot be My disciple*" [Lk. 14:26]; Rom. 8:6-8; 16:17-18; 2 Cor. 6:11-12; 1 Pet. 1:14-16.

1 PETER 1:14-16

As obedient children, do not be conformed to the former lusts *which were yours* in your ignorance [*in the Cosmic Systems*], but like the Holy One who called [*kaleo – salvation ministry of the Holy Spirit*] you, be holy yourselves [*Rebound*] also in all *your* behavior [*"relative" spirituality of the mature Believer*]; because it is written, "You shall be Holy [*hagios*] for I am Holy."

- (6) **Absolute Spirituality.** Under the concept of Rebound, at any given moment a Believer is either *carnal*, *sarkikos* (carnal), or *spiritual*, *pneumatikos* – he is either 100% "*filled with the [Holy] Spirit*" [Eph. 5:18] or he is not. Thus, in this context, spirituality is a fixed status; there are *no degrees of absolute spirituality*. See 1 Jn. 1:5-7; 2:10-11; 3:4-10; Eph. 5:8; Col. 1:12; 1 Thess. 5:5; 1 Cor. 3:1-2. See @@@ REBOUND; @@@ HOLY SPIRIT.

1 CORINTHIANS 3:1-2

And I [Paul], brethren, could not speak to you as to spiritual men [*pneumatikos* – Believers at some level of spiritual maturity], but as to men of flesh [*sarkinos* – under the influence of the Old Sin Nature], as to infants in Christ. I gave you milk to drink, not solid food [advanced Doctrine for growth]; for you were not yet able *to receive it*. Indeed, even now you are not yet able.

- (a) **Rebound.** Since personal sin puts the Believer out of *absolute spirituality*, the mechanics to regain absolute spirituality is via Rebound. The *Holy Spirit fills* and then energizes the Believer, via Operation Z, in the process of learning Bible Doctrine. Accordingly, the Believer must constantly use Rebound in his CWL so he can “*walk by the (Holy) Spirit*” [Gal. 5:16]; Eph. 5:18; Col. 1:11.
- (b) **Carnality.** The carnal Believer out of Fellowship with the Holy Spirit – “*flesh*” as opposed to “*spirit*” [Rom. 8:6-8] – simply *imitates the unBeliever* and is trapped in the Cosmic Systems of Satan where “*all those who hate me (the CWL) love death*” [Prov. 8:36].

ROMANS 8:6-8

For the mind set on the flesh [*sarx* – desires of the OSN] is death [Operational Death], but the mind set on the [Holy] Spirit [Believer staying in Fellowship by Rebound] is life and peace [reaching maturity and receiving rewards], because the mind set on the flesh is hostile toward God; for it does not subject itself to the law of God, for it is not even able *to do so* [no Rebound], and those who are in the flesh [Operational Death] cannot please God.

- (c) **Warfare: Light vs. Dark.** The OSN is constantly “*waging war*” in the Believer’s “*mind*” [Rom. 7:23; 1 Pet. 2:11; Gal. 5:16-17] and when he commits a sin the Filing of the Holy Spirit is lost. The Bible uses the fixed concept of *light/dark* to analogize the absoluteness of spirituality which is achieved only by means of the Filling of the Holy Spirit; “*but if we walk in the Light as He Himself is in the Light, we have fellowship with one another*” [1 Jn. 1:7]. Not only is the Believer to *avoid the darkness* by using Rebound but he is to also *expose the fallacy* of the darkness by learning Bible Doctrine and becoming a subject matter expert witness. See 1 Thess. 5:5; Eph. 5:8, 14.

1 THESSALONIANS 5:5

For you are all sons of light and sons of day [using Rebound]. We are not of night nor of darkness [*skotos* – living in the Cosmic Systems].

- (7) **Relative Spirituality.** The *relative side of spirituality* refers strictly to the spiritual growth of the Believer – “*grow in the grace and knowledge of our LORD and Savior Jesus Christ*” [2 Pet. 3:18]. In moving towards spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1], which is by definition a matter of degree, Believers are commanded to always “*walk*” [Isa. 30:21] in faithfulness to learning and applying “*the sword of the [Holy] Spirit, which is the word of God*” [Eph. 6:17] so that they can grow up from “*infants in Christ*” [1 Cor. 3:1] to a “*mature man*” [Eph. 4:13; Heb. 5:13-14] and thereby glorify God.
- (a) **Fruit of the Spirit.** A Believer advancing “*in the knowledge of God*” [Col. 1:10-11] will produce the very character of Jesus Christ, also described as producing the “*fruit of the [Holy] Spirit*” [Gal. 4:19; 5:22-23]; 6:1; 2 Pet. 1:4; 1 Jn. 2:5; 2 Tim. 2:5.

2 TIMOTHY 2:15 (KJV)

Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed [*anepaischuntos* – this mature Believer glorifies God and receives rewards at the Judgment Seat of Christ], rightly dividing the word of truth.

- (b) **Loser Believer.** Tragically, most Believers achieve little to no *relative* spiritual growth in their lives and *stupidly adopt improved morality and human good deeds* as their “Christian lifestyle” and imagined path to growth [Lk. 6:32]. This fake notion of self-sufficiency is delusional, as anything an unBeliever can do is not the CWL! Undoubtedly, an unBeliever can be moral, nice, patriotic, and altruistic, as “*what man is there among you who, when his son asks for a loaf, will give him a stone?*” [Matt. 7:9]. In fact, in many instances an unBeliever operating within the Divine Institutions is a better citizen than a Believer in reversionism! However, the unBeliever cannot be “*filled with the [Holy] Spirit*” [Eph. 5:18], nor can he learn Bible Doctrine. “*But a natural man does not accept the things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness to him; and he cannot understand them, because they are spiritually appraised*” [1 Cor. 2:14]; Col. 1:10. See *infra* (8).

COLOSSIANS 1:10

So that you will walk [*peripateo* (lifestyle) – the Believer walking in the lifestyle of the Christian Way of Life] in a manner worthy of the LORD, to please *Him* in all respects, bearing fruit [*karpophoreo* – reaching maturity which results in fantastic rewards] in every good [*agathos* – Divine Good] work and increasing [*auxano* (to cause to grow)] in the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge) – learning the full realm of Bible Doctrine] of God.

- (8) **False Metrics.** God does not save the unBeliever or bless the Believer on the basis of how that person feels or thinks about himself in relation to other people! It is imbecilic to subjectively “hate” or “love” one’s self based on the *metrics of human good works and morality*. The issue is always about rejecting the false thinking of the world in this regard and *thinking* the thoughts of God. For the Believer desiring to grow up in his spiritual life it is about being “*transformed by the renewing of your mind*” [Rom. 12:2] and then “*taking every thought captive to the obedience of Christ*” [2 Cor. 10:5].

ROMANS 12:2

And do not be conformed to this world [*Satan’s Cosmic Systems*], but be transformed [*metamorphoo* – the Believer must reject the Cosmic Systems and transform himself to the status of maturity] by the renewing [*anakainosis* (a renewal; complete change for the better to another form)] of your mind [*transformation requires maximum Bible Doctrine*], so that you may prove what the will of God is [*the Believer is commanded to reach maturity*], that which is good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] and acceptable and perfect [*teleios* (to make complete)].

- (9) **Spiritual IQ.** Humans are born unequal in terms of such fixed variants as IQ and physical traits. While most of these things cannot be altered, the Believer *can choose his level of spiritual IQ*. In other words, the wise Believer fully understands his physical, social, or mental limitations while realizing that growing to spiritual maturity in accordance with the Plan of God has no limitations or handicaps whatsoever, other than his own negative [-N] volitional decisions to learn and apply Bible Doctrine to life’s various problems and to then conduct successful battle in the unseen Angelic Conflict. “*You were running well; who hindered you from obeying the truth?*” [Gal. 5:7]; 1 Cor. 15:10; Heb. 5:12-14. See @@@ OPERATION Z.

HEBREWS 5:12-14

For though by this time you [**Believers on negative [-N] volition and no longer living the Christian Way of Life**] ought to be teachers [*didaskalos* – these Believers should have reached spiritual maturity long ago given the quantity and quality of Bible Doctrine taught by their Pastor/Teacher], you have need again for someone [**a prepared Pastor/Teacher**] to teach you the elementary principles of the oracles [*logion* (the words or utterances of God) – **the basic foundations of the CWL**] of God, and you have come to need milk and not solid food. For everyone who partakes *only* of milk is not accustomed to the word of righteousness [*dikaiosune* – **a negative [-N] volition Believer cannot metabolize Bible Doctrine**], for he is an infant [*nepios* (little child; infant)]. But solid food is for the mature [*teleios* – **the positive [+P] volition Believer**], who because of practice [*hexis* (a habit whether of body or mind)] have their senses [*aistheterion* (faculty of the mind for perceiving)] trained [*gumnazo* (to exercise vigorously) – **the positive [+P] volition Believer's self-discipline to make Bible Doctrine the number one priority in time**] to discern good [*kalos* (precious; excellent) – **Divine Good**] and evil [*kakos* (wicked) – **human good and the workings of the Cosmic Systems**].

- (10) **The Trinity Indwells.** *All three members of the Godhead Indwell* the Believer in the Church Age and will continue to do so forever and ever. This fact is never lost regardless of the level of **relative maturity** reached by any given Believer in this life. Thus, while the Indwelling of the Trinity is permanent, a fellowship relationship with them is not.
- (a) **God the Father.** God the Father is the author of the Plan of God to save the Believer and the grantor of the escrow rewards conditional account for the Believer. “***There is ... one God and Father of all who is over all and through all and in all***” [Eph. 4:4-6]; 2 Jn. 9; Jn. 14:23.
 - (b) **God the Holy Spirit.** God the Holy Spirit not only Indwells the Believer but He also creates a “***temple***” [1 Cor. 3:16] in the physical body of the Believer for the Indwelling of Jesus Christ. The Holy Spirit also serves as the **power source** for the spiritual **Winner** Believer spending maximum time inside of the Divine Dynasphere. “***He who raised Christ Jesus from the dead will also give life to your mortal bodies thorough His Spirit who dwells in you***” [Rom. 8:11]; 2 Cor. 6:16; 1 Cor. 3:16; 6:19-20.

- (c) **Christ Indwells.** Jesus Christ Indwells each Church Age Believer as the formal badge of ownership in the Royal Family, the escrow officer for the guarantee of escrow blessings, the motivator of the Believer, and an eternal life guarantee for the Believer. “*Christ in you*” [Col. 1:27]; Jn. 14:20-23; 17:22-26; Rom. 8:10; 1 Jn. 2:24; 2 Cor. 13:5; Gal. 2:20.
- (d) **Benefits.** The non-experiential aspects of the Indwelling of the Trinity are for all. Experiential aspects – *advanced fellowship relationships with the Trinity* – are available only for those who reach maturity. See 2 Jn. 9; Jn. 14:23; Gal. 4:19; Phil. 1:20; 2:5; 2 Cor. 3:17-18; 1 Jn. 3:23-24. Thus, the **Winner** Believer is said to be a “*friend of God*” [Jas. 2:21-23], where “*Christ may dwell in your hearts*” [Eph. 3:16-17], and a productive producer of the “*fruit of the [Holy] Spirit*” [Gal. 5:22-23].
- (11) **Royal Ambassadors.** All born again Believers in the Church Age are Royal Ambassadors for the LORD Jesus Christ [2 Cor. 5:20].
- (a) An Ambassador does not appoint himself – God does. See Acts 9:15.
- (b) He does not support himself – logistical grace is from God.
- (c) His instructions are in writing – the Word of God per 2 Tim. 3:16.
- (d) He does not belong to the country he is sent to – Believers are in the Devil’s world, but citizens of Heaven. See 1 Pet. 2:11; Phil. 3:20.
- (e) He does not live in the country for personal interests. “*If we have food and covering, with these we shall be content*” [1 Tim. 6:8].
- (f) He does his assigned duty and ignores personal insults. See 1 Pet. 2:23.
- (g) The recall of the Ambassador is for war or uselessness – the Rapture [recall] or taken out under the “*sin unto death*” [1 Jn. 5:16, KJV].
- (h) The Ambassador represents God to mankind. See Col. 4:6; Eph. 4:1-2.
- (i) Believers are observed by angels and humans as to their performance in the CWL. They are God’s “*witnesses*” [Acts 1:8; 2 Tim. 1:2] in the Angelic Conflict. See Heb. 12:1; 1 Cor. 4:9; 2 Cor. 5:20.

2 CORINTHIANS 5:20

Therefore, we [Paul and all Christians] are ambassadors [*presbeuo* – in the Christian Way of Life] for Christ, as though God were making an appeal [*parakaleo* (to instruct)] through us; we [Paul and his team] beg [*deomai* (to desire)] you on behalf of Christ, be reconciled [*katallasso* (to have correct thoughts)] to God.

- (12) **Royal Priests.** All Christians are *Royal Priests* in the Church Age. See 1 Pet. 2:5, 9; Rev. 1:6; 5:10. See @@@ MOSAIC LAW.

1 PETER 2:5

You also, as living stones, are being built up as a spiritual house for a holy [*hagios*] priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ [by living the Christian Way of Life].

- (a) **Self.** The Church Age Believer *represents himself* before God. There are no societal priests or other intermediaries as in the Old Testament.
 - (b) **Privacy.** The Believer is *absolutely entitled* to his individual privacy before the LORD. See Matt. 6:6.
 - (c) **Invisible.** The Church Age Believer has an *invisible supernatural relationship* with God. See Heb. 11:1, 27; 1 Tim. 1:17.
- (13) **Acquiring Discernment.** The Believer must know and then apply Bible Doctrine correctly, “*rightly dividing the word of truth*” [2 Tim. 2:15]. Believers must be as “*shrewd as serpents* (discernment) *and innocent as doves* (staying out of the Cosmic Systems)” [Matt. 10:16]. In short, you are what you think: “*For as he thinks within himself, so he is*” [Prov. 23:7].

MATTHEW 10:16

Behold, I [Jesus Christ] send you [Believers] out as sheep in the midst of wolves; so be shrewd [*phronimos* (intelligent; wise) – knowing and applying Bible Doctrine] as serpents and innocent [*akeraios* (of the mind without a mixture of evil; free from guile) – free from the human good and the influences of the Cosmic Systems] as doves.

- (14) **The Five Laws.** The mature Believer acts as a *quite professional* – “*he who restrains his lips is wise*” [Prov. 10:19] – and strives always to fulfill the mandates of the Five Laws. “*And what does the LORD require of you but to do justice, to love kindness, and to walk humbly with your God?*” [Mic. 6:8].
- (a) **Law of Liberty.** Per the Law of Liberty [*eleutheria* (freedom to act as desired; liberty)] the Believer is *not accountable to other people*, only to God. “*I will walk at liberty, for I seek Your precepts*” [Ps. 119:45]. “*So speak and so act as those who are to be judged by the law of liberty*” [Jas. 2:12]. While freeing, the Law of Liberty is tolerant, respects the privacy of others, and follows the Divine Institutions. See 1 Cor. 6:12; 8:9; Jas. 1:25; Gal. 2:4; 5:1; 2 Cor. 3:17; Col. 2:16; 3:23-24; Ps. 118:45.

GALATIANS 2:4

But *it was* because of the false brethren [*Loser Believers*] secretly brought in, who had sneaked in to spy out our [*Paul’s grace teaching*] liberty [*eleutheria*] which we have in Christ Jesus, in order to bring us into bondage [*katadouloou* (slavery) – *legalists insisted on keeping Jewish customs for spirituality*].

COLOSSIANS 3:23-24

Whatever you do, do your work [*this refers to all activities in life as well as obeying the Divine Institutions*] heartily, as for the LORD rather than for men, knowing that from the LORD you will receive the reward of the inheritance [*eternal life and rewards*]. It is the LORD Christ whom you serve.

JAMES 1:25

But one who looks intently at the perfect law, the *law* of liberty, and abides by it, not having become a forgetful hearer [*negative volition Believer*] but an effectual doer [*poietae* (performer) – *positive volition Believer metabolizing Bible Doctrine*] this man will be blessed in what he does [*abundant rewards*].

COLOSSIANS 2:16

Therefore no one is to act as your judge [*krino* – *the Law of Liberty*] in regard to food or drink or in respect to a festival or a new moon or a Sabbath day.

- (b) **Law of Expediency.** This CWL law focuses on how the Believer *deals with unBelievers*, particularly when he is witnessing. Under the Law of Expediency, the Believer must be careful *not to create false issues* related to style, morality, tradition, culture, etc., which might in any way cloud the salvation message. *See* 1 Cor. 9:16-23; 10:23.

1 CORINTHIANS 10:23

All things are lawful [*exesti – the Law of Liberty*], but not all things are profitable [*sumphero – the Law of Expediency assists towards the goal of reaching maturity and towards effective witnessing*]. All things are lawful, but not all things edify [*oikodomeo (to build up)*].

- (c) **Law of Supreme Sacrifice.** The Law of Supreme Sacrifice refers to those unique instances where a select few Believers are called out to face *unusual circumstances in life* and become special subject matter expert witness exhibits in the Angelic Conflict. For instance, neither Paul, Barnabas, nor Daniel had a wife. Other **Winner** Believers are called to unusual deaths or other extreme situations as Pastor/Teacher Antipas – “*My witness, My faithful one*” [Rev. 2:13]; Acts 1:8. *See* Rom. 8:36; 1 Cor. 9:1-15; Matt. 19:12; Isa. 43:10.

1 CORINTHIANS 9:5

Do we [*Paul and some members of his team*] not have a right to take along a believing wife, even as the rest of the apostles and the brothers of the LORD [*the half-brother James*] and Cephas [*Aramaic for Peter*]?

- (d) **Law of Love.** This law is the so-called *Golden Rule*. “*In everything, therefore, treat people the same way you want them to treat you*” [Matt. 7:12; Lk. 6:31]. The Law of Love requires the Believer not only to “*love your neighbor as yourself*” [Matt. 19:19; Lev. 19:18], but to also deal graciously towards baby Believers and unBelievers. Understanding that “*knowledge makes arrogant, but love edifies*” [1 Cor. 8:1], the mature Believer must not get fat-headed about his own spiritual life, employing tolerance, capped by *agape impersonal love* for all. Recalling that he too, at one time, was an ignorant baby Believer, he maintains a *live and let live attitude*. *See* Matt. 18:21-35; 1 Cor. 8:10-13; Gal. 5:22; Rom. 5:5; 14:1-23; 15:1-4; 1 Jn. 3:23.

1 JOHN 3:23

This is His [God the Father] commandment [*entole* (an order)], that we believe in the name of His Son Jesus Christ, and love [*agape – impersonal love*] one another [*allelon* (one another of the same kind) – other Believers under the Law of Love], just as He [Jesus] commanded us.

- (e) **Royal Law.** The Royal Law is mandated for all Believers in the Church Age. Beyond the Law of Love, the Believer must *forgive and forget wrongs* inflicted “*just as the LORD forgave you, so also should you*” [Col. 3:13-14]. While the Filling of the Holy Spirit provides the necessary power source to fulfill the Royal Law [Rom. 8:2-4], it can only be fully executed when the positive [+P] volition Believer reaches maturity where he understands the power of the grace of God and applies all the problem solving devices to the exigencies of life. For example, in Acts 15:36-42, when Barnabas urged Paul to allow Mark [John Mark] to accompany them on a 2nd Missionary journey, Paul flatly refused to apply the Royal Law, unwilling to forgive Mark who had deserted the team in the face of mounting perils on the road during the 1st Missionary journey. However, Paul later used Rebound and applied the Royal Law to Mark. See Matt. 19:19; 22:39, 40; 1 Jn. 3:11, 23; 4:7; 1 Thess. 4:9; 1 Pet. 1:22; 2:17; Eph. 4:32. In other words, *you should treat others as God treats and has treated you* [Heb. 12:2]!

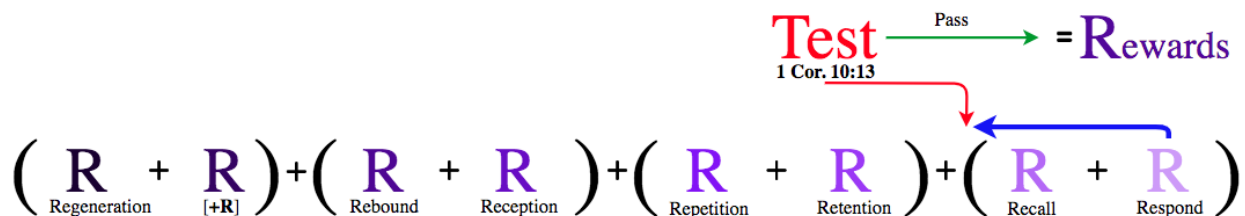
EPHESIANS 4:32

Be kind [*chrestos* (virtuous; benevolent)] to one another [*allelon* (one another of the same kind) – Believers], tender-hearted [*eusplagchnos* (compassionate; having strong bowels)], forgiving each other [the Royal Law], just as God in Christ also has forgiven you [no Believer deserves salvation].

COLOSSIANS 3:12-14

So, as those who have been chosen of God, holy and beloved, put on a heart of compassion, kindness, humility, gentleness and patience; bearing with one another, and forgiving [*charizomai* (to show one's self gracious)] each other, whoever has a complaint against anyone; just as the LORD [Jesus Christ] forgave you, so also should you. Beyond all these things put on love [*agape – impersonal love*], which is the perfect bond of unity [the Royal Law].

- (15) **The Eight R's.** The **Eight R's** is a CWL *teaching tool* set out in logical tandems to capture the Believers' salvation and then progression from "*infants*" [1 Cor. 3:1] to adult **Winner** Believers at maturity so that he can be entered as a subject matter expert "*witness*" [Rev. 2:13; Acts 1:8] exhibit in the Angelic Conflict, as was the case of Job when God asked Satan: "*Have you considered my servant Job?*" [Job 1:8]. Thus, God provides "*testing*" [Jas. 1:2-3, 12] for the Believer's growth! "*Now it came about after these things, that God tested Abraham*" [Gen. 22:1]. See @@@ SUFFERING.



– Eight R's of the Christian Way of Life –

- (a) **(REGENERATION + RIGHTEOUSNESS [+R]).** The first tandem is an *absolute* for every Believer. It is his glorious entrance point into an eternal relationship with God at the point of salvation – the status of being "*born again*" [Jn. 3:3] in **REGENERATION** and receiving God's **RIGHTEOUSNESS**! This tandem is irrevocable and inviolate.
- (b) **(RECEPTION + REBOUND).** The second tandem is a *potential* for the Believer. It envisions the positive [+P] volition Believer who desires **RECEPTION** of Bible Doctrine and utilizes **REBOUND** to be Filled with God the Holy Spirit. Staying in the Divine Dynasphere, this Believer consistently subjects himself to the teaching of Bible Doctrine from a prepared Pastor/Teacher. See 1 Jn. 1:9; 4:6; Prov. 8:34.

1 JOHN 4:6 [RECEPTION]

We [Pastor/Teachers] are from God; he who knows God [positive [+P] volition Believers] listens to us [RECEPTION]; he who is not from God does not listen to us. By this we know the spirit of truth and the spirit of error [plane (one led astray from the right way)].

PROVERBS 8:34 [RECEPTION]

Blessed is the man [the positive [+P] volition Believer desiring knowledge of Bible Doctrine] who listens to me [the RECEPTION of Bible Doctrine], watching [*shaqad* (to watch; be alert)] daily [*yom* – thousands of decisions over the course of the Believer's life are required to stay consistent in order to reach spiritual maturity] at my gates [*deleth* (a door; gate)], waiting at my doorposts [*mezuzah* (doorpost; gatepost) – public Bible classes were held at the city gates].

1 JOHN 1:9 [REBOUND]

If [Third Class Condition – maybe the Believer will or maybe he won't] we confess [*homologeō* (to declare oneself guilty; to name or cite as in a court case)] our sins [*hamartia* – the known sin], He [God the Father] is faithful [*pistos* – God does the same thing every time] and righteous [*dikaios* – on the basis of the Believer having the Righteousness [+R] of God] to forgive us our [known] sins and to cleanse [*katharizo*] us from all unrighteousness [*adikia* – all unknown sins as well as decontamination from human good produced in the Cosmic Systems – REBOUND].

- (c) (REPETITION + RETENTION). The third tandem is a *potential* for the Believer. Constant REPETITION of Bible Doctrine from a prepared Pastor/Teacher will soon circulate in the soul/spirit of the positive [+P] Believer and result in the long-term RETENTION of the Word in his soul/spirit which can propel him on to advanced levels of spiritual maturity. “*Retain the standard of sound words*” [2 Tim. 1:13]. See Gal. 4:19; 2 Pet. 1:12-13; Ps. 119:97; 1 Cor. 2:16.

2 PETER 1:12-13 [REPETITION]

Therefore, I [Peter] will always be ready to remind [*hupomimnesko* (to cause one to remember)] you [Believers] of these things [Bible Doctrines], even though you *already* know them [*heneka* (to know on account of) – REPETITION], and have been established [*sterizo* (to make stable)] in the truth which is present [*pareimi* (to be by)] with you. I consider it right, as long as I am in this earthly dwelling, to stir you up [*diegeiro* (to arouse the mind)] by way of reminder [*hupomnesis* – the Believer must keep going over and over Bible Doctrine].

GALATIANS 4:19 [REPETITION]

My [Paul] children [*teknon*], with whom I am again [*palin* (repetition of action)] in labor [*odino* (to feel the pains of childbirth)] until Christ is formed in you [Paul taught Bible Doctrine over and over in **REPETITION** so that positive [+P] volition Believers could grow to spiritual maturity, at which point they have the thinking of Christ].

PSALM 119:97 [REPETITION]

O how I [the positive [+P] volition Believer] love Your law [*torah* – Bible Doctrine is his number one priority]! It is my meditation [*wiychah* – **REPETITION**] all the day.

2 TIMOTHY 1:13 [RETENTION]

Retain [*echo* – **RETENTION**] the standard of sound words which you have heard from me [Paul], in the faith [*pistis* – Paul's consistent teaching of accurate Bible Doctrine] and love [*agape* – impersonal love] which are in Christ Jesus.

1 CORINTHIANS 2:16 [RETENTION]

For who has known [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] the mind [*nous* (the mind, comprising alike the faculties of perceiving and understanding)] of the LORD [*kurios* (God) – the thinking of Jesus Christ is Bible Doctrine], that he [any given person] will instruct [*sumbibazo* (to cause to coalesce)] Him [God]? But we [Paul and his traveling seminary] have [*echo* (to have and to hold) – **RETENTION**] the mind of Christ [these Pastor/Teachers knew Bible Doctrine and were ready to teach it].

- (d) (**RECALL + RESPOND**). The fourth tandem is a *potential* for the Believer. When various categories and *levels of testing* come to the growing Believer under the concept of Divine Suffering for Blessing [or Discipline], the Believer must first immediately **RECALL** to mind the correct Bible Doctrine and then **RESPOND** to the testing with that Bible Doctrine to address and remediate the suffering at hand. See Mal. 4:4; Lam. 3:20-23; 2 Pet. 1:13-15; Jas. 1:3-4; 1 Sam. 17:47; Matt. 5:44; 2 Cor. 5:10; Lk. 8:25; Jn. 13:17; Acts 11:16.

LAMENTATIONS 3:20-23 (KJV) [RECALL]

My soul [*nephesh*] hath *them* still in remembrance, and is humbled within me [*the positive [+P] volition Believer*]. This I recall [*shub – RECALL*] to mind [*memory of learned Bible Doctrine*], therefore I have hope [*yachal (confidence; trust)*]. *It is of* the LORD's mercies [*chesed (mercy)*] that we are not consumed [*tamam (to completely consume to come to an end) – without God's grace in action all humans would be immediately consumed for just cause*], because His compassions fail not. *They are* new every morning: great *is* thy [*God's*] faithfulness [*emunah (fidelity; steadfastness)*].

2 PETER 1:13-15 [RECALL]

I [*Peter*] consider it right, as long as I am in this earthly dwelling, to stir you up by way of reminder [*hupomnesis – RECALL*], knowing that the laying aside of my earthly dwelling is imminent [*his death*], as also our LORD Jesus Christ has made clear to me. And I will also be diligent that at any time after my departure you will be able to call these things [*Bible Doctrines*] to mind.

ACTS 11:16 [RECALL]

And I [*Peter*] remembered [*mimnesko (to remind; to remember a thing)*] the word of the LORD, how He used to say, “John baptized with water, but you will be baptized with the Holy Spirit.”

LUKE 8:25 [RESPOND]

And He [*Jesus*] said to them [*the disciples*], “Where is your faith [*pistis – they were not able to RESPOND to the problem of the raging storm on the Sea of Galilee because of a dearth of Bible Doctrine and the failure to apply Faith/Rest*]?” They were fearful [*phobeo (afraid; dread; terror) – by the action of Jesus to end the storm*] and amazed, saying to one another, “Who then is this, that He commands even the winds and the water, and they obey Him?”

MATTHEW 5:44 [RESPOND]

But I [*Jesus Christ*] say to you, love [*agape – impersonal love*] your enemies and pray for those who persecute you [*RESPOND to the matter of injustice by means of prayer and the use of God's problem solving devices*].

1 SAMUEL 17:47 [RESPOND]

And that all this assembly [**Jewish army**] may know that the LORD does not deliver by sword or by spear [**human viewpoint**]; for the battle is the LORD's [**RESPOND**] and He will give you [**Goliath**] into our [**the Jews**] hands.

- (e) **REWARDS.** This is a **potential** for the Believer. As Jesus guaranteed: *“Behold, I am coming quickly, and My reward is with Me, to render to every man according to what he has done”* [Rev. 22:12]. The end result of the **Winner** Believer who perseveres in using the last six **R's** equals fantastic **REWARDS** in this world and in eternity. *“Watch yourselves, that you do not lose what we have accomplished, but that you may receive a full reward”* [2 Jn. 8]. *“For it is for this (maturity and rewards) we labor and strive”* [1 Tim. 4:8-10]; 2 Cor. 5:10.
- (f) **Overview.** 2 Peter 1:2-11, provides a **precise outline** of the **Eight R's**.

2 PETER 1:2-8, 11

Grace and peace be multiplied to you [**God's desire for the Believer to reach spiritual maturity and receive REWARDS**] in the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge)] of God and of Jesus our LORD [*Iesous Kurios* – **the Bible is the mind of Christ**]; seeing that His divine power has granted to us everything pertaining to life [**REGENERATION and RIGHTEOUSNESS** puts the Believer into the Royal Family of God] and godliness [*eusebeia* – everything necessary for the Believer to reach maturity], through [*dia* (by means of)] the true knowledge [*epignosis*] of Him [**the Believer reaches maturity via the full knowledge of Bible Doctrine**] who called us by His own glory and excellence. For by these [**the Directive Will of God**] He has granted to us His precious and magnificent promises [**Eight R's**], so that by them you may become partakers of *the* divine nature [**the Believer can have the mind of Christ, the thinking of God**], having escaped the corruption that is in the world [*kosmos* – thinking of Satan's Cosmic Systems] by lust. Now for this very reason also [**the Believer's goal to reach spiritual maturity**], applying all diligence [*spoude* (earnestness in accomplishing) – **the Believer using positive [+P] volition**], in your faith [*pistis* – **desire to acquire Bible Doctrine in RECEPTION**] supply [*epichoregeo* (to furnish; to supply)] moral excellence [*arete* (a virtuous course of action) – **positive [+P] volition decisions to expose self to a proper Pastor/Teacher**], and in *your* moral excellence, knowledge [**desire for Bible**]

Doctrine to reach spiritual maturity, **RECEPTION**], and in *your* knowledge, self-control [**REBOUND** – constantly evaluate self and Rebound to stay in the Divine Dynasphere], and in *your* self-control, perseverance [*hupomone* (steadfastness; constancy) – keep going in **REPETITION**], and in *your* perseverance, godliness [*eusebeia* – **RETENTION** of Bible Doctrine equals maturity], and in *your* godliness, brotherly kindness [*philadelphia*], and in *your* brotherly kindness, love [*agape* – impersonal love as the ultimate problem solving device to **RECALL** and **RESPOND** to testing]. For if these qualities [**Eight R's**] are yours and are increasing, they render you neither useless nor unfruitful in the true knowledge [*epignosis*] of our LORD Jesus Christ ... for in this way the entrance into the eternal kingdom of our LORD and Savior Jesus Christ will be abundantly supplied [*epichoregeo* – **REWARDS** given to mature Believers] to you.

$$\begin{array}{c}
 \left(\begin{array}{cc} \text{R} & + & \text{R} \\ \text{Regeneration} & & [+R] \end{array} \right) \\
 \left(\begin{array}{cc} \text{R} & + & \text{R} \\ \text{Rebound} & & \text{Reception} \end{array} \right) \\
 \left(\begin{array}{cc} \text{R} & + & \text{R} \\ \text{Repetition} & & \text{Retention} \end{array} \right) \\
 \text{Test} \quad \leftarrow \\
 1 \text{ Cor. } 10:13 \\
 + \left(\begin{array}{cc} \text{R} & + & \text{R} \\ \text{Recall} & & \text{Respond} \end{array} \right) \\
 \hline
 \text{Rewards}
 \end{array}$$

– The Eight R's of the Christian Way of Life –

@@@ CHRISTOPHANY

- (1) **Definition.** Christophany is a theological term regarding the recorded appearances in the Bible of the LORD Jesus Christ *after His resurrection* from the dead. Jesus Christ rose on the third day after His Physical Death but did not ascend into the Third Heaven from the Mount of Olives until 40 days later [Acts 1:3-9]. Then, ten days after the ascension of Jesus Christ the Church Age began on the Jewish day of Pentecost. See @@@ FOOTSTOOL.
- (2) **Pre-Ascension Appearances.** There are eleven recorded appearances in the Bible of the LORD Jesus Christ in His resurrected body *prior to the ascension*. He appeared to Believers only, as the LORD Jesus Christ “*dwells in unapproachable light, whom no man (the unBeliever) has seen or can see*” [1 Tim. 6:16]. See 1 Cor. 15:3-8; Acts 1:3.

1 CORINTHIANS 15:3-8

For I [Paul] delivered to you [Believers in Corinth] as of first importance what I also received, that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures, and that He was buried, and that He was raised on the third day according to the Scriptures, and that He appeared [*horao (to see with the eyes)*] to Cephas [Aramaic for Peter], then to the twelve [technical term for the disciples minus Judas]. After that He appeared to more than five hundred brethren at one time, most of whom remain until now, but some have fallen asleep [*koimao (to sleep; to die)*]; then He appeared to James, then to all the apostles; and last of all, as to one untimely born, He appeared to me also.

ACTS 1:3

To these [many Believers] He also presented Himself alive after His suffering [on the cross where He died for all sin], by many convincing proofs [*tekmerion (on indubitable evidence)*], appearing [*optanomai (to look at, behold; to allow one's self to be seen)*] to them over a period of forty days and speaking of the things concerning the kingdom of God.

- (a) **Mary Magdalene** – Jn. 20:11-17. The former prostitute was the first to see the LORD Jesus Christ in His resurrection body. Mary was faithful to Bible Doctrine. She grabbed Jesus who told her to “*stop clinging to Me, for I have not yet ascended to the Father*” [Jn. 20:17].

- (b) **Other Women** – “*Jesus met them and greeted them*” [Matt. 28:9-10].
- (c) **Peter on Sunday** – “*The LORD has really risen*” [Lk. 24:34].
- (d) **On the Road** – Mk. 16:12-13. This passage is not in the original text.
- (e) **Ten Disciples** – “*Jesus ... stood in their midst*” [Jn. 20:24-25].
- (f) **Eleven Disciples** – Jn. 20:24-29; Lk. 24:36-43.

JOHN 20:24-29

But Thomas, one of the twelve [**technical term for the disciples/Apostles**], called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came. So the other disciples were saying to him, “We have seen the LORD!” But he said to them, “Unless I see in His hands the imprint of the nails, and put my finger into the place of the nails, and put my hand into His side, I will not believe.” After eight days His disciples were again inside, and Thomas with them. Jesus came, the doors having been shut and stood in their midst and said, “Peace *be* with you.” Then He said to Thomas, “Reach here with your finger, and see My hands; and reach here your hand and put it into My side; and do not be unbelieving, but believing.” Thomas answered and said to Him, “My LORD and my God!” Jesus said to him, “Because you have seen Me, have you believed? Blessed *are* they who did not see, and *yet* believed.”

- (g) **Seven Disciples** – “*Jesus stood on the beach*” [Jn. 21:1-23].
 - (h) **More than 500 Believers** – “*at one time*” [1 Cor. 15:6].
 - (i) **His Half-Brother James** – 1 Cor. 15:7. James was an unBeliever per Jn. 7:5, but became a Believer per Acts 1:14; Gal. 1:19. The same pattern with Jesus’ three other half-brothers, Simon, Jude, and Joseph.
 - (j) **Eleven Disciples on a Mountain** – Matt. 28:16-20.
 - (k) **Ascension of Jesus Christ from the Mount of Olives** – Acts 1:3-9.
- (3) **Post-Ascension Appearances.** There are nine recorded appearances in the Bible of the LORD Jesus Christ after His ascension.

- (a) **Stephen** – “*Jesus standing at the right hand of God*” [Acts 7:55-56].
 - (b) **Saul on the Road to Damascus** – Acts 9:3-6; 22:6-11; 26:13-18.
 - (c) **Ananias** – In a vision regarding Saul to regain his sight [Acts 9:10-16].
 - (d) **Saul in Arabia** – Acts 20:24; 26:17; Gal. 1:12, 17.
 - (e) **Paul in the Jewish Temple** – Acts 9:26-30; 22:17-21.
 - (f) **Paul Stoned** – The Apostle Paul when being stoned outside the city of Lystra [2 Cor. 12:1-7; Acts 14:19].
 - (g) **Paul in Prison** – “*The LORD stood at his side*” [Acts 23:11].
 - (h) **Peter** – Peter hearing the voice of the LORD regarding his ministry to the Gentiles [Acts 10:10-16].
 - (i) **John on the Island of Patmos in A.D. 96** – Rev. 1:12-20.
- (4) **No Christophany Post-Cannon.** Since A.D. 96, *with the completed Bible*, there have been no appearances of the resurrected Jesus Christ [1 Cor. 13:8-10]. Believers *see* and love Him now via Bible Doctrine. “*In this you greatly rejoice ... though you have not seen Him, you love Him, and though you do not see Him now, but believe in Him, you greatly rejoice*” [1 Pet. 1:6-8].

1 CORINTHIANS 13:8-10

Love [*agape – impersonal love*] never fails [*pipto (phased out)*]; but if *there are gifts* of prophecy, they will be done away [*katargeo (abolished; ceased; canceled out)*]; if *there are* tongues [*glossa (the language or dialect used by a particular people)*], they will cease [*pauo (to stop)*]; if *there is* [*the gift of*] knowledge, it will be done away. For we [*Believers*] know in part [*in the pre-canon period of the Church Age*] and we prophesy in part; but when the perfect [*teleios (completed) – the word teleios is in the neuter which refers to a thing and not a person, i.e., the completed Bible*] comes [*Revelation was written in A.D. 96 and completed the Bible*], the partial [*meros – the temporary spectacular gifts of the early Church*] will be done away.

@@@ CIRCUMCISION

- (1) **Definition.** Literally, circumcision refers to the cutting away of the band of useless skin around the end of the male phallus. The Old Testament practice, codified in the Mosaic Law, mandated circumcision on the 8th day after physical birth of the male child, “*circumcised the eighth day*” [Phil. 3:5]; Lev. 12:3. Jewish females were never circumcised.
- (2) **Represents Grace.** Beginning with Abraham, circumcision was designed as a key teaching tool for the Jews. The dead skin removed represented the *worthlessness of human good* works for salvation and a new relationship based on the grace of God. Every time the male looked at his phallus and saw the absence of a foreskin, it was a reminder of God’s fantastic grace.
- (3) **Abraham’s Circumcision.** Abraham was circumcised long *after his salvation* “*so that he might be the father of all who believe without being circumcised, that righteousness might be credited to them*” [Rom. 4:11]. As a Gentile, Abram believed in the promised future Messiah, “*the LORD*” [Gen. 15:6], at about the age of 20 in the city of Ur of the Chaldees. Once Abraham reached and held spiritual maturity at the age of 99, he was circumcised as commanded by God. See @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION.

ROMANS 4:11

And he [Abraham] received the sign of circumcision [*peritome*], a seal of the righteousness [*dikaiousune*] of the faith [*pistis* – *salvation by faith alone in Christ alone*] which he had while uncircumcised [Abram received God’s Righteousness [+R] at about the age of 20, long before he was physically circumcised], so that he might be the father of all who believe [*pisteuo* – Abraham’s salvation, 500 years before the Mosaic Law, clearly revealed the pattern for how all Believers are saved in all dispensations] without being circumcised, that righteousness [*dikaiousune* – God’s Righteousness] might be credited [*logizomai* (to pass to one’s account)] to them [all Believers].

- (4) **Sign of Abrahamic Covenant.** Circumcision also served as an overt sign of the Abrahamic Covenant [Gen. 17:10-14]. The Jews were set apart as a pivot Client Nation to God to spread the Gospel to the Gentiles and to be the custodians for the growing Old Testament Bible. See Gal. 2:8; Col. 4:11; Tit. 1:10; Ex. 4:24-26; 12:48.

- (5) **Contrast with Phallic Cult.** Jewish circumcision was in direct contrast to the Old Testament Phallic Cult religion. *See* Lev. 12:2-3.
- (6) **Will Not Save.** The Old Testament ritual of circumcision was meant to reflect the true spiritual connotation of salvation by grace. The ritual by itself *cannot provide salvation* as some legalists assert. *See* Jer. 6:10; 9:25-26; Rom. 3:27-30; Gal. 5:2-3.

ROMANS 3:27-30

Where then is [human] boasting? It is excluded. By what kind of law [nomos]? Of works? No, but by a law of faith [pistis]. For we [Paul and his seminary team] maintain [logizomai (to calculate)] that a man is justified [dikaioo (to render righteous) – the Believer receives God’s Righteousness +R] at the moment of salvation by faith alone in Christ alone] by faith [pistis – saving faith is the avenue to salvation] apart from works of the Law [the Mosaic Law will not provide salvation]. Or is God *the God* of Jews only? Is He not *the God* of Gentiles [ethnos] also? Yes, of Gentiles also, since indeed God who will justify [dikaioo (to render righteous)] the circumcised [peritome – the Jews] by faith [pistis] and the uncircumcised [akrobestia (having the foreskin) – the Gentiles] through faith [pistis – saving faith] is one.

- (7) **No Church Age Mandate.** There is no special or spiritual significance for circumcision in the *Church Age* [1 Cor. 7:18-19; Gal. 5:2-3]. On Paul’s team, Timothy was circumcised, Titus was not. The Council of Jerusalem in A.D. 50, reiterated that salvation was not related to circumcision either for Jews or Gentiles. It is now a matter of taste or hygiene. *See* Acts 15:1-32; Gal. 2:1-2.

GALATIANS 5:2-3

Behold I, Paul, say to you that if you receive circumcision [peritome], Christ will be of no benefit to you [it will not provide salvation]. And I testify again to every man who receives circumcision, that he is under obligation to keep the whole Law [nomos – keeping the Mosaic Law is impossible to do and circumcision will not save].

- (8) **Circumcision and Legalism.** Circumcision is sometimes used in the New Testament to *illustrate the evil of legalism* [Acts 15:1, 24; Gal. 6:12-13]. *See infra* (11).

- (9) **Portrays Regeneration.** All human males are born uncircumcised, just as all people are born with an Old Sin Nature and in a state of Spiritual Death – “*you were dead in your transgressions*” [Col. 2:13] – without a relationship with God. Having salvation and cutting away the dead skin both portray *irrevocable change and newness*. See @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY.

COLOSSIANS 2:13

When you [as unBelievers] were dead [*nekros* – Spiritual Death] in your transgressions [*paraptoma* (a deviation from the truth) – the Holy Trinity can never have fellowship with anything imperfect] and the uncircumcision [*akrobustia*] of your flesh [*sarx* – all humans are born with an Old Sin Nature], He made you alive together with Him [in Union with Jesus Christ], having forgiven us all our transgressions [the efficacious work of Jesus Christ on the cross].

- (10) **Retroactive Positional Truth.** Circumcision is sometimes used as an analogy to the dry baptism of God the Holy Spirit to portray Retroactive Positional Truth. See Col. 2:11. See @@@ HOLY SPIRIT.

COLOSSIANS 2:11

And in Him [Jesus Christ] you were also circumcised [*peritemno*] with a circumcision made without hands [the Holy Spirit's ministry in providing salvation], in the removal [*apekdusis* (a putting off)] of the body of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ.

- (11) **Reversionism and Rejection.** The concept of *not being circumcised* is sometimes used in the Bible to portray reversionism for Believers negative to learning Bible Doctrine and damnation to Hell for unBelievers who reject the Gospel. See Jer. 4:4; 6:10; 9:25-26; Ezk. 28:10; 44:7; Acts 7:51.

EZEKIEL 28:10

“You will die [*muth* (to die; to execute)] the death [*maveth* (deaths by violence) – the word *muth* is in the plural and refers to the physical and Spiritual Death of the unBeliever] of the uncircumcised [*arel* (having foreskin) – the unBeliever] by the hand of strangers, for I have spoken! Declares the LORD God!”

ACTS 7:51

You men [**Stephen speaking to Jews**] who are stiff-necked and uncircumcised [*aperitmetos*] in heart and ears are always resisting [*antipto* (to run against; to strive against)] the Holy Spirit [**they will not respond to the Holy Spirit and his ministry of grace salvation**]; you are doing just as your fathers did [**most Jews in the Old Testament were unBelievers or in a state of reversionism as Believers**].

- (12) **Portrays Bible Doctrine.** Circumcision is sometimes used to portray the absolute need for the Believer to *discipline his mind* so that he stays on positive [+P] volition to advance in the Plan of God for his life and to reject anything that distracts him from his number one priority of learning Bible Doctrine from a prepared Pastor/Teacher – “*circumcise your heart, and stiffen your neck no longer*” [Deut. 10:16]; Jer. 4:4.

JEREMIAH 4:4

“Circumcise yourselves to the LORD and remove the foreskins of your heart, [*leb – they were on negative [-N] volition towards God*], men of Judah and inhabitants of Jerusalem, or else My wrath will go forth like fire and burn with none to quench it, because of the evil of your deeds.”

- (13) **Portrays the Mature Believer.** Circumcision is sometimes used to portray the *status of the spiritually mature Believer*. “*For he is not a Jew who is one outwardly, nor is circumcision that which is outward in the flesh ... circumcision is that which is of the heart, by the Spirit, not by the letter; and his praise is not from men, but from God*” [Rom. 2:28-29]; Phil. 3:3; Deut. 30:6. See @@@ **EDIFICATION COMPLEX OF THE SOUL.**

PHILIPPIANS 3:3

For we [**Believers on positive [+P] volition to Bible Doctrine**] are the *true* circumcision, who worship in the Spirit of God [**Rebound and producing the fruit of the Holy Spirit at spiritual maturity**] and glory in Christ Jesus and put no confidence [*peitho* (to make friends with; to trust)] in the flesh [*sarx – human good*].

@@@ CORNERSTONE

- (1) **Definition.** A cornerstone refers to an especially sturdy cut stone set at the foundation corner of two intersecting walls to ensure the complete stability of the entire structure, so too is the *analogy made with the LORD Jesus Christ*. Other related concepts to the study of the doctrine of the cornerstone related to Jesus Christ include the fact that He is the “*foundation*” [1 Cor. 3:11] for salvation, the basic stone footing upon which all buildings are constructed, and the gigantic “*rock*” [Deut. 32:4], indicating complete protection and stability for the Believer. The Greek word used to describe a building stone is *lithos* (stones used for things to build), the Hebrew word is *spanah*. The Hebrew word for rock is *tsur* (a giant boulder). See *infra* (5) for the parallel meaning of the Greek word “*rock*,” *petra* (a giant stone).

DEUTERONOMY 32:4

The Rock [*tsur* (giant boulder) – Jesus Christ the Savior]! His work is perfect [*tamiym* (complete; whole) – Jesus’ salvation work on the cross], for all His ways are just; a God of faithfulness [*emunah* (steadfastness)] and without injustice [*under unlimited atonement God proved His desire for all humans to be saved*], righteous [*the Righteousness [+R] of God is uncompromising*] and upright is He [*God is Perfect*].

- (2) **Salvation Rock & Foundation Stone.** “*The Rock of Israel spoke to me*” [2 Sam. 23:3]. The LORD Jesus Christ is the *salvation rock* and also the *foundation stone* for Believers to build their spiritual life upon. See 1 Cor. 3:11-13; Isa. 28:16; 31:29; 1 Pet. 2:4; 2 Tim. 2:19; Ps. 19:14. Moses struck a “*rock*” [Ex. 17:6] in Horeb with his staff – a rock that Jesus Christ stood before – and water came out of the rock to save the thirsty Hebrews. This reflected the fact that Christ would be struck and take our punishment in order that the water of salvation would flow to all! See *supra* (5).

EXODUS 17:6

“Behold, I [*Jesus Christ*] will stand before you there on the rock [*tsur* (giant boulder)] at Horeb; and you [*Moses*] shall strike the rock [*Christ will be struck for all sin while on the cross*], and water will come out of it, that the people may drink [*the doctrine of salvation plus God’s logistical grace provisions in the wilderness*].” And Moses did so in the sight of the elders of Israel.

1 CORINTHIANS 3:11-13

For no man can lay a foundation [*themelios* (the foundation of a building)] other than the one which is laid, which is Jesus Christ [*there is no other way for salvation*]. Now if any man builds on the foundation with gold, silver, precious stone, wood, hay, straw, each man's work will become evident.

- (3) **Tested Stone.** Jesus Christ is called the “*tested stone*” [Isa. 28:16] because He was *born perfect* in His humanity and *passed all temptations* during His life, making Him uniquely qualified to go to the cross. See @@@ CROSS.

ISAIAH 28:16

Therefore thus says the LORD God, “Behold, I am laying in Zion [*Jerusalem*] a stone [*eben* (a stone as building material) – *Jesus Christ*], a tested stone [*Jesus Christ would pass every temptation, die on the cross for salvation, and be presented and accepted by God the Father per Operation Footstool*], a costly cornerstone [*pinnah* – the cost to Jesus Christ at sin bearing is beyond human comprehension] for the foundation, firmly placed. He who believes [*aman* – the means of salvation is by faith in Christ] in it will not be disturbed [*eternal security*].”

- (4) **Rock Rejected by Israel.** The LORD Jesus Christ was the true salvation “*stone which the builders rejected*” [Ps. 118:22-23], even though He made a bona fide offer of the applicable covenants to the Jews during His Sermon on the Mount and again on Palm Sunday when He entered Jerusalem. The religious Jewish leaders and their followers rejected Him. For example, seeing Him enter the city, the Jews sang only the 2nd Advent verses pertaining to the promised Messiah [Mk. 11:9-10; cf. Ps. 118:25-26]. However, in Mk. 12:10-11, Jesus quotes to them the preceding verses of Ps. 118:22-23. These verses speak of the 1st Advent and contain the prediction of the Messiah “*stone*” rejected by the builders, “*a rock to stumble over*” [Isa. 8:14]. See also, the parable of the vineyard at Mk. 12:1-9. The vineyard is Israel [Isa. 5:1-7], the wall is Divine protection, the tower is added protection via the concept of the military establishment, the farmers are the Jews, and the journey portion of the parable sets out the various Jewish pivot Client Nations to God – United Kingdom, Northern Kingdom [Israel], Southern Kingdom [Judah], and Judea. Each of these Client Nations turned against God and were all destroyed by means of maximum Divine Discipline [Deut. 32:17-18; Lev.

26:33]. Peter relates in Acts 4:10-12, and Paul in Rom. 9:30-33, that the Jewish leaders *rejected their Savior Jesus Christ*. “*They stumbled over the stumbling stone*” [Rom. 9:32]. In fact, the stone of salvation specifically “*cut out*” [Dan. 2:34] by God is a stumbling block to the unBeliever. “*Everyone who falls on that stone will be broken to pieces; but on whomever it falls, it will scatter him like dust*” [Lk. 20:18]; Ps. 118:12; Isa. 8:14; 1 Pet. 2:8.

PSALM 118:22-23

The stone [*eben* – Jesus Christ] which the builders rejected [*maas* (to despise; to reject) – the Jews] has become the chief [*rosh* (head; top)] corner stone [*pinnah* – Jesus Christ rejected religion and established grace]. This is the LORD’s doing; it is marvelous in our eyes.

ISAIAH 8:14

Then He [Jesus Christ] shall become a sanctuary [to Believers in the future]; but to both the houses of Israel [the Northern and Southern Kingdoms rejected Him], a stone to strike and a rock to stumble over, and a snare and a trap for the inhabitants of Jerusalem.

DEUTERONOMY 32:17-18

They [the religious Jews] sacrificed to demons [*shed* (a demon)] who were not God, to gods whom they have not known, new gods who came lately, whom your fathers did not dread. You neglected the Rock [*tsur* – Jesus Christ] who begot you, and forgot the God who gave you birth.

- (5) **Chief Cornerstone.** Jesus Christ is the *chief cornerstone of the Church*, and all Believers are the *stones in the building* structure of the Church. “*For no man can lay a foundation other than the one which is laid, which is Jesus Christ*” [1 Cor. 3:11]; Matt. 16:18; 1 Pet. 2:4-7; Eph. 2:19-22; Acts 4:11-12.

ACTS 4:11-12

He [Jesus Christ] is the stone which was rejected by you [religious Jews], the builders, but which became the chief corner stone [*gonia*]. And there is salvation in no one else; for there is no other name [*onoma* – Jesus Christ] under heaven that has been given among men by which we must be saved.

EPHESIANS 2:19-22

So then you are no longer strangers [*xenos* (a foreigner)] and aliens [*paroikos*], [Believer is no longer an unBeliever] but you are fellow citizens [*sumpolites* (possessing the same citizenship)] with the saints [*hagios* (separated ones)], and are of God's household [*oikeios* (belonging to a house) – Believers are in union with Jesus Christ], having been built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets [they proclaimed the Gospel of salvation], Christ Jesus Himself being the corner stone [*akrogoniaios* (placed on an extreme corner)], in whom the whole building, being fitted together, is growing into a holy temple in the LORD, in whom you also are being built together into a dwelling of God in the Spirit [the Holy Spirit's ministry for positive [+P] volition Believers reaching spiritual maturity].

- (6) **Peter is Not the Rock.** In Matt. 16:17-18, Jesus Christ renamed His disciple Simon giving him the new name Peter, using the word *petros* (a little chip or small rock) [*chepos* in the Aramaic]. Then in the same passage Christ describes Himself, in contrast to Peter the *petros*, as the unique and only *petra* (a gigantic bolder) upon which the New Testament Church would be built. It is upon the *petra* of the impeccable LORD Jesus Christ that the Church is built *not the little chip of the imperfect man Peter, petros*. See 1 Pet. 2:4-8.

MATTHEW 16:18

I [Jesus] also say to you that you are Peter [*petros* (little rock chip)], and upon this rock [*petra* (gigantic rock) – Jesus Christ is the foundation cornerstone of salvation, the Church, and all Believers in all historical dispensations] I will build My church [*ekklesia* – the body of Christ]; and the gates [*pule* (likened to a vast prison)] of Hades will not overpower [*katischuo* (to prevail)] it.

- (7) **The Judgment Stone Upon History.** In Dan. 2:31-45, Daniel interprets King Nebuchadnezzar's dream about a huge statue of a man [which portrayed a general outline of human history vis-a-vis the Jews up to the 2nd Advent] that is struck and crushed by a gigantic stone “*cut out without hands*” by God. That stone is the LORD Jesus Christ as He comes at the 2nd Advent in judgment, destroying evil and setting up His Kingdom in the Millennium [and beyond], which fills up the whole “*new heaven and a new earth*” [Rev. 21:1] of eternity. See @@@ JUDGMENT.

@@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS

- (1) **Definition.** The term *Cosmic Systems* refers to Satan's entire thinking, the "*doctrines of demons*" [1 Tim. 4:1], in his rulership of the world. Satan's Cosmic Systems are subdivided into two spheres – **Cosmic I** and **Cosmic II**. Both unBelievers and Believers can be sucked into Satan's Cosmic Systems.
- (2) **Spiritual War.** All unBelievers reside in the Cosmic Systems and are part of Satan's family. "*You are of your father the devil, and you want to do the desires of your father. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth because there is no truth in him. Whenever he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own nature, for he is a liar and the father of lies*" [Jn. 8:44]. In turn, while all Believers are expected to live in God's Divine Dynasphere most Believers spend their entire time on earth in the Cosmic Systems reflecting *Satan's thinking*, not God's. Thus, the repeated command to every Believers: "*Stay out of the Cosmic Systems!*" "*No one can serve two masters; for either he will hate the one and love the other, or he will be devoted to one and despise the other. You cannot serve God and wealth*" [Matt. 6:24]. Finally, the "*mature*" [Eph. 4:13] Believer is expected to put "*on the full armor of God*" [Eph. 6:11] in order to engage in the *spiritual war*" [2 Cor. 10:3-5] against the Cosmos. See Jn. 8:31-32; Rom. 12:2, 21; Eph. 5:16; 2 Tim. 2:19; 3:13; 2 Thess. 3:3; 1 Tim. 4:1-5; 1 Cor. 10:21; 1 Jn. 2:15-17; Rev. 2:24; Jos. 24:15. "*Let no man deceive himself ... For the wisdom of this world is foolishness before God*" [1 Cor. 3:18-19]. See @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT at (14) regarding the *two spiritual wars*.

ROMANS 12:2

And do not be conformed to this world [*Cosmic Systems*], but be transformed by the renewing of your mind [*requires maximum Bible Doctrine*], so that you may prove what the will of God is [*reach maturity*], that which is good [*agathos (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good*] and acceptable and perfect.

JOSHUA 24:15

If it is disagreeable in your sight to serve the LORD, choose for yourselves today whom you will serve: whether the gods which your fathers served which were beyond the River [*Egyptian*], or the gods of the Amorites in whose land you are living; but as for me and my house, we will serve the LORD.

2 TIMOTHY 2:19

Nevertheless, the firm foundation of God stands, having this seal, “The LORD knows those who are His [**all Believers**],” and, “Everyone who names the name of the LORD is to abstain [*aphistemi* (to make standoff)] from wickedness [*adikia* (unrighteousness of heart and life) – **stay out of the Cosmic Systems**].”

- (3) **Entry Point of Arrogance.** “*Haughty eyes*” [Prov. 6:17], aka **the vicious sin of arrogance**, with emphasis on self-sufficiency and self-justification is the pin in the grenade that blasts open the door to all the “gates” of the Cosmic Systems. “*The fear of the LORD is to hate evil; pride and arrogance and the evil way and the perverted mouth, I hate*” [Prov. 8:13]. “*Everyone who is proud in heart is an abomination to the LORD; Assuredly, he will not be unpunished*” [Prov. 16:5]. See Rom. 12:2-3; 1 Pet. 5:6-8; 2 Chron. 32:25.

ROMANS 12:3

For through [*dia* (by means of)] the grace given to me I [**Paul**] say to everyone among you not to think more highly of himself [*hyperphroneo* (not to think in terms of arrogance)] than he ought to think; but to think so as to have sound judgment, as God has allotted to each a measure of faith [*pistis* – **Bible Doctrine learned on the road to maturity**].

COSMIC I. Reflects Satan’s Attitude in the Prehistoric Angelic Conflict – Arrogance.

Gate 1. Motivational Arrogance.

- (a) **Hypersensitive to Self and Insensitive to Others.** Arrogance is the entrance point in Cosmic I and encompasses hatred, vanity, self-pity, vindictiveness, self-justification, jealousy, and insolence. The arrogant person demands attention to self and will bully, put down others, bitch, and nag to get it. Arrogance is the “*lust of the eyes*” [1 Jn. 2:15-16].
- (b) **God Makes War.** God **makes war** against the arrogant Believer and applies Divine Discipline Suffering to him. See 1 Pet. 5:4-6; Jas. 3:14-16; 4:6; Isa. 13:11; Prov. 11:2; 16:18; 29:23; 2 Tim. 3:2-7.

1 PETER 5:5

You younger men, likewise, be subject to *your* elders [*presbuteros* (the old man) – the Pastor/Teacher]; and all of you, clothe yourselves with humility toward one another, for God is opposed [*antitassomai* (to range in battle against) – makes war] to the proud [*huperephanos* (showing one's self above others)], but gives grace to the humble [only the grace oriented positive [+P] volition Believer will reach maturity].

Gate 2. Negative Volition Arrogance to God's Truth.

- (a) **Category I Truth – The Divine Institutions.** There is outright rejection or minimal respect shown to this category of God's truth which He designed for all mankind to benefit from.
- (b) **Category II Truth – The Gospel of Salvation.** Designed for the unBeliever, they will not respond to the grace of God for salvation. See Lk. 13:34. See @@@ SALVATION.
- (c) **Category III Truth – Bible Doctrine.** Designed for Believers to reach maturity, but they will not respond. See Lk. 13:34.

LUKE 13:34

O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, *the city* that kills the prophets and stones those sent to her! How often I [*Jesus Christ*] wanted to gather your children together, just as a hen *gathers* her brood under her wings, and you would not *have it* [*negative [-N] volition to salvation and also to Bible Doctrine*]!

Gate 3. Self-Righteous Arrogance.

- (a) **Endorses Legalism.** To be *righteous in one's own eyes*. Stresses human achievements, morality, or good deeds as of paramount concern. See Jas. 4:16, *Galatians*, Matt. 23:1-39.

JAMES 4:16

But as it is, you boast [*kauchaomai* (to glory on account of a thing)] in your arrogance [*alazoneia* (braggart talk)]; all such boasting is evil.

- (b) **Personality.** A fixed personality type or style of behavior is demanded as a role model for all to emulate.
- (c) **Authority.** Rejects most of the forms of *lawful authority*. This begins for children in the home. Byproducts include institutional arrogance in assuming that self is more important than the organization's policy or purpose. In short, the arrogant person feels that he is greater than the system which, in his thinking, has overlooked him.
- (d) **Crusader Arrogance.** Putting personal opinions on others without their consent. These types violate the privacy of their fellow man and often use violence to get their way.
- (e) **“Christian Service” Arrogance.** All Christian service must be a result of growth towards spiritual *“maturity”* [Heb. 6:1], *never a means* of growth. *See* 1 Cor. 3:11-15; Lk. 14:11.

Gate 4. Sexual Arrogance.

- (a) **Normal Sexual Arrogance.** For example, King Solomon's lust pattern in his Old Sin Nature towards various females resulted in numerous and repeated instances of adultery and fornication. *See* Ex. 20:14; 1 Cor. 6:18; 2 Tim. 3:4; 1 Thess. 4:3; Deut. 5:18; Heb. 13:4.
- (b) **Abnormal Sexual Arrogance.** Manifested in *“degrading passions”* [Rom. 1:26-27] e.g., homosexuality, autoeroticism, voyeurism. *See* 1 Cor. 6:9-20; 7:4; Gal. 5:19; 1 Tim. 1:10; Lev. 18:6-17; Rom. 1:24-27.
- (c) **Criminal Sexual Arrogance.** Manifested in rape [Deut. 22:25-27], bestiality, incest [Lev. 18:6-23], necrophilia, pederasty [1 Cor. 6:9].

Gate 5. Criminal Arrogance. All criminal activity stems from basic rejection of legitimate authority. Criminals seek to satisfy lusts in the Old Sin Nature without regard for others. *All liars are not criminals but all criminals are liars.* In fact, lies are the common way of life for the criminal and are his standard way of dealing with himself and others.

Gate 6. Iconoclastic Arrogance. The building up of another as a role model so that subsequent flaws spawn vicious attacks on the role model.

Gate 7. Physiological Living Arrogance.

- (a) **The Wants.** In the mindset of arrogance, “Maslow’s Hierarchy” of needs [self-actualization, self-esteem, belongingness, safety, and food] always increases and is never satisfied. The arrogant person never gets over the “wants.” Dead ends include: money without honor; success without integrity; promotion without ability; and love without virtue.
- (b) **Rationalization.** *Self-justification for everything* the person does. For example, a Believer becomes instantly defensive when someone he knows sees him drinking liquor at a bar.
- (c) **Defense Mechanisms.** Various defensive techniques are employed for dealing with problems. This can be manifested by a sudden change in friends or employment.
- (d) **Denial.** A *disorientation to objective reality* leading in some cases to dangerous circumstances. For example, operating a car while drunk, open exposure to bullets in war, or laying down on a busy road.
- (e) **Sublimation.** Engaging in new outlets of distraction such as drinking, drugs, and illicit sex to find stimulation in the details of life.

Gate 8. Subjective Preoccupation With Self Arrogance.

- (a) **Definition.** The person feels that they are not being treated the way that they want to be treated. They are *hateful to people below them and bitter towards their superiors*.
- (b) **Point of Truth.** If you are not content with what you have right now, you will *never be content* with what you may accumulate in the future. “*If we have food and covering, with these we shall be content*” [1 Tim. 6:8]; Heb. 13:5; Phil. 4:11-13.

PHILIPPIANS 4:11

Not that I [Paul] speak from want [*husteresis (poverty)*], for I have learned to be content [*autarkes (content with one’s lot; sufficient for one’s self)*] in whatever circumstances I am.

Gate 9. Rational and Irrational Arrogance.

- (a) **Rational Arrogance.** The arrogant high IQ or so-called *educated person* compromises Bible Doctrine with their own human viewpoint ideas washed in the stench of human good. See Prov. 18:1-2.

PROVERBS 18:2

A fool does not delight in understanding [about the “*mind of Christ*”], but only in revealing [*gahah* (delight)] his own mind.

- (b) **Irrational Arrogance.** Emotion is used as the gauge for life. See Phil. 3:18-19; Rom. 16:17-18; 2 Cor. 6:11-12. For example, the atheist scientist rejects God because of the purely emotional argument that he *cannot accept a God that would allow suffering in the world.*

Gate 10. Client Nation Arrogance.

- (a) **An Evil Nation.** Legitimate forms of a capitalistic/nationalistic government under the Divine Institutions *are rejected*. This attitude destroys freedom and leads to national destruction. “*My people are destroyed ... because you have rejected knowledge*” [Hos. 4:6].
- (b) **Types.** (1) Monarchy [a king who rules for the good of his people] vs. Tyranny [a king who rules for his own self-interest]; (2) Aristocracy [the best in society who rule for the good of the people] vs. Oligarchy [a small group who rule for their own self-interest]; (3) Republic [elected representatives rule for the good of the people] vs. Democracy [each rules for his own self-interest]. In each pairing, the former is authorized by the Bible, and the latter is not.

COSMIC II. Reflects Antagonism Toward the Plan, Purpose, and Will of God. Absolute hatred for all categories of Divine truth.

Gate 1. Negative Volition.

- (a) **For the unBeliever.** Negative [-N] volition response at Gospel hearing or at God consciousness. See Ps. 12:1; 14:1.

PSALM 14:1

The fool [*nabal* – the unBeliever] has said in his heart, “There is no God.”

- (b) **For the Believer.** Negative [-N] volition response to learning Bible Doctrine. *See* Rom. 16:17-18; 2 Cor. 6:11-12; Phil. 3:16-19.

Gate 2. Anti–Divine Institutions. Active *hatred* of the Divine Institutions. For the unBeliever at Rom. 1:28-32. For the Believer at 2 Tim. 3:2-7.

Gate 3. Cosmic Panaceas.

- (a) **Greater Good.** All panaceas are based on “*big State/little people*.” The myriad actions of the so-called progressive to *white-wash* the Devil’s world are always done in the name of the “*greater good*.”
- (b) **Equality.** The great lie of utopianism is cloaked in *equality* as first seen with the actions of Adam and Eve. When they committed sin and died Spiritual Death, they immediately engaged in human good by putting fig leaves over their genitalia [the most obvious different feature] to achieve “equality.” They reflected the great deception: “*If you are right with people, then you are right with God*.” Note: God took off the fig leaves when they believed the Gospel [Gen. 3:7-21].

Gate 4. Cosmic Degeneration. Maximum time in the Cosmic Systems causes *immoral degeneration* [Rom. 1:24-27] and/or *moral degeneration* [Matt. 7:21-23]. *See* Acts 8:3; 9:4; 1 Tim. 1:13-15 [Paul]; Gal. 2:11-13 [Peter]; Gal. 3:1-3 [the Galatians].

Gate 5. Demonism. In demonism, “*deceitful spirits and doctrines of demons*” [1 Tim. 4:1] permeate the thinking. *See* @@@ DEMONISM.

Gate 6. Religion. *See* @@@ RELIGION.

Gate 7. Good & Evil. Human good is the *motivational and functional policy* of Satan. *See* Eph. 2:10; 5:15; 2 Tim. 3:13; 2 Thess. 3:3. Only the production of Divine Good *agathos* (good of intrinsic value) is acceptable to God [Rom. 12:21]. *See* @@@ GOOD.

@@@ COVENANTS

- (1) **Definition.** A covenant is a firm agreement between two parties. There are eight Covenants [solemn promises] in the Bible given by God. Most of these Covenants have an *eternal life clause* and since only Believers have eternal life, they apply to Believers only. See Rom. 9:4; 10:1-3; 1 Jn. 2:25.
- (2) **Not All Fulfilled.** Not all Covenants given by God have been completely fulfilled but they will be in the future, reflecting the fact that *God cannot lie*. See Ps. 89:35.

PSALM 89:35

Once I have sworn by My holiness [*qodesh – His Righteousness and Justice constitutes His Holiness*]; I will not lie [*about the Davidic Covenant*] to David.

- (3) **Adamic Covenant.** The promised coming “*virgin*” [Isa. 7:14] born Savior/Messiah who would die for the sins of the world *will be a human being*, “*born of a woman*” [Gal. 4:4-5]; “*her seed*” [Gen. 3:15]; Rom. 16:20.

GENESIS 3:15

And I will put enmity [*eybah (hatred)*] between you [*Satan*] and the woman, and between your seed [*zera – unBelievers*] and her seed [*Believers*]; He [*the Perfect seed of the woman in hypostatic union, Jesus Christ*] shall bruise [*shuph (to bruise; to crush; fall upon)*] you on the head [*rosh – Satan and sin will be destroyed*], and you shall bruise him [*Christ*] on the heel [*aqeb – Christ will suffer the evil venom of Satan, which is Spiritual Death, on the cross*].

- (4) **Noahic Covenant.** The promised Savior/Messiah would come through the line of Noah. See Gen. 6:18; 8:21–9:26; 1 Chron. 1:1-4.
- (5) **Abrahamic Covenant.** “*The record of the genealogy of Jesus the Messiah, the son of David, the son of Abraham*” [Matt. 1:1]. The promised Savior/Messiah would come through the line of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. See Gen. 12:1-3; 22:15-18; 26:3-4; 35:11. This Covenant defined the Jewish race of the future Messiah and also provided a blessing/cursing clause for the treatment of the Jewish people by Gentiles. “*Blessed is everyone who blesses you [Jewish race], And cursed is everyone who curses you*” [Num. 24:9].

GENESIS 12:1-3

Now the LORD said to Abram, “Go forth from your country [**Abram was then a Gentile Believer in his 20’s living in the city of Ur**], and from your relatives and from your father’s house, to the land which I will show you; and I will make you a great nation [**Abraham would become the father of the Jewish race**], and I will bless you, and make your name great; and so you shall be a blessing; and I will bless [*barak*] those who bless you, and the one who curses you [**the Jewish race in general**] I will curse. And in you all the families of the earth will be blessed [**Abraham’s “grandson” would be Jesus Christ**].”

- (6) **Palestinic Covenant.** The Palestinic Covenant *defines the geography* that God will give to the Jewish national entity in the Millennium. The final land Palestinic Covenant encompasses much of the Middle East. *See* Gen. 13:14-15; 15:18-21; Num. 34:1-12; 35:12; Ex. 6:2-8; Deut. 30:1-9; Jos. 1:2-4; Jer. 32:36-44; Ezk. 11:16-21; 47:13-23; 48:1-35. The Palestinic Covenant will not be fulfilled until the Millennium. Even in King David’s time, which saw the maximum expansion of the Jewish kingdom from as far south as the border of Egypt to the boundary of Lebanon, the promised land Covenant was not anywhere near fulfilled.
- (7) **Mosaic Covenant.** The Mosaic Covenant defined the policy of God for the pivot Client Nations of Israel in the Old Testament era. The Mosaic Covenant was given to the Client Nations of Israel only [Ex. 19:3-6; Deut. 4:8] and does not apply to the Church Age [Rom. 2:12-14; 6:14; Acts 15:5, 24; Gal. 2:19; Heb. 7:12, 19; Phil. 3:9]. *See* @@@ PIVOT & CLIENT NATION.
- (8) **Davidic Covenant.** The Davidic Covenant defines the *dynasty of Jesus Christ*. God’s promised Messiah would come through the genealogy of King David [2 Sam. 7:8-17; Ps. 89:20-29; Mk. 11:10; Matt. 22:41-42]. Bathsheba and David’s two sons formed the two possible blood lines of the future Savior [1 Chron. 3:5]. The *line of Solomon* [Joseph] is set out in *Matthew*, and the *line of Nathan* [Mary] is set out in *Luke*. Later, the Coniah Curse dictated that the Messiah’s actual bloodline would not be through Solomon, but Nathan. Joseph, however, fulfilled the royalty *legal* line as he was Jesus’ stepfather. Per the promises of God [Ps. 110:1-2; 2 Sam. 7:12-13; Jer. 23:5-6] David’s future “son” would be David’s LORD and Savior as well. The LORD Jesus Christ, who is “*the Messiah, the son of David*” [Matt. 1:1], will rule forever and ever per Operation Footstool.

2 SAMUEL 7:12-13

When your [David] days are complete and you lie down with your fathers [Physical Death], I [God] will raise up your descendant [Jesus Christ] after you, who will come forth from you, and I will establish his kingdom. He shall build a house [bayith (household; family)] for My name, and I will establish the throne of his kingdom forever.

- (9) **New Covenant to Israel.** The New Covenant to Israel was given to the Jews and will be completely fulfilled from the *Millennium and onward into eternity*. Israel will be an eternal Client Nation to God forever. See Jer. 31:31-34; Rom. 11:27; Heb. 8:8-13; 10:15-17; Gal. 4:4; Zech. 8:23; Ezk. 16:16; Isa. 59:20-21; 61:2-11; Hos. 2:13-23. Note: Believer Jews during the Church Age are elected into the Royal Family of God just as Believer Gentiles as part of the mystery doctrine [Rom. 11:1-7]. See @@@ MYSTERY.
- (10) **New Covenant to the Church.** The New Covenant to the Church [also called the Eternal Covenant] operates in the *Church Age only* and refers specifically to the accomplished work of Jesus Christ for salvation and the special relationship of the Royal Family Church Age Believer who is forever in Union with Christ. “*This cup is the new covenant in My blood*” [1 Cor. 11:25]. See Lk. 22:20; Heb. 13:20. See @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST.

HEBREWS 13:20

Now the God of peace [eirene (reconciliation)], who brought up from the dead [nekros – the resurrection of Jesus Christ] the great Shepherd of the sheep [probaton – all Believers] through [dia (by means of)] the blood [aima – the work of Jesus Christ on the cross to provide salvation] of the eternal [aionios (without beginning or end)] covenant, even Jesus our LORD.

1 CORINTHIANS 11:25

In the same way He [Jesus] took the cup also after supper, saying, “This cup is the new covenant [diatheke (a compact) – the Church Age mystery of Union with Christ] in My blood; do this, as often as you drink it, in remembrance [anamnesis (recollection)] of Me.”

@@@ CROSS

- (1) **Definition.** In a blatant perversion of Roman jurisprudence, Pontus Pilate found Jesus of Nazareth *not guilty* at His trial and yet ordered Jesus crucified, nailed to a wooden beam in the shape of a “*cross*” [1 Cor. 1:18]. Crucifixion was the standard practice for all non-Roman citizens convicted of a capital offense. This historical event, which is recorded in the Bible as well as other contemporary documents, occurred on the Jewish Passover in April circa A.D. 30. The crucifixion took place just outside the walls of Jerusalem at a place called “*Golgotha*” [Mk. 15:22-41]. While on the cross, Jesus Christ bore all human sin – past, present, and future – in order to provide the opportunity for salvation to all mankind. *See* Jn. 19:6; 15-22; Matt. 27:27-56; Lk. 23:33-49.

1 CORINTHIANS 1:18

For the word of the cross is foolishness to those who are perishing [*the unBeliever rejects grace and will perish in the Lake of Fire*], but to us who are being saved it is the power of God.

- (2) **Hanging on Wood.** Under the Mosaic Law capital punishment was to be performed by *public stoning* of the criminal, e.g., Lev. 20:2, 10, 27. Anyone who was hung upon *wood* of any sort and put to death was pronounced as “*accursed*” [Deut. 21:21-23] under the Mosaic Law. Thus, in accordance with His substitutionary Spiritual Death under the Plan of God, Jesus Christ was nailed to a wooden cross and became a “*curse*” [Gal. 3:13] for our sins so that the Believer could be reconciled to God. Note: the legalistic Jewish leaders who demanded His death requested that Jesus’ body be taken down before sundown so as not to violate this Jewish law [Jn. 19:31-38; Jos. 8:29].

DEUTERONOMY 21:21-23

Then all the men of his city shall stone him to death [*normal form of capital punishment*]; so you shall remove the evil from your midst, and all Israel will hear *of it* and fear [*deterrence*]. If a man has committed a sin worthy of death and he is put to death, and you hang [*talah (to hang up)*] him on a tree [*ets (tree; wood; plank; pieces of wood)*], his corpse shall not hang all night on the tree, but you shall surely bury him on the same day (for he who is hanged is accursed of God), so that you do not defile your land which the LORD your God gives you as an inheritance.

GALATIANS 3:13

Christ redeemed [*exagorazo* (by payment of a price to recover from the power of another)] us [*Believers*] from the curse of the Law [*the Mosaic Law demands Perfection*], having become a curse for us—for it is written, “Cursed is everyone who hangs [*kremannumi* (to be suspended)] on a tree [*xulon*].”

- (3) **Jesus Voluntarily Submitted.** Jesus Christ went to the cross under His own volition. “*He was led as a sheep to slaughter; and as a lamb before its shearer is silent, so He does not open His mouth*” [Acts 8:32; Isa. 53-7-8]. In *complete obedience* to the Plan of God to bear the sins of all mankind [despite a last moment desire to avoid the cross], “*He Humbled Himself by becoming obedient to the point of death on a cross*” [Phil. 2:8]; Lk. 22:42-44; Heb. 12:2; 1 Pet. 2:22-24; Jn. 4:34; 10:17-18.

LUKE 22:42

Saying, “Father [*pater* – *Jesus speaking from His humanity to God*], if You are willing, remove this cup from Me; yet not My will, but Yours be done.”

JOHN 10:17-18

“I lay down My life [*no human agency killed Jesus*] so that I may take it again [*resurrection from the dead*]. No one has taken it from Me, but I lay it down on My own initiative. I have authority to lay it down, and I have authority to take it up again. This commandment I received from My Father.”

- (4) **Six Hours.** Jesus was on the cross for *six hours* from “*the third hour (9 am)*” [Mk. 15:25; Jn. 19:14 (Roman time)] and ending at “*the ninth hour (3 pm)*” [Lk. 23:44; Matt. 27:45]. He uttered no loud cries for the first three hours. However, “*when the sixth hour (noon) came, darkness fell over the whole land until the ninth hour*” [Mk. 15:33], *sin bearing occurred*, and Jesus screamed out [as prophesied in Ps. 22:1] in the Aramaic – “*Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani?*” – “*My God, My God, why have You forsaken Me?*” [Matt. 27:46; Mk. 15:34]. The supernatural darkness which covered the immediate area and His screams signaled that it was during these last three hours that Jesus was judged by God the Father for all human sin causing one observer to say: “*Truly this man was the Son of God!*” [Mk. 15:39; Matt. 27:54]; Heb. 12:2. *See infra* (7).

- (5) **Penalty of Sin Paid.** Jesus Christ's work on the cross was required under the Plan of God due to the *often-stated penalty of sin* – “*the wages of sin is [spiritual] death*” [Rom. 6:23]; Jn. 4:34. Thus, Jesus went to the cross to “*taste death (Spiritual Death) for everyone*” [Heb. 2:9]. Spiritual Death emanated from Adam and Eve who immediately died spiritually when they committed the sin of disobedience, but they did not die physically until years later [Gen. 3:6; 5:5; Rom. 5:12, 17; 6:7-11, 23; 1 Cor. 15:21-22; Col. 2:12]. Corrected translation of Gen. 2:17: “*dying, you will surely die [(muth – used twice)]*.” Adam's original sin and the OSN are *now passed down* to all humans through copulation, meaning that only a Perfect human could suffer the just penalty for sin. As the only Perfect human being ever born, *only Jesus of Nazareth was qualified* to go to the cross [1 Pet. 2:22-23; 2 Cor. 5:21]. “*Which one of you convicts Me of sin?*” [Jn. 8:46]. Thus, Jesus “*offered Himself without blemish to God*” [Heb. 9:14]. “*He appeared in order to take away sins; and in Him there is no sin*” [1 Jn. 3:5]; Heb. 4:15. *See infra* (7).

ROMANS 5:12

Therefore, just as through one man [Adam] sin [Old Sin Nature] entered into the world, and death [*thanatos* (physical death with the implied idea of future misery in hell) – Spiritual Death] through sin, and so death [*thanatos*] spread to all men, because all sinned [Adam's OSN and human personal sins].

2 CORINTHIANS 5:21

He [God the Father] made Him [Jesus] who knew no sin [Jesus never committed a sin and had no OSN] to be sin [He took the judgment for all sin while on the cross] on our behalf [*huper* (as a substitute for)], so that we might become the righteousness [God's Perfect Righteousness [+R] is imputed to the Believer making him acceptable to God] of God in Him.

- (6) **Reconciles Man to God.** The work of Jesus Christ on the cross provides the only pathway for imperfect [-r] man to *have a relationship* with Perfect [+R] God. With His work completed on the cross, Jesus Christ now holds the keys over Spiritual Death. Jesus is “*the living One; and I was dead, and behold, I am alive forevermore, and I have the keys of death and of Hades*” [Rev. 1:18], so that once any human exhales faith alone in Christ alone he is forever saved [Col. 1:20; 2:14; 2 Cor. 5:14-15]. Tragically, this fundamental truth is rejected by the unBeliever [1 Cor. 1:18].

COLOSSIANS 1:20

And through [*dia* (by means of)] Him [Jesus Christ] to reconcile [*apokatalasso* (to bring back a former state of harmony) – the barrier between God and man is removed under Soteriology] all things to Himself, having made peace [*eirenopoieo* – between Perfect God and imperfect man] through [*dia* (by means of)] the blood [*aima* – the substitutionary death of Christ] of His cross [*stauros*]; through Him, *I say*, whether things on earth [*ge*] or things in heaven [*ouranos* – the reconciliation of the Trinity in Heaven and all those on earth who accept Christ as their Savior].

2 CORINTHIANS 5:14-15

For the love [*agape* (to love dearly)] of Christ controls us [Believers], having concluded this, that one [Christ] died [*apothnesko* (of a violent death; of eternal death; to be subject to eternal misery in hell) – Spiritual Death] for all, therefore all died [*apothnesko* – Spiritual Death at birth]; and He died for all [unlimited atonement], so that they who live [Believers] might no longer live for themselves [Believers must live the Christian Way of Life], but for Him who died [*apothnesko*] and rose again on their behalf.

- (7) **Two Deaths on the Cross.** The LORD Jesus *Christ died twice on the cross* – a *Spiritual Death* [during the last three hours on the cross] followed by a *Physical Death*. The two prophesied “deaths” of Jesus are set out at Isa. 53:9; cf. Ezk. 28:10. The Hebrew word for “death” in Isa. 53:9, is *maveth* and is in the intensive plural indicating both a Physical Death and a Spiritual Death. [Note: a Hebrew plural can also in some instances indicate an intensive singular, but certainly this is not the case herein]. *See supra* (5).

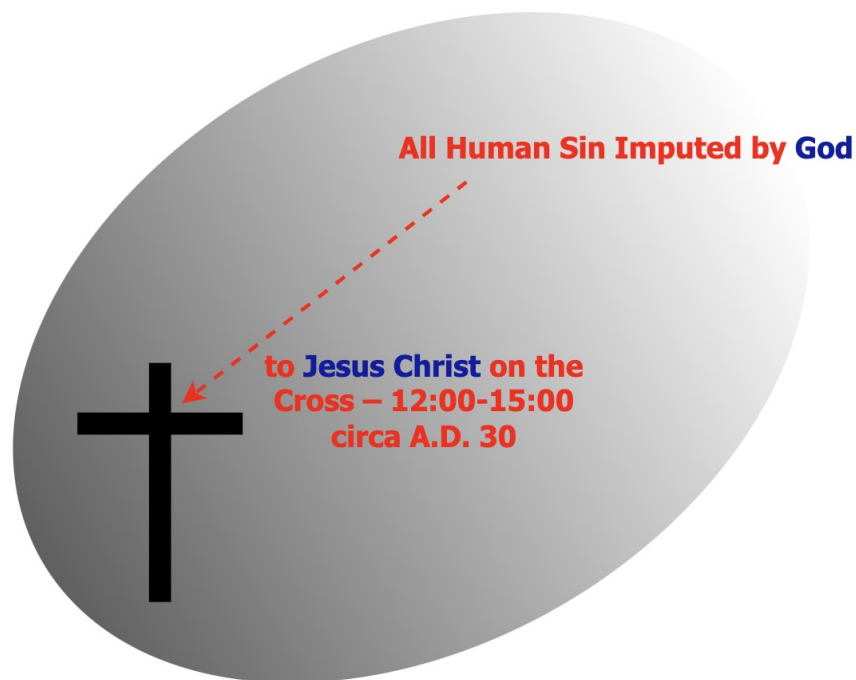
ISAIAH 53:9

His [Jesus Christ] grave was assigned [*nathan* (to set; to give)] with wicked [*rasha* (criminals; wicked men)] men, yet He was with a rich [*ashiyir* (wealth)] man [Joseph of Arimathea put Jesus in his own tomb] in His death[s] [*maveth* (state of death) – in the plural], because He had done no violence [Christ was innocent of the crime of inciting rebellion against Rome], nor was there any deceit in His mouth [Jesus Christ was without sin and remained absolutely Perfect during His mortal life on the earth – no overt sins, no mental attitude sins, and no sins of the tongue].

- (a) **Judicial Imputation of Spiritual Death.** While Jesus of Nazareth was still physically alive God the Father *imputed and then judged* in Jesus' "*body*" all human sin. "*He Himself bore our sins in His body on the cross*" [1 Pet. 2:24]. This *judicial imputation* of trillions and trillions of sins occurred from noon to 3 pm. Although the Holy Spirit did help sustain Jesus on the cross [Heb. 12:2], Jesus was under inscrutable suffering during His substitutionary Spiritual Death. "*By this will we have been sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all*" [Heb. 10:10]; Rom. 5:8; Gal. 3:1; Matt. 26:38; Isa 53:10; Ps. 22; 1 Pet. 2:24; 3:18; 2 Cor. 5:21. Again, this sin bearing was a judicial imputation from God as there was absolutely no affinity [attraction] between the Perfect humanity of Jesus and human sin.

1 PETER 3:18

For Christ also died for sins once for all, *the* just [*dikaio*s (righteous) – Jesus Christ was Perfect] for *the* unjust [*adikos* – imperfect mankind], so that He might bring us to God, having been put to death in the flesh, but made alive in the spirit [*Holy Spirit's participation in Jesus' resurrection*].



– Jesus' Sin Bearing on the Cross –

1 PETER 2:24

And He Himself [Jesus Christ] bore [*anaphero* (to carry; to put upon the altar)] our sins in His body [*soma* – sin bearing took place in the humanity of Jesus] on the cross [Christ suffered Spiritual Death during the last three hours while on the cross], so that we [all Believers] might die to [*apogenomenos* (to be removed from)] sin [the influence of the Old Sin Nature is broken] and live to righteousness [*dikaiosune* – the positive [+P] volition Believer living inside the Divine Dynasphere]; for by His wounds [*molops* (wound that trickles with blood) – the substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus Christ which occurred while He was still alive on the cross] you were healed [*iaomai* (to cure; to bring about salvation) – salvation provided].

ROMANS 5:8

But God [God the Father is the author of the Plan of God] demonstrates [God desires salvation for all] His own love [*agape* – impersonal love] toward us, in that while we were yet sinners [*hamartolos* – the unBeliever under Spiritual Death is the enemy of God], Christ died [*apothnesko* (of violent death; of eternal death; to be subject to eternal misery in hell) – Spiritual Death] for us [Believers].

- (b) **Jesus' Physical Death.** After suffering Spiritual Death on the cross, the next death of the LORD Jesus Christ was His Physical Death. With the work of salvation completed by 3 pm, Jesus could then taste the “*sour wine*” offered to Him [Jn. 19:30; Matt. 27:48] just before dying. Because He had to remain *completely lucid* for the entire sin bearing process, Jesus had earlier rejected a sponge of “*wine mixed with myrrh*” offered while on the cross [Mk. 15:23]. Again, Jesus did not bleed to death. In fact, given His powerful physique and the horrendous beatings, Pilate questioned how long Jesus would actually last on the cross [Mk. 15:44]. Indeed, it was Jesus who directed His own Physical Death. “*‘Father, into Your hands I commit My spirit’*” [Lk. 23:46; Acts 2:23; Matt. 27:50].

MARK 15:44

Pilate wondered if He [Jesus] was dead by this time, and summoning the centurion, he questioned him as to whether He was already dead.

ACTS 2:23

This *Man* [**Jesus**], delivered over [*ekdotos* (given over to enemies)] by the predetermined plan and foreknowledge of God [**Plan of God**], you [**religious Jewish leadership desired to murder Him**] nailed to a cross by the hands of godless men [**unBelievers**] and put *Him* to death [*anairoeo* (physical death by murder)].

- (8) **Mission Accomplished.** After the sin bearing was completed Jesus Christ pronounced the triumphant *mission accomplished* phrase: “***It is finished!***” [Jn. 19:30]. Jesus Christ had suffered substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross in order to save the human soul of every person that believes in Him [Ps. 34:22]. Satan’s back is now broken in the Angelic Conflict. See Jn. 16:11; Col. 2:15. See @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT.

JOHN 19:30

Therefore when Jesus had received the sour wine, He said, “It is finished [*teleo* (to complete; mission accomplished) – during the past three hours Jesus Christ had suffered Spiritual Death for the sins of all humans]!”* And He bowed [*klino* (to incline)] His head and gave up His [**human**] spirit [*pneuma* – His human spirit went to Heaven, His body went to the grave, and His soul went to Paradise in Hell].

* literally: “***Finished with the result that it is completed forever!***”

- (9) **Last Words of Jesus.** The very last words the LORD Jesus Christ uttered from the cross were about the *primacy of Bible Doctrine*. Luke records that Jesus quoted the first part of Ps. 31:5, “***Father, into Your hands I commit My spirit***” [Lk. 23:46; cf. Ps. 31:5], and Mark records that a last “***loud cry***” [Mk. 15:37] was uttered by Him before he died. That last sound most likely completed the passage from Ps. 31:5: “***You have ransomed me, O LORD, God of truth.***”

PSALM 31:5

Into Your [**God the Father**] hand I [**Jesus Christ**] commit [*paqad* (to look after)] my spirit [*ruach* – His human spirit]; You have ransomed [*padah* (to rescue; redeem; ransom)] me, O LORD, God of truth [*emeth* (truth; faithfulness) – Bible Doctrine].

- (10) **Sin Not an Issue.** With Jesus' work on the cross a fact of history and *sin no longer an issue in salvation* [Jn. 3:36], any human can receive the [+R] Righteousness of God at the point of belief in Jesus Christ [2 Cor. 5:21]. Indeed, sin is also not an issue for the unBeliever at his future trial at the Great White Throne Judgment [Rev. 20:11-15]. The unBeliever is rejected for an eternal relationship with His Creator because he does not possess the [+R] Righteousness of God, not because of his sins! The unpardonable sin, which Christ did not die for on the cross, is rejection of the Gospel. See @@@ SIN.

JOHN 3:36

He who believes [*pisteuo*] in the Son [**Jesus Christ**] has eternal [*aionios* (without beginning and end)] life; but he who does not obey [*apeitheo* (to refuse or withhold belief; not to allow one's self to be persuaded)] the Son will not see life, but the wrath of God abides [*meno* (to remain)] on him [**eternal separation in the Lake of Fire**].

- (11) **What Think Ye of Christ?** The only issue left unresolved for the unBeliever is whether or not he will accept the *free gift of salvation* offered by God. "***What do you think about the Christ?***" [Matt. 22:42-44]. In short, it is a question of choosing either God's "Divine Good" grace provision for salvation or religion's "human good" works formula [Eph. 2:8-9]. Thus, although unlimited atonement makes all humans equal candidates for salvation, the unBeliever must accept the free grace gift from God.

MATTHEW 22:42-44

"What do you think about the Christ, whose son is He?" They [**the Pharisees**] said to Him [**Jesus**], "*The son of David.*" He said to them, "Then how does David in the Spirit call Him [**Christ**] 'LORD,' saying, 'The LORD [*kurios* (God) – **God the Father**] said to my LORD [*kurios* (God) – **Jesus Christ**], 'Sit at My right hand, until I [**God the Father**] put Your [**Jesus Christ in His resurrection body**] enemies beneath Your feet [**Operation Footstool**]?'"

- (12) **The Two Primary Predictions.** The two primary Old Testament chapters predicting the person and work of Jesus Christ for salvation are *Psalms 22* [written 1,000 years before the birth of Jesus of Nazareth] and *Isaiah 53* [written 700 years before the LORD Christ came to the earth to take on humanity in hypostatic union]. See @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION.

PSALM 22:1-22

:1-2

“My God, my God?” – *Addressed to God the Father* during the sin bearing.

The question that demands an answer, which is given in verse :3 below.

Note: Jesus screamed out more than once during the last three hours of sin bearing [Lk. 23:44; Mk. 15:33; Matt. 27:46] per Ps. 22:1-2, where the words *sheagah* (roaring) and *qara* (to scream out) are in the *plural*.

“forsaken” – *azab*. God can have nothing to do with sin but to *condemn it*.

He imputed and judged all the sin of humanity in Jesus Christ [1 Pet. 2:24].

“deliverance” – God won’t deliver Him until after sin bearing is completed.

“groaning” – *sheagah* (roaring; distress cry). This is in the plural and occurred during the last three hours as Christ bore our sins in His body.

“I cry by day” – *qara* (to scream out). It was darkened from noon to 1500, but still during the day. **“It was the third hour when they crucified Him”** [Mk. 15:25]. The third hour after dawn is 0900 in Jewish time.

“And by night” – The unique **Spiritual Death** of sin bearing took place under a supernatural darkness covering the location from 1200 to 1500. Bystanders could hear Him screaming but could not see Him [Mk. 15:23]. Not coincidental, this was the exact same time frame that the Passover lambs were being sacrificed at the Temple by the Jews.

:3

“You are holy” – *qadosh*. The *definitive answer* to Ps. 22:1. God can’t compromise His Perfect essence. God’s Righteousness [+R] demands God’s Justice, and God’s Justice demands judgment for human sin.

:6-7

“worm” – *tola* (the blood of a special type of worm). This worm was crushed to make the red dye for the robes of royalty. Jesus was *crushed for our sin* so that we might become wrapped in His [+R] Righteousness [Isa. 61:10]!

“and not a man” – The severe beatings inflicted on Him caused Jesus to no longer appear human. See Isa. 52:14; 53:3; Mk. 15:15-20.

“with the lip, they wag the head” – Many in the crowd around the cross made dirty signs at Jesus. See Matt. 27:39-44; Mk. 15:29-32; Lk. 23:35-38.

:9-13

“made me trust” – Jesus was sustained by Bible Doctrine in His soul.

“none to help” – *azar* (total isolation). *Only Christ* provides salvation.

:16-19

“*dogs*” – *keleb*. Term used for Gentiles. See 2 Pet. 2:22; Matt. 15:25-27.

“*band of evildoers*” – All those Jews that clamored for his death.

“*pierced my hands and my feet*” – Zech. 12:10; Isa. 53:5. The Romans drove large iron nails through *each hand and the feet* [Jn. 19:18-22; 20:25].

“*I can count all my bones*” – As the Passover lamb, no bones were broken [Jn. 19:32-33].

“*O LORD, be not far off*” – A prayer for His resurrection.

:20-22

“*horns of the wild oxen*” – Idiom for the cross.

“*tell of your name*” – *saphar*. Jesus Christ will fulfill the Plan of God.

ISAIAH 52:13 – 53:12

[quoted in *Luke* and Acts 8]

:13

“*Behold*” – A command to Believers to pay attention and study.

“*My servant*” – Jesus Christ executed the Plan of God.

“*prosper*” – *qsakal* (to be wise).

“*greatly exalted*” – Ps. 110:1. See @@@ FOOTSTOOL.

:14-15

“*astonished*” – *shamen* (to be shocked).

“*appearance*” – *mareh*. The face of Jesus.

“*marred*” – *mischath* (complete disfigurement of the face).

ISAIAH 53

Verse 1 – Gospel; Verses 2-4 – The First Advent; Verses 5-6 – Man’s Hopeless Condition & Solution; Verses 7-8 – Trials of Jesus Christ on the Cross; Verse 9 – Burial of Christ; Verse 10 – Resurrection of Christ; Verse 11 – Salvation Doctrine; Verse 12 – Glorification of Jesus Christ & Rewards to Mature Believers.

:1-2

“*Who has believed our message?*” – The Gospel. Most humans reject God.

“*arm of the LORD*” – Not the hand of God but the “*arm*” which stresses how much it cost Jesus Christ to pay the price for our salvation. See Jn. 12:38.

“*like a tender shoot*” – The Deity of Christ was hidden from sight, not a huge tree. The humanity of Jesus grew up to adulthood [Isa. 7:14-16].

“*root out of parched ground*” – Jesus came during the 4th Cycle of Discipline to the Jewish nation per Lev. 26:14-33; Isa. 11:1, 10; Rev. 5:5; 22:16.

“*He has no stately form or majesty*” – No human glamour [Jn. 12:15].

:3-4

“*He was despised and forsaken of men*” – He was rejected [Matt. 10:37-39].

“*A man of sorrows and acquainted with grief*” – Jesus always knew that the *horror of the cross* awaited Him.

“*we did not esteem Him*” – *khawshab* (to put all the facts together).

“*Smitten of God*” – His suffering was to save mankind, but most mocked Him.

:5

“*He was pierced*” – *chahal* (to profane and defile self). Every individual sin pierced Him on the cross. This is the inscrutable pain of **Spiritual Death**.

“*for our transgressions*” – *pasha*. All humans fail God’s Perfection.

“*He was crushed*” – *daka* (to crush to a pulp).

“*for our iniquities*” – *avon*. All humans deserve to suffer **Spiritual Death**.

“*chastening for our well-being*” – *musar* (discipline). Salvation provided.

“*healed*” – *raphe* (sewn together by a physician). God and the Believer are reconciled. True God and true humanity, Christ is the only mediator!

:6

“*sheep have gone astray*” – This refers to stupid and helpless mankind.

“*turned to his own way*” – Human negative [-N] volition at work.

“*But the LORD has caused the iniquity of us all To fall on Him*” – God the Father judged all sin in Jesus Christ on the cross.

:7-8

“*He did not open His mouth*” – Jesus did not object to the mistreatment.

“*like a sheep that is silent before its shears*” – Sheep don’t resist.

“*By oppression*” – *otser* (to be arrested). Jesus was seized by legal authority.

“*judgment*” – *mispat* (to render a legal verdict). He was convicted illegally under both Jewish and Roman jurisprudence, yet no one complained.

“*He was cut off out of the land of the living*” – Jesus Christ died **Spiritual Death** and Physical Death. See “*the Messiah will be cut off*” [Dan. 9:26].

“*to whom the stroke was due?*” – *nega* (leprous disease). See Acts 8:27-35. We deserved to pay the punishment for our sins, not Him.

:9

“**grave**” – *qeber* (tomb, place of burial). Jesus was placed in a rock tomb.

“**wicked men**” – *rasah* (a criminal). The two thieves crucified next to Him were justly and lawfully punished for their crimes [Lk. 23:33].

“**rich**” – *ashiyr* (wealthy). Joseph of Arimathea and Nicodemus were wealthy members of the Sanhedrin [Jn. 3:1; 19:38-42]. Joseph of Arimathea put Jesus Christ in his own newly carved out burial tomb in his garden plot.

“**death[s]**” – *maveth* (deaths). This word is in the *intensive plural*, not the singular. Christ died twice on the cross. First, **Spiritual Death** and then Physical Death. See Ezk. 28:10.

“**He had done no violence**” – *chamas* (no unrighteous violence). Overt sins.

“**Nor was there any deceit**” – *mirmah* (no treachery). No mental attitude sins.

“**in His mouth**” – No sins of the tongue.

:10

“**pleased**” – *chaphets*. This is the only way that Perfect God can save man.

“**To crush Him**” – *daka* (to be crushed). Jesus was crushed for our sin.

“**putting Him to grief**” – *chalah* (to designate).

“**If He would render Himself as a guilt offering**” – *asham* (a sin offering).

“**He shall see His offspring**” – Resurrection of all Believers [Heb. 2:9-13].

“**prolong**” – *arak*. Extended on forever, Jesus Christ will rise from the dead!

“**pleasure of the LORD**” – The Father’s grace Plan of Salvation.

“**prosper**” – *tsalach* (to advance). God’s grace turns cursing into blessing.

:11

“**As a result of the anguish of**” – *amal* (a wearing effort in pain).

“**His soul**” – *nephesh*. Jesus suffered the pain of **Spiritual Death** in His soul.

“**satisfied**” – *saba*. God’s Holiness is propitiated [satisfied].

“**By his knowledge**” – Jesus knew what was happening. He was conscious at all times and would not drink the wine offered up to Him on a stick until after sin bearing had been completed. See Mk. 15:22-23; cf. Jn. 19:28-30.

“**My Servant, will justify the many**” – Those that respond to the Gospel.

“**As He will bear**” – *sabal* (to carry on self).

“**their iniquities**” – *avonba* (consequence of or punishment for iniquity).

:12

“**divide the booty**” – *chalaq* (to distribute). The blessings of salvation accrue to all Believers, but *rewards* belong only to Believers who reach maturity.

“**with the strong**” – *atsum* (mighty). Believers who reach *spiritual maturity*.

“He poured out Himself to death” – All human sins, *trillions and trillions*, were poured into the body of Jesus and judged. See *“He made Him who knew no sin to be sin on our behalf”* [2 Cor. 5:21].

“death” – *maveth*.

“numbered” – *manah* (to be assigned or appointed). It was our sins that were assigned to Jesus Christ. *Jesus Christ had no sin*.

“Yet He Himself bore the sin of many, And interceded for the transgressions” – A repeat of the *Bottom Line*.

- (13) **Rebound.** The cross is also used to refer to Rebound. The Old Sin Nature is said to be *“crucified with Him”* [Rom. 6:6], motivating the Believer to use Rebound. See Col. 2:14; 1 Jn. 3:6; Gal. 5:16.

COLOSSIANS 2:14

Having canceled out the certificate of debt [*cheirographon* – sinful man [-r] owes perfection to a Perfect [+R] God] consisting of decrees [the Mosaic Law condemns mankind] against us [Perfect God can only condemn imperfect man], which was hostile to us; and He [Jesus] has taken it out of the way, having nailed it to the cross [Jesus Christ took the judgment of sin in His own body on the cross so that the Believer now only uses Rebound to address sins].

- (14) **Take Up the Cross.** The *“cross”* [Lk. 14:27] is also used to represent the Believer’s perseverance and dedication to Bible Doctrine as his *number one priority* and to therefore *crucify his Old Sin Nature* and its evil desires and *“keep standing firm”* [Gal. 5:1]. In turn, Divine Suffering for Blessing is given to the **Winner** Believer in time as he advances to spiritual maturity. See Matt. 10:38-40; Lk. 9:23-24. *“But seek first His kingdom and His righteousness, and all these things will be added to you”* [Matt. 6:33].

MATTHEW 10:38-40

And he [Believer] who does not take his cross and follow after Me [Jesus Christ] is not worthy of Me. He who has found his life [the saved Believer] will lose [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely)] it [the Believer should reject the Cosmic Systems], and he who has lost his life [the Believer who turns away from the Cosmic Systems] for My sake [*heneka* (on account of)] will find it [eternal rewards bestowed for the positive [+P] volition Believer].

@@@ CUP

- (1) **Definition.** The word cup in the Bible means a drinking vessel. Because the person must decide to drink the liquid contents, the cup is used to illustrate numerous volitional choices, both good and bad.
- (2) **Results of Drinking.** When consumed, the liquid of the cup goes into the physical body where it is digested.
- (3) **Cup of Divine Discipline.** The Cup of Divine Discipline illustrates the administration of Divine Suffering to the individual apostate Believer or to the Client Nation in reversionism. Both types involve the consequences associated with rejecting Bible Doctrine on a consistent basis. *See Isa. 51:17, 22; Jer. 25:11-13, 15-18; Lev. 26:14-33; Ezk. 23:32-34.*

ISAIAH 51:17

Rouse yourself! Rouse yourself! Arise, O Jerusalem, you who have drunk from the LORD'S hand the cup [*kos*] of His anger; the chalice of reeling [*tarelah (to stagger)*] you have drained to the dregs [*the Jews of the Client Nation Judah, the Southern Kingdom, rejected God's words and were under extreme Divine Discipline for Suffering*].

- (4) **Cup of Divine Blessing.** Divine Blessings and “*rewards*” [1 Cor. 3:14] from God *overflow* to the positive [+P] volition **Winner** Believer who reaches spiritual maturity. In fact, grace blessings in time and eternity *chase* after the Believer so that his cup “*overflows*” with wonderful blessings and coupled with the happiness capacity to enjoy them, he is “*filled up to all the fullness of God*” [Eph. 3:19]; Ps. 23:5-6.

PSALM 23:5-6

You [*God*] prepare a table before me [*King David*] in the presence of my enemies; You have anointed my head with oil; my cup [*kos*] overflows [*with fantastic rewards in time and eternity*]. Surely goodness and lovingkindness [*chesed (mercy) – God's grace in action*] will follow [*radaph (to pursue; to run after)*] me all the days of my life, and I will dwell in the house [*bayith (home; house containing a family)*] of the LORD forever [*eternal life of the Believer forever in Heaven*].

- (5) **Cup of Salvation.** Here the emphasis is on the grace function of salvation. In this use, drinking the cup of salvation means that nothing is dependent on the character of the person doing the drinking. Just as anyone can drink regardless of their character or lack of character, *anyone can be saved* by faith alone in Christ alone. The process of is nonmeritorious. See Ps. 116:13.

PSALM 116:13

I shall lift up the cup [*kos*] of salvation [*yeshuah* (salvation, deliverance)] and call upon the name of the LORD.

- (6) **Cup of All Sins.** The cup containing all the sins of the world. Jesus Christ alone *voluntarily drank all the contents of this cup*, trillions and trillions of sins, while hanging on the cross. See Matt. 20:22-23; 26:39, 42; Mk. 10:38; Jn. 18:11; Lk. 22:42-44; 1 Pet. 2:24; Jn. 18:11; Heb. 2:9.

MATTHEW 20:22-23

But Jesus answered, “You [*James and John*] do not know what you are asking. Are you able to drink the cup that I am about to drink [*the cup containing the sins of all humanity*]?” They said to Him, “We are able.” He said to them, “My cup [*poterion – the cup of union with Jesus Christ*] you shall drink; but to sit on My right and on My left [*the places of highest honor in rewards*], this is not Mine to give, but it is for those for whom it has been prepared by My Father [*God the Father delegates this to Christ*].”

LUKE 22:42-44

Saying, “Father [*Jesus speaking to God the Father*], if You are willing, remove this cup [*poterion – the cup containing the sins of all mankind*] from Me; yet not My will, but Yours be done [*the Plan of God for salvation*].” Now an angel from heaven appeared to Him, strengthening Him. And being in agony [*agonia* (of severe mental struggles)] He was praying very fervently; and His sweat became like drops of blood, falling down upon the ground.

JOHN 18:11

So Jesus said to Peter, “Put the sword into the sheath; the cup [*poterion – the cup containing all sins*] which the Father has given Me, shall I not drink it?”

MATTHEW 26:39, 42

And He [Jesus] went a little beyond *them*, and fell on His face and prayed, saying, “My Father [Jesus speaking from His humanity], if it is possible, let this cup [*poterion* – the cup containing all the sins of the world, past, present, and future] pass from Me; yet not as I will, but as You will.” ... He went away again a second time and prayed, saying, “My Father, if this cannot pass away unless I drink it, Your will be done.”

- (7) **Cup of Union with Christ.** The cup of Union with Christ where the Believer *shares everything that Jesus Christ has*. “*This cup is the new covenant in My blood*” [1 Cor. 11:25]; Matt. 20:22-23. In addition, the Believer has the potential to be filled up with God’s thinking [Eph. 3:16-19]. *See infra* (9).

EPHESIANS 3:19

And to know the love of Christ which surpasses [*huperballo*] knowledge [*gnosis*], that you may be filled up [*reach maturity*] to all the fullness of God.

- (8) **Communion Cup.** The cup of the Church Age ritual of communion to *remember the LORD Jesus Christ and His work on the cross* – “*do this, as often as you drink it, in remembrance of Me*” [1 Cor. 11:25-27]. This is the only ritual commanded in the Church Age and focuses on the Believer’s ability to concentrate on the person and work of the LORD Jesus Christ.

1 CORINTHIANS 11:25

In the same way *He* [Jesus] *took* the cup also after supper, saying, “This cup is the new covenant [*diatheke* (a compact) – the Church Age mystery doctrine of Union with Christ] in My blood [the substitutionary work of Christ on the cross]; do this, as often as you drink *it*, in remembrance [*anamnesis* (recollection)] of Me.”

- (9) **Bible Doctrine vs. Demonism.** The Believer is either drinking from the LORD’s cup where he consistently stays in the Divine Dynasphere and grows to spiritual maturity, or from Satan’s cup where he chooses to reside in the Cosmic Systems. It is impossible for the negative [-N] volition **Loser** Believer to grow in grace in his spiritual life because he does not drink of God’s cup of Bible Doctrine on a consistent basis. *See* 1 Cor. 10:20-21.

1 CORINTHIANS 10:20-21

No, but I [Paul] say that the things which the Gentiles [*ethnos* – *unBelievers*] sacrifice [*thuo*], they sacrifice to demons [*daimonion*] and not to God; and I do not want you [*Believers*] to become sharers [*koinonos* (a partner; associate)] in demons. You cannot drink [*pino*] the cup [*poterion*] of the LORD [the mind of Christ is Bible Doctrine] and the cup of demons [the thinking of the Cosmic Systems]; you cannot partake of the table of the LORD and the table of demons.

- (10) **Cup of Anti-Semitism.** Satan has always desired to eliminate the Jewish race so God cannot keep His covenants. Thus, as part of his rulership of the world Satan stirs up anti-Semitism from time to time in human history. However, God controls history and has promised *grave punishment* to those people and nations who engage in anti-Semitism: “*And the one who curses you (the Jewish race) I will curse*” [Gen. 12:3]. This cup of anti-Semitism reaches its peak in the Tribulation which will cause the total destruction of all those bent on destroying the Jews. See Zech. 12:2.

ZECHARIAH 12:2

Behold, I am going to make Jerusalem a cup [*saph*] that causes reeling to all the peoples around; and when the siege is against Jerusalem, it will also be against Judah.

- (11) **Cup of God's Wrath.** The expansion of maximum Satanic religion will cause the delusional practitioners to drink fully from the cup of the “*wrath of God*” [Rev. 1:9-10; 14:9-11] during the Tribulation.

REVELATION 14:9-10

Then another angel, a third one, followed them, saying with a loud voice, “If anyone worships the beast and his image [there will be maximum religion in the Tribulation], and receives a mark on his forehead or on his hand, he also will drink [*pino*] of the wine of the wrath of God, which is mixed in full strength in the cup [*poterion*] of His anger; and he will be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels and in the presence of the Lamb.”

@@@ DEATH

Definition. There are *nine types* of “deaths” found in the Bible.

- (1) **One: Physical Death.** (1) The unBeliever’s human soul separates from the body at Physical Death and goes to Hell. (2) The Believer’s human soul/spirit separates from the body at Physical Death and goes to Heaven [Matt. 8:22; 2 Cor. 5:1-8; Phil. 1:21; 22-23; Rom. 8:38-39; Heb. 4:12; 1 Thess. 5:23; Lk. 1:46-47]. In either case, the chemical elements that make up the physical body disintegrates into the earth [Eccl. 3:20; 12:7].

ECCLESIASTES 12:7

Then [at Physical Death] the dust [*aphar – the elements of biological life*] will return to the earth as it was, and the spirit [*ruach (soul life)*] will return to God who gave [*nathan (to bestow)*] it.

- (a) **God’s Timing.** The time of Physical Death for everyone is a matter of the Sovereignty of God [Ps. 34:22; 68:19-20; Acts 17:26; 2 Pet. 3:9].

2 PETER 3:9

The LORD is not slow about His promise [*the Rapture will occur*], as some count slowness, but is patient toward you, not wishing [*boulomai (to will deliberately)*] for any to perish [*apollumi (to put out of the way entirely) – the will of God is for all to be saved*] but for all to come to repentance [*metanoia (a change of mind) – reject religion and accept God’s salvation offer*].

- (b) **Salvation Opportunity Cut Off.** Physical Death *ends the opportunity* for the unBeliever to be saved. “*And inasmuch as it is appointed for men (unBelievers) to die once and after this comes judgment*” [Heb. 9:27-28]; Isa. 55:6; 2 Cor. 5:8; 6:2; Job 27:8; Lk. 12:19-21; 16:19-31; Ezk. 28:10. See @@@ SALVATION.

JOB 27:8

For what is the hope of the godless [*the unBeliever*] when he is cut off [*batsa (to cut off; to finish) – Physical Death*], when God requires his life [*nephesh (soul)*]?

HEBREWS 9:27-28

And inasmuch as it is appointed for men [**unBeliever**] to die [*apothnesko* (to be subject to eternal misery in hell)] once [*hapax* (one time)] and after this comes judgment [*krisis* (based on justice) – **the unBeliever will face the Great White Throne Judgment**], so Christ also, having been offered once to bear the sins of many, will appear a second time for salvation [*soteria* (deliverance) – **at the 2nd Coming Jesus Christ will deliver the Jews**] without *reference to sin* [**Jesus Christ in resurrection body**], to those who eagerly await Him.

LUKE 12:19-21

And I [**unBeliever**] will say to my soul, “Soul, you have many goods laid up for many years *to come*; take your ease, eat, drink *and* be merry.” But God said to him, “‘You fool [*aphron* (one without reason)]! This *very* night your soul is required [*apaiteo* (to demand back) – **at Physical Death the soul departs the body**] of you; and *now* who will own what you have prepared?’ So is the man who stores up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God [**the wealth of possessing the Righteousness [+R] of God for salvation**].”

EZEKIEL 28:10

You will die [*muth* – **Physical Death**] the death [*maveth* (realm of the dead) – **Spiritual Death**] of the uncircumcised [**the unBeliever**].

- (c) **Blessings to the Believer.** “*O death, where is your victory? O death where is your sting? ... thanks be to God, who gives us the victory through our LORD Jesus Christ*” [1 Cor. 15:55-57]. The Believer is not only saved, but God will not take a Believer home to Heaven until He has given *every possible blessing to him compatible with His Justice* [2 Cor. 5:8]. Accordingly, even the **Loser** Believer gets certain amounts of Divine grace blessings despite his total indifference to, or rejection of, Bible Doctrine. See @@@ GRACE.

2 CORINTHIANS 5:8

We [**Believers**] are of good courage, I [**Paul**] say, and prefer rather to be absent from the body [*soma* – **at Physical Death the soul/spirit departs the body**] and to be at home with the LORD [*kurios* (God) – **in Heaven**].

- (d) **Prolong Life.** God prolongs life for the positive [+P] volition Believer. *“For You have delivered my soul from death”* [Prov. 56:13]. *“For by me (Bible Doctrine) your days will be multiplied, and years of life will be added to you”* [Prov. 9:11]; Ps. 56:13; 118:18; Prov. 3:1-2; 14:27. Indeed, praying to *continue to live in order to reach spiritual maturity and rewards to glorify God* mirrors a Directive Will of God. On the other hand, reversionism can cause the Believer’s death. *“Why should you die before your time? It is good that you grasp one thing (long life) and also not let go of the other (Bible Doctrine); for the one who fears God comes forth with both of them”* [Eccl. 7:17-18].

PROVERBS 3:1-2

My son, do not forget my [Solomon] teaching [*torah – Bible Doctrine*], but let your heart [positive [+P] volition decisions] keep my commandments; for length of days and years of life and peace [*shalom (prosperity) – maturity and rewards*] they will add to you.

- (e) **Dying Grace.** In His grace, God provides all things necessary for the mature Believer when Physical Death arrives [Ps. 116:15; Phil. 1:20-21; 2 Tim. 4:7-8]. This is called *dying grace* [Ps. 23].

PSALM 23

The LORD is my [King David] shepherd, I shall not want. He makes me lie down in green pastures; He leads me beside quiet waters. He restores my soul; He guides me in the paths of righteousness [God provides Bible Doctrine so David can reach maturity] for His name’s sake. Even though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death [*tsalmaveth (a death shadowed valley)*], I fear no evil, for You are with me; Your rod [Divine Suffering for Blessing] and Your staff [Divine guidance], they comfort me. You prepare a table before me in the presence of my enemies; You have anointed my head with oil; my cup overflows [with rewards in time and eternity]. Surely goodness and lovingkindness will follow [*radaph (to pursue; to run after)*] me all the days of my life, and I will dwell in the house [*bayith (home, house containing a family)*] of the LORD forever [*eternal security in Heaven*].

- (f) **True Love.** True love in marriage can be *as strong as* the finality of Physical Death. *“For love is as strong as death”* [S.S. 8:6].

- (g) **Confidence.** Physical Death cannot be faced with dignity by Believers who reject Bible Doctrine [Lam. 1:19-20].
- (h) **Reminder.** Physical Death is *a reminder* of the following facts: (1) shortness of one's time on the earth [Jas. 4:14]; (2) fame and fortune are fleeting [Mk. 8:36-37]; (3) to prepare for eternity [Acts 16:31]; and (4) the certainty of Judgment for the unBeliever [Jn. 3:18, 36].
- (i) **What Believers Can Anticipate After Physical Death.**
 - 1. **No Hell.** Staying out of Hell. *“Therefore there is now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus. For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has set you free from the law of sin and of death”* [Rom. 8:1-2]; Heb. 9:27-28. Unless a particular Believer is alive at the Rapture, where he will be transformed, a Believer only dies once – Physical Death.
 - 2. **Yes Heaven.** Going to Heaven where there is no more pain or the Old Sin Nature. Paul stated: *“we are of good courage, I say, and prefer rather to be absent from the body and to be at home with the LORD”* [2 Cor. 5:8]; Rev. 21:4.

REVELATION 21:4

And He [God] will wipe away every tear from their [Believer's] eyes; and [in Heaven] there will no longer be *any* death [*thanatos* (with the implied idea of future misery in hell)]; there will no longer be *any* mourning, or crying, or pain; the first [*protos* (first in time)] things have passed away.

- 3. **Rewards.** The **Winner** Believer's wondrous eternal “*rewards*” [1 Cor. 3:14] bestowed at the Judgment Seat of Christ, above and beyond a resurrection body. *See* Phil. 1:20; 1 Cor. 2:9.

PHILIPPIANS 1:20

According to my [Paul] earnest expectation and hope [*elpis* (confidence)], that I will not be put to shame in anything, but *that* with all boldness, Christ will even now, as always, be exalted in my body, whether by life or by death [*thanatos* (death of the body) – Paul's Judgment Seat of Christ rewards].

1 CORINTHIANS 2:9

But just as it is written, “Things which eye has not seen and ear has not heard, and *which* have not entered the heart of man, all that God has prepared [*hetoimazo* (to make ready beforehand) – the fantastic eternal rewards are beyond human comprehension] for those who love [*agapao* (to love dearly) – only the positive [+P] volition Believer at maturity can love God] Him.”

4. **Eternal Life.** The Believer will have an eternal existence in the “*new heaven and new earth*” [Rev. 21:1], above and beyond human comprehension. See Jn. 14:1-3; 1 Jn. 5:11-12, 20.

JOHN 14:1-3

Do not let your heart be troubled; believe in God, believe also in Me [*Jesus Christ*]. In My Father’s house [*oikia* (an inhabited dwelling)] are many dwelling places; if it were not so, I would have told you; for I go to prepare [*hetoimazo* (to make ready)] a place for you. If [*First Class Condition – and I do*] I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you to Myself [*at the Rapture*], that where I am, *there* you may be also [*in Heaven*].

5. **Supernatural Resurrection Body.** Believers are waiting for a new indestructible and eternal resurrection body. As Jesus promised: “*I am the resurrection and the life; he who believes in Me will live even if he dies*” [Jn. 11:25]; Phil. 3:21; 1 Jn. 3:1-2; Job 19:25-26. Getting a resurrection body at the Rapture. “*It is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body*” [1 Cor. 15:35-50]; 1 Pet. 1:3-5. See @@@ RESURRECTION.

1 PETER 1:4-5

To *obtain* an inheritance [*kleronomia* (property received by inheritance) – the Believer receives a resurrection body and rewards] *which* is imperishable and undefiled and will not fade away [*amarantos* (perennial; perpetual)], reserved [*tereo* (to post a guard)] in heaven [*ouranos* – the third Heaven] for you [*the Believer*], who are protected by the power of God through faith [*pistis* – the truth of Bible Doctrine guarantees these things] for a salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – the Believer is given these things by God] ready to be revealed in the last time [*at the Rapture followed by the Judgment Seat of Christ*].

- (j) **Precious.** As His children all Believers, regardless of spiritual status, are “*precious*” [Ps. 16:3] to God. *See* Ps. 116:15; Isa. 43:1-4; 1 Jn. 3:1.

PSALM 116:15

Precious [*yaqar* (valuable; prized)] in the sight of the LORD is the death [*maveth* – Physical Death] of His godly ones [all Believers possess the Righteousness [+R] of God and are in His family].

- (k) **Examples.** Reviewing the circumstances of six Believers in the Bible at the point of Physical Death:

1. **Moses** – Deut. 34:1-7 [Winner Believer].

DEUTERONOMY 34:7

Although Moses was one hundred and twenty years old when he died [*maveth*], his eye was not dim, nor his vigor abated [although Moses was not allowed to enter the promised land due to an act of disobedience, he was allowed to view the land before his death].

2. **Paul** – 2 Tim. 4:6-8 [Winner Believer].

2 TIMOTHY 4:6-8

For I [Paul] am already being poured out as a drink offering, and the time [*kairos*] of my departure has come [the Romans would execute him within a few weeks]. I have fought [*agonizomai* (to enter a contest in the games)] the good [*kalos* (beautiful to look at)] fight [*agon* (the place of contest) – in the Angelic Conflict], I have finished the course [*dromos* (the course of life) – Paul had reached the high ground of spiritual maturity], I have kept [*tereo* (to attend to carefully)] the faith [*pistis* – Bible Doctrine]; in the future there is laid up [*apokeimai* (to be laid away)] for me the crown [*stephanos* (a wreath of garland which was given as a prize to victors in public games)] of righteousness [*dikaiosune*], which the LORD, the righteous Judge, will award [*apodidomi* (to deliver)] to me on that day [*hemera* – Paul’s eternal rewards bestowed at the Judgment Seat of Christ]; and not only to me, but also to all who have loved [*agapao* (to love dearly)] His appearing [*epiphaneia* – all Believers who reach maturity].

3. **King Saul** – 1 Sam. 28:4-7 [**Loser** Believer]; 4. **King David** – Ps. 23 [**Winner** Believer] 5. **Joseph** – Gen. 50:24-26 [**Winner** Believer]; 6. **Peter** – 2 Pet. 1:12-21 [**Winner** Believer]; **Balaam** – Num. 22:1-24:25 [**Loser** Believer].

(1) **Four Causes.** Four causes for the Believer's Physical Death.

1. **Time Up.** God allots a certain number of days for each Believer [2 Tim. 4:7; Eccl. 3; 2 Pet. 1:13-14]. The confidence of the **Winner** Believer and *God's perfect timing* per Job 5:19-27.

JOB 5:19-27

:19-20

"He will deliver you" – *natsal* (to cause to be delivered or rescued).

"He will redeem you" – *padah* (to preserve). During economic disaster.

:21-23

"you will not be afraid of violence" – *shod* (a violent or painful death).

"you will laugh at violence and famine" – *sachaq* (the laughing from inner confidence). The mature Believer knows that God controls the matter.

"stones ... beasts" – Stones and beasts were instruments of violent death.

:24

"You will know" – *jada*. The mature Believer.

"that your tent" – *ohel* (a nomad's tent). The soul's habitation in the body.

:26-27

"full vigor" – Physical Death at God's exact timing, which is perfect.

"grain" – There is a right time and a wrong time to harvest grain.

2. **Sin Unto Death.** The *"sin unto death"* [1 Jn. 5:16, KJV] of a reversionistic Believer. See 1 Jn. 5:16; 1 Chron. 10:13.
3. **Suicide.** Long or short type. The Believer's negative [-N] volition overrides the Plan of God for his life.
4. **Glorification of God.** Physical Death of a mature Believer during the Angelic Conflict [Phil. 1:20-21; Jn. 21:19; Rev. 2:13].

REVELATION 2:13

I [Jesus Christ] know where you [Pergamum Church] dwell, where Satan's throne [Satan had established a major HQ there] is; and you hold fast My name, and did not deny My faith [pistis – Believers stayed with Doctrine] even in the days of Antipas, My witness, My faithful [pistos] one [Antipas was the former Pastor/Teacher at Pergamum who was executed by the Romans], who was killed among you, where Satan dwells.

- (2) **Two: Spiritual Death at Birth.** At birth God imputes to the viable fetus the *spark of life* called *neshamah* in the Hebrew. This ignites human physical life. Simultaneously, God also imputes *Adam's original sin* to the baby which ignites individual Spiritual Death. “*For the wages of sin is [spiritual] death*” [Rom. 6:23]; 5:12-18; Lk. 9:60; Col. 2:13; Eph. 2:1; 1 Cor. 15:22; Gen. 2:17; 1 Pet. 3:18; 4:6. This is a real imputation by God as there is an affinity attraction between each Old Sin Nature and Adam's original sin. Spiritual Death means that *all humans are born physically alive but spiritually dead*. It was the spiritually “*dead*” [Jn. 5:25] that heard Jesus' real offer of salvation.

LUKE 9:60

But He [Jesus] said to him, “Allow the dead [*nekros* – physically alive but no human spirit, this one is spiritually dead] to bury their own dead [*physically dead*]; but as for you, go and proclaim everywhere the kingdom of God.”

ROMANS 5:12

Therefore, just as through one man [Adam] sin [*hamartia* – Old Sin Nature] entered into the world, and death [*thanatos* – Spiritual Death] through sin, and so death spread to all men, because all sinned [*hamartano* – personal sin].

- (3) **Three: The Second Death.** The “*second death*” [Rev. 20:6, 14; 21:8] is reserved for the unBeliever only. It is irrevocably fixed at the unBeliever's Physical Death but finalized at the Great White Throne Judgment where he is resurrected [Heb. 6:2] from Hell, judged, and sent to the “*lake of fire*” [Rev. 20:12-15]. The Second Death is a consequence of the unBeliever's choice to *reject God's offer* of salvation. “*Behold, all souls are Mine. ... The soul who sins will die (Spiritual Death)*” [Ezk. 18:4]; Jn. 3:36; 5:24; Heb. 9:27; Job 27:8; Matt. 10:28; 25:41; Ezk. 28:10; 2 Thess. 1:7-9; Ps. 69:28.

EZEKIEL 28:10

You will die the death [**Spiritual Death**] of the uncircumcised [**unBeliever**].

PSALM 69:28

May they [**Spiritually Dead unBelievers**] be blotted out of the book of life And may they not be recorded with the righteous [**only Believers possess the Righteousness [+R] of God**].

REVELATION 20:14-15

Then death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. This is the second death [**Spiritual Death**], the lake of fire [**eternal separation from God**], And if anyone's name was not found written in the book of life [**zoe – the unBeliever has been blotted out of the Book of Life**], he was thrown into the lake of fire.

2 THESSALONIANS 1:7-9

And *to give* relief to you who are afflicted and to us [**Paul**] as well when the LORD Jesus will be revealed from heaven with His mighty angels in flaming fire, dealing out retribution to those who do not know God [**unBelievers**] and to those who do not obey [**unBelievers who rejected salvation**] the gospel of our LORD Jesus. These [**unBelievers**] will pay the penalty [**dike (a suit at law)**] of eternal destruction, away from the presence of the LORD [**eternal separation from God in the Lake of Fire**] and from the glory [**the Trinity**] of His power.

- (4) **Four: Positional Death.** Regardless of his level of maturity, all Believers at the point of salvation are identified with Christ in His unique death on the cross and thus are forever in a state of Positional Death vis-a-vis the Cosmic Systems – they are liberated from the Spiritual Death status of the unBeliever. This union with Jesus Christ is **irrevocable**. Again, the fact of Positional Death is shared by the **Winner** and the **Loser** Believer. Of course, the **Loser** Believer lives in Operational Death [Rom. 6:3-11; Col. 2:12; 3:3], *infra* (5).

COLOSSIANS 3:3

For you [**the Believer**] have died [**Positional Death**] and your life is hidden [**Christian Way of Life**] with Christ [**Union with Christ**] in God.

- (5) **Five: Operational Death.** The **Loser** Believer who rejects Bible Doctrine and refuses to live in the Divine Dynasphere is in Operational Death. No Divine Good [*agathos*] is produced by the **Loser** Believer in the status of Operational Death where he haplessly and stupidly *imitates the unBeliever's lifestyle* in the Cosmic Systems and is “*severed from Christ*” [Gal. 5:4] in his spiritual life. See Rev. 3:1; Rom. 8:6-8, 13; Jas. 2:26; Prov. 8:36; Eph. 5:14-17; 1 Tim. 5:6; 1 Jn. 3:14. Operational Death requires great effort to rectify. See *infra* (6). See @@@ REBOUND.

1 JOHN 3:14

We [**Believers at maturity**] know that we have passed [*metabaino* (to pass from one place to another)] out of death [**Operational Death**] into life [**living the Christian Way of Life**], because we love [*agapao* – **Believers consistently engaged in the use of problem solving devices**] the brethren. He who does not love abides [*meno* (to remain)] in death [**Believers in Operational Death**].

1 TIMOTHY 5:6

But she [**Believer in reversionism**] who gives herself to wanton pleasure [**living in the Cosmic Systems**] is dead [**Operational Death**] even while she lives [*zao* (to be among the living)].

- (6) **Six: Temporal Death.** The temporary loss of Fellowship with God the Holy Spirit results in Temporal Death for the Believer. Temporal Death, i.e., being *under the power of the Old Sin Nature*, occurs each time the Believer sins [Lk. 15:24, 32; Jas. 1:13-17; 1 Tim. 5:6]. This status is remedied when the Believer uses Rebound which places him back into the absolute spiritual status of being “*filled with the [Holy] Spirit*” [Eph. 5:14-18].

EPHESIANS 5:14-17

For this reason it says, “Awake, sleeper [**Believer in Operational Death**], and arise from the dead [*nekros* – **Temporal Death is cured by Rebound**], and Christ will shine on you.” Therefore be careful how you walk [*peripateo* – **Believer's lifestyle**], not as unwise men but as wise [**apply Bible Doctrine**], making the most of your time, because the days are evil [**Satan's Cosmic Systems**]. So then do not be foolish [*aphron* (without reason)], but understand what the will of the LORD is [**reach maturity and glorify God**].

JAMES 1:13-15

Let no one [Believer] say when he is tempted, “I am being tempted by God”; for God cannot be tempted by evil, and He Himself does not tempt anyone [the Holy Trinity cannot tempt anyone to commit sin]. But each one is tempted when he is carried away and enticed [deleazo (to bait and catch)] by his own lust [epithumia (to long for that which is forbidden) – from the Old Sin Nature]. Then when lust has conceived [sullambano – the Believer uses his own negative [-N] volition to give in to the temptation to commit the sin], it gives birth [tikto (to bring forth)] to sin [the personal sin is then committed]; and when sin is accomplished, it brings forth death [thanatos – Temporal Death for the Believer].

- (7) **Seven: Sin Unto Death.** Some Loser Believers die a horrible Physical Death called the “sin unto death” [1 Jn. 5:16, KJV]; Isa. 38:17-22; 1 Jn. 5:16. However, they cannot lose their eternal salvation.

1 JOHN 5:16

If anyone sees his brother [adelphos – a Believer] committing a sin [hamartia] not leading to death [thanatos – Physical Death], he shall ask and God will for him give life to those who commit sin [hamartano] not leading to death. There is a sin [hamartia] leading to death [the sin unto death for the Believer in reversionism]; I [John] do not say that he should make request [in prayer] for this.

- (8) **Eight: Christ’s Unique Spiritual Death.** Jesus Christ died twice on the cross. He first died Spiritual Death during the time of sin bearing, from 1200 to 1500, followed by His Physical Death once sin bearing was completed. See Isa. 53:9; Heb. 9:27-28.

ISAIAH 53:9

His [Jesus Christ] grave was assigned with wicked [rasha (criminals; wicked men)] men, yet He was with a rich man [Joseph of Arimathea put Jesus in his own tomb] in His death[s] [maveth (state of death) – in the plural], because He had done no violence [Christ was innocent of the crime of inciting rebellion or any overt sins], nor was there any deceit in His mouth [Jesus Christ was completely without sins of the tongue or mental attitude sin].

- (9) **Nine: Sexual Death.** The inability to copulate and/or reproduce biological life. *See* Rom. 4:16-21; Heb. 11:11-12.
- (10) **Cut Off From Living.** The dead – in Hell [unBelievers] or in Heaven [Believers] – *cannot know anything about the living*. *See* Job 4:20-22; Eccl. 9:5-6; Lk. 16:29-31; 23:43; 1 Sam. 28:19; 2 Sam. 12:23. There are no such things as *disembodied human ghosts*. There are, however, angels of all sorts and stripes and many of them operate around mankind to either attack [Fallen angels] or defend [Saved angels] the Plan of God. *See* @@@ ANGELS.

ECCLESIASTES 9:5

For the living know they will die [*muth – Physical Death*]; but the dead [*muth*] do not know anything, nor have they any longer a reward, for their memory is forgotten.

2 SAMUEL 12:23

But now he [*David's son by Bathsheba*] has died [*muth – after a short illness the baby died*]; why should I [*David*] fast? Can I bring him back again? I will go to him [*in Paradise, David will see his minor son*], but he will not return to me [*while David is living on the earth*].

1 SAMUEL 28:19

Moreover the LORD will also give over Israel along with you [*King Saul*] into the hands of the Philistines, therefore tomorrow you and your sons [*all were Believers*] will be with me [*the Prophet Samuel who was brought back from Paradise to speak to Saul*]. Indeed, the LORD will give over the army of Israel into the hands of the Philistines!

LUKE 23:43

And He [*Jesus*] said to him, “Truly I say to you [*the thief being executed next to Jesus as He hung on the cross*], today [*semeron (this very day)*] you shall be with Me in Paradise [*paradeisos – Paradise or Abraham's Bosom is a separate compartment in Hell which was the temporary abode of the soul/spirit of Believers in the Old Testament*].”

@@@ DEMONISM

- (1) **Definition.** Demons are Fallen angels under the *control of the Satan* [Isa. 14:12], the “*ruler of this world*” [Jn. 12:31] and “*the god of this world*” [2 Cor. 4:4]. As with Saved angels there are a wide variety and different types of demons. In addition, some demons are confined and others are operational. Demons are under a military-type rank force structure [Rev. 2:13]. Beelzebub is the chief fallen angel that is operational on the earth today [Matt. 9:34; 12:24; Lk. 11:15]. Field grade officer demons are called *kosmokrators* [see Dan. 10:13, 20; Eph. 6:12] and are assigned to every major human population center in the world. Others, like the *beni ha elohim*, the fallen angels of Gen. 6:2, are confined in Tartarus, while another massive demon army is currently located in the compartment of Hell called the Abyss waiting to be released during the Tribulation, following the Rapture of the Church. See Eph. 6:10-17, for an outline of various operational demons. See @@@ ANGELS.

EPHESIANS 6:10-17

Finally, be strong [*endunamoo* (endure with strength)] in the LORD and in the strength of His might. Put on the full armor [*panoplia* (complete military battle gear)] of God, so that you will be able to stand firm [*histemi*] against the schemes [*methodeia*] of the devil [*Satan is the ruler of the world*]. For our struggle [*pale* (to wrestle) – in the Angelic Conflict] is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers [*arche* – officer demons], against the powers [*exousia* – rank and file demons], against the world forces [*kosmokrator* – senior officer demons] of this darkness [*skotos* – the Cosmic Systems], against the spiritual forces of wickedness in the heavenly [*epouranios* (existing in heaven)] places. Therefore, take up the full armor of God, so that you will be able to resist in the evil day, and having done everything, to stand firm [*histemi*]. Stand firm therefore, having girded your loins [*osphus* (the hip)] with truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – Bible Doctrine], and having put on the breastplate of righteousness [*dikaiosune* – God’s Righteousness [+R]], and having shod your feet with the preparation of the gospel [*euaggelion* (good news)] of peace [*eirene*]; in addition to all, taking up the shield of faith [*pistis* – Faith/Rest] with which you will be able to extinguish [*sbennumi* (to quench)] all the flaming arrows of the evil one. And take the helmet of salvation [*soterion* (he who embodies this salvation) – Jesus Christ provided salvation which is obtained by faith alone in Christ alone], and the sword of the [Holy] Spirit, which is the word of God.

REVELATION 2:13

I [Christ] know where you [Pergamum Church] dwell, where Satan's throne [Satan had a major HQ of his demons at that locality] is; and you hold fast [krateo (to take powerful hold of something)] My name, and did not deny My faith [Believers stayed positive [+P] to Bible Doctrine] even in the days of Antipas, My witness [a subject matter expert exhibit], My faithful [pistos] one [Antipas was the former Pastor/Teacher at Pergamum who was executed by Rome], who was killed among you, where Satan dwells.

- (2) **Power of Demons.** God controls human history, and demons are absolutely *powerless to hinder the Plan of God*. See Jn. 3:8; Heb. 2:14-15; Job 1:12, 18-19; Lk. 22:31-32; Matt. 8:28-32. However, in allowances under the Plan of God, Satan and his *demons are permitted* to do certain things. See @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT.

LUKE 22:31

Simon, Simon [Jesus Christ speaking to Peter], behold, Satan has demanded *permission* to sift [siniazo] you like wheat [Peter under Divine Discipline].

- (a) **Blind Humans.** Demons can *blind humans* via the evil of religion. *“And even if our gospel is veiled, it is veiled to those who are perishing, in whose case the god of this world has blinded the minds of the unbelieving so that they might not see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ”* [2 Cor. 4:3-4]; Gen. 4:3; Ps. 109:7; 1 Cor. 15:56; Jn. 8:44-45; 10:10; Heb. 2:14.

JOHN 8:44-45

You [Jesus speaking unBeliever religious leaders] are of *your* father the devil [diabolos (slanderer) – Satan], and you want to do the desires of your father. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth [Bible Doctrine] because there is no truth in him. Whenever he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own *nature*, for he is a liar and the father of lies [religion and human good]. But because I speak the truth, you do not believe Me.

- (b) **Remove From Power.** Demons can remove certain humans from positions of power in society – *“let another take his office”* [Ps. 109:8].

- (c) **Torment.** Demons can *kill or shorten life* [Ps. 109:8-9; Job 1:12, 18-19; Lk. 13:7]. If allowed, Satan can administer the “*sin unto death*” [1 Jn. 5:16, KJV]; 1 Cor. 5:5-7. For example, God allowed an “*evil spirit*” [1 Sam. 18:10; 19:9] to torment King Saul as he sought to kill David. God allowed a “*messenger of Satan to torment*” Paul [2 Cor. 12:7].

1 CORINTHIANS 5:5-7

I [Paul] have decided to deliver such a one [a Believer having sexual relations with his own mother] to Satan for the destruction of his flesh [sarx – this Believer is under the sin unto death], so that his [human] spirit [pneuma] may be saved [sozo (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven] in the day of the LORD Jesus [at the Rapture of the Church].

LUKE 13:16

And this woman, a daughter of Abraham as she is, whom Satan has bound [*deo (to fasten with chains)*] for eighteen long years, should she not have been released from this bond on the Sabbath day [*Jesus speaking*]?

- (d) **Discord.** Demons can pit people against one another [Ps. 109:10-12].
- (e) **Money.** Demons can give/remove money and status [Ps. 109:11, 13].
- (f) **Sickness.** Demons can cause sickness and disease to include demon possession of an unBeliever [Job. 2:6-8; Matt. 12:22; Acts 10:38; Mk. 5:5; 9:17-18]. In turn, the removal of a demon can cause an instant cure in that person [Mk. 1:32-34; Matt. 10:1; Acts 8:7-19; Lk. 11:14; 1 Sam. 16:23]. Thus, Satan himself may remove a demon from a demon-possessed unBeliever to cause a *fake healing* in order to impress a given audience for his own purposes of deception. See 1 Thess. 2:18; Rev. 16:14; Matt. 24:24. Today, God heals directly without human agents – Paul in Acts 19; cf. Phil. 2:27; 2 Cor. 12:8.

LUKE 11:14

And He [*Jesus Christ*] was casting out [*ekballo (to drive out; to cast out)*] a demon, and it was mute [*kophos (dumb; speechless)*]; when the demon had gone out, the mute man spoke; and the crowds were amazed.

- (g) **Accuse.** Satan “*accuses*” Believers of various personal sins before the Throne of God “*day and night*” [Rev. 12:10]; Job 1:6-12; Lk. 22:31-32; Zech. 3:1-3; Rom. 8:33.

ZECHARIAH 3:1-3

Then he [*an angel*] showed me [*Zechariah the Prophet*] Joshua the high priest standing before the angel of the LORD [*Jesus Christ as a Theophany*], and Satan standing at his right hand to accuse [*watan (to accuse; to be or act as an adversary)*] him [*accusing Joshua of sin*]. The LORD [*Jesus Christ*] said to Satan, “The LORD [*God the Father*] rebuke [*gaar (to rebuke; to reprove)*] you Satan! Indeed, the LORD who has chosen Jerusalem [*God’s controls history*] rebuke you! Is this not a brand plucked from the fire [*Joshua is a saved Believer plucked from Hell by the grace of God of God*]?” Now Joshua was clothed with filthy [*tso (human excrement) – Joshua’s personal sin*] garments and standing before the angel [*Joshua needed to Rebound*].

- (h) **Attack and Distract.** Demons attack and distract Believers by “*the snare of the Devil*” [2 Tim. 2:26]; Eph. 6:12; 2 Cor. 10-11; 1 Thess. 2:17-18. Further, Satan will invariably *take full credit* for the Believer that falls into sin and reversionism, but the real cause is *always* the Believer’s negative [*-N*] volition to God. See @@@ ENEMY.

1 THESSALONIANS 2:18

For we [*Paul and his traveling seminary team*] wanted to come to you—I, Paul, more than once—and yet Satan hindered [*egkopto (to impede one’s course by cutting off his way)*] us.

- (i) **Demon Possession.** In certain circumstances of negative [*-N*] volition by an unBeliever only, *demons can take possession of the body of said unBeliever* [Jn. 13:27]. However, no demon can ever possess the physical body of a Believer because God indwells all Believers and “*the evil one does not touch him*” [1 Jn. 5:18]. See *infra* (3) and (4).

JOHN 13:27

After the morsel, Satan then entered [*eiserchomai (to go out or come in)*] into him [*Judas*]. Therefore Jesus said to him, “What you do [*poieo*], do quickly.”

- (j) **Influence World Events.** Demons can influence world events and are assigned by Satan to advance the Cosmic Systems via “*the schemes of the Devil*” [Eph. 6:11]; Dan. 10:13, 20; Eph. 6:12. Again, God strictly *limits them* in accordance with His Plan of God. “*And you know what restrains him now (God the Holy Spirit)*” [2 Thess. 2:6-7].

DANIEL 10:13

But the prince [*sar (ruler) – an angel*] of the kingdom of Persia [*Satan’s demon general officer assigned to Persia*] was withstanding me [*the angel Gabriel who had been dispatched by God to Daniel to give a prophecy*] for twenty-one days [*the demon forces successfully held up Gabriel’s mission*]; then behold, Michael [*the senior Army group angel*], one of the chief princes, came to help me, for I had been left there with the kings [*melek (demons) – the many rank and file demons supporting the general officer demon*] of Persia.

- (3) **Demon Possession.** Demon possession can only occur in the physical body [not the soul] of an unBeliever [*not a Believer*] and then *only if chosen* by that person through a maximum intake of: (1) the works religion [Isa. 8:19]; (2) the heavy use of drugs [Gal. 5:20 *pharmekia (witchcraft)*]; (3) maximum idolatry in the life [1 Cor. 10:19-21; Isa. 2:6; Lk. 8:2; Mk. 16:9]; or (4) the unBeliever overtly invites the possession of his body by demon(s).
- (a) **No Believers.** Although the Believer cannot be possessed by demons, those consistently on negative [**-N**] volition to Bible Doctrine will act “*in the futility of their mind*” *mataiotes (devoid of truth)* [Eph. 4:17], reflecting the exact viewpoint of demons and the thinking of the Cosmic Systems, i.e., the “*doctrines of demons*” [1 Tim. 4:1].

1 TIMOTHY 4:1

But the [*Holy*] Spirit explicitly says that in later times [*during the entire Church Age*] some [*those Believers in reversionism*] will fall away from the faith [*pistis – they reject Bible Doctrine*], paying attention to deceitful spirits and doctrines [*didaskalia (teachings) – the Cosmic Systems*] of demons.

- (b) **Characteristics of Demon Possession.**

1. **Volition.** Partial or total loss of volition [Mk. 5:6].

2. **Abnormal Behavior.** To varying degrees. This might include: convulsions [Mk. 1:26; 9:20]; violence [Matt. 8:28; 17:15]; extraordinary strength [Mk. 5:4; Lk. 8:29]; ranting [Mk. 5:5]; self-mutilation [Mk. 5:5]; foaming at the mouth [Lk. 9:39; Mk. 9:20]; nakedness [Lk. 8:27]; grinding of the teeth [Mk. 9:18]; diseases [Mk. 9:17, 25; Lk. 4:45; Matt. 12:22]; or speaking in other voices [1 Sam. 28:3-19; Isa. 29:4; Rev. 16:13]. Note: the God given temporary gift of tongues which first appeared at the start of the Church Age expired completely by A.D. 70.
- (4) **Capital Offense.** Under the Mosaic Law demon-possessed people were executed [Lev. 20:27]. Again, no unBeliever is ever possessed without their free will essentially inviting same to occur in some form or fashion.

LEVITICUS 20:27

Now a man or a woman who is a medium [*ob (necromancer)*] or a spiritist [*viddeoniy (a familiar spirit; soothsayer)*] shall surely be put to death. They shall be stoned with stones, their bloodguiltiness is upon them.

- (5) **Worshipping Idols.** Idolatry in the Bible is directly related to demons and is called the table of Satan. The Greek word for “*idols*” [Ps. 96:5] is *diamonia*. See Lev. 17:7; Ex. 12:12; Isa. 19:3. Demons stir up idolatry to worship “*the creature rather than the Creator*” [1 Cor. 10:19-21]; Ezk. 16:23-43; 23:24-28; Jer. 3:8-10; Rev. 17:1-5; Rom. 1:18-25. Without question, demons always operate at or around idols. See Zech. 10:2; Isa. 57:5-6; Deut. 32:17-18.
 - (a) **Satyrs.** Satyrs [the mythical man/goat] were worshiped as idols as part of the Phallic Cult [Isa. 13:21; 34:14. “*They shall no longer sacrifice their sacrifices to the goat demons [dsair (the hairy one)]*” [Lev. 17:7].
 - (b) **Human Sacrifice.** Human sacrifices are demonic events [1 Cor. 10:19-21; Ps. 106:37-39; 109:7-14; Deut. 23:37-38; 32:11; Isa. 57:5-7]. *Sex orgies* often accompanied the human sacrifices, some of which were particularly gruesome with the screams of children as they were roasted alive. King Ahaz “*even made his son pass through the fire*” [2 Kngs. 16:3] and the Northern Kingdom itself was destroyed because “*they made their sons and their daughters pass through the fire, and practiced divination*” [2 Kngs. 17:17]; Ezk. 16:20-21; 23:37.

2 KINGS 16:3

But he [**King Ahaz, Southern Kingdom**] walked in the way of the kings of Israel [**the Northern Kingdom was in complete apostasy**], and even made his son pass through the fire [**human sacrifice**], according to the abominations of the nations whom the LORD had driven out from before the sons of Israel [**when the Jews conquered the land under Joshua**].

EZEKIEL 23:37

For they [**Jews in Judah**] have committed adultery [*naaph*], and blood is on their hands. Thus they have committed adultery with their idols and even caused their sons, whom they bore to Me, to pass through *the fire* to them as food [**offerings to the demon idols included roasting their own children while they were still alive**].

- (c) **Phallic Cult.** The Canaanites were the original source of the Phallic Cult. Their chief god was El. Baal was the son of El and was said to provide fertility to crops and people. Mot, the god of Death, kills Baal but Baal's sister/wife Anath finds his body and brings him back to life. Anath becomes the goddess of sex and warfare. Egyptians later call her Ishtar; Babylonians, Ashtarte; Greeks, Aphrodite; and Romans, Venus. In Greece El became Zeus; in Rome El became Jupiter. All of these "*worldly fables*" [1 Tim. 4:7] and myths are advanced by Satan to distort and/or conceal God's true message of salvation.
- (d) **Jewish Apostasy.** The Jews regularly *refused to destroy* the various idol cults surrounding their nation and, in many cases, became worse than the original practitioners in the realm of murders, human sacrifices, and sex orgies. See Ps. 106:32-39; Deut. 18:9-12.
- (e) **The Golden Calf.** Made by Aaron when Moses was away receiving the Ten Commandments, it was used to worship a god of Egypt [Deut. 32:16-20]. The "*play*" terminology of Ex. 32:6, referred to some of the Hebrews engaging in *sex orgies around the idol*.
- (f) **Apostasy is Demonism.** See Deut. 32:15-18; Ps. 106:37; 1 Tim. 4:1; Isa. 57:5-6. King Manasseh was demon-possessed; it is said he killed the Prophet Isaiah by having him sawed in half [2 Kngs. 21:2-16].

ISAIAH 57:5-6

Who inflame [**sex orgies**] yourselves among the oaks, under every luxuriant tree, who slaughter the children in the ravines, under the clefts of the crags? Shall I [**God**] relent concerning these things?

DEUTERONOMY 32:17-18

They [**the religious Jews**] sacrificed to demons [*shed (a demon)*] who were not God, to gods whom they have not known, new *gods* who came lately, whom your fathers did not dread. You neglected the Rock [*tsur* – **Jesus Christ**] who begot you, and forgot the God who gave you birth.

- (6) **God Regulates and Judges.** Demons know God's *ultimate judgment* on them. “*What business do we have with each other, Son of God? Have you come here to torment us before the time?*” [Matt. 8:28-32]. God always keeps demon activity within certain fixed parameters, e.g., God executed a special judgment on the demons of Egypt when the Jews departed under Moses. See Num. 33:4; Ex. 12:12; Isa. 19:3.

EXODUS 12:12

For I [**God**] will go through the land of Egypt on that night, and will strike down all the firstborn in the land of Egypt, both man and beast; and against all the gods of Egypt [**demons**] I will execute judgments—I am the LORD.

- (7) **Necromancy.** Attempts to *contact the dead* are prohibited [Lev. 20:6, 27; Deut. 18:9-12; 2 Kngs. 23:24]. It can result in the “*sin unto death*” [1 Jn. 5:16]; 1 Chron. 10:13. Any communications via human “*mediums*” [Lev. 19:31] is either fake or it is an actual demon possessed human who imitates the voice of the deceased. See Lk. 16:29-31; Eccl. 9:5-6; 2 Sam. 12:23; Isa. 8:19; 29:4. Thus, the witch of Endor [1 Sam. 28:3-19] was demon possessed and she was shocked when God brought the *real* Samuel up from Hell.

LEVITICUS 19:31

Do not turn to mediums [*ob (necromancer; one who evokes the dead)*] or spiritists [*yiddeoniy (a familiar spirit; soothsayer)*]; do not seek them out to be defiled by them. I am the LORD your God.

- (8) **Destroys Nations.** Involvement with demonism can bring on the 5th Cycle of Discipline to the nation per Lev. 26:14-33 [destruction of the Client Nation]. “*And all images of her gods are shattered on the ground*” [Isa. 21:9]; Ezk. 6:4-6; Isa. 2:8; 29:1-6; 36:18-20; 37:12, 19; 47:1-15.

EZEKIEL 6:4-5

So your altars will become desolate and your incense altars will be smashed; and I [God] will make your slain fall in front of your idols. I will also lay the dead bodies of the sons of Israel in front of their idols; and I will scatter your bones around your altars.

- (9) **Command to Resist.** The Bible commands the mature Believer to resist the “*snare of the devil*” [2 Tim. 2:26] and “*the schemes of the devil*” in our “*struggle*” [Eph. 6:11] against his Cosmic Systems. See 1 Pet. 5:8-9; Jas. 4:6-7. While this command envisions putting on the “*full armor of God*” [Eph. 6:13] it is *defensive in nature* and means to learn/apply Bible Doctrine against the Cosmic Systems. See @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.

JAMES 4:7

Submit [*hupotasso – stay in the Divine Dynasphere*] therefore to God. Resist [*anthistemi (to set one’s self against)*] the devil [*stay out of the Cosmic Systems and apply the problem solving devices*] and he will flee [*pheugo (to flee away)*] from you [*the Believer*].

1 PETER 5:8-9

Be of sober *spirit*, be on the alert [*gregoreuo (to give strict attention)*]. Your adversary [*antidikos (an opponent in a lawsuit) – in the Angelic Conflict*], the devil, prowls around like a roaring [*oruomai – Satan uses fear as a tool of attack*] lion, seeking someone to devour [*katapino (to swallow up; to destroy) – Satan wants all Believers in the Cosmic Systems*]. But resist [*anthistemi (to set one’s self against)*] him, firm in *your* faith [*pistis – apply Bible Doctrine*], knowing that the same experiences of suffering [*Divine Suffering for Blessing to the positive [+P] volition Believer*] are being accomplished [*epiteleo (to bring to an end)*] by your brethren who are in the world [*kosmos – Satan is the ruler of the world but he absolutely cannot stop the positive [+P] volition Believer from reaching spiritual maturity*].

@@@ DISPENSATIONS

- (1) **Definition.** The term dispensations refers to the fact that God has *segmented out periods of human history into fixed time frames* according to His Divine purpose. In order to properly orient to the Plan of God and the Angelic Conflict, Believers must fully understand God's "master road map" setting out these various periods. See 1 Thess. 5:1; Heb. 11:3; Eccl. 3:1; Acts 1:7-8; Col. 1:25-26; Eph. 3:9.

ACTS 1:7-8

He [Jesus Christ] said to them [His disciples], "It is not for you to know [ginosko (to learn to know)] times [chronos (periods)] or epochs [kairos (a measure of time)] which the Father [pater – God the Father] has fixed [tithemi (to set)] by His own authority [exousia (power of choice)]; but you will receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you [the day of Pentecost when the Church Age began]; and you shall be My witnesses both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and even to the remotest part of the earth."

COLOSSIANS 1:25-26

Of *this church* I [Paul] was made a minister [diakonos – a prepared Pastor/Teacher] according to the stewardship from God bestowed on me for your benefit [so that positive [+P] volition Believers can reach spiritual maturity], so that I might fully carry out the *preaching of the word of God, that is, the mystery* [musterion – the advanced Bible Doctrine called the mystery] which has been hidden [apokrupto (to keep secret)] from the *past ages* [aion (a period of time)] and generations [genea (an age occupied by each successive generation)], but has now been manifested [phaneroo (to make manifest or visible)] to His saints [hagios (set apart ones) – all the Believers in the Church Age].

EPHESIANS 3:9

And to bring to light what is the administration of the mystery [musterion – the advanced Bible Doctrine called the mystery doctrines of the Church Age] which for ages [aion – previous dispensations] has been hidden in God who created all things.

1 THESSALONIANS 5:1

Now as to the times [*chronos*] and the epochs [*kairos*], brethren, you have no need of anything to be written to you [*these Believers understood it already*].

- (2) **God Uses Agencies.** In every age of mankind God operates through agencies of some sort – individuals, groups, or nations.
- (3) **Expressing Time.** Time is *expressed in five manners* in the Bible: (1) *chronos* (a chain of events) [Rom. 16:25; 1 Pet. 1:20]; (2) *kairos* (time broken into periods) [Eph. 1:10; 2:11-12; 1 Thess. 5:1; Rom. 8:18; 11:5; 13:11; Lk. 21:24]; (3) *oikonomia* (the orderly administration of a household) [Eph. 1:10]; (4) *aion* (a period of time) [Col. 1:26; Eph. 3:9; 1 Tim. 1:4]; and (5) *genea* (an age occupied by each successive generation) [Col 1:26].
- (4) **THEOCENTRIC PERIOD.**

PART I

Age of the Gentiles – Gen. 1-11.

- (a) **Positive [+P] Volition Era.** Adam and the woman in the Garden of Eden existed in a *state of perfection* and without sin for an unknown period of time. As long as the two remained perfect they could enjoy fellowship with their Creator. A conditional relationship, their primary point of contact with God was His love. *See @@@ TRINITY.*
- (b) **Negative [-N] Volition Era.** The Fall of Adam and Eve to the Tower of Babel [God is opposed to internationalism and struck it down].
- (c) **Nationalism Era.** Post-Tower of Babel and the rise of Gentile nations.
- (d) **Attacks.** Major attacks were launched by Satan on all of the Divine Institutions: (1) Privacy [Gen. 3]; (2) Marriage & (3) Family [Gen. 6]; and (4) Nationalism [Gen. 11:1-11].
- (e) **No Bible.** There was no Bible. However, there were teaching tools revealing salvation by the use of animal sacrifices, drawings, oral traditions, and direct communication by God and angels. There was no missionary agency. *See @@@ HEATHENISM.*

PART II

Age of the Jews – The Rest of the Old Testament and the Future Seven-Year Tribulation.

- (a) **Period of the Patriarchs.** From Abraham to Moses.
- (b) **Period of the Mosaic Law.** From Moses to Jesus. Codex 1 [Commandments]; Codex 2 [Ritual Plan of Worship]; Codex 3 [various legal, health, and welfare provisions]. Only a Jewish nation could be a Client Nation to God during this time frame per the doctrine of the Pivot [Ps. 33:12; Lev. 20:26].
 - 1. **United Kingdom Israel** – 1050 B.C. - 931 B.C.
 - 2. **Northern Kingdom** [Ephraim or Israel] – 931 B.C. - 721 B.C.
 - 3. **Southern Kingdom** [Judah] – 931 B.C. - 586 B.C.
 - 4. **Judea** – 516 B.C. - A.D. 70. The Jewish people were cut off as a Client Nation in A.D. 30 and Gentile nations block any Jewish Client Nation in the Church Age [Lk. 21:24]. Gentiles also block the Jews as a Client Nation in the Tribulation [Rev. 11:2].
- (c) **Period of the Tribulation.** A future *seven-year period* which starts at the Rapture of the Church and concludes at the 2nd Advent of Jesus Christ. This is Daniel's 70th week [Dan. 9:1-2; 20-27].

DANIEL 9:1-2, 20-27

:1

“**Darius**” – He was the father-in-law and uncle of Cyrus the Great. The name Darius means King and subsequent rulers took this as a title. Cyrus the Great allowed the first wave of Jews to return to Jerusalem circa 538 B.C.
 “**of Median descent**” – He ruled the Chaldean Kingdom.

:2

“**observed in the books**” – Daniel had access to the books of *Jeremiah, Ezekiel, Isaiah, Micah* and other Old Testament Scriptures [Jer. 25:8-12; 29:10; Ex. 23:10-11; Lev. 25:3-4; 2 Chron. 36:17-23].

“**seventy years**” – Because the Jews had for 490 years ignored the command to observe a special sabbatical year every seventh year, God provided 70 years of Divine Discipline Suffering, the exact number of years they refused the special sabbatical. *See* Lev. 25:2-7; 26:33; Ex. 23:10-11; 2 Chron. 36:16-21; Jer. 25:12; 29:10. The full period of Divine Discipline covered 586-516 B.C., ending when the Second Temple was dedicated by the few returning Jews from the Persian Empire.

:20

“**confessing my sin**” – *yadah chattaah*. Daniel used Rebound.

“**holy mountain of God**” – This is Jerusalem.

:21-23

“**Gabriel**” – (*hero of God*). Gabriel is a six-winged angel [Lk. 1:19, 26].

“**evening offering**” – Per 1 Kngs. 18:36, this was at 1500 hours.

“**highly esteemed**” – Daniel was a mature Believer who lived a long time under God’s provisions. *See* Ezk. 14:14; 28:3.

:24

“**seventy weeks**” – *shibiym (seventy) shabua (a period of days or years)*. The *shabua* here stands for “**years**,” not days. The key is as follows: a day = one year [*see* Num. 14:34; Lev. 25:8; Lk. 13:32]. Thus, Daniel’s **70 weeks = 490 years**. In turn, considering that Jewish years are 360 days for a lunar year and not 365, the final calculation for us must add in the extra days.

“**holy city**” – Jerusalem. The key to the *royal decree starting date for the 490 years concerns specific building activities in the city of Jerusalem*, not the rebuilding and dedication of the Temple in 516 B.C.

“**finish the transgression**” – The cycle of discipline to Jerusalem will be from A.D. 70 [destruction of the 2nd Temple], to the 2nd Advent of Christ.

“**until the times of the Gentiles are fulfilled**” – *See* Lk. 21:24.

“**end of sin**” – Jesus Christ will put an end to sin as a barrier for salvation. Also refers to the Baptism of Fire for the unBeliever.

“**make atonement for iniquity**” – Salvation and the regathering of the Jews under the reign of Christ in the Millennium. *See* Zech. 10:6-12; Joel 2:16.

“**everlasting righteousness**” – The resurrection of Old Testament Believers and Tribulation Believers.

“**seal up the vision and prophecy**” – The end of the Jewish Age.

“**anoint the most holy place**” – The Millennium Temple. All unconditional covenants will be fulfilled.

:25

“you are to know” – Hear and understand Bible Doctrine.

“and discern” – Apply Bible Doctrine.

“from the issuing of a decree to restore and rebuild Jerusalem” – There are several potential Persian decrees but only one clear choice:

537 B.C. – Cyrus’ decree to restore the Temple [Ezra 1:1-3; 6:1-7].

520 B.C. – Darius’ decree for money to the Temple [Ezra 6:8-12].

458 B.C. – Artaxerxes Longimanus’ [465 - 424 B.C.] decree to provide the upkeep of the Temple, but no walls [Ezra 7:11-28]. Ezra went to Jerusalem under this decree and started a Jewish revival.

445 B.C. – Artaxerxes Longimanus’ decree to rebuild the infrastructure for the city of Jerusalem [Neh. 2:1-8]. This is the only royal decree that commands the rebuilding of the city infrastructure with walls. This decree was given in April and the Prophet Nehemiah went to Jerusalem with the decree in hand. It starts Daniel’s prophetic clock.

“Messiah the Prince” – (anointed one). Jesus Christ. See Jn. 12:34.

“seven weeks” – It took **49 years to completely rebuild the walls and complete the repairs to the city** – construct the city streets, plazas, water systems, and all its defenses. The Old Testament closed at this time. See Ezra 4:24.

“sixty-two weeks” – Remaining time on the clock until the Messiah’s death.

:26-27

“Then after” – Add the 7 weeks to the 62 weeks = **69 weeks or 483 Jewish years**. Multiply 5 x 483 to account for the lunar years = 2,415 extra days or 5 x 490 = 2,450 days or 7 years. Thus, after subtracting those seven years, the entirety of the 69 weeks prophecy extends to circa **A.D. 30-32**.

“the Messiah will be” – *mashiyach* (the anointed one). The future Messiah.

“cut off” – *karath* (to kill; eliminate). **Jesus Christ died on the cross in circa A.D. 30**. See Isa. 53:8.

“and have nothing” – *ayin* (Chaldean idiom meaning not for himself). Perfect Jesus Christ died for the sins of the world.

“people of the prince to come” – This refers to the Romans who destroyed Jerusalem and the Temple in A.D. 70 [Lk. 21:20-24].

“he” – The Revived Roman Dictator, Satan’s possessed *“antichrist”* [1 Jn. 2:18] of the Tribulation.

“firm covenant” – A treaty will be made between the Roman Dictator *“antichrist”* and the Jewish Dictator ruling in Israel during the Tribulation [Rev. 13:12].

“with the many” – The Jews.

“*one week*” – The *last 7 years owed the Jews will take place at the Tribulation*. Once the Rapture occurs the prophetic clock restarts in order to tick off the final 7 years. This will close out the 70 weeks of *Daniel*. However, per Matt. 24:22, the final 7th year will be slightly shortened.

“*one who makes desolate*” – This is the future “*antichrist*” Dictator of the Revived Roman Empire per Rev. 13:11-18.

- (d) **Custodians of Scripture.** The various Hebrew national entities were *custodians of the Bible* and also expected to be *missionary agents* to give the Gospel to the Gentiles [Ps. 117; Isa. 53:1; *Jonah*].
- (e) **Covenants.** Eternal life covenants are given to the Jews.
- (f) **Special Progressive Cycles of Blessing or Discipline.** These *blessing* [Lev. 26:1-13] and *cursing* [Lev. 26:14-33] clauses are still valid today for Gentile Client Nations.
- (g) **Promised Messiah.** The prophesied Messiah will come to the earth at the 1st Advent and salvation will be accomplished. *See* Gen. 15:6; Gal. 2:16; 4:4-5; Jn. 1:15-17; Rom. 4:3; 1 Cor. 10:1-4.
- (h) **Spiritual Life.** “Spirituality” during this period is via Faith/Rest in God and in God’s promises [Heb. 11; Rom. 4:17-21; Ps. 37:3-7]. There is no Indwelling of the Holy Spirit. Much of the Bible Doctrine is taught through the many rituals of the Mosaic Law and the words of the Prophets sent by God. *See @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.*

(5) **CHRISTOCENTRIC PERIOD.**

PART I

Hypostatic Union – 4 B.C. - A.D. 30. The four Gospels in the New Testament.

- (a) **The Prototype.** The Prototype Divine Dynasphere was established for Jesus Christ alone. As the cornerstone between the two dispensations, this bridge between the Old Testament and the New Testament was occupied by the LORD Jesus Christ alone.
- (b) **Work of Christ.** Jesus Christ provided for salvation and brought all Old Testament Believers into Heaven. *See* Rom. 3:21-26.

PART II

Church Age – A.D. 30 - Rapture. New Testament letters.

- (a) **Pre-Canon Period.** The early Church Age from A.D. 30 - 96, saw the completion of the Bible and *the end of all temporary spectacular spiritual gifts*. See @@@ GIFTS; @@@ CHRISTOPHANY.
- (b) **Post-Canon Period.** The Church Age from A.D. 96 - Rapture. This is called the “*fullness of times*” [Eph. 1:10] and “*later times*” [1 Tim. 4:1] due to the mystery doctrines and spiritual life mandates.
 1. **Absolute Spirituality.** The *absolute* side of spirituality is achieved by means of the Filling of the Holy Spirit.
 2. **Royalty.** Every Believer is a *Royal Priest and represents himself before God* [1 Pet. 2:9]. During their brief sojourn on the earth every Believer is an aristocrat adopted son of God in the Royal Family of God [Eph. 1:5], as well as an *Ambassador for Christ* in full time Christian service [2 Cor. 5:20].
 3. **Jesus Christ and God Indwells.** All Believers are Indwelt as a guarantee of their Escrow Blessing Rewards. All Believers also have the additional Righteousness [+R] of Jesus Christ.
 4. **No Prophecy Remains.** There is *no Biblical prophecy to be fulfilled in the Church Age prior to the Rapture* of the Church.
 5. **Client Nation.** Only *Gentile nations* can be Client Nations to God [Lk. 21:24; Rom. 11:25; Eph. 1:10; Isa. 55:5-6; Rev. 11:2].

LUKE 21:24

And they [*the Jews*] will fall by the edge of the sword, and will be led captive into all the nations [*ethnos – the two Jewish wars with Rome scattered the Jews across the known world*]; and Jerusalem will be trampled under foot [*pateo (to crush with the feet)*] by the Gentiles until the times [*kairos (a fixed and definite measure of time)*] of the Gentiles are fulfilled [*pleroo (to make full) – until the start of the Millennium there will never be another Jewish Client Nation to God*].

ROMANS 11:25

For I do not want you, brethren, to be uninformed of this mystery—so that you will not be wise in your own estimation—that a partial hardening [*porosis – negative [-N] volition to the Gospel*] has happened to Israel until the fullness of the Gentiles has come in [*this will end at the start of the Millennium*].

6. **No Mention.** Church Age not mentioned in the Old Testament.
7. **Rapture.** The Church is completed at the Rapture. The body of Christ becomes the Bride of Christ. *See @@@ RAPTURE.*

(6) **ESCHATOLOGICAL PERIOD.****PART I**

Tribulation – Seven-year period from the Rapture to the 2nd Advent of Jesus Christ. *See* Zech. 14:3-4; Rev. 19:11-16; Joel 2:30-31; Dan. 9:1-2, 20-27.

- (a) **Seven Years.** The Tribulation is part of the Old Testament period called the time of “*Jacob’s distress*” [Jer. 30:7] due to the *horrors that occur* during the last 7 years of Daniel’s prophecy. *See* Jer. 25:30-38.
- (b) **Satan’s Time.** Following the removal of all Believers at the Rapture, God allows Satan an opportunity to create his own “perfect environment” and the *restraining ministry of the Holy Spirit is removed* – “*he who now restrains will do so until he is taken out of the way*” [2 Thess. 2:6-7]. “*For false Christs and false prophets will arise and will show great signs and wonders, so as to mislead, if possible, even the elect (mature Believers)*” [Matt. 24:24]. Satan fails and resorts to massive violence to kill all Believers and Jews.
- (c) **Ends.** The Tribulation ends when Jesus Christ returns at the 2nd Advent to *make war against all unBelievers and demons* – “*the coming of the great and terrible day of the LORD*” [Mal. 4:5]. He kills and casts them off the earth to start the Millennium. “*I also trod them in My anger And trampled them in My wrath*” [Isa. 63:1-3]. “*From His mouth comes a sharp sword, so that with it He may strike down the nations, ... and He treads the wine press of the fierce wrath of God, the Almighty*” [Rev. 19:15]; Zech. 14:3-4; Joel 2:30-31; Mal. 3:2.

JOEL 2:30-31

I will display wonders in the sky and on the earth, blood, fire and columns of smoke. The sun will be turned into darkness and the moon into blood before the great and awesome day of the LORD [**just prior to the 2nd Advent**] comes.

ZECHARIAH 14:3-4

Then the LORD will go forth and fight against those nations, as when He fights on a day of battle. In that day His feet will stand on the Mount of Olives, which is in front of Jerusalem on the east; and the Mount of Olives will be split in its middle from east to west by a very large valley, so that half of the mountain will move toward the north and the other half toward the south.

PART II

Millennium – Latin for “1,000-year” rule. *See* Rev. 20:4-6. Covering the period **from the 2nd Advent of Christ** to the final defeat of Satan, who is confined until the very end of the Millennium. This is properly termed **pre-Millennialism**. The two false doctrines are “a-Millennialism” [rejects the future reign of Christ] and “post-Millennialism” [holds that all the world must first be “saved” before Jesus Christ returns].

- (a) **Perfect.** A perfect environment until the 2nd Advent of Satan when the Devil is released from his confinement in the Abyss [Rev. 20:7-10].
1. **No Religion.** With Satan and his demons **taken off the earth** for the 1,000 years, there is no formalized religion [Rev. 20:1-3].
 2. **Emotion.** There is great spirituality and emotion for Believers [Joel 2:28-29; Isa. 65:24; Hab. 2:14].
 3. **Rulership.** Jesus Christ will rule the earth from Jerusalem. “**He will rule them with a rod of iron**” [Rev. 19:15]; Isa. 2:4; Ezk. 37:24-28; Zech. 14:9-10; Mic. 4:3; 2 Sam. 7:16.
 4. **Assisting. Winner** Believers, in resurrection bodies, will “**reign with Him**” [2 Tim. 2:12] for 1,000 years as part of their eternal “**rewards**” [1 Cor. 3:14]. *See* 1 Cor. 4:8; Rev. 3:21; 20:4-6; Rom. 5:17; 1 Thess. 3:13; Jude 1:14.

5. **Israel Restored.** Israel will be restored as a Client Nation under God, and the promised land grant will be fulfilled. *See* Isa. 5:26-30; 10:19-23; 11:11-16; 14:1-3, 35; Joel 2:16; Jer. 31:33; Ezk. 36:28; 37:12-14; Gen. 15:18-20; Num. 34:1-12; Jos. 1:3-4.
6. **No War.** No more war from competing nations [Dan. 7:11-14; Isa. 2:4]. However, conflict and crime will still occur.
7. **No Disease.** No more diseases [Ezk. 34:16; Isa. 35:5-6].
8. **Prosperity.** Universal prosperity and vast economic opportunity for all humans [Ps. 72:7, 16].
9. **God.** Universal knowledge about God is freely available. *“For the earth will be filled With the knowledge of the glory of the LORD, As the waters cover the sea”* [Hab. 2:14]; Isa. 11:9.
10. **Environment.** Positive changes in nature [Rom. 8:18-23; Isa. 11:6-9, 35; 55:12-13; 65:25], which is restored to its intended state. Humans will not be harmed by animals, plants, or insects.
11. **The Start.** No unBelievers at the start [Ezk. 20:33-44; Matt. 25:31-46]. But across the 1,000-years, billions of humans will be born creating a *population boom* [Isa. 60:22]. Amazingly, many of these offspring reject God, demonstrating that “true” perfect environment is not the solution to Spiritual Death.
12. **Physical Life Extended.** The human life span will be extended well beyond a mere 100 years. *“And the one who does not reach the age of one hundred will be thought accursed”* [Isa. 65:20].
13. **Revolt.** At the end of the 1,000 years, a final revolt by unBelievers [and probably **Loser** Believers] will occur under the leadership of the newly released Satan from the Abyss [Rev. 20:7-10]. Satan’s rallying cry will most likely revolve around the same lies he used in the Garden of Eden about “fairness.” Again, this proves that perfect environment and even maximum availability of knowledge about God will not provide salvation. God will quickly *crush the revolt* with *“fire”* from Heaven.

REVELATION 20:7-10

When the thousand years are completed [Millennium], Satan will be released from his prison [*phulake* (guard watch)], and will come out to deceive [*planao* (to lead away from the truth)] the nations which are in the four corners of the earth [*ge*], Gog and Magog [a generalized term describing a leader and followers], to gather them together for the war; the number of them is like the sand of the seashore. And they came up on the broad plain of the earth and surrounded the camp of the saints and the beloved city [Jerusalem], and fire came down from heaven and devoured them. And the devil [*diabolos* (the slanderer) – Satan] who deceived them was thrown into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are also; and they will be tormented day and night forever and ever.

14. **Sermon on the Mount.** Much of the Sermon on the Mount regards the Millennium. See Matt. 5-7.

PART III

Eternal State – Forever and ever.

- (a) **UnBelievers Judged.** All unBelievers will be resurrected and judged at the Great White Throne Judgment and spend eternity in the “*lake of fire*” [along with all demons] separated in a state of Spiritual Death. See Rev. 20:5, 11-15; Matt. 25:41; 2 Thess. 1:7-9; Jude 5-13; Rom. 2:16; Acts 17:21; Heb. 9:27; 2 Tim. 4:1. See @@@ JUDGMENT.
- (b) **New Universe.** God destroys the universe and creates “*a new heaven and a new earth*” [Rev. 21:1; 2 Pet. 3:10-13; Heb. 1:10-12; Isa. 65:17.

HEBREWS 1:10-12

And, “You, LORD, in the beginning laid the foundation of the earth, and the heavens are the works of Your hands; they will perish [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely)], but You remain [*diameno* (to stay permanently)]; and they all will become old like a garment, and like a mantel You will roll them up; like a garment they will also be changed [*allasso* (to exchange one thing for another) – at the end of the Millennium God will destroy the old universe and create a new one]. But You are the same, and Your years will not come to an end [*ekleipo* (to cease)].”

REVELATION 21:1

Then I [John the Apostle] saw a new [*kainos* (new in kind)] heaven [*ouranos*] and a new earth [*ge*]; for the first [*protos* (first in time or place)] heaven and the first earth passed away [*aperchomai* – the creation of a new universe and new earth at the end of the Millennium], and there is no longer any sea [*thalassa*].

ISAIAH 65:17

For behold, I [God] create [*bara* (to create)] new heavens and a new earth; and the former things [the evil of the Cosmic Systems] will not be remembered [*zakar* (to be brought to remembrance)] or come to mind [*leb* (the mind of the inner man) – in the eternal state will have no recollection of the old world].

2 PETER 3:10, 12-13

But the day of the LORD [the creation of a new universe at the end of the Millennium] will come like a thief [*kleptes*], in which the heavens [*ouranos*] will pass away with a roar [*rhoizedon* (a loud noise)] and the elements [*stoicheion* (the elements from which all things have come)] will be destroyed [*luo* (to loose)] with intense heat [*kausoo* (to burn up)], and the earth and its works [*ergon* – of human good] will be burned up [*katakaio* (to consume by fire)]. ... looking for and hastening the coming of the day of God [the creation of a new earth and the new universe at the end of the Millennium sees all the heavens joined], because of which the heavens [*ouranos* – First and Second Heavens] will be destroyed by burning, and the elements will melt with intense heat! But according to His promise we are looking for new [*kainos* (new in kind)] heavens and a new [*kainos* (new in kind)] earth [*ge*], in which righteousness [*dikaiousune*] dwells [*katoikeo* (inhabits)].

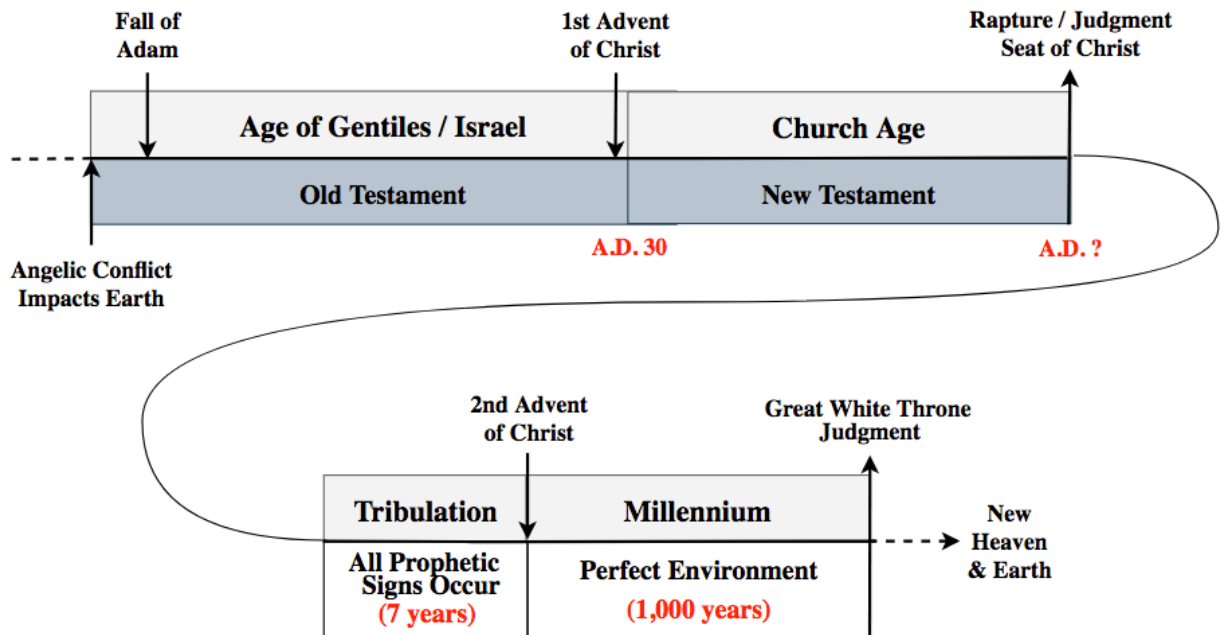
- (c) **Believers.** Believers from all the various epochs and ages of the earth will be in resurrection bodies and will live forever in the “*new heaven and new earth*” [Rev. 21:2-4; 22:4-5]. The Bible indicates that the eternal state is beyond human comprehension [1 Cor. 2:9], although it is a place of vast inequality based on the bestowing of eternal rewards to the **Winner** Believers who obeyed God’s mandates and reached spiritual maturity in time. See @@@ REWARDS.

REVELATION 21:4

And He [God] will wipe away [*exaleipho* (to anoint or wash in every part; to erase)] every tear from their [the Believer] eyes; and [in Heaven] there will no longer be *any* death [*thanatos* (with the implied idea of future misery in hell)]; there will no longer be *any* mourning, or crying, or pain; the first [*protos* (first in time)] things have passed away [*aperchomai* (to go away; depart)].

REVELATION 22:4-5

They [Believers] will see His face, and His name *will be* on their foreheads. And there will no longer be *any* night; and they will not have need of the light [*phos*] of a lamp nor the light of the sun, because the LORD God will illumine [*photizo* (to give light)] them; and they will reign [*basileuo* (to exercise kingly power)] forever and ever.

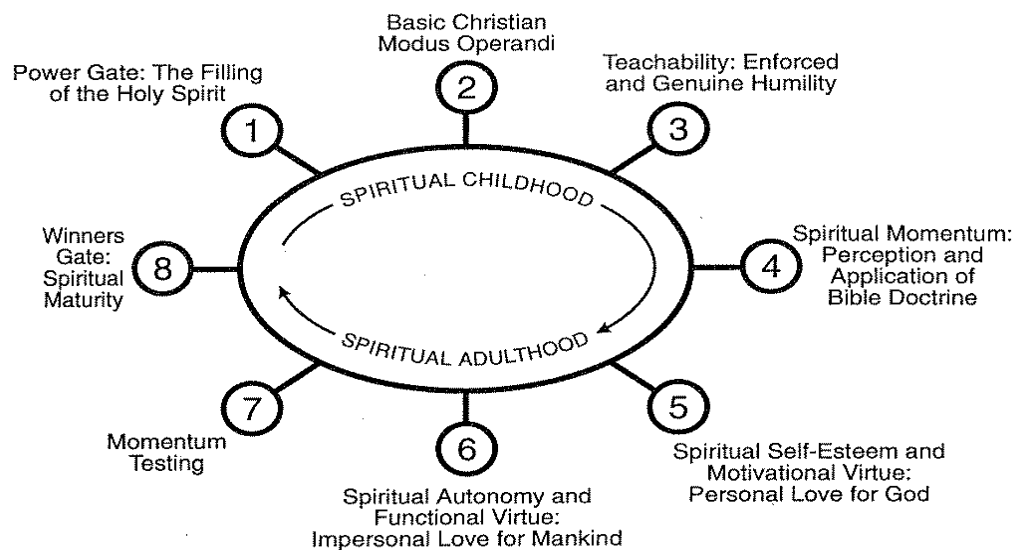


– Dispensations General Outline –

@@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE

- (1) **Definition.** The Divine Dynasphere is a *teaching tool* developed by R. B. Thieme, Jr. It describes the truth of both *absolute* spirituality, by Rebound, as well as the process of the *relative* growth to spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1], by learning and applying the problem solving devices of Bible Doctrine.
- (2) **Gates.** The individual “gates” begin with the Filling of the Holy Spirit via Rebound and extend for the **Winner** Believer to spiritual maturity.
- (3) **Power Source.** God the Holy Spirit is the power source for the Believer living inside the Divine Dynasphere [Rom. 8:11; Eph. 5:18; Acts 1:8; 1 Cor. 3:16].
- (4) **God’s Plan – Mandates First.** Constant subjection of the Believer’s time to the absolute authority of Bible Doctrine for his life. *See @@@ TIME.*
- (5) **God’s System – Virtue First.** The Believer uses the problem solving devices to include *agape impersonal love* [1 Cor. 13:13; Rom. 5:5].
- (6) **God’s Policy – Grace First.** Grace is the Plan and policy of God.

THE DIVINE DYNASPHERE



@@@ DIVINE GUIDANCE

- (1) **Definition.** Divine Guidance involves understanding the Directive and Sovereign Will of God for the life of the Believer. “*Who is the man who fears the LORD? He will instruct him in the way he should choose*” [Ps. 25:12]. In short, the smart Believer says in his soul: “*behold, here I am, let Him do to me as seems good to Him*” [2 Sam. 15:26]; Ps. 16:11; 143:8. The smart Believer must focus on the Plan of God. “*But live in the fear of the LORD always. Surely there is a future, And your hope will not be cut off*” [Prov. 23:17-18]. God is omniscient: “*For the ways of a man are before the eyes of the LORD, And He watches all his paths*” [Prov. 5:21].
- (2) **Two Divine Directives.** The Bible reveals two overarching Divine Directives by which God controls history. See Jn. 1:7, 12-13; 6:39-40; 1 Jn. 3:23; Prov. 8:17; Eph. 3:14-19; Rom. 12:12. See *infra* (5). See @@@ HISTORY.
 - (a) **Divine Directive One.** It is God’s Sovereign Directive Will that all human beings [unBelievers] throughout all of human history should be *saved* and “ *dwell in the house of the LORD forever*” [Ps. 23:6]. “*Turn to Me and be saved, all the ends of the earth; for I am God, and there is no other*” [Isa. 45:22]; 2 Pet. 3:9; Matt. 18:14; 22:14.

2 PETER 3:9

The LORD is not slow about His promise [Rapture of the Church], as some count slowness, but is patient toward you, not wishing for any to perish [apollumi (to put out of the way entirely) – God desires for all humans to be saved and none go to Hell] but for all to come to repentance [metanoia (a change of mind) – reject religion and accept God’s salvation offer of grace].

- (b) **Divine Directive Two.** It is God’s Sovereign Directive Will that all Believers should reach spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1] as *Winners* so that Jesus Christ can distribute their Escrow Account Rewards in time and eternity and enter them as subject matter expert witness exhibits in the Angelic Conflict. Receiving these blessing is how the Believer truly glorifies God and the Plan of God. “*For I know the plans that I have for you, declares the LORD, plans for welfare and not for calamity to give you a future and a hope*” [Jer. 29:11]; Eph. 3:17-19; 5:14-17; 2 Pet. 3:9; 1 Tim. 2:4; Ps. 143:8; Prov. 3:5-6; Isa. 64:8.

1 TIMOTHY 2:4

Who [**God**] desires all men to be saved [*sozo* – salvation for the unBeliever] and to come to the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge)] of the truth [**the Believer who takes in Bible Doctrine and reaches maturity**].

ISAIAH 64:8

But now, O LORD, You are our Father, We are the clay, and You our potter; And all of us are the work of Your hand.

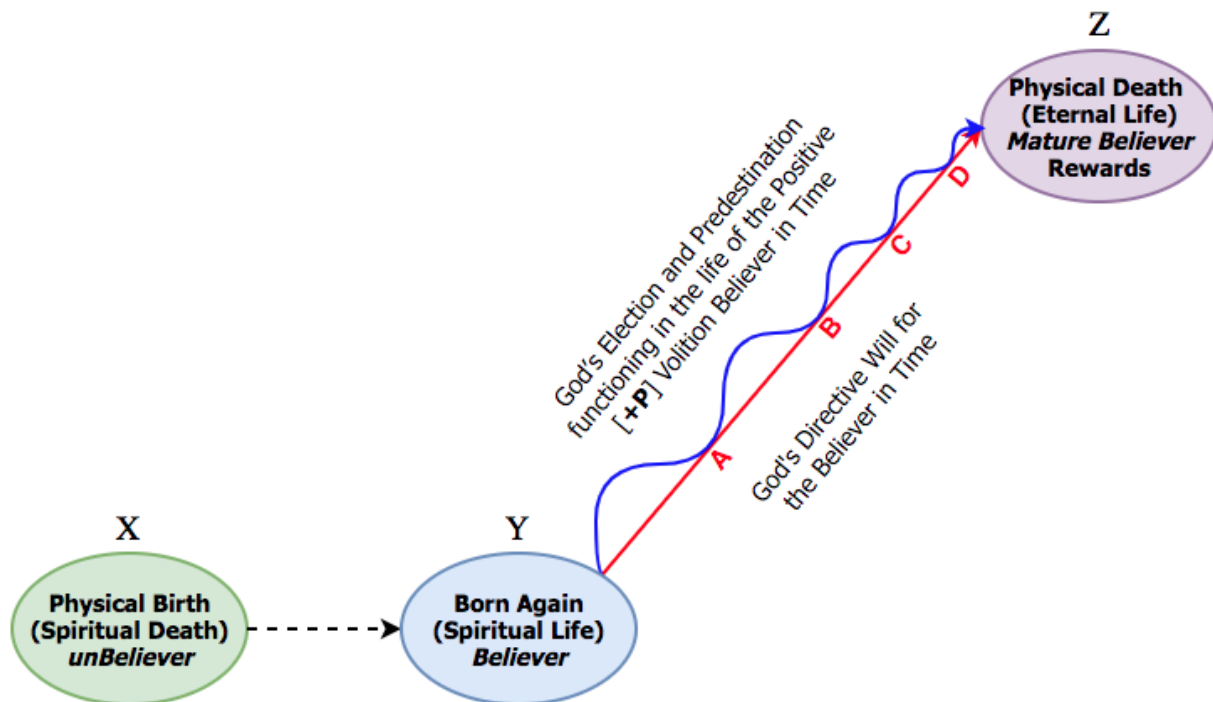
EPHESIANS 3:17-19

So that Christ may dwell in your hearts [**Fellowship with Christ**] through [*dia* (by means of)] faith [*pistis* – the learning and application of Doctrine]; and that you, being rooted and grounded in love [*agape* – impersonal love], may be able to comprehend with all the saints what is the breadth and length and height and depth [**full knowledge of Bible Doctrine**], and to know the love [*agape* (to love dearly)] of Christ which surpasses knowledge, that you may be filled up to [*pleroo* (to fill to the top)] all the fullness of God [**the Believer reaches spiritual maturity**].

PSALM 143:8

Let me hear Your lovingkindness in the morning; for I trust in You; teach me the way in which I should walk; for to You I lift up my soul [*nephesh*].

- (3) **Predestination and Election.** The “**X-Y-Z**” [*infra*] diagram expresses the fact that God acted in eternity past to ensure that the **Winner** Believer reaches maturity – “*in whom you also are being built together into a dwelling of God in the Spirit*” [Eph. 2:22]. King David understood the issue: “*The LORD is my shepherd, I shall not want. He makes me lie down in green pastures; He leads me beside quiet waters. He restores my soul; He guides me in the paths of righteousness For His name’s sake. Even though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I fear no evil, for You are with me*” [Ps. 23:1-3]. “*Trust in the LORD with all your heart and do not lean on your own understanding. In all your ways acknowledge Him, and He will make your paths straight*” [Prov. 3:5-6]. For a more detailed description of the X-Y-Z diagram, see @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE at (4).



– Tracking The Positive [+P] Volition **Winner** Believer –

(4) Categories of Divine Guidance: The Questions.

- (a) **Thinking. What does God want me to think?** Answer: God wants all Believers to *think His thoughts* which are set out in Bible Doctrine. See Matt. 16:23; 22:42; 1 Cor. 2:16; Phil. 2:5; Ps. 90:12; 119:23-34; 143:8. If this factor is satisfied on a consistent basis, then all other issues for the Believer will fall into place. What society or the world wants is irrelevant. *The Believer plays to an audience of one – God!*

PSALM 119:23-24

Even though princes sit *and* talk against me, Your servant [**the positive [+P] volition Believer**] meditates on Your statutes [**Bible Doctrine**]. Your testimonies also are my delight; *they are* my counselors.

PSALM 90:12

So teach us to number our days [**priorities**], that we may present [**bo (to come with)**] to You a heart of wisdom [**chokmah – the Believer at maturity**].

MATTHEW 16:23

But He [**Jesus**] turned and said to Peter, “Get behind Me, Satan! You are a stumbling block to Me; for you are not setting your mind on God’s interests [**the Plan of God for salvation**], but man’s [**human good**].”

- (b) **Geographical. Where does God want me to be?** See Jon. 1:1-2; Acts 16:6-7, 10; 1 Cor. 7:20-24. Answer: **God will provide** the location where the Believer should be at any given period of his Christian life. When in doubt the Believer should simply “**remain in that condition**” [1 Cor. 7:20-23] as he is, until God opens a door, or another door.

1 CORINTHIANS 7:20-23

Each man must remain in that condition in which he was called [**kaleo – when saved**]. Were you called while a slave? Do not worry about it; but if you are able also to become free, rather do that. For he who was called in the LORD while a slave, is the LORD’s freedman; likewise he who was called while free, is Christ’s slave. You were bought [**agorazo (marketplace purchase)**] with a price [**by Christ**]; do not become slaves of men [**the Cosmic Systems**].

- (c) **Operational. What does God want me to do?** See Ps. 32:8; Isa. 58:11; Rev. 3:1-6. Answer: God will open the door to the Believer at the proper time. The Believer should simply **saw the wood** in front of him. “**Let your eyes look directly ahead and let your gaze be fixed straight in front of you. Watch the path of your feet and all your ways will be established**” [Prov. 4:25-26]. Accordingly, the smart Believer knows: **Duty is ours; results are God’s!**

ISAIAH 58:11

And the LORD will continually guide you [**the Believer**], and satisfy your desire in scorched places, and give strength to your bones; and you will be like a watered garden, and like a spring of water whose waters do not fail.

- (d) **Understanding.** As the Believer advances in maturity, he will **better understand** the Will of God for the details of his life in terms of location and operation. See Isa. 58:11; Rom. 8:28-30; 12:2-3, 12; Prov. 3:1-6; Ps. 16:11; Isa. 58:11; 2 Pet. 1:12-21; 3:18; 1 Thess. 5:18.

PSALM 16:11

You [God] will make known to me [the positive [+P] Believer] the path of life [*orach* (the path; way; passing of life)]; in Your presence is fullness of joy [*wimchah* (glad result) – God provides for spiritual maturity]; In Your right hand there are pleasures forever [eternal rewards].

ROMANS 8:28-30

And we [Paul] know that God causes all things to work together for good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] to those who love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] God [only a Believer who reaches maturity can love God], to those who are called [*kletos* (called; invited to a banquet)] according to His purpose [*prothesis* (a predetermined plan)]. For those whom He foreknew [*proginosko* (to have knowledge beforehand) – those who would believe in Christ], He also predestined [*proorizo* (to decide beforehand) – God made provisions in time to get the positive [+P] volition Believer to maturity] to become conformed [*summorphos* (having the same form as another)] to the image of His Son, so that He would be the firstborn among many brethren; and these whom He predestined, He also called; and these whom He called, He also justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – getting God's Righteousness [+R]]; and these whom He justified, He also glorified [*doxazo* (to honor) – by the giving of rewards].

- (5) **Three Sovereign Wills.** The Plan of God incorporates *three operational Divine Sovereign Wills* in dealing with mankind.
- (a) **Directive Will of God.** The Directive Will of God is set out in the Divine Decrees in the Plan of God: (1) all humans should be saved; and (2) all Believers should reach spiritual maturity.
 - (b) **Permissive Will of God.** The Permissive Will of God functions within the Perfect Plan of God to allow man to *exercise his own free will*. For example, the vast majority of humans reject God's offer of salvation [Matt. 7:13-14] and most Believers reject Bible Doctrine.
 - (c) **Preventative/Overruling Will of God.** God exercises His Overruling Will in order to keep the overall negative results of human free will *within the bounds* of His Sovereign control of history.

- (d) **All Three.** The case of Balaam illustrates all three Divine Wills. Balaam was a Gentile Believer who was asked to curse the Jews entering into the Promised Land by her enemies for a large sum of money. The Directive Will of God is to bless the Jews, but the Permissive Will of God allowed Balaam to accompany the Gentiles to curse them [Num. 22:20]. Then, as Balaam was set to curse the Jews the Preventative/Overruling Will of God instructed Balaam to bless the Jews [Num. 23:5]. Soon thereafter Balaam died the “*sin unto death*” [1 Jn. 5:16, KJV]; he was killed in battle by the Jews [Jos. 13:22].

JOSHUA 13:22

The sons of Israel also killed Balaam the son of Beor, the diviner, with the sword among *the rest of* their slain.

- (6) **Jesus’ Divine Guidance.** The humanity of Jesus Christ always followed the Plan of God [Matt. 20:22; Heb. 10:7-9]. On the night of His betrayal Jesus prayed several times not to go to the cross. “*My Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass from me*” [Matt. 26:39]. It is *not a sin to be tempted* and Jesus Christ in His humanity expressed the desire of His own free will to not suffer Spiritual Death on the cross, but nevertheless *subordinated His personal will to the Directive Will of the Father* for the provision our of salvation.

MATTHEW 26:39

And He [**Jesus**] went a little beyond *them*, and fell on His face and prayed, saying, “My Father [*pater – Jesus speaking from His humanity*], if it is possible, let this cup [*potion – containing all the sins of the world*] pass from Me; yet not as I will, but as You will.”

- (7) **Principles on Divine Guidance.** Acts 11:5-16:

:5 – Guidance through prayer.
 :6 – Guidance through Bible Doctrine.
 :7-10 – Guidance by following the specific mandates in the Bible.
 :11 – Guidance via providential circumstances in life.
 :12 – Guidance through the Filling of the Holy Spirit.
 :13-15 – Guidance through relationships with other mature Believers.
 :16 – Guidance by recalling Bible Doctrine.

- (8) **Saw the Wood.** Realizing God's Will for the Believer is to reach maturity, all *other things in life are merely details*. Although no one can know his future, the wise Believer need only *saw the wood* in front of him and maintain his focus on being Filled with the Holy Spirit as *"He will guide you into all truth"* [Jn. 16:13] by learning Bible Doctrine. In His timing: *"Your ears will hear a word behind you, 'This is the way, walk in it,' whenever you turn to the right or to the left"* [Isa. 30:21]. In other words, the wise Believer does not know what the future holds for him, but *he knows who holds his future!* He is not in a panic or a rush. *"Yet those who wait for the LORD will gain new strength; they will mount up with wings like eagles"* [Isa. 40:31]. In response to a warning from the Prophet Jonah that the city would be destroyed, the new Believers in Nineveh stated: *"Who knows, God may turn and ... we will not perish"* [Jon. 3:9]. Joab encouraged his troops before battle: *"Be strong, and let us show ourselves courageous ... and may the LORD do what is good in His sight"* [2 Sam. 10:12]. Mordecai told Jewish Queen Esther: *"And who knows whether you have not attained royalty for such a time as this?"* [Esth. 4:13-14]. David with his dying infant child: *"Who knows, the LORD may be gracious to me, that the child may live"* [2 Sam. 12:22]. See also Ps. 119:23-24; 1 Cor. 7:21-24; Col. 3:23-24; Phm. 15.

ESTHER 4:13-14

Then Mordecai [*Jewish uncle of Queen Esther*] told *them* [*servants*] to reply to Esther, "Do not imagine that you in the king's palace can escape any more than all the Jews [*a plot to slaughter Jews in the Persian Empire*]. For if you remain silent at this time, relief and deliverance will arise for the Jews from another place [*God controls history and will not allow the Jews to be destroyed*] and you and your father's house will perish [*the sin unto death*]. And who knows [*what God has in store for Believers in their specific role in the Angelic Conflict*] whether you have not attained royalty [*Esther as King Xerxes' Queen*] for such a time [*ayth (an event)*] as this?"

PHILEMON 15

For perhaps he [*runaway slave Onesimus*] was for this reason separated *from you* [*Philemon the master*] for a while [*Onesimus went to Rome*], that you would have him back [*Paul took Onesimus under his wing*] forever [*Paul sent him back to Philemon in hopes that he would forgive and free Onesimus*].

@@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS

- (1) **Definition.** Divine Institutions refer to a fixed set of standards established by God in order to *maximize freedom and to maintain order in the human race*. The Divine Institutions were devised for unBelievers and Believers. *Violating them leads to personal and societal decay, death, blight, and misery*.
- (2) **Categories of Divine Truth.** The three categories of Divine truth: (1) **Divine Institutions** [for all humans]; (2) **Gospel of Salvation** [for the unBeliever]; and (3) **Bible Doctrine** [for the Believer]. Each category provides benefits for those on positive [+P] volition in their soul. See Jn. 8:32.

JOHN 8:32

And you will know [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – revealed by Bible Doctrine], and the truth will make you free [*eleutheroo* (to set at liberty)].

- (3) **Angelic Conflict.** The Divine Institutions were established by God in order to maintain order and stability in the human race during the Angelic Conflict [Gen. 9:6]. See @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT. Applications include:
 - (a) **Protection.** As a protection from the *tyranny and total depravity* of mankind's Old Sin Nature. Imperfect man cannot operate in the world without some level of restraint and order.
 - (b) **Salvation.** To allow those who are on positive [+P] volition the opportunity to be saved and to reach spiritual maturity [Jn. 3:16, 36; 1 Tim. 2:4; Col. 3:23-24]. In turn, the Believer is expected to follow the mandates of the Divine Institutions as a model citizen.

COLOSSIANS 3:23-24

Whatever you [**Believers**] do, do your work [*ergazomai* (to labor) – all activities in life] heartily [follow the Divine Institutions and morality good], as for the LORD rather than for men, knowing that from the LORD you will receive the reward [*eternal rewards*] of the inheritance. It is the LORD Christ whom you serve [*douleuo* (to be a slave) – in the Angelic Conflict].

- (c) **Benefits the UnBeliever.** The unBeliever who otherwise rejects the Gospel of salvation under the Plan of God can still *enjoy the general benefits of the Divine Institutions*, but this is all the human happiness he will ever experience in time or in eternity. See Matt. 5:45; Eccl. 2:24; 3:13; 6:10; 9:3-10. See @@@ HAPPINESS.

ECCLESIASTES 2:24

There is nothing better for a man [unBeliever] *than* to eat and drink and tell himself that his labor [amal] is good. This also I [Solomon] have seen that it is from the hand of God [via the Divine Institutions].

ECCLESIASTES 9:9-10

Enjoy life [the unBeliever living under the umbrella of the Divine Institutions] with the woman [ishshah (wife; female)] whom you [the unBeliever] love all the days of your fleeting life which He [God] has given to you under the sun; for this is your reward [cheleq (a portion; share)] in life and in your toil [amal (labor)] in which you have labored under the sun. Whatever your hand finds to do, do *it* with *all* your might; for there is no activity [maaweh (work; business)] or planning [chashab (to invent; to think about)] or knowledge [daath (premeditation; knowledge)] or wisdom [chokmah] in Sheol [the Lake of Fire] where you [the unBeliever] are going.

MATTHEW 5:45

So that you may be sons of your Father who is in heaven [ouranos]; for He causes His sun to rise on *the* evil and *the* good [agathos (good of intrinsic value)], and sends rain on *the* righteous [dikaios – the Believer] and *the* unrighteous [adikos (one who violates justice) – the unBeliever].

- (4) **The Four Divine Institutions.** “*Where there is no vision, the people are unrestrained, But happy is he who keeps the Law*” [Prov. 29:18]. There are four Divine Institutions ordained by God and all relate to basic principles of behavior for the nation and the citizens. Each one of the Divine Institutions functions in, and relates to, *specific areas of authority*. While the Divine Institutions are the “ideal” standards for interaction, flawed humans have great difficulty adhering to them. This does not mean that the Divine Institutions are invalid, only that people are flawed. See @@@ AUTHORITY.

One: Privacy. The emphasis under **Divine Institution #1** is placed on the individual's right of *self-determination and privacy*. The right to exercise individual volition within the framework of the other Divine Institutions is inviolable as long as the person obeys proper authority, e.g., one cannot use their free will to murder. Individual privacy is the environment for true freedom and the authority mechanism is the positive [+P] volition of the individual. *See Gen. 2:17.*

Two: Marriage. Mankind was not meant to be alone. The relationship of marriage between a man and a woman in **Divine Institution #2** is the *basic corporate unit for humans*. While it is a unique *voluntary partnership* the authority mechanism is given to the husband. *See Gen. 2:18, 24.*

Three: Family. The *nuclear family* is set out as the proper place to raise and teach/instruct children about God's three Divine Truths [*see supra* (2)]. "*You shall teach them diligently to your sons*" [Deut. 6:7]. "*Train up a child in the way he should go*" [Prov. 22:6]. As long as the child resides in the home the authority mechanism rests with parents under **Divine Institution #3**. *See Gen. 4; S.S. 8:2; Ex. 20:12.*

Four: Freedom Based Nationalism. A governmental structure that protects all forms of freedom and basic human rights. **Divine Institution #4** is the proper governmental framework for the inherent right of the individual to *enjoy life, liberty, and happiness*. The authority mechanism resides with the State, operating within a just rule of law under a consent of the governed principle. *See Gen. 10:5, 32; Deut. 32:8; Acts 17:26-28; 1 Pet. 2:13-18; Col. 1:16. See infra* (5).

- (5) **Freedom Based Nationalism.** The first three Divine Institutions operate ideally in nations that are freedom oriented. Understanding Lord Acton's observation that centralized "*power tends to corrupt, and absolute power corrupts absolutely*," the Freedom Based Nation rejects internationalism and endorses patriotism – Gen. 11:1-9. Indeed, internationalism is a manifestation of human good and embodies a key part of the Cosmic Systems. Points on the proper national entity operating under Divine Institution #4:
 - (a) **Military.** There must be a *vibrant military* that operates under civilian control. The overt protection of the nation is the function of the armed forces on exterior lines and relies on military victory [1 Sam. 17:1-58].

- (b) **Law and Order.** Interior protection of the nation requires *law and order* by the police and *proper jurisprudence* by the courts. Capital punishment is authorized but not vigilantism. See Gen. 4:15; 9:5-6; Rom. 12:17-21; 13:1-7; 1 Pet. 2:13-15; Lk. 23:39-42; Deut. 21:18-21.

1 PETER 2:13-14

Submit yourselves for the LORD's sake to every human institution [**Divine Institutions**], whether to a king as the one in authority, or to governors as sent by him for the punishment of evildoers and the praise of those who do right.

1. **Criminals.** All criminals are divorced from reality and arrogant, covering their crimes by lying [Gen. 4:9-10]. Ignorance of a crime is no excuse [Rom. 2:12]. *A sick society coddles criminals and forgets the victims.* *"Because the sentence against an evil deed is not executed quickly, therefore the hearts of the sons of men among them are given fully to do evil"* [Eccl. 8:11].
 2. **Social Problems.** Laws were *not meant to solve social problems* in the Freedom Based Nation but to protect freedom and privacy. Social problems such as poverty and injustice will always exist. Thus, criminal and civil laws should be made on the basis of the best interests of the majority. In other words, laws are made for the *general principle, never the exception*.
- (c) **Capitalism.** The Freedom Based Nation must promote systems of *free enterprise* so that people can generate property in order to prosper and enjoy happiness. *"Is it not lawful for me to do what I wish with what is my own? Or is your eye envious because I am generous?"* [Matt. 20:15]. Again, good nationalism [State's Rights] and capitalism rightly fragment the consolidation of centralized power which always stifles free thinking, entrepreneurs, and economic growth.
1. **Property.** The Freedom Based Nation recognizes the right of *private ownership of property* and the right to conduct business apart from undue interference from the State. *"Thou shalt not steal"* [Ex. 20:15, KJV] endorses the private ownership of property. In turn, it is a sin to *"covet"* the property of others. See Ex. 20:17.

EXODUS 20:17

“You shall not covet [*chamad* (to desire)] your neighbor’s [*rea* (fellow-citizen)] house; you shall not covet your neighbor’s wife or his male servant or his female servant or his ox or his donkey or anything that belongs to your neighbor [*socialism covets and then confiscates private property*].”

2. **Tax.** There must be a fair system of taxation as in a fixed percentage of income tax for all [Rom. 13:7].
3. **Virtue.** The true measure of capitalism is not necessarily “look at our prosperity,” but “*look at our freedom*.” Of course, capitalism *requires virtue as well as a strong work ethic* which is mandated for all Believers [2 Thess. 3:7-14]. In short, the Believer must “*get a job*.” The only joint sharing of property in the Bible was in the early Church in Jerusalem. This was because the Jerusalem Believers were excommunicated from the synagogues/society and were forced to pool their assets just to survive [Jn. 16:1-2; Acts 2:43-47]. Thus, the only money collection that was taken up by Paul was for the relief of Believers in Jerusalem [1 Cor. 16:1-4; 2 Cor. 8:1-9; Rom. 15:14-32; Acts 24:17]. All Believers are instructed to “*work in quiet fashion and eat their own bread*” [2 Thess. 3:12; Gen. 3:17].
- (d) **Religion.** Religion *must be separated* from the functions of the Freedom Based Nation [Matt. 22:21; Jn. 8:44; Mk. 12:17]. General recognition of God is proper but not forced religious practices.

MARK 12:17

And Jesus said to them [*Pharisees and Herodians*], “Render to Caesar the things that are Caesar’s, and to God the things that are God’s.” And they were amazed at Him.

- (6) **Client Nation Status.** Believers are “*the salt*” [Matt. 5:13] of the nation and can constitute a pivot to God to bless the nation. However, if the salt has lost its taste, i.e., the function of Believers in reversionism, it is cast out. *See* Hos. 4:1-8; Isa. 28; Ps. 119:45; Eccl. 9:14-18; Lev. 26:14-34 [progressive cycles of Divine Discipline to a Client Nation]. *See @@@ SALT*.

LEVITICUS 26:14-33

But if you [the Jews as a Client Nation to God] do not obey Me [God] and do not carry out all these commandments, if, instead, you reject My statutes, and if your soul abhors My ordinances [negative [-N] volition towards Bible Doctrine] so as not to carry out all My commandments, *and* so break My covenant, I, in turn, will do this to you: [1] I will appoint over you a sudden terror, consumption and fever that will waste away the eyes and cause the soul to pine away; also, you will sow your seed uselessly, for your enemies will eat it up. [2] I will set My face against you so that you will be struck down before your enemies; and those who hate you will rule over you, and you will flee when no one is pursuing you. [3] If also after these things you do not obey Me, then I will punish you seven times more for your sins. I will also break down your pride of power; I will also make your sky like iron and your earth like bronze. Your strength will be spent uselessly, for your land will not yield its produce and the trees of the land will not yield their fruit. [4] If then, you act with hostility against Me and are unwilling to obey Me, I will increase the plague on you seven times according to your sins. I will let loose among you the beasts of the field, which will bereave you of your children and destroy your cattle and reduce your number so that your roads lie deserted. And if by these things you are not turned to Me, but act with hostility against Me, then I will act with hostility against you; and I, even I, will strike you seven times for your sins. I will also bring upon you a sword which will execute vengeance for the covenant; and when you gather together into your cities, I will send pestilence among you, so that you shall be delivered into enemy hands. When I break your staff of bread, ten women will bake your bread in one oven, and they will bring back your bread in rationed amounts, so that you will eat and not be satisfied. [5] Yet if in spite of this you do not obey Me, but act with hostility against Me, then I will act with wrathful hostility against you, and I, even I, will punish you seven times for your sins. Further, you will eat the flesh of your sons and the flesh of your daughters you will eat. I then will destroy your high places, and cut down your incense altars, and heap your remains on the remains of your idols, for My soul shall abhor you. I will lay waste your cities as well and will make your sanctuaries desolate, and I will not smell your soothing aromas. I will make the land desolate so that your enemies who settle in it will be appalled over it. You, however, I will scatter among the nations and will draw out a sword after you, as your land becomes desolate and your cities become waste [the 5th and final cycle of Divine Discipline sees the Client Nation destroyed].

- (7) **Satan Attacks.** Satan *attacks all* the Divine Institutions [Rev. 12:9; 20:3, 8]. In fact, Satan promotes internationalism and socialism per his Cosmic Systems. See @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS.
- (8) **Revolution.** Armed revolution against a national entity is unauthorized [Rom. 13:1-7]. However, in the case of extreme grievances separation is authorized under the “*consent of the governed*” concept. For example, the 1776 American War for Independence from Great Britain.
- (9) **Loyal Citizens.** Recognizing that their true “*citizenship is in heaven*” [Phil. 3:20] Believers are still commanded to be loyal citizens of the State where they reside, to live their lives “*as for the LORD*” [Col. 3:23-24], and to “*make it your ambition to lead a quiet life and attend to your own business and work with your own hands*” [1 Thess. 4:11]; Matt. 22:19-21; Rom. 13:1-7 [death penalty is valid for criminal Believers]; 1 Pet. 2:11-15.

ROMANS 13:1

Every person is to be in subjection [*hupotasso*] to the governing authorities. For there is no authority [*exousia*] except from God, and those which exist are established by God [*per the Divine Institutions*].

MATTHEW 22:19-21

“Show Me [*Jesus*] the coin *used* for the poll-tax.” And they [*Pharisees*], brought Him a denarius. And He [*Jesus*] said to them, “Whose likeness and inscription is this?” They said to Him, “Caesar’s.” Then He said to them, “Then render to Caesar the things that are Caesar’s; and to God the things that are God’s.”

1 PETER 2:11-12

Beloved, I [*Peter*] urge you as aliens and strangers [*Believers are citizens of Heaven*] to abstain from fleshly lusts [*coming from the Old Sin Nature*] which wage war against the soul [*the battle for control is between the Holy Spirit and the Old Sin Nature*]. Keep your behavior excellent among the Gentiles [*ethnos – the unBelievers*], so that in the thing in which they slander you as evildoers [*presenting the Gospel*], they may because of your good deeds [*as a model citizen*], as they observe *them*, glorify God in the day of visitation.

- (10) **Unlawful Orders.** The Believer must resist government commands when they *directly conflict* with Bible Doctrine. See 1 Pet. 2:13-14; Acts 4:18-20 [Peter and Paul refused orders to stop speaking about Jesus Christ]; Dan. 3:16-19; 6:1-28 [Daniel ignored the King's decree to stop praying].
- (11) **Encroachment on Divine Institutions.** Rejection of the Divine Institutions is always for the “*good*” of some group of people. For example, the early Communist Chinese revolution did away with narcotic dins winning the support of many of the local Christian churches for such social reforms. Then, when in power the communists slaughtered the Chinese Christians wholesale.
- (12) **National Destruction.** When a significant number of people in the national entity ignore or oppose the Divine Institutions a tipping point is rapidly reached which will ultimately lead the nation to its destruction [Mic. 3:1-4]. See @@@ PIVOT & CLIENT NATION.

MICAH 3:1-4

And I [God] said, “Hear now, heads of Jacob and rulers of the house of Israel. Is it not for you to know justice [*mishpat (the act of correctly deciding a case) – they should endorse and follow the Divine Institutions*]? You who hate good and love evil, who tear off their skin from them and their flesh from their bones, who eat the flesh of my people, strip off their skin from them, break their bones and chop *them* up as for the pot and as meat in a kettle [*the people abused by their leaders*].” Then they [*those who practice injustice*] will cry out to the LORD, but He will not answer them. Instead, He will hide His face from them at that time because they have practiced evil deeds.

- (13) **Requires Work.** In contrast to the Christian Way of Life, a grace system *in toto*, the function of the Divine Institutions is meritorious and requires great effort to maintain. Ironically, both “*moral*” and “*immoral*” degeneracy occur faster under a free society than under tyranny, meaning that virtue and humility, the key ingredients in upholding the Divine Institutions, must be ingrained. Accordingly, the Believer should be a model example when it comes to following, protecting, and energizing the Divine Institutions [Ps. 119:5; Gal. 6:7]. Furthermore, the Believer should use *agape impersonal love* and all the problem solving devices to further boost his support to the Divine Institutions [Mic. 6:8-16].

@@@ DIVORCE

- (1) **Definition.** Divorce is the end result of a legal process that dissolves the former bonds of marriage between a man and a woman. Once divorced, the parties are then in the status quo of “single” – no longer are they husband and wife.
- (2) **No Divorce.** The general mandate from God to Believers is that there should be *no divorce*. See 1 Cor. 7:10-11, 27; Matt. 4:3-8; 19:3-8. “*I hate divorce*” [Mal. 2:14, 16] is God’s pronouncement on the matter, as it strikes at the very heart of *breaking down two* of the Divine Institutions [marriage & family] which leads to *societal decay*. See @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS.

MALACHI 2:14, 16

Yet you say, “For what reason [the LORD will not accept certain offerings]?” Because the LORD has been a witness between you and the wife [*ishshah*] of your youth, against whom you have dealt treacherously [*bagad (to deal treacherously or deceitfully)*], though she is your companion and your wife, by covenant [*beriyth (covenant; pledge)*]. ... For I hate [*wane*] divorce [*shalach (be put away; divorce)*],” says the LORD, the God of Israel, “and him who covers his garment with wrong [*idiom for injustice*],” says the LORD of hosts. “So take heed to your spirit [*ruach*], that you do not deal treacherously.”

MATTHEW 19:3-8

Some Pharisees came to Jesus, testing Him and asking, “Is it lawful *for a man* to divorce [*apoluo (to dismiss; to send away)*] his wife for any reason at all?” And He answered and said, “Have you not read [*anaginosko – in the Bible*] that He who created *them* from the beginning made them male and female, and said, ‘For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined [*kollao (to glue together) – to have sexual relations*] to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh’? So they are no longer two, but one flesh. What therefore God has joined together [*marriage is one of the four Divine Institutions*], let no man separate.” They said to Him, “Why then did Moses command to give her a certificate of divorce and send *her* away?” He said to them, “Because of your hardness of heart [*sklerokardia – negative [-N] volition*] Moses permitted you to divorce your wives; but from the beginning it has not been this way [*God intends for marriage to stand*].”

1 CORINTHIANS 7:10

But to the married I [Paul] give instructions, not I, but the LORD, that the wife should not leave her husband.

- (3) **No Happiness Guarantee.** Under the Divine Institutions, matrimony was not designed as the primary ingredient for happiness for the Believer. However, for the “*mature*” [Eph. 4:13] **Winner** Believer marriage can be a source of great blessings, and “*rewards*” [1 Cor. 3:14].
- (4) **Marriage in Conflict.** For the positive [+P] volition Believer there are fixed Biblical *solutions* to deal with a marriage in conflict:
 - (a) **Bible Doctrine First.** If you are a husband or a wife your *foundational allegiance* is always to Bible Doctrine. “*For the Gentiles eagerly seek all these things; for your heavenly Father knows that you need all these things. But seek first His kingdom and His righteousness, and all these things will be added to you*” [Matt. 6:32-33].
 - (b) **Problem Solving Devices.** If the partner is lacking in some manner in the marriage, then the other partner must wisely apply 1 Pet. 3:1-2 [viewed from the perspective of a **Winner** Believer wife] and/or the appropriate *problem solving devices* such as *agape impersonal love*.

1 PETER 3:1-2

In the same way, you [the positive [+P] volition Believer] wives, be submissive [*hupotasso* (obey; to be subordinate to) – under the authority] to your own husbands so that even if any of them [the husband is a Loser Believer or perhaps an unBeliever] are disobedient [*apeitheo* (not to allow one’s self to be persuaded; to refuse or withhold belief)] to the word [negative [-N] volition to Bible Doctrine], they may be won without a word by the behavior [*anastrophe* (manner of life) – the use of *agape impersonal love*] of their wives, as they observe your chaste and respectful behavior [*anastrophe* – the witness of the life in the Christian Way of Life].

- (c) **Unto the LORD.** As in all things in the Believer’s life he is do his *assigned duty* in marriage “*heartily, as for the LORD ... knowing that from the LORD you will receive the reward*” [Col. 3:23-24].

- (d) **Forgive and Forget.** As part of the Christian Way of Life, the Believer must always *apply the Royal Law* – “*forgiving each other, just as God in Christ also has forgiven you*” [Eph. 4:32] – and forgive and forget wrongs from their spouse, as couples will always commit sins.
- (5) **Lawful Divorce.** Divorce is allowed [but not commanded] under two specific conditions: (1) adultery; and (2) desertion. *See* Matt. 5:32; 19:3-9; Deut. 24:1, 3; 1 Cor. 7:15. There are no other listed causes for divorce in the Bible.

DEUTERONOMY 24:1

When a man takes a wife and marries [*baal (marry; possess)*] her, and it happens that she finds no favor in his eyes because he has found some indecency [*ervah (nakedness; shame) – the wife has committed adultery*] in her, and he writes her a certificate of divorce [*sepher (a legal certificate of divorce)*] and puts *it* in her hand and sends her out from his house.

- (6) **The Former Spouse.** Once there is a remarriage by one of the parties following a divorce, the former spouse is to be *regarded as if dead* [Rom. 7:1-6; Deut. 24:2-4]. In that case there should be no social contact with the former spouse unless required by other lawful functions such as child custody/visitation issues. *See* Deut. 24:1, *supra* (5); and *infra* (8)(d).

DEUTERONOMY 24:2-4

And she leaves his house and goes and becomes another man’s *wife*, and if the latter husband turns against her and writes her a certificate of divorce and puts *it* in her hand and sends her out of his house, or if the latter husband dies who took her to be his wife, *then* her former husband who sent her away is not allowed to take her again to be his wife, since she has been defiled [*tame (to become unclean; defiled)*]; for that is an abomination before the LORD, and you shall not bring sin on the land which the LORD your God gives you as an inheritance.

- (7) **Separation.** If one party is the victim of a violent or abusive marriage, or abuse to the children occurs, etc., the wronged party may geographically separate from that person [author’s personal opinion: and call law enforcement officers on the abusive partner if criminality occurred]. This is a separation only, not a divorce. It can be a permanent status.

- (8) **Remarriage.** Remarriage is allowed in the Bible per the following:
- (a) **Before Salvation.** The divorce occurred before salvation [Isa. 44:22; Ps. 103:12].
 - (b) **Adultery.** The innocent party of an adultery case [Matt. 5:32].
 - (c) **Desertion.** The innocent party of a desertion case [1 Cor. 7:13].
 - (d) **Gimmicks.** The person was the innocent party of a *divorce gimmick*. In Deut. 24:1-4, the word *ervah* (nakedness; shame) is used to describe adultery. Later in the passage the word *tame* (to become unclean; defiled) is also used to describe the former wife who has improperly remarried her original husband. Improperly seeking to expand the Biblical causes for divorce, this word was twisted by the Jews to include all sorts of ritualistic “unclean” acts listed in *Leviticus*, e.g., entering a house where a recent death occurred. Thus, a conniving husband would send the wife into the home of a deceased person so that he could then declare the wife *tame*, and immediately divorce her. Today, the divorce gimmick is practiced by one party using man-made reasons set out in various State laws which authorize divorce, e.g., “incompatibility” or “irreconcilable differences.” These modern civil codes are not Biblical.
 - (e) **Improper Remarriage to Former Spouse.** The former spouse is now remarried, regardless of who caused the divorce [Deut. 24:3-4].
 - (f) **Remarriage of Original.** The original two divorced partners can remarry each other so long as no other marriage has taken place by one or the other in the interim [Deut. 24:4]. *See supra* (6).
- (9) **Unauthorized Remarriage.** If a Believer divorced and then remarried contrary to the Biblical mandates the Believer is to stay as he is [married] and Rebound. Any ongoing discipline for the sin is converted to Divine Suffering for Blessing for the Believer. *See* 1 Cor. 7:20.

1 CORINTHIANS 7:20

Each man [*hekastos*] must remain in that condition in which he was called.

@@@ DRINKING & EATING

– DRINKING –

- (1) **Definition.** The term *drinking* refers to the consumption of alcoholic beverages which may or may not lead to getting drunk or intoxicated.
- (2) **Drunkenness.** *Getting drunk* on alcoholic beverages is a sin. See Isa. 5:11, 22; 28:7-8; Rom. 13:13; 1 Cor. 5:11; Eph. 5:15-18; Prov. 20:1; 23:20; Joel 1:5; Jer. 23:9. By direct analogy getting “drunk” on drugs is a sin [apart from medical uses]. In turn, the state of drunkenness can cause the individual to *engage in other sins* [Prov. 23:29-35; Gen. 9:21].

ROMANS 13:13

Let us [**Believers**] behave properly as in the day, not in carousing and drunkenness [*methe*], not in sexual promiscuity and sensuality, not in strife and jealousy.

EPHESIANS 5:15-18

Therefore be careful how you walk [**the Believer’s lifestyle**], not as unwise men but as wise [**apply Bible Doctrine**], making the most of your time, because the days are evil [**Satan seeks to deceive the Believer**]. So then do not be foolish [*aphron (without reason)*], but understand what the will of the LORD is [**to reach spiritual maturity**]. And do not get drunk [*methusko*] with wine, for that is dissipation [*asotia (a dissolute life)*], but be filled with the Spirit [**Fellowship with God the Holy Spirit by Rebound**].

JOEL 1:5

Awake, drunkards, and weep; and wail [*yalal (to howl)*], all you wine drinkers, on account of the sweet wine that is cut off from your mouth [*peh – Divine Discipline Suffering is coming to the nation*].

- (3) **Those in Authority.** Those occupying positions of authority under the Divine Institutions have a special responsibility to *stay sober*: (1) national leaders [Prov. 31:4-5]; (2) Pastor/Teachers [1 Tim. 3:3; Tit. 1:7]; and (3) deacons in a local Church [1 Tim. 3:8]. See @@@ AUTHORITY.

- (4) **Illustrations.** Some examples of the negative results of drunkenness: (1) Noah engaged in the sin of autoeroticism and homosexual conduct with his son Ham. Note: Ham and his descendants were subsequently cursed [Gen. 9:20-25]; (2) Nabal was too drunk to listen to the wise words of Abigail [1 Sam. 25:36-38]; (3) Rulers in the Northern Kingdom were regularly in a state of drunkenness and unable to lead the nation [Isa. 28:1]; (4) Lot got drunk and engaged in incest with both of his daughters, each one on a separate occasion [Gen. 19:32-36].
- (5) **Separation from Drunks.** Believers are commanded not to keep close company with those who are *perpetual drunks*. See 1 Cor. 5:11.

1 CORINTHIANS 5:11

But actually, I [Paul] wrote to you not to associate [*sunanamignumi* (to keep company with)] with any so-called brother [*adelphos* – a Believer in reversionism] if he is an immoral person, or covetous, or an idolater, or a reviler [*loidoros* (one who causes mischief)], or a drunkard [*methusos* (one intoxicated)], or a swindler—not even to eat with such a one.

- (6) **Loser Believer.** Loser Believers who are consistently on negative [-N] volition to Bible Doctrine are equated with being drunks. See 1 Thess. 5:6-7; Eph. 5:15-18.

1 THESSALONIANS 5:6-7

So then let us not sleep [*katheudo* – Operational Death of the Believer in reversionism] as others do [Loser Believers], but let us be alert [*gregoreuo* (to watch)] and sober [*nepho* (to be calm and collected)]. For those who sleep do their sleeping at night, and those who get drunk get drunk [*methuo* (to be drunken)] at night [*nux* – but positive [+P] volition Believers keep walking in the light of Bible Doctrine].

- (7) **Drinking in Moderation.** *Drinking alcohol in moderation is condoned.* See Prov. 31:6-7; 1 Tim. 5:23; Tit. 2:3-5. In fact, most all people in the ancient world drank various alcoholic beverages for a variety of reasons to include purification purposes of polluted water, medicinal, relaxation, enjoyment, and celebrations. Alcohol in moderation is used as an analogy for the joy of Bible Doctrine – “*wine which makes man’s heart glad*” [Ps. 104:15]; Isa. 55:2.

1 TIMOTHY 5:23

No longer drink water *exclusively*, but use a little wine [*oinos*] for the sake of your [*Timothy*] stomach and your frequent ailments.

TITUS 2:3-5

Older women likewise are to be reverent in their behavior, not malicious gossips nor enslaved to much wine, teaching what is good, so that they may encourage the young women to love their husbands, to love their children, *to be* sensible, pure, workers at home [*oikouros (caring for the house)*], kind, being subject [*hupotasso (to submit to one's control)*] to their own husbands, so that the word of God will not be dishonored.

- (8) **Jesus' First Miracle.** Jesus turned water into a fabulous alcoholic wine as His *first public miracle* [Jn. 2:1-11]. In fact, Jesus drank wine with His meals as did most of the people of the ancient world. Jesus was often slandered as being a drunk simply because He associated with tax collectors and prostitutes, not because He got drunk [Jn. 2:1-12; Lk. 7:34-35].

JOHN 2:9-10

When the headwaiter tasted the water [*hudor*] which had become wine [*oinos*], and did not know where it came from (but the servants who had drawn the water knew), the headwaiter called the bridegroom, and said to him, "Every man serves the good wine first, and when *the people* have drunk freely, *then he serves* the poorer wine; *but* you have kept the good wine until now."

LUKE 7:34-35

The Son of Man has come eating and drinking [*He was never drunk*], and you say, "Behold, a gluttonous man and a drunkard, a friend of tax collectors and sinners [*prostitutes*]!" Yet wisdom is vindicated by all her children.

- (9) **Common Sense Rules.** Since alcohol is a depressant, some "common sense" suggestions [these are not in the Bible]: (1) never drink when upset; (2) never drink alone, *but see*, 1 Tim. 5:23 [medicinal purposes]; (3) never drink with strangers; and (4) the "two-beer" rule – limit drinking at one setting to two drinks [meets most U.S. State laws concerning driving while impaired].

– EATING –

- (1) **All Good.** All food “*created by God is good*” [1 Tim. 4:4-5] to eat. The dietary restrictions in the Mosaic Law *are now abrogated* for the Church Age Believer. Each Believer can determine for himself what he will or will not eat. See Acts 10:9-16; Rom. 14:20; Mk. 7:18-19. Note: the prohibition on consuming the raw blood of an animal was given prior to the restrictions of the Mosaic Law and illustrated the evil of salvation by human works. See Gen. 9:3-4; cf. Lev. 17:10-14. “*You are not to eat the blood of any flesh.*”

GENESIS 9:3-4

Every moving thing that is alive [*animals*] shall be food for you; I [*God*] give all to you, as *I gave* the green plant. Only you shall not eat flesh with its life, *that is*, its blood [*dam*].

ROMANS 14:20

Do not tear down the work of God for the sake of food [*broma (things eaten)*]. All things indeed are clean, but they are evil for the man who eats and gives offense [*under the Law of Expediency the Believer must consider his actions in light of any adverse impact on an unBeliever or a weak immature Believer*].

MARK 7:18-19

And He [*Jesus*] said to them, “Are you so lacking in understanding also? Do you not understand that whatever goes into the man from outside [*food*] cannot defile him, because it does not go into his heart [*kardia – human soul*], but into his stomach, and is eliminated?” (*Thus He declared all foods clean*).

- (2) **Fasting.** Fasting is a matter of individual choice and may or may not involve skipping meals. Under the Law of Liberty in the Christian Way of Life, the Believer is not bound by restrictions on eating – “*he who eats, does so for the LORD, for he gives thanks to God; and he who eats not, for the LORD he does not eat, and gives thanks to God*” [Rom. 14:6]. In fact, *fasting simply means that the Believer will devote extra time* to studying or engaging in Bible Doctrine activities which requires giving up other activities that would normally have filled that particular time slot, e.g., preparing and eating a scheduled meal. See @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.

- (3) **Gluttony.** Gluttony is a sin. “*If we have food and covering, with these we shall be content*” [1 Tim. 6:8]; Prov. 23:1-2; Tit. 1:12-13.
- (4) **Prayer.** Prayer for food to be sanctified for use in the body should *always precede eating a meal* [1 Tim. 4:4-5].

1 TIMOTHY 4:4-5

For everything created by God is good [*kalos* (useful; suitable)], and nothing is to be rejected [*apobletos* (thrown away; rejected)] if it [*food to be eaten*] is received with gratitude [*eucharistia*]; for it is sanctified [*hagiazō* (to be separated from profane things)] by means of the word of God and prayer [*pray over the food*].

- (5) **Spirituality.** Eating or restricting the eating of food does not equate to, or result in, spirituality [1 Cor. 8:8].

1 CORINTHIANS 8:8

But food will not commend [*paristemi* (to place beside or near)] us to God; we are neither the worse if we do not eat, nor the better if we do eat.

- (6) **Bible Doctrine.** The “*solid food*” [1 Cor. 3:2] of *Bible Doctrine* provides eternal life to the unBeliever, “*he who believes in Me*” [Jn. 6:35] – the Gospel – and spiritual growth energy for the “*mature*” [Eph. 4:13] Believer. *See* Mk. 7:19; Matt. 4:4; 1 Cor. 3:1-2. *See @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.*

JOHN 6:35

Jesus said to them, “I am the bread of life; he who comes to Me will not hunger, and he who believes in Me will never thirst [*dipsao* – *Believers receive salvation*].” Jn. 6:35

MATTHEW 4:4

But He [*Jesus*] answered and said, “It is written, ‘Man shall not live on bread alone, but on every word [*rhema* – *Bible Doctrine*] that proceeds [*ekporeuomai* (to go forth)] out of the mouth of God.’”

@@@ EDIFICATION COMPLEX OF THE SOUL

- (1) **Definition.** The Edification Complex of the Soul [ECS] is an R. B. Thieme Jr., teaching concept that refers to the positive [+P] volition **Winner Believer** who takes in Bible Doctrine and builds a categorical Bible Doctrine *mental structure in his soul* – a house where God then fills the rooms with temporal and spiritual rewards in time and eternity. The ECS is equivalent to having “*the mind of Christ*” [1 Cor. 2:16] at spiritual maturity. See Prov. 24:3-4.

PROVERBS 24:3-4

By wisdom [*chokmah* (to learn to know)] a house is built, and by understanding it is established [*kun* (to be firmly established) – the thinking of Jesus Christ is Bible Doctrine, and this provides the construction materials]; and by knowledge [advanced Bible Doctrine] the rooms are filled with all precious and pleasant riches [God provides all the riches of time and eternity to the mature Believer].

- (2) **Descriptive Verbs.** Verbs in the Bible to describe the ECS include: Hebrew *banah* (to build something out of existing materials) and Greek *oikodomeo* (to build or contrast a structure). Greek nouns to describe the ECS include: *oikodome* (the act of building); *oikodomia* (the result of erecting a structure). See 1 Cor. 3:10-12; Acts 4:11; Eph. 4:12, 15-16, 29 [the Holy Spirit’s function in Operation Z]. See @@@ OPERATION Z.

EPHESIANS 4:15-16

But speaking the truth [*aletheuo* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – Bible Doctrine] in love [*agape* (to love dearly)], we are to grow up [*auxano* (to grow; to increase) – the positive [+P] volition Believer is to grow to spiritual maturity] in all aspects into Him who is the head, even Christ, from whom the whole body [*soma* – all Church Age Believers], being fitted and held together by what every joint [*haphe* – the Pastor/Teacher providing the construction material of Bible Doctrine] supplies [*epichoregia*], according to the proper working of each individual part, causes the growth [*auxesis* (increase; growth)] of the body [*soma* – any positive [+P] volition Believer wishing to reach spiritual maturity] for the building up [*oikodome* – building an Edification Complex of the Soul] of itself in love [*agape* (to love dearly)].

- (3) **Construction Materials.** The *construction materials* for an ECS consist of Bible Doctrine which is obtained by the Believer through the function of Operation Z in the soul. See Eph. 3:17-20; 4:12-13, 23-24; Jn. 14:26; 16:12-14; 1 Jn. 2:3, 27; 1 Cor. 2:9-16; Col. 1:9-10.
- (4) **Foundation.** The *foundation slab* which supports the ECS is faith in the LORD Jesus Christ, the cornerstone, and the Forty Things given at salvation. See 2 Tim. 2:19; 1 Cor. 3:11. See @@@ CORNERSTONE.
- (5) **Progressive in Structure.** As in the construction of a house, building the ECS is *progressive in nature* so that the Believer gradually thinks more and more in terms of the *Divine viewpoint* and not the Cosmic viewpoint. Thus, advanced Bible Doctrine is built on top of basic Bible Doctrine “*day by day*” [2 Cor. 4:16], “*precept (a Bible Doctrine) upon precept (a Bible Doctrine); line upon line*” [Isa. 28:10, KJV], until the whole project is completed [Eph. 4:12; Col. 2:7; Jude 1:20]. Ultimately, the **Winner** Believer is entered by God the Father as a subject matter expert witness in the Angelic Conflict.
- (6) **Inspection and Testing.** Just as a building inspector *examines, tests, and approves* the progressive steps of construction during the building process of a house, the Believer’s ECS is “*tested*” [1 Pet. 1:7] by God as it undergoes the process of being built. In turn, the Believer must have an *Instant Reaction Force [IRF]* of *red alert* problem solving devices to reflexively fight unexpected attacks from the Old Sin Nature and the Cosmic Systems. See Eph. 4:6; 2 Pet. 3:17-18. See @@@ SUFFERING.

2 PETER 3:17-18

You therefore, beloved [**Believers**], knowing this beforehand [**Peter has taught this Bible Doctrine**], be on your guard [*phulasso* (to guard or watch) – have an **IRF**] so that you are not carried away [*sunapago* (to lead away with or together)] by the error of unprincipled men [**people in Cosmic Systems who distract the Believer**] and fall from [*ekipto* (to drift off course)] your own steadfastness [*sterigmos* (firm condition) – do not go into reversionism], but grow [*auxano* (to cause to grow) – the positive [+P] volition Believer must reach spiritual maturity] in the grace and knowledge [*gnosis* (the deeper more perfect and enlarged knowledge) – understanding the full realm of Bible Doctrine] of our LORD and Savior Jesus Christ. To Him be the glory [*doxa*], both now and to the day of eternity. Amen.

(7) **The ECS Structure.**

FIRST FLOOR – Operation Z and Rebound.

SECOND FLOOR – Basic Bible Doctrines Set in the Theology of Dispensations.

THIRD FLOOR – Mastering the Problem Solving Devices.

FOURTH FLOOR – Spiritual Self Esteem Maturity Level.

FIFTH FLOOR – Spiritual Autonomy Maturity Level.

SIXTH FLOOR – Super Spiritual Maturity Level.

- (8) **Divine Good.** Producing Divine Good in the Christian Way of Life only occurs from an ECS. *See Eph. 2:10.*
- (9) **Top Priority.** The *top goal in the life* of the Believer is to get an ECS, not to do special things, e.g., speaking in tongues. *See 1 Cor. 14:3-4, 12, 26.*
- (10) **Solves Problems.** The completed ECS deals effectively with and solves any psychological handicaps stuck in the Believer's subconscious, including invalid emotion and guilt complexes. *See Heb. 20:22.*
- (11) **Detects Falsehoods.** The ECS provides the *wisdom to detect* false doctrine. *See Heb. 4:12; 5:14; Gal. 2:14; Mal. 3:18; Matt. 7:24-27.*

MATTHEW 7:24-25

Therefore everyone who hears these words of Mine [**Jesus**] and acts on them [**builds an Edification Complex of the Soul**], may be compared to a wise man who built his house on the rock. And the rain fell, and the floods came [**the problems of life**], and the winds blew and slammed against that house; and *yet* it did not fall, for it had been founded on the rock [**Jesus Christ is the cornerstone of salvation**].

- (12) **Capacity for Love.** The ECS *provides the capacity* for the Believer to fully enjoy all the categories of love to include using the problem solving device of *agape impersonal love*. *See @@@ LOVE.*

- (13) **Rapid Construction.** A Believer can erect an ECS under accelerated circumstances in time [Jas. 1:2-4]. This requires a concentrated and maximum intake of Bible Doctrine [Eph. 5:16; Col. 4:5]. See @@@ RUNNING.
- (14) **Rewards.** The ECS **Winner** Believer is entered as a *subject matter expert witness exhibit* in the Angelic Conflict and receives fantastic Escrow Account Blessing rewards in time and eternity [Rev. 22:12; Matt. 25:23; 1 Tim. 4:8]. See @@@ REWARDS.
- (15) **Local Church.** The proper local independent Bible teaching Church will have “*mature*” [Eph. 4:13] ECS **Winner** Believers in attendance [Acts 9:31]. See @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER.
- (16) **The Pivot.** The ECS **Winner** Believer provides stability and prosperity for all those associated with him in his sphere of life and to the nation where he resides [Jer. 42:10]. This is blessing by association.
- (17) **Jesus’ ECS.** The humanity of Jesus Christ erected an ECS at a very early age [Lk. 2:40, 52; Jn. 1:14].

LUKE 2:40

The Child [Jesus] continued to grow and become strong, increasing in wisdom [*sophia*]; and the grace [*charis*] of God was upon Him.

- (18) **Synonyms.** (1) “*Light*” [Ps. 43:3; 119:130; Eph. 5:8-9, 13]; (2) “*Give glory*” [Jer. 13:16; 1 Cor. 11:7]; (3) “*God’s household*” [Eph. 3:19; 5:17-20; Col. 3:16]; (4) “*Imitators of God*” [Eph. 5:1; Matt. 5:48]; (5) “*Christ in your heart*” [Eph. 3:17]; (6) “*Christ is formed in you*” [2 Cor. 13:5; Gal. 2:20; 4:6, 19]; (7) “*New man*” [Eph. 4:24; Col. 3:10; 1 Pet. 3:4]; and (8) “*Perfect*” [Jas. 1:4].

GALATIANS 4:19

My [Paul] children [*teknon*], with whom I am again [*palin* (repetition of action)] in labor [*odino* (to feel the pains of childbirth)] until Christ is formed [*morphoo*] in you [Paul taught Bible Doctrine so Believers could grow to maturity and have the thinking of Christ].

@@@ EMOTION

- (1) **Definition.** The emotion is a part of the human soul – “*eat, drink, and be merry*” [Lk. 12:19-21]. Ideally, it is a *responder/appreciator* mechanism to the thoughts in the *mentality* of the soul. While the volition can open or shut the gate on emotional response/reaction, left unchecked emotion can also function on its own apart from the volition. *See* 2 Sam. 5:8.
- (2) **Thinking.** Without frontal lobes in the brain a person can still emote. Emotion does not contain a vocabulary, does not contain thought or common sense, cannot reason, and does not contain Bible Doctrine. Again, emotion is *non-thinking* and must be *subordinated and controlled* by proper thinking. *See* Jer. 17:11; Ps. 26:2; Rev. 2:23; Prov. 23:15-17.
- (3) **Biblical Terminology.** Words used in the Bible for emotion include: *splachnon* (entrails; feelings) [2 Cor. 6:11-12]; *koilia* (hallow; inner parts) [Rom. 16:17-18; Phil. 3:18-19]; *nephros* (kidneys; feelings) [Rev. 2:23]; and *kilyah* (fat pads of the kidneys) [Ps. 7:9; 26:2; Jer. 11:20; 17:10].
- (4) **Two Functions.** Human emotion has *two functions*, one sinful and one good.
 - (a) **Arrogance.** Emotion expressed in arrogance and in response to the Old Sin Nature is evil. *See* Jas. 4:1; 1 Pet. 2:11; Phil. 3:18-19.

PHILIPPIANS 3:18-19

For many walk [*peripateo* (a lifestyle) – the Loser negative [-N] volition Believer in reversionism], of whom I [Paul] often told you, and now tell you even weeping, *that they are* enemies [*echthros* (hated; odious; opposing God in the mind)] of the cross of Christ, whose end is destruction [*apoleia* – they will die the sin unto death], whose god is *their* appetite [*koilia* – their emotion is key to them], and *whose* glory [the Loser Believer glories in human good] is in their shame, who set their minds on earthly things [Cosmic Systems].

- (b) **Response.** Appreciation, thankfulness, and response to Bible Doctrine is always *good emotion*. *See* Matt. 22:37; Deut. 6:5; Mk. 12:30-31; Lk. 10:27. “*So he got up and came to his father. But while he was still a long way off, his father saw him and felt compassion for him, and ran and embraced him and kissed him*” [Lk. 15:20]

MATTHEW 22:37

And He [**Jesus**] said to him, “You shall love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] the LORD your God with all your heart, and with all your soul [*psuche*], and with all your mind [*dianoia* (the mind as a faculty of understanding)].”

- (5) **Not Christianity.** Emotion and emotional outbursts have nothing to do with salvation, Rebound, or reaching spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1]; Jer. 15:16. See @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.
- (6) **Hinders Growth.** A person under pressure emotes. Emotion unchecked can quickly *hinder spiritual growth* [Rom. 16:17-18; 2 Cor. 6:11-12; Jas. 1:19-20]. However, a Believer who uses problem solving devices thinks and applies the correct Bible Doctrine(s). See Lam. 3:21.

ROMANS 16:18

For such men are slaves [**Believers in reversionism**], not of our LORD Christ but of their own appetites [*koilia* (emotions; belly) – **under the influence of their emotion and OSN**]; and by their smooth [*chrestologia* (the smooth and plausible address which simulates goodness)] and flattering speech [*eulogia* (praise)] they deceive the hearts of the unsuspecting.

JAMES 1:19

This you know, my beloved brethren. But everyone must be quick [*tachus* (prompt)] to hear [*akouo* – **the proper motivation to learn Bible Doctrine**], slow to speak [*laleo* – **no talking while in Bible class; respect for the teaching of the Word of God is paramount**] and slow to anger [*orge* (anger) – **the emotion is controlled**].

2 CORINTHIANS 6:11-12

Our [**Paul and his seminary team**] mouth [*stoma*] has spoken freely [*anoigo*] to you [**they taught many Bible classes**], O Corinthians, our heart is opened wide [*platuno*]. You are not restrained [*stenochoreo* (to be in a narrow place) – **from learning Bible Doctrine**] by us, but you are restrained in your own affections [*splagchnon* – **emotions**].

@@@ ENEMY

- (1) **Definition.** An enemy is someone or something in opposition. The Greek words for enemy are *antikeimai* (to be opposed to) or *echthros* (hated; odious).
- (2) **Enemies of the Believer.**
 - (a) **Cosmic Systems.** The Believer must *stay out* of the Cosmic Systems – the “*enemy of all righteousness*” [Acts 13:10]; 1 Pet. 5:8; 1 Tim. 4:1; Eph. 6:10-17; Jas. 4:4. See @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS.

MATTHEW 10:34-36

“Do not think that I [**Jesus Christ**] came to bring peace on the earth; I did not come to bring peace, but a sword. For I came to set a man against his father, and a daughter against her mother, and a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law; and a man’s enemies [*echthros* (hated; odious)] will be the members of his household. He who loves [*phileo* (personal love)] father or mother more than Me is not worthy of Me; and he who loves son or daughter more than Me is not worthy of Me. And he who does not take his cross [**Bible Doctrine is the number one priority**] and follow after Me is not worthy of Me.”

- (b) **Self.** In terms of consistent negative [-N] volition to Bible Doctrine, the Believer’s *greatest enemy of all is himself*. See Ps. 119:67; Acts 7:51; Matt. 16:23; 23:37; Mk. 8:33. See @@@ REVERSIONISM.

MARK 8:33

But turning around and seeing His disciples [**Peter had just pledged that he would not allow Jesus to be crucified**], He rebuked Peter and said, “Get behind Me, Satan; for you are not setting your mind [*phroneo* (to have understanding) – **on the Plan of God**] on God’s interests, but man’s [**human viewpoint**].”

- (c) **Old Sin Nature.** The genetically formed OSN resides in the genetic code of the body of every Believer and does not depart until his Physical Death. The OSN wages “*war against the soul*” [1 Pet. 2:11; Gal. 5:16-17; Rom. 7:23-25] and must be resisted when temptation occurs. Only the Rebound technique allows the immediate return of the Filing of the Holy Spirit. See @@@ OLD SIN NATURE; @@@ REBOUND.

ROMANS 7:25

Thanks be to God through Jesus Christ our LORD! So then, on the one hand I myself with my mind am serving the law of God [**Paul was constantly using Rebound and learning Bible Doctrine**], but on the other, with my flesh [**sarx – Paul’s OSN influencing him to commit sin**] the law of sin.

- (d) **Apostate Believers.** Positive [**+P**] volition Believers must never be influenced in their thinking by their social interactions with negative [**-N**] volition Believers [Gal. 4:16]. See @@@ SEPARATION.
 - (e) **Satan.** The power of Satan to attack Believers is restricted by God, who controls history [2 Tim. 2:26]. See @@@ DEMONISM.
 - (f) **Negative Influence of unBelievers.** See Heb. 10:27.
- (3) **The Loser Believer.** The Loser Believer is simply defined as a Believer who **refuses to respond** to the truth of Bible Doctrine. Nevertheless, even in the state of reversionism the Loser Believer will always have eternal security. Rightfully labeled, Loser Believers are called the “**enemies of the cross of Christ**” [Phil. 3:18-19]. See @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY.

PHILIPPIANS 3:18

For many walk [**peripateo (a lifestyle) – the Loser negative [-N] volition Believer in reversionism**], of whom I [**Paul**] often told you, and now tell you even weeping, *that they are* enemies [**echthros (hated; odious; opposing God in the mind)**] of the cross of Christ.

- (4) **UnBelievers.** All unBelievers are “**enemies**” of God [Rom. 5:8-10; 8:32] and designated as “**accursed ones**” going “**into the eternal fire which has been prepared for the devil and his angels**” [Matt. 25:41]. UnBelievers remain under the “**wrath of God**” [Jn. 3:36], because they have not accepted the free gift of salvation and are therefore unacceptable to the Perfect Trinity. Thus, the unBeliever is not a “child of God,” rather he is rightly called a **nothos (a bastard)** [Heb. 12:8], and no amount of human good works can change this damnable status. The only solution is faith alone in Christ alone.

@@@ ETERNAL SECURITY

- (1) **Definition.** Eternal security refers to the *irrevocable and forever secured* position that the “*born again*” [Jn. 3:3] Believer has with his Creator at the point of salvation. For “*there is no other name under heaven that has been given among men by which we must be saved*” [Acts 4:12].
- (2) **Salvation Secured.** *Any stable relationship in life demands security as a base.* The Believer cannot be free to serve God in the Christian Way of Life while enslaved to legalism and doubting the unbreakable status of eternal security he has with his Creator. Once a human in the Church Age exhales a single act of faith alone towards Jesus Christ alone that person is given *Forty Things* to include God’s Perfect Righteousness [+R] and God’s Eternal Life. The Believer is “*born again*” [Jn. 3:3] as a new spiritual species, and his salvation is forever secured. “*I am the resurrection and the life; he who believes in Me will live even if he dies*” [Jn. 11:25]; Lk. 10:20; Ps. 34:22.

LUKE 10:20

Nevertheless do not rejoice in this, that the spirits [angels] are subject [hupotasso] to you [the Believer in his resurrection body will have a superior position], but rejoice that your names are recorded [eggrapho (to engrave) – in the salvation “Book of Life”] in heaven.

PSALM 34:22

The LORD redeems [padah (to pay a ransom)] the soul of His servants [Believers], and none of those who take refuge in Him will be condemned [asham (to be incriminated) – all have eternal security in Heaven forever].

- (3) **Lifestyle Irrelevant.** A Believer can *never get “unsaved”* regardless of his subsequent lifestyle post-salvation. Whether the Believer grows in his spiritual life or not, *once saved, always saved*. See Acts 16:31; 2 Cor. 5:21; 1 Jn. 5:11-13; Rom. 8:1; Heb. 13:5; Matt. 28:20.

ROMANS 8:1

Therefore there is now no condemnation [katakrima (damnatory sentence)] for those who are in Christ Jesus [all Believers are in Union with Jesus Christ].

- (4) **Reaching Maturity.** Without understanding the basic and fundamental doctrine of eternal security, the Believer will never reach spiritual maturity.
- (5) **One: Positional Approach.** All Believers have an *unbreakable* position with God that no person or thing can ever change – designated as a “*new creature*” [2 Cor. 5:17] in Jesus Christ at the point of salvation. See Rom. 8:38-39; 1 Cor. 1:2, 30. See @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST.

ROMANS 8:38-39

For I [Paul] am convinced that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities [*arche – senior officer demons*], nor things present, nor things to come, nor powers, nor height, nor depth, nor any other created thing [*to include the Believer himself*], will be able to separate [*chorizo (to depart; to separate; to put asunder)*] us [*Believers*] from the love [*agape (to love dearly)*] – because the Believer has the Righteousness [*+R*] of God imputed to his soul/spirit he is under the maximum personal love of God] of God, which is in Christ Jesus our LORD [*all Believers are in Union with Jesus Christ and can never get out*].

- (a) **Retroactive Positional Truth.** Every Believer is *identified with Christ* in His unique Spiritual Death on the cross where Jesus Christ died spiritually for all human sin [Rom. 6; Col. 2:12; 3:3].
- (b) **Current Positional Truth.** Every Believer is in Union with Christ now and forevermore. Each Believer now shares: (1) the Righteousness [*+R*] of Christ [2 Cor. 5:21]; (2) His Eternal Life [1 Jn. 5:11-12]; (3) His Destiny [Eph. 1:3-6; Rom. 8:29]; (4) His Sonship [2 Tim. 2:1; Gal. 3:26]; (5) His Heirship [Rom. 8:16-17; Eph. 1:4]; (6) His Sanctification [1 Cor. 1:2, 30]; (7) His Kingdom [2 Pet. 1:11]; (8) His Priesthood [Heb. 10:10-14; 1 Pet. 2:5]; and (9) His Heavenly Seat at God’s right hand [Col. 1:13; Eph. 2:6].
- (6) **Two: Logical Approach.** The logical approach is irrefutable *a fortiori logic*: (1) If as an unBeliever you were the enemy of God and nevertheless were saved by Him, then God will obviously do “*much more*” [Rom. 5:8-10; 8:32] for you now that you are His child. (2) Since Jesus Christ died on the cross for every sin that the Believer will ever commit, past, present, and future, there is no sin that the Believer can do to blot out his status of eternal security!

ROMANS 5:8-10

But God demonstrates [*sunistao* (to put together by way of composition; to show; to prove)] His own love [*agape* – impersonal love] toward us, in that while we were yet sinners [*hamartolos* – the unBeliever under Spiritual Death], Christ died [*apothnesko* (of violent death; of eternal death; to be subject to eternal misery in hell) – Spiritual Death] for us [the Believer]. Much more [*polus mallon* (much more; it stands to greater reason)] then, having now been justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – the Believer has the Righteousness [+R] of God] by His blood [*aima* – the substitutionary work of Christ on the cross], we shall be saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven] from the wrath [*orge*] of God through [*dia* (by means of)] Him [Jesus Christ]. For if while we were enemies [*echthros* – as unBelievers prior to salvation] we were reconciled [*katallasso* (to receive one into favor)] to God through [*dia* (by means of)] the death [*thanatos* (death with the implied idea of future misery in hell)] of His Son, much more, having been reconciled [*katallasso* – the Believer receives God's [+R]], we shall be saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – to deliver to the status of a resurrection body and rewards for the positive [+P] volition Believer who reaches spiritual maturity] by His life.

- (7) **Three: Anthropomorphic Approach.** The “*hand*” [Jn. 10:28-30] of God firmly holds the Believer and He will *never let go of him*, regardless of what the Believer does or does not accomplish in his Christian Way of Life. See Deut. 33:27; Ps. 37:24.

JOHN 10:28-30

And I [Jesus Christ] give eternal [*aionios* (without end; never to cease)] life [*zoe*] to them [Believers], and they will never perish [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely) – in Hell]; and no one will snatch [*harpazo* (to carry off by force)] them out of My hand [*cheir* – eternal security]. My Father [God the Father], who has given *them* to Me, is greater than all; and no one is able to snatch *them* out of the Father's hand. I and the Father are one [the Holy Trinity].

- (8) **Four: Experiential Approach.** This truth is expressed in a Bible hymn recorded at 2 Tim. 2:11-13, which Paul may have written himself, titled: “*Faithful is the Word*” [KJV]. See Ps. 103:12; 138:2; Matt. 26:69-75; Isa. 1:18; 44:22; 1 Jn. 1:7; Eph. 1:7; Tit. 3:5; 2 Tim. 1:9; Gal. 2:16; Phil. 3:9.

2 TIMOTHY 2:11-12

It is a trustworthy [*pisots* (faithful)] statement [*logos* (the word)]: For if [**First Class Condition – and it is true**] we [**Believers**] died [*sunapothnesko* (to die together)] with Him, we will also live [*suzao* (to live together)] with Him; if [**Third Class Condition – maybe you will and maybe you won't**] we [**Believers**] endure [*hupomeno* (to persevere under testing) – **undeserved Divine Suffering for Blessing**], we will also reign [*sumbasileuo*] with Him [**in the Millennium only Believers who reach spiritual maturity will rule with Jesus Christ**];*

* If the Believer endures unjust or undeserved Divine Suffering for Blessing, he will produce Divine Good and receive “*rewards*” [1 Cor. 3:14; 2 Jn. 8] in time and eternity to include the high honor of reigning with the LORD Jesus Christ in the Millennium.

If [**Third Class Condition – maybe you will and maybe you won't**] we [**Believers**] deny [*arneomai*] Him [**Jesus Christ**], He also will deny us [**any rewards**].**

** If a Believer rejects Bible Doctrine and ignores the mandates of the Christian Way of Life then that Believer will be *denied the rewards* that were placed in his Escrow Account in eternity past. *His rewards are lost, but not his salvation.*

2 TIMOTHY 2:13

If we [**Believers**] are faithless [*apisteo* (to disbelieve; to betray a trust; to have no belief)], He [**Jesus Christ**] remains [*meno* (to abide; remain persevere under testing)] faithful [*pistos* – **eternal security guaranteed**], for He cannot deny [*arneomai*] Himself [**the Trinity cannot deny the imputed Righteousness [+R] that the Believer possesses**].***

*** This particular Believer actually renounces Jesus Christ as his LORD and Savior. But since God puts His word above His name [Ps. 103:12; 138:2] it is impossible for God to go back on His word [Tit. 1:2; Heb. 6:18; Num. 23:19; Mal. 3:6; 1 Jn. 3:1-2]. *See supra* (10). Thus, once any Believer receives God's Perfect Righteousness [**+R**] that Believer is God's child in His family forever. *Once saved, always saved* [Heb. 5:9; 10:10-14]!

- (9) **Five: Family Approach.** As with the analogy of an irrevocable status of human paternity and family, the Church Age Believer is entered into the Royal Family of God at the moment he is “*born again*” [Jn. 3:3] and will always be *a child of God* – “*sons of God*” [Gal. 3:26]. The type of child may vary [one who learns vs. one who does not] but not the fact of the fixed relationship. Christianity is an irrevocable *relationship!* “*But as many as received Him, to them He gave the right to become the children of God, even to those who believe in His name*” [Jn. 1:12]; Lk. 15:11-33; 1 Jn. 3:1-2; Rom. 8:15; 9:8.

GALATIANS 3:26

For you [Believers] are all sons [uihos] of God through faith [pistis – means of salvation is by faith] in Christ Jesus.

ROMANS 8:15

For you [Believers] have not received a spirit [pneuma (vital principle; mental disposition)] of slavery leading to fear [phobos (afraid; dread; terror) – the fear of losing his salvation] again, but you have received a spirit of adoption as sons [uihos] by which we cry out, “Abba! Father!”

- (10) **Six: Sovereignty of God Approach.** “*It is impossible for God to lie*” [Heb. 6:18]! It is the Sovereign Will of God to keep the born again Believer saved “*and everyone who lives and believes in Me will never die. Do you believe this?*” [Jn. 11:26]. “*I (Jesus) know that His commandment is eternal life; therefore the things I speak, I speak just as the Father has told Me*” [Jn. 12:50]. See 2 Pet. 3:9; Rom. 8:30; Jdg. 24; 1 Cor. 1:8, 30; Heb. 13:5; Deut. 31:6, 8; Tit. 1:2; 2 Cor. 5:8. See @@@ TRINITY.

HEBREWS 6:18

So that by two unchangeable things [His word and essence] in which it is impossible for God to lie, we who have taken refuge [Believers] would have strong encouragement to take hold of the hope [elpis] set before us.

TITUS 1:2

In the hope [elpis (confidence) – Hope I of the problem solving devices] of eternal life, which God, who cannot lie [pseudomai], promised long ages ago.

- (11) **Seven: No Double Jeopardy Approach.** Since Jesus Christ died for all sins of all humans – *past, present, and future* – there can be no double jeopardy. Sin is never an issue again for the Believer except as the basis for Rebound. In fact, at the Great White Throne Judgment for the unBeliever, sin is not mentioned as the basis for the unBeliever going to Hell. The unBeliever goes to the “*lake of fire*” [Matt. 25:41], not for his sin but for his rejection of Jesus Christ. Under the doctrine of heathenism, the only unpardonable sin is the unBeliever’s rejection of Christ as Savior – “*concerning sin, because they do not believe in Me*” [Jn. 16:9]. Once the Believer is saved, he cannot commit the unpardonable sin. *See supra* (6). *See @@@ HEATHENISM.*
- (12) **Eight: Inheritance Approach.** God the Father guarantees the Believer a full inheritance *based on the death* of Jesus Christ. “*For where a covenant is, there must of necessity be the death of the one who made it*” [Heb. 9:16-17]; 1 Pet. 1:4-5; Col. 1:12; Gal. 3:26-28.

1 PETER 1:4-5

To *obtain* an inheritance [*kleronomia* (property received by inheritance) – the Believer gets a resurrection body and eternal rewards] which is imperishable [*aphthartos* (immortal; not able to decay)] and undefiled and will not fade away [*amarantos* (perennial; perpetual)], reserved [*tereo* (to post a guard)] in heaven [*ouranos* – the third Heaven] for you [the Believer], who are protected by the power of God through faith [*pistis* – the truth of Bible Doctrine guarantees these things] for a salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – the Believer is delivered these things by God] ready to be revealed in the last time [at the Rapture of the Church].

GALATIANS 3:26-28

For you are all sons [*uihos*] of God through faith [*pistis*] in Christ Jesus. For all of you who were baptized [*baptizo*] into Christ [dry baptism of the Holy Spirit] have clothed yourselves with Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek [*Hellen*], there is neither slave nor free man, there is neither male nor female; for you are all one in Christ Jesus.

- (13) **Nine: Body Approach.** The LORD Jesus Christ is the “*head of the body, the church*” [Col. 1:18] and *cannot reject His Believers* who make up the “*many members*” of the “*one body*” [1 Cor. 12:20-21]; Eph. 1:22; 4:15.

1 CORINTHIANS 12:20-21

But now there are many members [*melos* (limbs; a member of the human body)], but one body [*soma* (the body of man or animal)]. And the eye cannot say to the hand, “I have no need of you”; or again the head to the feet, “I have no need of you.”

- (14) **Ten: Greek Tense Approach.** In Eph. 2:8-9 [see also Rom. 10:17] the word “*saved*” is *sozo* (to deliver; to rescue) and refers to salvation, where the Believer is delivered from Satan’s realm into the Kingdom of Heaven. The word *sozo* used here is in the intensive perfect tense. Thus, this key passage on the mechanics of salvation should be fully translated as: “*saved in the past with the result that you are saved forever!*” In short, God the Holy Spirit takes the human unBeliever’s bleep of faith alone in Christ alone [regardless of the amount of faith output by that particular person] and makes it *efficacious* for salvation. As such no Believer can ever boast about the level, or so-called amount, of personal faith that they exhaled upon hearing the Gospel, because without this ministry of the Holy Spirit *no amount of human faith* would be sufficient and no human could ever be saved. It is all grace!

EPHESIANS 2:8-9

For by grace [*charis* – grace constitutes the essential part of the Plan of God] you have been saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven and guaranteed eternal security] through faith [*pistis* – the mechanics of salvation is by faith alone in Christ alone]; and that [the speck of human faith exhaled plus the entire package of what God does in grace] not of yourselves, *it is the gift* [*doron* (a gift)] of God; not as a result of [human] works [*ergon*], so that no one may boast [*kauchaomai* (to boast on account of a thing) – because it is God the Holy Spirit who takes the individual’s faith output and makes it efficacious for salvation no one can boast about their so-called amount of faith exhaled upon hearing the Gospel].

- (15) **Eleven: Sealing Approach.** The Bible describes that an eternal sealing is accomplished by God the Holy Spirit at the moment of salvation. This sealing is not related to the Believer’s actions subsequent to salvation. It is not felt by emotion. Again, the Holy Spirit “*sealed*” [2 Cor. 1:22] each Believer at the very second of faith in Jesus Christ which signifies the *forever ownership* by God of that individual Believer. See Eph. 1:13; 4:30; Tit. 3:5.

2 CORINTHIANS 1:22

Who [God the Holy Spirit] also sealed [*sphragizo* (to set a seal upon) – to secure our eternal security] us [Believers] and gave us the Spirit [God the Holy Spirit] in our hearts as a pledge [*arrhabon* (money given as a pledge or down payment)].

- (16) **Twelve: Spiritual Circumcision Approach.** All Believers are spiritually “*circumcised with a circumcision made without hands*” [Col. 2:11-13] by the regeneration of God the Holy Spirit [born again] who also creates a human spirit at the moment of salvation [Rom. 2:28-29]. Just like the permanency of physical circumcision to the body, this *spiritual circumcision is irreversible*.
- (17) **Thirteen: The Washing Approach.** While every Believer constantly needs to get back into Fellowship with God the Holy Spirit when he commits sins over the course of his life – “*wash his feet*” – by use of the Rebound technique, he only needs to be saved once – “*bathed*” [Jn. 13:4-11] “*by the washing of regeneration*” [Tit. 3:5]; 1 Cor. 6:11. See @@@ SALVATION.

JOHN 13:10

Jesus said to him [Peter], “He who has bathed [*louo* (complete bath of the whole person) – the Believer is saved only once at the point he exhales faith alone in Christ alone and need not take another “bath”] needs only to wash his feet [*nipto* (to wash hands or feet) – the Believer will use have to use Rebound many times in life to wash up], but is completely [*holos*] clean [*katharos* (purified by fire) – the Believer has eternal security]; and you are clean [Peter was already a Believer], but not all of you [Judas was an unBeliever who never took the “bath” of faith in Jesus Christ for salvation].”

TITUS 3:5

He [God] saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven] us [Believers], not on the basis of [our] deeds [*ergon* (moral goodness) – human good] which we have done in righteousness [*dikaiosune* – human righteousness [-r]], but according to His mercy [*eleos* – God’s grace in action], by the washing [*loutron* (a bath)] of regeneration [*paliggenesia* (a new birth)] and renewing [*anakainosis* (a complete change for the better)] by the Holy Spirit [the ministry of God the Holy Spirit in the salvation package].

- (18) **Fourteen: The Book of Life.** Under the Plan of God, God does not direct human free will to positive [+P] volition or negative [-N] volition. However, God has always known every human who would be on positive [+P] volition to the Gospel of salvation and made provisions in eternity past under *election* and *predestination* not only for the presentation of the Gospel to that person, but also, consistent with the Believer's subsequent positive [+P] volitional choices in time, to advance him to the highest levels of spiritual maturity. Thus, in accordance with the absolute fairness of God, while all humans are initially entered into the *salvation "book of life"* only the unBeliever who dies without believing in Christ is "*blotted out of the book of life*" and not "*recorded with the righteous*" [Ps. 69:28]; Rev. 13:8; 17:8. In contrast, the Believer is forever kept in the "*Lamb's book of life*" [Rev. 21:27], "*enrolled in heaven*" [Heb. 12:22], and should always "*rejoice that your names are recorded in heaven*" [Lk. 10:20], "*found written in the book of life*" [Rev. 20:15]; Dan. 12:23. Similarly, God also promises for the mature Believer that He "*will not erase his name from the (rewards) book of life*" [Rev. 3:5]. The *rewards "book of life"* [Phi. 4:3] is "*a book of remembrance*" [Mal. 3:16] by God the Father for the Believer who "*overcomes*" [Rev. 21:7] the Cosmic Systems and reaches maturity [1 Cor. 3:11-15; Ps. 56:8; Eph. 1:3-6; Rom. 8:28-30; Ps. 139:16]. Note: the fact that God knows the future does not negate human free will. "*Whoever has sinned against Me (the unBeliever who rejects salvation, and the Believer who rejects Bible Doctrine), I will blot him out of My book (the salvation book of life for the unBeliever, and the rewards book of life for the Believer, respectively)*" [Exodus 32:33]. See *infra* (20).

ROMANS 8:28-30

And we know that God causes all things to work together for good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value)] to those who love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] God [*only the Believer who reaches maturity loves God*], to those who are called according to *His* purpose [*prothesis* (a predetermined plan)]. For those whom He foreknew [*the humans that would believe in Christ*], He also predestined [*proorizo* (to decide beforehand) – God made provisions in time to get the positive [+P] volition Believer to maturity] to become conformed [*summorphos* (having the same form as another)] to the image of His Son, so that He would be the firstborn [*the resurrection body*] among many brethren; and these whom He predestined, He also called; and these whom He called, He also justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – receiving God's [+R]]; and these whom He justified, He also glorified [*by the giving of eternal rewards*].

- (19) **Fifteen: Vine and the Branch Approach.** In the New Testament parable of the “*vine*” and “*branch*,” the LORD Jesus Christ is called the core “*vine*” and each Believer is an individual “*branch*” attached to the “*vine*” [Jn. 15:1-8]. Some branches [**Loser** Believers on negative [-N] volition to Bible Doctrine who refuse to grow in their spiritual life] do “*not bear fruit*” and suffer loss, to include the “*sin unto death*” [1 Jn. 5:16, KJV], while other branches [**Winner** Believers on positive [+P] volition to Bible Doctrine who reach various levels of spiritual maturity] “*bear much fruit*” and receive fantastic eternal “*rewards*” [1 Cor. 3:14 Gal. 5:22]. In fact, this is how God is “*glorified*.” Still, productive or not in the Plan of God, Jesus Christ affirms this truth for all Believers: “*I am the vine, you are the branches.*”

JOHN 15:1-8

I [**Jesus Christ**] am the true vine [*ampelos*], and My Father is the vinedresser [*georgos*]. Every branch [*klema* (a tender and flexible branch) – a Believer] in Me that does not bear [*phero* (to carry)] fruit [*karpos* (the fruit of trees or vines) – the negative [-N] volition Believer in reversionism living in the Cosmic Systems], He takes away [by administering the sin unto death]; and every branch that bears fruit [the positive [+P] volition Believer to Bible Doctrine], He prunes it [*kathairo* (to prune trees and vines from useless shoots) – a Believer who is the recipient of Divine Suffering for Blessing] so that it may bear more [*polus* (much)] fruit [the Believer reaches spiritual maturity and receives rewards]. You are already clean [*katharos* (purified by fire; clean; pure) – all Believers have salvation] because of the word [*logos* – the Gospel] which I have spoken to you. Abide [*meno* (remain)] in Me, and I in you [the Believer is commanded to live the Christian Way of Life]. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself unless it abides in the vine, so neither can you unless you abide in Me [the Believer must take in Bible Doctrine, the only food of nourishment]. I am the vine, you are the branches; he who abides in Me and I in him [positive [+P] volition to Bible Doctrine], he bears much fruit [Divine Good and rewards in time and eternity], for apart from Me you can do nothing. If anyone does not abide in Me, he is thrown away [*exo* (out)] as a branch and dries up [*xeraino*]; and they gather them, and cast them into the fire [*pur*] and they are burned [*kaio* – the Loser Believer on negative [-N] volition to Bible Doctrine dies the sin unto death]. If you abide in Me, and My words abide in you [Bible Doctrine], ask whatever you wish, and it will be done for you. My Father is glorified [*doxazo*] by this, that you bear much fruit [in the Angelic Conflict], and so prove to be My disciples [*mathetes*].

- (20) **Destiny of the Believer.** Every Believer is an *integral part* of the Plan of God and has the privilege of serving as a witness for God to resolve Satan's blasphemously false objection in the Angelic Conflict. If the Believer understands and believes the doctrine of eternal security, he cannot worry or get upset about his purpose or destiny. Not only is accepting the fact of eternal security *totally relaxing and a source of great joy*, it is a key and fundamental doctrine on the path to the Believer's growth to spiritual "*maturity*" [Heb. 6:1]; Lk. 10:20; Ps. 139:16. "*All that the Father gives to Me will come to Me, and the one who comes to Me I will certainly not cast out*" [Jn. 6:37].

PSALM 139:16

Your eyes [God] have seen my unformed substance [*golem (embryo; fetus)*]; and in Your book [*the Divine Decrees in the Plan of God*] were all written the days that were ordained *for me*, when as yet there was not one of them [God knew all about each human billions and billions of years ago].

- (21) **Set Free.** The fact of eternal security is the Believer's absolute guarantee that he is "*set ... free*" [Gal. 5:1; Phil. 1:21] from the power of the Cosmos. Only his own negative [-N] volition will hinder his growth and production.

GALATIANS 5:1

It was for freedom [*eleutheria – to now serve the LORD*] that Christ set us free [*the Believer is set free from Spiritual Death*]; therefore keep standing firm [*steko (to persevere)*] and do not be subject again to a yoke [*zugos (a yoke put on draft cattle)*] of slavery [*stay out of the Cosmic Systems*].

- (22) **Eternal Security is Irrevocable.** In time, a Believer can lose his Fellowship relationship with God, his happiness, his spiritual growth and momentum, and even face the "*sin unto death*" [1 Jn. 5:16, KJV], but he *can never lose his eternal salvation*. Indeed, the fact that any given Believer refuses to believe in the truth of eternal security is irrelevant – he will be in Heaven. Nevertheless, for an unspecified period of time at the Judgment Seat of Christ, where Jesus Christ evaluates and "*rewards*" [1 Cor. 3:14; 2 Jn. 8] all Church Age Believers, the **Loser** Believer will be "*ashamed*" [2 Tim. 2:15]. He will then understand for the first time what grace is all about and *how he foolishly wasted his time on earth* in his mortal body!

@@@ FAITH

Definition. There are *four separate and distinct meanings* for the Greek word *pistis* (faith) found in the New Testament. The Greek verb is *pisteuo* (to believe) and the adjective is *pistos* (dependable; the believing one; faithful). The meaning of *pistis* depends greatly on the context of the particular Bible passage and the presence or absence of a definite article in the structure of the sentence.

– SALVATION FAITH –

- (1) **Salvation Faith.** The use of the word faith in the context of Salvation Faith is an *absolute requirement* for salvation. “*So faith comes from hearing, and hearing by the word of Christ*” [Rom. 10:17]. Faith is in the active voice where the subject produces the action of the verb. See Eph. 1:15; 2:8-9; Gal. 2:16; 3:26-29 [*pisteuo* is correctly translated (to believe), as in Acts 16:31]; Jn. 3:16, 36; 6:47; Rom. 3:20-22, 27-30; Phil. 3:9.

GALATIANS 2:16

Nevertheless knowing that a man is not justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – acceptable to God] by the works of the Law [the Mosaic Law cannot provide God’s Righteousness [+R]] but through [*dia* (by means of)] faith [*pistis* – saving faith] in Christ Jesus, even we have believed [*pisteuo*] in Christ Jesus, so that we may be justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous)] by faith [*pistis* – Believer receives the [+R] of God] in Christ and not by the works of the Law; since by the works of the Law no flesh [*sarx* – unBeliever] will be justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous)].

ROMANS 3:21-22

But now apart from the Law *the* righteousness [*dikaioosune* – the Perfect Righteousness [+R] of the Holy Trinity] of God has been manifested [*phaneroo* (to make manifest or visible)], being witnessed by the Law and the Prophets [they taught this Bible Doctrine], even *the* righteousness of God through [*dia* (by means of)] faith [*pistis*] in Jesus Christ for all those who believe [*pisteuo* – the Believer receives God’s Perfect [+R]]; for there is no distinction [*diastole* (difference) – Jews and Gentiles alike are saved by faith alone in Christ alone].

- (a) **No Merit.** Salvation Faith demands a minus reliance on all human good. It is 100% *non-meritorious* and all the attention in Salvation Faith belongs to the object – the LORD Jesus Christ. He alone paid the price for all human sin on the cross. There is nothing that can be added by man to his exhale of Salvation Faith towards the Gospel, to include all the false claims of religion. See Phil. 3:9.

PHILIPPIANS 3:9

And [Paul] may be found [*heurisko* (after searching, to find a thing sought)] in Him [Jesus Christ], not having a [self] righteousness [*dikaiosune* – human righteousness [-r]] of my own derived from *the* Law [*nomos* – by keeping the Mosaic Law], but that which is through [*dia* (by means of)] faith [*pistis* – saving faith] in Christ, the righteousness [*dikaiosune*] which comes from God [God's Righteousness [+R] imputed to the Believer] on the basis [*epi*] of faith [*pistis* – the [+R] of God is imputed to the Believer at the point of saving faith].

- (b) **Only a Speck Needed.** Per Eph. 2:8-9, salvation *only requires a speck* of faith from a spiritually dead human – the size of a “*mustard seed*” [Lk. 13:19]. This bleep of Salvation Faith output, regardless of the degree/amount, is then *made efficacious* by the work of God the Holy Spirit. Without this ministry of the Holy Spirit no amount of human faith output would provide for salvation – even if a person could produce and exhale all the faith output of every human that ever lived it would still not be sufficient to save him. See @@@ HOLY SPIRIT.

EPHESIANS 2:8-9

For by grace [*charis* – grace constitutes the essential part of the Plan of God] you have been saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven and guaranteed eternal security] through faith [*pistis* – the mechanics of salvation is by faith alone in Christ alone]; and that [the speck of human faith exhaled plus the entire package of what God does in grace] not of yourselves, *it is* the gift [*doron* (a gift)] of God; not as a result of [human] works [*ergon*], so that no one may boast [*kauchaomai* (to boast on account of a thing) – because it is God the Holy Spirit who takes the individual's faith output and makes it efficacious for salvation no one can boast about their so-called amount of faith exhaled upon hearing the Gospel].

- (c) **Illustrations.** Salvation Faith is a system of human perception without merit, unlike human rationalism or logic. There are many ways of illustrating non-meritorious Salvation Faith belief in the Gospel: (1) eating [Jn. 6:58]; (2) buying without money [Isa. 55:1]; (3) drinking [Jn. 7:37; 1 Cor. 10:4; Isa. 55:1]; (4) speaking aloud or to self [Rom. 10:10]; and (5) hearing [Isa. 55:3]. Anyone can perform these things which means that anyone can exhale faith. See Heb. 4:2; Gal. 3:22.

HEBREWS 4:2

For indeed we [Believers] have had good news preached [*euangelizo* – the Gospel] to us, just as they [unBelievers] also; but the word [Gospel] they heard did not profit [*opheleo* (to be advantageous; to benefit)] them, because it was not united [*sugkerannumi* (to mix together)] by faith [*pistis* – the unBeliever hearer of the Gospel did not believe it via faith] in those who heard.

GALATIANS 3:22

But the Scripture [*graphe* (the writing) – the Bible] has shut up [*sugkleio* (to enclose as in a shoal of fishes in a net)] everyone under sin [*hamartia* – the Bible clearly states that man is a sinner with an Old Sin Nature and God is Perfect], so that the promise by faith [*pistis* – salvation faith] in Jesus Christ might be given to those who believe [*pisteuo* – saving faith].

– BIBLE DOCTRINE FAITH –

- (2) **Bible Doctrine Faith.** Bible Doctrine Faith sees the word faith employed to refer to that *body of information* about God's truth, *called Bible Doctrine*, that is accumulated by the Believer as he grows to spiritual "*maturity*" [Heb. 6:1]. Obviously, Bible Doctrine Faith varies from Believer to Believer as it is based on their individual level of advancement in the Christian Way of Life. Bible Doctrine Faith is found in the passive [voice] – *pistis* (what is believed; the body or content of information that is accepted as true), where the subject receives the action of the verb. Generally, Bible Doctrine Faith is expressed by the word *pistis* with a definite article. See Gal. 1:23; 2:20; 3:11; 2 Pet. 1:1, 5; 1 Tim. 1:19; 3:9; 4:1, 6; 5:8; 6:10; 2 Tim. 2:18; 4:7; Heb. 4:1-3; 11:6; 12:1; Rom. 4:20; 10:17; 12:3; 14:1; Acts 6:7; 2 Cor. 5:7; 10:15; 13:5; Jd. 3, 20; Eph. 3:17; 4:5. See @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.

ROMANS 12:3

For through [*dia* (by means of)] the grace [*charis* – God’s plan, policy, and purpose is grace] given to me I [Paul] say to everyone among you not to think more highly of himself [*hyperphroneo* (not to think in terms of arrogance)] than he ought to think [*phroneo* (to have understanding)]; but to think so as to have sound judgment [*sophroneo* (to be of sound mind)], as God has allotted to each a measure [*metron*] of faith [*pistis* – Bible Doctrine learned on the road to spiritual maturity].

1 TIMOTHY 1:19

Keeping faith [*pistis* – Bible Doctrine] and a good conscience [*suneidesis* (the soul as distinguishing between what is morally good and bad) – applying Bible Doctrine], which some [Loser Believers] have rejected [*apotheomai* (to thrust away)] and suffered shipwreck in regard to their faith [*pistis* – the Loser Believer has no retention of Bible Doctrine].

- (a) **Belief.** The Believer *must believe the Doctrine* that is taught before it can be transferred to the soul/spirit where it is retained. Operation Z then turns *gnosis* (knowledge) into *epignosis* (full knowledge), the material used for the construction of the Believer’s Edification Complex of the Soul. See @@@ OPERATION Z.
- (b) **Tested.** The accumulated Bible Doctrine Faith will be “*tested*” [1 Pet. 1:7; 1 Cor. 10:13] by God so that the positive [+P] Believer can advance in the Christian Way of Life to reach spiritual maturity and thereby *glorify God*. “*My Father is glorified by this, that you bear much fruit, and so prove to be My disciples*” [Jn. 15:1-8]. See *infra* (7).

1 PETER 1:7

So that the proof of your faith [*pistis* – Bible Doctrine never goes away], being more precious than gold which is perishable, even though tested [*dokimazo* (to test; to examine; to prove)] by fire [Divine Suffering for Blessing so the Believer can reach spiritual maturity], may be found [*heurisko* (to come upon) – eternal rewards bestowed at the Judgment Seat of Christ] to result in praise and glory and honor at the revelation [*apokalupsis* (manifestation) – the Rapture of the Church] of Jesus Christ.

– FAITHFULNESS TO THE WORD –

- (3) **Faithfulness to the Word.** Faithfulness to the Word *pistos* (faithful; consistent) is employed as it pertains to an object, which in this regard is the entire Plan of God [Tit. 2:10; 2 Thess. 1:4]. In other words, Faithfulness to the Word refers to the **Winner Believer** who *dedicates himself to learning and then staying with Bible Doctrine*, consistently making good decisions by regular exposure to the teaching of a prepared Pastor/Teacher and thereby *seeing* all things through the prism of Bible Doctrine so that he is able to fulfill the mandate in the Christian Way of Life to “*walk by faith, not by sight*” [2 Cor. 5:7]; Col. 4:7; Matt. 25:23; 1 Tim. 1:12.

1 TIMOTHY 1:12

I [Paul] thank Christ Jesus our LORD, who has strengthened me, because He considered me faithful [*pistos* (faithful; consistent) – faithful to the Plan of God], putting me into service [*diakonia* – as the chief of the Apostles and writer of parts of the New Testament].

MATTHEW 25:23

His master [Christ at the Judgment Seat of Christ] said to him [the Winner Believer], “Well done, good and faithful [*pistos* (faithful; consistent) – to the Plan of God] slave. You were faithful with a few things [living in the Divine Dynasphere], I will put you in charge of many things [*polus* (many, much, large) – fantastic eternal rewards]; enter into the joy of your master [God].”

– FAITH/REST –

- (4) **Faith/Rest.** The use of Faith/Rest as *one of the problem solving devices*. Here the word faith, *pistis*, is in the middle voice where the subject is benefited by the action of the verb [generally without a definite article]. See 1 Cor. 13:13; Rom. 4:17-21; 1 Pet. 1:7-8; Matt. 6:25-30; 8:10-13; Heb. 11:6; Lk. 8:24-25. Faith/Rest means picking up and using “*the shield of faith with which you will be able to extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one*” [Eph. 6:16]. The Believer has confidence, Faith/Rest, in a promise of God and then *rests in the LORD*, relying on Him to handle the problem. “*And without faith (Faith/Rest) it is impossible to please Him*” [Heb. 11:6].

MATTHEW 6:28-30

And why are you [**Believer**] worried about clothing? Observe how the lilies of the field grow; they do not toil nor do they spin, yet I say to you that not even Solomon in all his glory clothed himself like one of these. But if God so clothes the grass of the field, which is *alive* today and tomorrow is thrown into the furnace, *will He* not much more *clothe* you [**God's logistical grace provisions**]? You of little faith [**pistis – no Faith/Rest in God**]!

ISAIAH 64:4

For from days of old they have not heard or perceived by ear, Nor has the eye seen a God besides You, Who acts in behalf of the one who waits for Him.

HEBREWS 11:6

And without faith [**pistis – Bible Doctrine Faith but with emphasis on Faith/Rest**] it is impossible [**adunatos (unable to be done)**] to please *Him*, for he who comes to God must believe [**pisteuo (to place confidence in)**] that He is and *that* He is a rewarder [**misthapodotes (one who pays wages) – Jesus Christ will deliver rewards in time and in eternity to the Winner Believer**] of those who seek Him [**the Believer positive [+P] volition to God in his soul**].

LUKE 8:24-25

They [**the disciples**] came to Jesus and woke Him up, saying, “Master, Master, we are perishing [**a massive storm erupted on the Sea of Galilee while Jesus was asleep in the boat**]!” And He got up and rebuked the wind and the surging waves, and they stopped, and it became calm. And He said to them, “Where is your faith [**pistis – the lack of Bible Doctrine and the failure to apply what little Faith/Rest they had to the problem**]?” They were fearful and amazed, saying to one another, “Who then is this, that He [**Jesus of Nazareth**] commands even the winds and the water, and they obey [**hupakouo**] Him?”

1 CORINTHIANS 13:13

But now faith [**pistis – Faith/Rest**], hope [**elpis (confident expectation)**], love [**agape – impersonal love**], abide [**meno (remain)**] these three [**problem solving devices**]; but the greatest of these is love [**agape – impersonal love**].

MATTHEW 8:10-13

“Truly I [Jesus] say to you [Jews], I have not found such great faith [*pistis – Faith/Rest*] with anyone in Israel [*the Roman centurion told Jesus that He should only command from a distance and his son would be healed*]. I say to you that many will come from east and west [*Believers in all dispensations*], and recline *at the table* with Abraham, Isaac and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven [*salvation*]; but the sons of the kingdom [*Jews who are unBelievers*] will be cast out into the outer darkness; in that place there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth [*brugmos (utter despair) – in Hell*].” And Jesus said to the centurion, “Go; it shall be done for you as you have believed [*pisteuo*].” And the servant [*pais (a child, boy or girl)*] was healed that *very* moment.

- (a) **Promise.** Faith/Rest requires the Believer to know and then *claim a written promise* of God, such as: “*Therefore humble yourselves under the mighty hand of God, that He may exalt you at the proper time, casting all your anxiety on Him, because He cares for you*” [1 Pet. 5:6-7]. See 1 Jn. 1:9; Ps. 37:4-7; Isa. 41:10; Lk. 1:37; Matt. 21:22.
- (b) **Reverse Rationales.** The advanced use of Faith/Rest concentrates on reverse rationales. For example: (1) “If God saved me when I was a sinner, which required more effort, He will do even more for me now that I am His child;” or (2) “God knew all my problems billions of years ago and made provisions for them at that time;” or (3) “God will repay the wrong done to me and handle the problem.” See Ps. 55:22; 1 Pet. 5:7; Deut. 32:35; Rom. 12:19.
- (c) **Vast Areas.** Faith/Rest requires the Believer to apply the Bible Doctrine he has stored in his soul/spirit. When the Believer reaches “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1] he can apply vast areas, categories, and principles of Doctrine and *relax in the arms of the LORD*. “*The steadfast of mind You will keep in perfect peace, Because he trusts in You*” [Isa. 26:3]. “*I have trusted in Your lovingkindness*” [Ps. 13:5].
- (5) **Faith in the Old Testament.** A variety of Hebrew words were used to indicate faith: *amen* (to believe it) [Gen. 15:6]; *batach* (to body slam your troubles) [Ps. 37:3; 91:2]; *chasah* (a rabbit hiding in a cleft in a rock from a predator) [Ps. 57:1]; *jachal* (to trust in suffering) [Job 13:15; Lam. 3:21, 24]; *quawah* (threads woven into an unbreakable rope) [Isa. 40:31; Lam. 3:25].

(6) **The Faithfulness of God.**

- (a) **In Rebound** – 1 Jn. 1:9, a total grace process.
- (b) **In Suffering for Blessing** – 1 Cor. 10:12-13; 1 Pet. 4:19.
- (c) **In Logistical Grace Provisions** – 1 Thess. 5:24; 1 Pet. 5:7; Phil. 4:11.
- (d) **In Protection** – 2 Thess. 3:3; 1 Cor. 1:9; 3:3; Heb. 10:23.
- (e) **In Eternal Security** – 2 Tim. 2:13.
- (f) **In Keeping His Promises** – Heb. 10:23.
- (g) **In Following His Own Plan of God** – 1 Cor. 1:9; Rev. 21:5.

- (7) **Testing of Faith.** The Bible Doctrine Faith resident in the soul/spirit of the Believer must be “*tested*” [1 Pet. 1:7-8] by problems to include Divine Suffering for Blessing [1 Cor. 10:12-13; Jas. 1:3]. *Testing is integral* for the Believer to grow and reach spiritual maturity. “*Every branch ... that bears fruit, He prunes it so that it may bear more fruit*” [Jn. 15:1-8].

1 CORINTHIANS 10:12-13

Therefore let him who thinks [*dokeo* (to be of opinion)] he stands [*the Believer using human viewpoint*] take heed that he does not fall [*pipto* (to descend from a higher place to a lower place)]. No temptation [*peirasmos* (a test; an experiment; a putting to proof by trial)] has overtaken [*lambano* (to grab)] you [*the Believer*] but such as is common to man [*anthropinos* (applied to things belonging to mankind)]; and God is faithful [*pistos*], who will not allow you to be tempted [*peirazo* – Divine Suffering for Blessing to the positive [+P] volition Believer] beyond what you are able [*dunamai* – the test will not exceed the Believer’s level of spiritual maturity], but with the temptation [*peirasmos*] will provide the way of escape [*ekbasis* (the way out; an egress)] also [*the Believer must apply the applicable problem solving devices to the test*], so that you will be able to endure it [*hupophero* (to bear by being under; to undergo; to bear patiently) – pass the test, move to the next level, and receive rewards].

@@@ FEAR

- (1) **Definition.** The Greek word for fear is *phobas* and is *used in two ways*. Fear can mean either (*respect; awe*) or (*cowardly thought or behavior*). The Hebrew equivalent is *yare* or *megorah* and is employed in the same manner.
- (2) **Respect.** The word fear when used to express deep respect is always focused toward a member of the Trinity. “*The angel of the LORD encamps around those who fear Him, and rescues them*” [Ps. 34:7]. “*The fear of the LORD is clean, enduring forever*” [Ps. 19:9]. “*The fear of the LORD is the beginning of knowledge*” [Prov. 1:7]. “*Do not let your heart envy sinners, But live in the fear of the LORD always*” [Prov. 23:17]. See Job. 1:8; 8:28; Ps. 19:7-9; 34:11-14; 119:63; Prov. 3:5-7; 10:27; Isa. 50:10; Matt. 10:28; Eccl. 12:13.

JOB 1:8

The LORD said to Satan, “Have you considered My servant Job? For there is no one like him on the earth [*erets (land, earth)*], a blameless and upright man [*Job had reached maturity spiritual*], fearing [*yare (to have respect)*] God and turning away from evil [*ra – human good*].”

PSALM 119:63

I am a companion of all those who fear [*yare (respect)*] You [*God*], and of those who keep [*shamar (to keep; to guard)*] Your precepts [*Bible Doctrine*].

PSALM 19:7-9

The law of the LORD is perfect, restoring the soul; the testimony of the LORD is sure, making wise the simple. The precepts [*Bible Doctrine*] of the LORD are right, rejoicing the heart; the commandment of the LORD is pure, enlightening the eyes [*allowing the positive Believer to reach maturity*]. The fear [*yirah (respect)*] of the LORD is clean, enduring forever; the judgments of the LORD are true; they are righteous [*the integrity of God*] altogether.

ECCLESIASTES 12:13

The conclusion, when all has been heard, is: fear [*yare (to respect)*] God and keep His Commandments, because this *applies to* every person.

ISAIAH 50:10

Who is among you that fears [*yare (respect)*] the LORD, that obeys the voice of His servant [*Isaiah the Prophet*], that walks in darkness and has no light? Let him trust in the name of the LORD and rely on his God.

MATTHEW 10:28

Do not fear those who kill the body but are unable to kill the soul [*psuche*]; but rather fear Him [*God*] who is able to destroy [*apollumi (to put out of the way entirely, abolish)*] both soul and body in hell [*geenna – the Lake of Fire*].

PROVERBS 3:5-7

Trust in the LORD with all your heart and do not lean on your own understanding. In all your ways acknowledge Him, And He will make your paths straight. Do not be wise in your own eyes; Fear [*yare (respect)*] the LORD and turn away from evil.

- (3) **Respect for Authority.** The Believer is commanded to have *proper respect* for the office and position of those in authority. See Col. 3:22.

COLOSSIANS 3:22

Slaves [*doulos – Believers in slavery*], in all things obey [*hupakouo (to harken to a command)*] those who are your masters on earth, not with external service [*ophthalmodouleia (service performed only under the master's eyes)*], as those who *merely* please men [*anthropareskos (courting the favor of men)*], but with sincerity [*haplotes (mental honesty; not self-seeking)*] of heart, fearing [*phobeo (respecting)*] the LORD.

- (4) **Cowardice.** The word fear is sometimes used in Scripture in the negative sense to denote *emotional cowardice*. See 1 Sam. 17:11, 24; 18:12, 29; Prov. 10:24; 29:25; 2 Tim. 1:7.

PROVERBS 10:24

What the wicked fears [*megorah*] will come upon him, but the desire of the righteous will be granted.

- (5) **Do Not Fear.** When facing any of the myriad problems in life, the Believer is commanded: “*Be anxious for nothing, but in everything by prayer ... let your requests be made known to God*” [Phil. 4:6]. The Believer should claim the promises of God in Faith/Rest: “*No weapon that is formed against you will prosper ... this is the heritage of the servants of the LORD*” [Isa. 54:17]; Ex. 14:13-14; Deut. 31:6, 8; Jos. 8:1; 1 Chron. 28:20; Jn. 6:20; Heb. 13:5-6; 1 Pet. 3:1-6; Isa. 41:10; Ps. 27:1; 71:2. *See infra* (6). *See @@@ FAITH.*

JOSHUA 8:1

Now the LORD said to Joshua, “Do not fear or be dismayed.”

HEBREWS 13:5-6

Make sure that your [Believer] character [*tropos* (a manner of life)] is free from the love of money, being content [*arkeo* (to be satisfied)] with what you have; for He Himself has said, “I will never desert you, nor will I ever forsake you,” so that we confidently say, “The LORD is my helper, I will not be afraid [*phobeo*]. What will man do to me?”

1 PETER 3:1-6

In the same way, you [mature Believer] wives, be submissive [*hupotasso* (obey; to be subordinate to)] to your own husbands so that even if any of them [the husband is a Loser Believer or an unBeliever] are disobedient [*apeitheo* (not to allow one's self to be persuaded; to refuse or withhold belief)] to the word [*logos* – Bible Doctrine], they may be won without a word by the behavior [*anastrophe* (manner of life) – the use of *agape* impersonal love] of their wives, as they observe your chaste [*hagnos* (pure from carnality)] and respectful behavior [*anastrophe* – Christian Way of Life]. Your adornment must not be *merely* external—braiding the hair, and wearing gold jewelry, or putting on dresses; but *let it be* the hidden person of the heart [*kardia*], with the imperishable quality of a gentle [*praus* (mildness of disposition)] and quiet spirit [*pneuma* (the vital principal by which the body is animated)], which is precious in the sight of God. For in this way in former times the holy women also, who hoped in God, used to adorn themselves, being submissive to their own husbands; just as Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him lord [*kurios* (a title of honor)], and you have become her children if you do what is right without being frightened by any fear [*ptoesis* (to be afraid with terror)].

PSALM 27:1

The LORD is my light [*or (the light of day)*] and my salvation [*yesha (deliverance) – into the Kingdom of Heaven*]; whom shall I fear? The LORD is the defense [*maoz (a stronghold)*] of my life; whom shall I dread [*pachad (tremble)*]?

ISAIAH 41:10

“Do not fear, for I [*God*] am with you; do not anxiously look about you, for I am your God. I will strengthen you, surely I will help you, surely I will uphold you with My righteous [*tsedeq (justice; righteous)*] right hand.”

- (6) **Casts Out Fear.** Bible Doctrine in the Believer’s soul/spirit can be used to *confront with confidence* any fears and problems that challenge the Believer. Remember, *God is your “Father”* [Rom. 8:15]! “*What time I am afraid, I will trust in Thee*” [Ps. 56:3, KJV]. “*I lay down and slept; I awoke, for the LORD sustains me. I will not be afraid of ten thousands of people who have set themselves against me round about*” [Ps. 3:5-6]. “*When you lie down, you will not be afraid; when you lie down, your sleep will be sweet*” [Prov. 3:24]. “*I sought the LORD, and He answered me, And delivered me from all my fears*” [Ps. 34:4]. See Ps. 56:11; 2 Tim. 1:7; Deut. 7:18 [what God did to Pharaoh]; Heb. 11:27; Lk. 8:25; Isa. 12:2; 1 Pet. 5:8-9; Matt. 8:26.

2 TIMOTHY 1:7

For God has not given us [*Believers*] a spirit [*pneuma (the disposition or influence which fills and governs the soul of anyone)*] of timidity [*deilia (cowardness; fearfulness)*], but of power and love [*agape – impersonal love*] and discipline [*sophronismos (self-control) – it takes thousands of positive [+P] volition decisions for the Believer to reach maturity*].

MATTHEW 8:26

He [*Jesus*] said to them [*disciples in the boat woke Jesus up because of the storm on the Sea of Galilee*], “Why are you afraid [*deilos (fearful; cowardly)*], you men of little faith [*pistis – the lack of Bible Doctrine and the failure to apply Faith/Rest to the problems presented by the storm*]?” Then He got up and rebuked the winds and the sea, and it became perfectly calm.

ISAIAH 12:2

“Behold, God is my salvation [*yeshuah* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven], I will trust [*batach*] and not be afraid; for the LORD God is my strength and song, and He has become my salvation [*yeshuah* – delivering the Believer from all types of problems].”

ROMANS 8:15

For you [**Believers**] have not received a spirit [*pneuma* (vital principle; mental disposition)] of slavery leading to fear again, but you have received a spirit [*pneuma* (vital principle; mental disposition)] of adoption as sons by which we cry out, “Abba! Father!”

- (7) **Impersonal Love Displaces Fear.** The use of *agape* impersonal love defeats emotional fear and *breaks down* hatred. “*There is no fear in love*” [1 Jn. 4:18]; Heb. 2:15; Ps. 27:1. *Hatred makes chains, agape love breaks them!*

1 JOHN 4:18

There is no fear [*phobos*] in love [*agape* – impersonal love]; but perfect [*teleios*] love [*agape* – impersonal love] casts out fear, because fear involves punishment, and the one who fears is not perfected [*teleioo* – this is the negative [-N] volition Believer] in love.

- (8) **The Secret of Respect for Bible Doctrine.** Having reverence and respect for God equates to growth to maturity. “*The secret of the LORD is for those who fear Him, And He will make them know His covenant*” [Ps. 25:14]. In turn, the Believer is commanded to be respectful to those who seek answers about Doctrine and to be “*always ready*” [1 Pet. 3:15] to answer questions.

1 PETER 3:15

But sanctify Christ as LORD in your hearts [*kardia* – thinking in the Believer’s soul/spirit], always *being* ready to make a defense [*apologia* (verbal defense)] to everyone who asks you to give an account for the hope [*elpis* (confident expectation) – the particular Bible Doctrine resident in the Believer] that is in you, yet with gentleness [*prautes* (mildness of disposition) – use the problem solving devices] and reverence [*phobos* (respect)].

- (9) **Prolongs Life.** Fear [respect] for the LORD and pursuing His Bible Doctrine as the number one priority in life will *prolong ones allotted time* on the earth. See Prov. 10:27; Ex. 20:12; Ps. 34:11-14; Eccl. 7:17-18. See @@@ LIFE.

ECCLESIASTES 7:17-18

Do not be excessively wicked and do not be a fool. Why should you die before your time? It is good that you grasp one thing [Bible Doctrine] and also not let go of the other [living a long and fruitful life]; for the one who fears God [yare (to revere) – the mature Believer] comes forth with both of them.

PSALM 34:11-14

Come, you children, listen to me; I will teach you the fear of the LORD. Who is the man who desires life and loves *length of days* that he may see good? Keep your tongue from evil [stay out of the Cosmic Systems] and your lips from speaking deceit [use Rebound]. Depart from evil and do good [Divine Good]; seek peace [prosperity in the Plan of God] and pursue it.

- (10) **Fear and Maturity.** Fear [respect] for the LORD and His command to reach spiritual maturity [Heb. 4:1] via living the Christian Way of Life must always be the guiding light for the Winner Believer. *If you respect and have reverence, you will obey God and reach maturity as commanded!* “*Then those who feared the LORD spoke to one another, and the LORD gave attention and heard it, and a book of Remembrance was written before Him for those who fear the LORD and who esteem His name*” [Mal. 3:16]. “*And by the fear of the LORD one keeps away from evil*” [Prov. 16:6]; 1 Pet. 1:17.

1 PETER 1:17

If you address as Father the One who impartially judges according to each one's work [Believers at the Judgment Seat of Christ], conduct yourselves in fear [in order to reach maturity] during the time of your stay on earth.

Hebrews 4:1

Therefore, let us fear if, while a promise remains of entering His rest [reaching spiritual maturity], any one of you may seem to have come short of it.

@@@ FOOTSTOOL

- (1) **Definition.** In the ancient world, a ruler would place his foot on a person or thing to symbolically indicate *supreme power*. Operation Footstool refers to the ascension and session of Jesus Christ who in a resurrection body passed through the two Heavens to arrive at the Third Heaven where He entered the true “*Holy of Holies*” [Heb. 9:1-28] and presented Himself to God the Father for evaluation. As the *first human to enter the Third Heaven*, He was accepted as Perfect and told by God the Father to: “*‘Sit at My right hand until I make Your enemies a footstool for your feet’*” [Ps. 110:1]; Jer. 30:21; Jn. 20:17; Heb. 9:11; Eph. 4:10. See @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT.
- (2) **Evaluation and Acceptance.** God the Father evaluated and accepted Jesus Christ as a *true human in His resurrection body* into the Third Heaven and pronounced His acceptance. “*‘But from now on the Son of Man will be seated at the right hand of the power of God’*” [Lk. 22:69]; Ps. 110:1; Dan. 7:13-14. See Lk. 20:42-43; Mk. 12:36; Matt. 22:41-46 [Jesus quoted Ps. 110:1 to the Pharisees]; Heb. 1:3, 13; 8:1; 10:12-15; 12:2; 1 Pet. 3:22; Col. 3:1; Rom. 8:34; Eph. 1:20; Acts 2:31-34; 1 Cor. 15:25, 27. God the Father sat Jesus Christ at *His right hand*, the highest place of honor. This refers to Jesus’ humanity. The enemies to be placed as a footstool for His feet refer to demons and unbelievers. Note: all Old Testament Believers which Christ brought with Him from Hell [Paradise] were now allowed into Heaven [Rom. 3:25].

PSALM 110:1

The LORD [*Jehovah – God the Father*] says to my LORD [*adonay (the title for God spoken in place of Jehovah) – Jesus Christ*]: “Sit at My right hand until I make Your enemies [*ayab (to be hostile)*] a footstool for Your feet [*regel*].”

DANIEL 7:13-14

I kept looking in the night visions, And behold, with the clouds of heaven One like a Son of Man [*Jesus Christ*] was coming, And He came up to the Ancient of Days [*God the Father*] And was presented before Him [*God evaluated Him as Perfect*]. And to Him was given dominion, Glory and a kingdom, that all peoples, nations and *men of every language* might serve Him [*Believers drawn across all of humanity*]. His dominion is an everlasting dominion which will not pass away; and His kingdom is one which will not be destroyed.

- (3) **Satan's Strategic Defeat.** Satan was *defeated at the cross* and Operation Footstool finishes him off. Jesus Christ unlocked the door of Spiritual Death and Hell, and since all Church Age Believers are in Union with Jesus Christ they are also accepted. “*And the living One (Jesus Christ); and I was dead, and behold, I am alive forevermore, and I have the keys of death and of Hades*” [Rev. 1:18]. In other words, the ascension and session of the LORD Jesus Christ guarantees the Believer's acceptability by the Holy Trinity in Heaven and constitutes the key strategic victory in the Angelic Conflict. As prophesied, Satan's head is forever “*crushed*” [Gen. 3:15]; Col. 2:15.

COLOSSIANS 2:15

When He [Jesus Christ in His resurrection body] had disarmed the rulers [*arche – senior officer demons*] and authorities [*exousia – officer demons*], He [God the Father] made a public display of them [*at the ascension*], having triumphed over them through Him [*Christ's work on the cross*].

- (4) **Intensified Angelic Conflict.** With the LORD Jesus Christ now seated at the right hand of God the Father in the Third Heaven and absent from the earth, Satan has *shifted his main attack* to target Church Age Believers.
- (a) **Body of Christ.** The Royal Family of Jesus Christ is being formed in the Church Age and is superior to the Old Testament family of God. See Jn. 7:37-39; Matt. 11:11; Lk. 7:28. In this phase of the Angelic Conflict, Church Age Believers are called the “*body of Christ*” [1 Cor. 12:12-14, 27]; Rom. 12:3-5; Eph. 1:22-23; 2:16; 4:4-6; 5:23-24; Col. 1:18, 24; 2:10, 19. See @@@ RAPTURE & SECOND ADVENT.
- (b) **Bride of Christ.** Once the Church Age is filled as to the total number of Believers set by God, the Rapture occurs and the body of Christ is taken off the earth and becomes the “*bride of Christ*” [Rev. 21:2, 9].
- (c) **Bride Prepared.** During the Tribulation, the bride of Christ is prepared in Heaven at the Judgment Seat of Christ for the wedding feast which occurs just after the 2nd Advent. At the Rapture, the bride gets a resurrection body with no Old Sin Nature. Next, all the human good performed by the Believer during his lifetime will be burned up by “*fire*” [1 Cor. 3:11-15] and destroyed at the subsequent Judgment Seat of Christ. See Phil. 3:21; 1 Jn. 3:1-2; 1 Cor. 15:51-57.

1 CORINTHIANS 3:12-13

Now if any man [the Believer on positive [+P] volition] builds on the foundation with gold, silver, precious stones [Divine Good produced during the Believer's life], [or] wood, hay, straw [human good produced by the Believer on negative [-N] volition], each man's work will become evident [phaneros (apparent; manifest)]; for the day will show it [at the Judgment Seat of Christ] because it is *to be* revealed with fire, and the fire itself will test [dokimazo (to test; to examine)] the quality of each man's work.

- (d) **Wedding Feast.** The bride [all Church Age Believers in their resurrection bodies] returns to the earth from Heaven with the LORD Jesus Christ at the 2nd Advent for the wedding feast [Rev. 19:6-8, 14; 1 Thess. 3:13]. Later, "*mature*" [Eph. 4:13] Believers will reign with Christ during the Millennium.
- (5) **Confined for 1,000 Years.** Satan and all his demons are taken off the earth and *imprisoned* [Rev. 20:1-3] in the Abyss at the 2nd Advent of Christ. Jesus Christ then rules for 1,000 years in the Millennium. Perfect environment is restored to the earth. As human history started with perfection but fell, so too will the Millennium start with perfect environment but will also fall apart culminating with the Gog and Magog revolution [Isa. 11:1-16; Rev. 20:8]. This once again proves that perfect environment is not the solution to the matter of salvation or any of mankind's problems. See 1 Cor. 15:20-26.

1 CORINTHIANS 15:20-26

But now Christ has been raised from the dead [*nekros* (physical death) – in a resurrection body], the first fruits of those who are asleep [*koimao* – Church Age Believers who have died will also get a resurrection body]. For since by a man [Adam] came death [*thanatos* (death with the implied idea of future misery in hell) – Spiritual Death], by a man [Jesus Christ] also came the resurrection [*anastasis* (rising up)] of the dead [*nekros*]. For as in Adam all die [*apothnesko* (of eternal death; to be subject to eternal misery in hell) – Spiritual Death], so also in Christ all will be made alive [the opportunity for eternal salvation per the doctrine of unlimited atonement]. But each in his own order [*tagma* (organized as in a body of soldiers)]: Christ the first fruits, after that those who are Christ's at His coming [*parousia* (arrival; advent) – the Rapture], then comes the end [*telos* – of the Jewish age at the 2nd Advent],

when He hands over the kingdom to the God and Father, when He has abolished [*katargeo* (to deprive of force)] all rule [*arche* – demon officers] and all authority [*exousia* – demon senior officers] and power. For He [Jesus Christ] must reign [*basileuo* (to be and exercise kingly authority)] until He has put all His enemies under His feet [Operation Footstool]. The last enemy that will be abolished is death [*thanatos*].

- (6) **Satan's Final Revolt.** Satan is released at the end of the Millennium and leads many humans in a short “*Gog and Magog*” [Rev. 20:8-9] revolt against Jesus Christ. The revolt is put down followed by the subsequent Great White Throne Judgment of all unBelievers. This concludes Operation Footstool. See Zech. 13:2; Col. 2:15; 1 Cor. 15:24-25; Rev. 20:1-3, 11-15. All unBelievers join Satan and his demons in the “*lake of fire*” [Rev. 20:15].
- (7) **Glorification Completed.** The glorification of the LORD Jesus Christ is completed by Operation Footstool. See Acts 2:33; 5:31; Phil. 2:9-11; 1 Pet. 3:22; Dan. 7:13-14; 1 Chron. 17:11-14.

1 CHRONICLES 17:11-14

When your days [King David] are fulfilled that you must go *to be* with your fathers, that I will set up *one of* your descendants after you, who will be of your sons [reference to the humanity of Jesus Christ]; and I will establish his kingdom. He shall build for Me [God the Father] a house [to house all Believers forever], and I will establish his throne forever. I will be his father and he shall be My son; and I will not take my lovingkindness away from him, ... I will settle him in My house [see Jn. 14:2] and in My kingdom forever, and his throne shall be established forever.

PHILIPPIANS 2:9-11

For this reason also, God highly exalted Him [Jesus Christ], and bestowed on Him the name [*onoma* (a rank)] which is above every name, so that at the name of Jesus every knee will bow, of those who are in heaven [*epouranios* – Church Age Believers who physically died and went to Heaven] and on earth [*epigeios* – the Believers taken off the earth at the Rapture] and under the earth [*katachthonios* (those that exist in the world below) – Old Testament Believers who were once in Paradise], and that every tongue will confess that Jesus Christ is LORD, to the glory of God the Father.

@@@ FORTY THINGS AT SALVATION

Definition. Forty Things that inure to the Believer at salvation.

- (1) **One: Common and Efficacious Grace.** The Holy Spirit's function to *save the Believer*. See @@@ HOLY SPIRIT.
- (2) **Two: Sealed.** The Believer is "*sealed in Him*" [Eph. 1:13] by the Holy Spirit – an unbreakable *guarantee of salvation*. See Eph. 4:30; 2 Cor. 1:22; 1 Jn. 5:6; 2 Jn. 1:2.

EPHESIANS 1:13

In Him [*Jesus Christ*], you also, after listening to the message of truth, the gospel of your salvation [*soteria (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven*]—having also believed, you were sealed in Him with the Holy Spirit of promise [*epaggelia (a promised good) – the ministry of the Holy Spirit in salvation*].

- (3) **Three: Eternal Inheritance.** The Believer is given an eternal "*inheritance*" [Eph. 1:14, 18; 3:6; Rom. 8:17; Gal. 3:29; 4:6-7; 1 Pet. 1:4; 3:7; Heb. 9:15].

EPHESIANS 1:14

Who is given as a pledge [*arrhabon (money as a down payment) – the Indwelling and Sealing of the Holy Spirit*] of our inheritance, with a view to the redemption [*apolutrosis (a releasing effected by the payment of a ransom)*] of *God's own* possession, to the praise of His glory.

- (4) **Four: Given Eternal Life.** The Believer gets God's Eternal Life. "*For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him shall not perish, but have eternal life*" [Jn. 3:15-16], 36; 5:24; 6:47; 17:32-33; 1 Jn. 2:25; 5:11-13, 20; Tit. 1:2; 3:7; Acts 13:48. In *Genesis*, the Garden of Eden's "*tree of life*" [Gen. 2:8-9; 3:22-24] is language of accommodation to indicate the necessity of possessing God's Eternal Life.

TITUS 1:2

In the hope [*elpis (confidence)*] of eternal life, which God, who cannot lie, promised long ages ago.

- (5) **Five: Regeneration.** The Believer is “*born again*” and gets a human spirit which is merged onto his soul forever [Jn. 3:3-8; 13:10; 1 Cor. 6:11; Tit. 3:5].
- (6) **Six: Righteousness [+R] of God.** God the Father imputes His own Perfect [+R] “*righteousness*” to the Believer [Gen. 15:6; Rom. 1:16-17; 3:21-22, 25; 5:17; 10:3-4; Gal. 2:16; 1 Cor. 1:30; 2 Cor. 5:21; Phil. 3:9; Matt. 6:33].
- (7) **Seven: Receives Justification.** The Believer is “*justified*” [Rom. 3:24, 30] by means of the imputation of God’s own Perfect Righteousness [+R]. See Rom. 4:1-5, 25; 5:1-2, 9, 16, 18; 8:30; Gal. 2:16; 3:8; Tit. 3:7; 1 Cor. 6:11.

ROMANS 3:24

Being justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – because the Believer receives God’s Righteousness [+R] he is justified] as a gift by His grace through the redemption [*apolutrosis* (to pay a ransom) – because of the work of Christ on the cross] which is in Christ Jesus.

- (8) **Eight: Receives Reconciliation.** The Believer is “*reconciled*” to Perfect God by the work of the LORD Jesus Christ on the cross. See 2 Cor. 5:18-20; Rom. 5:8-10; Col. 1:20, 22; Eph. 2:14-17.
- (9) **Nine: God is Propitiated.** God’s Perfect Holiness is satisfied, “*propitiation*” [Rom. 3:22-26; 1 Jn. 2:2; 4:10].

1 JOHN 2:2

And He Himself [Jesus Christ] is the propitiation [*hilasmos* (an appeasing)] for our sins [*hamartia* – all personal sin of the Believer]; and not for ours only, but also for *those of* the whole [*holos* (completely)] world [*kosmos* – under unlimited atonement, Jesus Christ bore all human sin].

- (10) **Ten: Unlimited Atonement.** The fact that Jesus Christ died for all sin makes every human a *candidate for salvation*. The Believer took advantage of the fact that Jesus “*died for all*” [2 Cor. 5:14-15]; 1 Tim. 2:6; 4:10.
- (11) **Eleven: Redemption.** Jesus Christ “*redeemed*” [Gal. 3:13] the Believer from the *slave market of sin*. See Tit. 2:14; Eph. 1:7; 1 Pet. 1:18-19; Rom. 3:24; Col. 1:14; 1 Cor. 6:20; 2 Pet. 2:1; Isa. 1:18; 44:22; Job 19:25; Acts 20:28.

- (12) **Twelve: Union with Christ.** The Believer is placed into Union with Christ [Acts 11:15-17; 1 Cor. 12:13]. See @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST.

1 CORINTHIANS 12:13

For by one [Holy] Spirit we were all baptized [*baptizo*] into one body, whether Jews or Greeks [*Hellen*], whether slaves or free, and we were all made to drink of one Spirit [the ministry of the Holy Spirit].

- (13) **Thirteen: New Species.** The Believer is made a “*new creature*” [2 Cor. 5:17] – a new spiritual new species [Gal. 6:15; 2 Pet 1:4; 1 Jn. 3:1-2; Phil. 3:21].
- (14) **Fourteen: Royal Family.** The Believer is a full member of the “*royal*” [1 Pet. 2:9] *family of God*. See Gal. 6:10; Eph. 2:19; Matt. 11:11; Lk. 7:28.

1 PETER 2:9

But you [Believers in the Church Age] are a chosen race, a royal [*basileios*] priesthood, a holy nation, a people for God’s own possession, so that you may proclaim the excellencies of Him who has called you out of darkness [*skotos* – the status of Spiritual Death] into His marvelous light [*phos*].

- (15) **Fifteen: Equal Opportunity.** Under the Plan of God each Believer has equal privilege and equal opportunity *to reach spiritual maturity*. See Eph. 1:19; Rom. 2:11; Acts 10:34. See @@@ MATURITY.

ROMANS 2:11

For there is no partiality [*time*] with God.

- (16) **Sixteen: Positional Sanctification.** The Believer is positionally “*seated*” [Eph. 2:6] with the LORD Jesus Christ in Heaven at this very moment. See Col. 3:4; 1 Cor. 6:11; Heb. 10:14; 13:12; 2 Thess. 2:13.

EPHESIANS 2:6

And raised us [Believers] up with Him [in Union with Christ], and seated us [*sugkathizo* (to cause to set down together)] with Him in the heavenly [*epouranios* (existing in heaven)] places in Christ Jesus.

- (17) **Seventeen: Election.** Jesus Christ is the only one said to be elected [Isa. 42:1; 1 Pet. 2:6]. However, the Believer *shares Christ's election* as “*He chose us in Him before the foundation of the world*” [Eph. 1:4]; 1 Cor. 1:2, 30; Rom. 8:28-33; Col. 3:12; 1 Thess. 1:4; Tit. 1:1; 1 Pet. 1:2:6.
- (18) **Eighteen: Adoption as Sons.** All Believers are immediately adopted by God into His Royal Family as *adult “sons”* [Eph. 1:4-5] of God but must still grow from spiritual childhood to spiritual adulthood.

EPHESIANS 1:4-5

He predestined us to adoption [*uihothesia*] as sons through Jesus Christ to Himself, according to the kind intention of His will.

- (19) **Nineteen: Predestination.** God “*predestined*” [Rom. 8:29-30] the Believer on positive [**+P**] volition to reach maturity. *See* Eph. 1:5, 11.
- (20) **Twenty: Holy Priest.** *See* 1 Pet. 2:5-9; 2:5; Rev. 1:6; 5:10; 20:6.

1 PETER 2:5

You also, as living stones [*lithos*], are being built up as a spiritual house for a holy [*hagios*] priesthood [*hierateuma (the office of priest)*], to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ.

- (21) **Twenty One: Royal Ambassador.** All Believers are “*ambassadors for Christ*” [2 Cor. 5:20]; Eph. 6:20.

2 CORINTHIANS 5:20

Therefore, we [**Christians**] are ambassadors for Christ, as though God were making an appeal through us; we [**Paul and his team**] beg you on behalf of Christ, be reconciled [*katallasso (to have correct thoughts)*] to God.

- (22) **Twenty Two: Indwelling of God.** *See* Jn. 15:23; 2 Jn. 9; Eph. 3:19; 4:6.

EPHESIANS 4:6

One God and Father of all who is over all and through all and in all [**Believers**].

- (23) **Twenty Three: Indwelling of Jesus Christ.** “*But if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to Him*” [Rom. 8:9-10]; Jn. 14:20; 17:22-23; 2 Cor. 13:5; 1 Jn. 2:24; Col. 1:27; Gal. 2:20; 4:6; 2 Tim. 4:22.

ROMANS 8:10

If Christ is in you, though the body is dead because of sin, yet the [human] spirit [*pneuma*] is alive because of righteousness [*dikaiosune* – [+R] of God imputed to the Believer].

- (24) **Twenty Four: Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit.** See Rom. 5:5; 8:11; 1 Cor. 3:16; 6:19-20; Eph. 1:14; 4:20; 1 Jn. 2:27; 5:6, 10.

1 CORINTHIANS 3:16

Do you [Believer] not know that you are a temple of God and *that* the Spirit of God [the Holy Spirit] dwells [*oikeo* (to dwell inside)] in you?

- (25) **Twenty Five: Entered Into the Plan of God.** Believers are part of the “*fullness of the times, that is, the summing up of all things in Christ, things in the heavens and things on the earth*” [Eph. 1:9-10].
- (26) **Twenty Six: Filling of God the Holy Spirit.** This is lost once the Believer sins but is *regained* upon Rebound [Eph. 5:18; Col. 3:16].

EPHESIANS 5:18

And do not get drunk with wine, for that is dissipation, but be filled [*pleroo*] with the Spirit [Filled with Holy Spirit by Rebound].

- (27) **Twenty Seven: Divine Power Available.** (1) God’s power regarding a portfolio of invisible assets [1 Pet. 1:4-5]; (2) Son’s power in holding up the universe [Col. 1:17; Heb. 1:3]; and (3) Holy Spirit’s Operation Z power. See Jn. 14:26; Acts 1:8; Zech. 4:6; Lk. 4:14; Rom. 1:4.
- (28) **Twenty Eight: Spiritual Gift.** At least one spiritual gift is given to each Believer by the Holy Spirit who “*works all these things, distributing (spiritual gifts) to each one individually just as He wills*” [1 Cor. 12:11, 27-31; 31:1-2]. See Heb. 2:4].

- (29) **Twenty Nine: Direct Access to God.** The Believer can *go boldly* to the throne of God in prayer. *See* Eph. 2:18; Heb. 4:14; 1 Jn. 1:9.

EPHESIANS 2:18

For through Him [Jesus Christ] we [Believers] both have our access [*prosagoge* (the act of bringing to)] in one [Holy] Spirit to the Father [*pater*].

- (30) **Thirty: Gift From God to Christ.** *See* Jn. 10:29; 17:2, 6, 9, 24; Rev. 21:2.

JOHN 17:24

Father, I [Jesus Christ] desire [*thelo*] that they also, whom You have given Me [all Believers], be with Me where I am, so that they may see My glory [*doxa*] which You have given Me, for You loved [*agapao* (to love dearly)] Me before the foundation of the world.

- (31) **Thirty One: Judgment Removed.** No “*judgment*” [Jn. 5:24] at the Great White Throne for the Believer [Jn. 5:24; Heb. 9:27-28; Rom. 8:1; Ps. 34:22].

JOHN 5:24

“Truly, truly, I [Jesus Christ] say to you, he who hears My word [*logos – about salvation*], and believes [*pisteuo*] Him who sent Me [the Plan of God], has eternal life, and does not come into judgment [*krisis – no Great White Throne Judgment for the Believer*], but has passed out of death [*thanatos* (death with the implied idea of future misery in hell) – the second Spiritual Death] into life [*zoe – eternal life with God*].”

- (32) **Thirty Two: Deliverance From Satan.** *See* Col. 1:13-14; 2:15; Acts 26:18.

COLOSSIANS 1:13-14

For He rescued us from the domain of darkness [*skotos – Spiritual Death*], and transferred [*methistemi* (of change of situation or place)] us to the kingdom [*basileia* (royal domain)] of His beloved Son, in whom we have redemption, the forgiveness of sins.

- (33) **Thirty Three: Into God’s Kingdom.** *See* Col. 1:13; Jn. 3:5; Acts 26:18.

- (34) **Thirty Four: Breaks Old Sin Nature.** The power of the Old Sin Nature is *broken* – “*lay aside the old self*” [Eph. 4:22]. It can only operate if the Believer allows it. *See* Rom. 8:4-5; Phil. 3:3; Col. 2:11; Gal. 5:16; Jn. 3:5-6.
- (35) **Thirty Five: Escrow Rewards Available.** *See* Eph. 1:3; 2:6-7.

EPHESIANS 1:3

Blessed *be* the God and Father of our LORD Jesus Christ, who has blessed us [Believers] with every spiritual [*pneumatikos (relating to the spirit)*] blessing [*eulogeo – rewards*] in the heavenly *places* in Christ [*tailored rewards for every Believer were placed on deposit in Heaven*].

- (36) **Thirty Six: Scar Tissue Removed.** *See* Isa. 43:25; 44:22; Ezk. 11:19; 36:26. But the **Loser** Believer will quickly accumulate new scar tissue.
- (37) **Thirty Seven: Secure Foundation.** The “*firm foundation of God*” [2 Tim. 2:19]; Matt. 7:24; 1 Cor. 3:11; 10:4; Eph. 2:20.

1 CORINTHIANS 3:11

For no man can lay a foundation [*themelios (the foundation of a building)*] other than the one which is laid, which is Jesus Christ [*for salvation by grace*].

- (38) **Thirty Eight: Eternal Security.** *See* 2 Tim. 2:13; Gal. 3:26; Jn. 3:15-16. *See* @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY.
- (39) **Thirty Nine: Resurrection Body.** The Believer will have a new body like that of Jesus. *See* Jn. 11:25-27; Phil. 3:21; 1 Jn. 3:1-2; 1 Cor. 15:51-52. *See* @@@ RESURRECTION.

JOHN 11:25

Jesus said to her [*Martha*], “I am the resurrection [*anastasis (to raise up from the dead in a new body)*] and the life; he who believes [*pisteuo*] in Me will live [*zao – eternal life*] even if he dies [*apothnesko – Physical Death*].

- (40) **Forty: Problem Solving Devices.** For the Believer’s use. *See* 1 Cor. 13:13.
-

@@@ FREEDOM

- (1) **Definition.** Human freedom is an extension of the various functions of the soul with the emphasis on volition. It mandates personal responsibility.
- (2) **Areas of Freedom.** Human freedom has two basic categories.
 - (a) Heritage of Birth. Freedom as a heritage of physical birth.
 - (b) **Born Again.** Freedom as the heritage of being “*born again*” as a Christian [Jn. 3:6]; 2 Cor. 3:17; Gal. 5:1. The Believer is set free from the kingdom of Satan and Spiritual Death.

GALATIANS 5:1

It was for freedom [*eleutheria* (liberty to do or to omit to do) – to now serve the LORD] that Christ set us free [the Believer is set free from Spiritual Death]; therefore keep standing firm [*steko* (to persevere)] and do not be subject again to a yoke [*zugos* (a yoke put on draft cattle)] of slavery [*douleia* – stay out of the Cosmic Systems].

- (3) **Necessity of Freedom.** By Divine design free will is a characteristic which man has *in common with angels*. Freedom is a key component in the extension of the Angelic Conflict into human history where human free choices functioning on a nonmeritorious basis determine the outcome of certain phases of that conflict.
- (4) **Protection of Freedom.** The Divine Institutions are designed to *preserve freedom* – they protect the privacy and property of the individual. In a free nation that allows freedom of religion, evangelization is made possible in every generation.
- (5) **Spiritual Function of Freedom.** The once-and-for-all function of non-meritorious positive [+P] volition toward Jesus Christ not only saves but relates the Believer to the *strategic victory of the cross*.
- (6) **Freedom and Authority.** Jesus Christ set the precedent of complete *free will orientation* to the Plan of God at the cross [Heb. 5:8; Phil. 2:6-9]. Contrary to His human volition [Matt. 26:39, 42], Christ went to the cross anyway.

PHILIPPIANS 2:6-9

Who, although He [Jesus Christ] existed in the form [*morphe* (external appearance)] of God [*theos* – the Son of God as a co-equal member of the Holy Trinity], did not regard equality [*isos* (equal in quantity and quality)] with God a thing to be grasped [*harpagmos* (the act of seizing to hold fast)], but emptied [*kenoo* (to deprive of force)] Himself, taking the form of a bond-servant [*doulos* (slave) – Jesus would follow the Plan of God], and being made in the likeness of men [*anthropos* – the hypostatic union]. Being found in appearance [*schema* (as comprising everything in a person which strikes the senses)] as a man, He humbled [*tapeinoo* (to make low)] Himself by becoming obedient to the point of death [*thanatos* (of eternal death; to be subject to eternal misery in hell) – Spiritual Death], even death [*thanatos*] on a cross [*stauros* – the place of the cross is where Christ paid the price for salvation]. For this reason also, God [the Father] highly exalted [*hyperupsoo* (to exalt to the highest rank)] Him, and bestowed on Him the name which is above every name.

- (7) **Freedom and Christianity.** The LORD Jesus Christ provided freedom for the Believer to serve God and to move toward the strategic objective of reaching spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1]; Gal. 5:1; 3:13; Rom. 5:15; Acts 4:33. Accordingly, under the Plan of God, Bible Doctrine is related to freedom. “*For I will walk at liberty, For I seek Your precepts (Bible Doctrine)*” [Ps. 119:45]; Jn. 8:31-32; Ps. 119:45; Isa. 61:1. “*Now the LORD is the Spirit, and where the Spirit of the LORD is, there is liberty*” [2 Cor. 3:17].

JOHN 8:31-32

So Jesus was saying to those Jews who had believed [*pisteuo*] Him, “If you continue in My word [the Believer who is on positive [+P] volition to learn Bible Doctrine], then you are truly disciples of Mine; and you will know the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – Bible Doctrine will produce spiritual maturity], and the truth will make you free [*eleutheroo* – from the thinking of Satan’s Cosmic Systems and of human good].”

- (8) **Freedom to National Heritage.** Freedom is related to the national heritage of all Americans as a function of citizenship. The Preamble to the U.S. Constitution states:

We, the people of the United States, in order to form a more perfect union, established justice, ensure domestic tranquility, provide for the common defense, promote the general welfare, and secure the blessings of liberty to ourselves and to our posterity, do ordain and establish this Constitution for the United States of America.

- (9) **Freedom and Military Victory.** National freedom demands respect for law and order, self-sacrifice, and self-discipline. When that freedom is threatened, it demands men and women of the moral courage to defend it. *If you have freedom, it must be defended!* Thus, national freedom is maintained by military victory in war [Neh. 4:14]. While military preparedness preserves the freedom of a nation, the free men who join the military voluntarily surrender their freedom as civilians to submit to a system of strict discipline to effectively train to fight for their country's survival via military victory.

NEHEMIAH 4:14

When I [Nehemiah the Prophet] saw *their fear* [the Jewish soldiers who were anticipating fighting the enemy], I rose and spoke to the nobles, the officials and the rest of the people: “Do not be afraid of them; remember [zakar (to recall)] the LORD who is great and awesome, and fight [lacham (to do battle; make war)] for your brothers, your sons, your daughters, your wives and your houses.”

- (10) **Principle of Bible Doctrine.** True freedom will always exist in the content of the living and enduring “*word of God*” [Col. 1:25]; 1 Pet. 1:23-25. See @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.

1 PETER 1:23-25

For you have been born again [anagennao – salvation by faith alone in Christ alone] not of seed which is perishable but imperishable [aphthartos (not liable to decay)], *that is*, through the living and enduring word of God [theos]. For, “All flesh [sarx] is like grass, and all its glory like the flower of grass. The grass withers, and the flower falls off, but the word of the LORD [kurios (God) – Bible Doctrine] endures [meno (to remain)] forever [aion (eternity)].” And this is the word which was preached [eugangelizo (to bring good news)] to you.

@@@ GIFTS

- (1) **Definition.** The Holy Spirit alone provides *at least one spiritual gift* to each Believer at the point of salvation [1 Cor. 12:7-11, 18, 20; Eph. 4:11; Heb. 2:4]. The Holy Spirit distributes “*to each one (each Believer) individually just as He wills*” [1 Cor. 12:11]. The Greek word of this gift giving is *charisma*.

1 CORINTHIANS 12:7-10

But to each one [*Believer*] is given the manifestation of the [*Holy*] Spirit for the common good. For to one is given the word of wisdom [*sophia*] through the Spirit, and to another the word of knowledge [*gnosis*] according to the same Spirit; to another faith by the same Spirit, and to another gifts [*charisma*] of healing by the one Spirit, and to another the effecting of miracles [*dunamis*], and to another prophecy, and to another the distinguishing of spirits, to another *various* kinds of tongues [*glossa (the language or dialect used by a particular people)*], and to another the interpretation of tongues.

HEBREWS 2:4

God also testifying with them [*teachers of Bible Doctrine*], both by signs [*semeion (miracle)*] and wonders and by various miracles [*dunamis (power)*] and by gifts of the Holy Spirit according to His own will.

EPHESIANS 4:11

And He [*the Holy Spirit*] gave some *as* apostles, and some *as* prophets, and some *as* evangelists [*euaggelistes (the bringer of good news)*], and some *as* pastors and teachers [*poimen kai didaskalos – the gift of Pastor/Teacher*].

- (2) **Temporary Gifts.** Temporary spiritual gifts existed from A.D. 30 – 96 and were akin to the grand opening of a new business with special public events and crowd attracting displays for a *limited period only*. Temporary gifts also authenticated the authority of certain leaders in the early Church to include the 12 Apostles, plus pioneer missionaries, e.g., Barnabas, James, Timothy, Apollos, Titus, and Silvanus.

- (a) **Miracles** – 2 Cor. 12:12.

-
- (b) **Healing** – 1 Cor. 12:9, 28-30. For example, in Acts 19:11-12, Paul had the temporary spiritual gift of immediate healing in the beginning of his public ministry, but in Phil. 2:27 and 2 Tim. 4:20, Paul had already lost the gift entirely and could not heal members of his own team.
 - (c) **Prophecy** – Acts 13:1; Rom. 12:6; 1 Cor. 12:10; 14:1-4. These were individuals that could predict near term historical events. Examples: Agabus, Barnabas, Silas, Simeon, Lucius, Judas, and the four daughters of Philip. Agabus predicted a famine in Acts 11:27-28 and also provided a dire warning to the Apostle Paul in Acts 21:10-11.
 - (d) **Tongues** – 1 Cor. 14:21-22. The Gospel given in Gentile languages to Jews was a prophetic sign by the Prophet Isaiah, warning of the imminent destruction of the Jewish nation [Isa. 28:9-13; Lev. 26:14-33]. This first occurred in Acts 2:4-47. Tongues ended in A.D. 70, when Rome destroyed Judea. Satan uses the emotion of so-called tongues today to confuse. *See* Isa. 8:19; *cf.* 29:4; Rev. 16:13-14.
 - (e) **Interpretation of Tongues** – 1 Cor. 12:10; 14:26-28. The ability to translate the actual foreign language that was spoken in public.
 - (f) **Knowledge** – 1 Cor. 12:8; 13:8. Knowing certain Bible Doctrines not yet recorded in the developing canon of the New Testament.
 - (g) **Wisdom** – 1 Cor. 12:8. Discernment to apply correct Bible Doctrine.
 - (h) **Discerning Spirits** – 1 Cor. 12:10. The special ability to spot a false Pastor/Teacher. *See* @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER.
 - (i) **Faith** – 1 Cor. 12:9. The ability to pray for a supernatural act per God's will. Note: Matt. 17:20; 21:21, speaks prophetically to a specific future prayer by besieged Tribulational Jews in Jerusalem for Christ to save them from besieging armies. Jesus Christ will answer this request when His foot touches the Mount of Olives at His 2nd Advent and that mountain will literally split and "*move from here to there*" [Matt. 17:20; *cf.* Zech. 14:4]!
- (3) **Temporary Gifts End.** By the close of the New Testament Cannon all temporary spiritual gifts had *ceased to function* [1 Cor. 13:8-10].

1 CORINTHIANS 13:8-10

Love [*agape – impersonal love*] never fails [*pipto (phased out)*]; but if *there are gifts of prophecy*, they will be done away [*katargeo (abolished; ceased; canceled out)*]; if *there are tongues* [*glossa (the language or dialect used by a particular people)*], they will cease [*pauo (to stop)*]; if *there is [the gift of] knowledge* [*gnosis*], it will be done away [*katargeo*]. For we [*Believers*] know [*ginosko (to learn to know)*] in part [*in the pre-canon period of the Church Age*] and we prophesy in part; but when the perfect [*teleios (completed) – the word teleios is in the neuter which refers to a thing and not a person, i.e., the completed Bible*] comes [*Revelation was written in A.D. 96 and completed the Bible*], the partial [*meros – the temporary spectacular gifts of the early Church*] will be done away [*katargeo (to render inoperative)*].*

*The word [*teleios (completed)*] is in the neuter gender and Jesus Christ is never in the neuter. Thus, this word refers to a thing, not a person. *This thing is the completed Bible* which was closed out in A.D. 96 with the writing of the book of *Revelation*.

(4) **Permanent Gifts.** The following list of *permanent gifts* is not inclusive.

- (a) **Pastor/Teacher** – Eph. 4:11-16. Although this gift is limited to a select few Believer males, it requires an extraordinary amount of preparation prior to activation.
- (b) **Evangelism** – 2 Tim. 4:5; Eph. 4:11. To give the Gospel to crowds of unBelievers. This is apart from the command for all Believers to provide normal witnessing to unBelievers.
- (c) **Administrators** – Rom. 12:8, 13. Local Church officers.
- (d) **Deacons** – Rom. 12:7. Board of Deacons in a large local Church.
- (e) **Service in the Church** – Rom. 12:7; 16:3-15.
- (f) **Helps** – 1 Cor. 12:28. Helping people in various needs.
- (g) **Giving** – Rom. 12:8. A special gift of giving money, distinguished from normal giving. See @@@ GIVING.

- (h) **Showing Mercy** – Rom. 12:8.
- (i) **Exhortation** – Rom. 12:8. Encouraging fellow Believers to press forward with Bible Doctrine, but always mindful of their privacy.
- (j) **Refreshment** – Phm. 1:7 [Onesimus]; 2 Tim. 1:16 [Onesiphorus]. A Believer having a relaxing effect on other Believers.

PHILEMON 1:7

For I [Paul] have come to have much joy and comfort [*paraklesis (solace)*] in your [Onesimus'] love [*agape (to love dearly)*], because the hearts of the saints have been refreshed [*anapauo*] through you, brother.

- (5) **Gifts and Spirituality.** The grace of God provides each Believer a gift, regardless of their status of *absolute* or *relative* spirituality. For example, the church in Corinth had the most temporary gifts and yet they were among the worst in terms of living the Christian Way of Life. Thus, Believers are told not to be fat-headed about their spiritual gifts as all gifts are effective only with the Filling of the Holy Spirit and advancement to spiritual maturity [Rom. 12:3; 1 Cor. 12:11]. In fact, some Believers may not know what their gift(s) were until they are in Heaven.

1 CORINTHIANS 12:11

But one and the same [Holy] Spirit works all these things, distributing [*diaireo (to divide into parts) – spiritual gifts*] to each one [each Believer at the point of salvation] individually just as He [the Holy Spirit] wills [*boulomai (to will deliberately)*].

ROMANS 12:3

For through the grace [*charis – God's plan, policy, and purpose is grace*] given to me I [Paul] say to everyone among you not to think more highly of himself [*hyperphroneo (not to think in terms of arrogance)*] than he ought to think; but to think so as to have sound judgment [*sophroneo (to be of sound mind)*], as God has allotted to each a measure [*metron*] of faith [*pistis – Bible Doctrine learned on the road to spiritual maturity*].

@@@ GIVING

- (1) **Definition.** Refers to the Believer providing – *giving* – his money and/or time to: (1) support the logistical functions of a Church; (2) support the mission of witnessing, generally from the local Church; (3) support the Pastor/Teacher of a local Church; or (4) giving to the poor.
- (2) **Giving vs. Tithing.** While Church Age “*giving*” has its parallel in the Old Testament’s “*offerings*” under the Mosaic Law, it is absolutely not associated with Old Testament “*tithing*.” In the several Jewish national entities covered in the Bible [Israel began as a Theocracy circa 1450 B.C., and later a Monarchy circa 1000 B.C.] there was always a bright line distinction between the required tax “*assessment*” [2 Kngs. 12:4] levied on every citizen of the nation [Believer and unBeliever] called “*tithes*” [Mal. 3:8-10] and the separate providing of “*freewill offerings*” [2 Chron. 31:14] which were for Believers only. *See infra* (5); Ex. 25:1-2.

MALACHI 3:8-10

“Will a man rob God? Yet you [*Jewish leadership*] are robbing Me [*God*]! But you say, ‘How have we robbed You?’ In tithes [*maawer (the tenth part)*] and offerings [*terumah (any contribution)*]. You are cursed with a curse, for you are robbing Me, the whole nation of you! Bring the whole tithe into the storehouse [*the Temple treasury*], so that there may be food in My house, and test Me now in this,” says the LORD of hosts, “if I will not open for you the windows of heaven and pour out for you a blessing until it overflows.”

- (3) **Tithing.** Tithing refers to the *Old Testament tax system* based on a fixed percentage of personal/property income set up under the Mosaic Law for *all* people residing in the Jewish nation. In fact, most of the historical periods saw the majority of Jews as unBelievers per Rom. 9:6-7, 30-33. The Old Testament tithing was not a graduated tax system [the higher the income the more the tax]. A graduated tax system tends to destroy free enterprise and is an invasion of personal privacy per the Divine Institutions. The fixed tithing types recorded in the Old Testament included the following taxes:
 - (a) **Levities.** A 10% tax on all to support the tribe of the Levites [Num. 18:20-21; Deut. 12:17-19]. The Levites were designated to teach Bible Doctrine via the performance of the various rituals [Ezk. 44:23].

- (b) **Sacrifices.** Another 10% for the religious sacrifices and the upkeep of the Temple complex [Deut. 14:22-27; Heb. 7:5, 9].
 - (c) **The Poor.** Another 10% every third year for the poor of the land [Deut. 14:28-29]. Such welfare was not a yearly tax as that encourages and rewards slothfulness.
 - (d) **Monarchy.** The monarchy and government also took a percentage called “*the king’s portion*” [2 Chron. 31:3]; Matt. 17:24-27. Generally, a special tax imposed by the ruler was a minimum of 10% on land valuation and another 10% on personal property. *See* 1 Sam. 8:15, 17.
- (4) **Legalism and Tithing.** All references to Jewish tithing in the New Testament *strongly condemns legalism and cheating*. *See* Lk. 11:42; Matt. 23:23, 26.

MATTHEW 23:23

Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees [*recruited from the scribes*], hypocrites! For you tithe [*apodekatoo (to exact a tenth)*] mint and dill and cummin [*kuminon (a cultivated plant used for medicinal purposes)*], and have neglected the weightier provisions of the law [*Mosaic Law*]: justice and mercy and faithfulness; but these are the things you should have done without neglecting the others [*Jewish leaders should have judged impartially and rightly per the Divine Institutions and taught the Gospel and Bible Doctrine*].

MATTHEW 23:26

You blind Pharisee, first clean the inside of the cup and of the dish, so that the outside of it may become clean also.

- (5) **Offerings.** Offerings in the Old Testament were designed for *Believers only* and unlike tithing there was never a percentage stated as to the amount to be given by the Believer. It was a matter of the Believer giving back to God as he independently determined in grace, understanding that God had provided the funds in the first place – “*the money of each man’s assessment (the tithe) and all the money which any man’s heart prompts him to bring (the offering) into the house of the LORD*” [2 Kgs. 12:4]; Prov. 11:24-25; Job 1:21! Being entirely voluntary, the offerings [money] were deposited in a special wooden chest/box placed in the outer Temple area. *See* Mk. 12:41-44; Lk. 21:1-4.

MARK 12:41-44

And He [**Jesus**] sat down opposite the treasury [*gazophylakion* (a public repository of money)], and *began* observing how the people were putting money [*chalkos* (metallic coins)] into the treasury; and many rich people were putting in large sums. A poor widow came and put in two small copper coins, which amount to a cent [*kodrantes*]. Calling His disciples to Him, He said to them, “Truly I say to you, this poor widow put in more than all the contributors to the treasury; for they all put in out of their surplus, but she, out of her poverty, put in all she owned, all she had to live on.”

- (6) **Principles of Giving.** See 1 Cor. 16:1-2; 2 Cor. 8-9. See @@@ GIFTS; @@@ POVERTY.

1 CORINTHIANS 16:1-2

Now concerning the collection [*logia* (of money gathered for the relief of the poor)] for the saints [*hagios* (set apart ones) – in Jerusalem only], as I [**Paul**] directed [*diatasso* (to arrange; prescribe)] the churches [*ekklesia*] of Galatia, so do you also. On the first day of every week each one of you is to put aside and save [*thesaurizo* (to gather up)], as he may prosper, so that no collections be made when I come.

- (a) **The Tenth Scam.** The so-called “*ten percent*” giving required by some modern Churches is not Biblical. Again, *Church Age giving is parallel to Old Testament offerings*. There is no percentage. The Believer gives as the LORD has blessed him and as “*he has purposed in his heart, not grudgingly or under compulsion*” [2 Cor. 9:7-8].

2 CORINTHIANS 9:7-8

Each one [**Believer**] *must do* just as he has purposed in his heart, not grudgingly or under compulsion [*anagke* (imposed either by circumstances or the law)], for God loves a cheerful [*hilaros* (a grace oriented)] giver. And God is able to make all grace [*logistical grace*] abound to you [**God provides wealth**], so that always having all sufficiency [*autarkeia* (a perfect condition of life in which no aid or support is needed)] in everything, you may have an abundance [*perisseuo* (to exceed a fixed number of measure)] for every good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] deed [*ergon*].

- (b) **Attitude.** The basic principle of giving is set out in 1 Cor. 16:2 and 2 Cor. 9:6-14, where the Believer is told to give with the *mental attitude of grace*, “*for God loves a cheerful giver*” [2 Cor. 9:7]. Again, it is never the amount that counts with God per the widow’s offering of two mites [Lk. 21:1-4; Mk. 12:41-44].
- (c) **Family.** Before the Believer engages in giving, he is commanded to *provide first* “*for his own*” family [1 Tim. 5:8; 2 Thess. 3:10]. “*A good man leaves an inheritance to his children’s children*” [Prov. 13:22].

1 TIMOTHY 5:8

But if anyone [*a negative [-N] volition Believer*] does not provide for his own, and especially for those of his household, he has denied the faith [*he has ignored the commands of Bible Doctrine*] and is worse than an unbeliever [*apistos – who takes care of his family*].

- (d) **God.** God does not need the Believer’s money [2 Cor. 9:10]. He gives the Believer the funds to be able to give them back [Ps. 50:10].

2 CORINTHIANS 9:10

Now He who supplies seed to the sower and bread for food will supply and multiply your seed for sowing and increase the harvest of your righteousness.

PSALM 50:10

For every beast of the forest is Mine [*God*], the cattle on a thousand hills.

- (e) **Forget.** The Believer must *never dwell on the amount* given – “*do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing*” [Matt. 6:2-3].

MATTHEW 6:2-3

So when you [*Believer*] give to the poor, do not sound a trumpet before you, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, so that they may be honored by men. Truly I [*Jesus*] say to you, they have their reward in full. But when you give to the poor, do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing [*the Believer forgets about it in grace*].

- (f) **Cautions on Giving.** “*He Himself said, ‘It is more blessed to give than to receive’*” [Acts 20:33-35]. Per (1) *supra*, a primary recipient of giving includes provision for the Pastor/Teacher of the local Church [2 Thess. 3:7-9; Gal. 6:6; 1 Cor. 9:14]. Also included: (1) temporary provisions to impoverished Believers [rare cases]; (2) maintaining the logistics of the Church facility; and (3) funding Biblically correct evangelical missions. In this light, Paul was always cautious about making money an issue in his ministry [2 Cor. 11:8-9; 2 Thess. 3:7-9]. For example, Paul paid out of his own pocket for himself and his theological seminary students as he taught daily for two years at the “*school of Tyrannus*” [Acts 19:8-10] in Ephesus. Also, at one point Paul worked as a “*tentmaker*” [Acts 18:3] to support himself.

ACTS 20:33-35

I [Paul] have coveted no one’s silver or gold or clothes. You yourselves know that these hands ministered to my *own* needs and to the men [Paul’s traveling seminary team] who were with me. In everything I showed you that by working hard in this manner you must help the weak and remember the words of the LORD Jesus, that He Himself said, “It is more blessed to give than to receive [this quotation from Jesus is not found in the Gospels but is most certainly true as part of the Bible].”

2 CORINTHIANS 11:8-9

I [Paul] robbed other churches [*ekklesia* (an assembly of Christians gathered for worship) – Paul took support money from other churches outside of Corinth due to the Corinthians failure to provide funds] by taking wages [*opsonion* (a soldier’s pay; allowance)] from them to serve [*diakonia* (service; ministering)] you [Paul provided Bible Doctrine on a consistent basis to the churches of Corinth]; and when I was present with you and was in need, I was not a burden to anyone; for when the brethren [fellow Believers] came from Macedonia they fully supplied my need, and in everything, I kept myself from being a burden to you, and will continue to do so.

- (g) **Two Handlers.** The money collected by the local Church in giving should be handled by at least two people to avoid the appearance of impropriety. See 2 Cor. 8:16-22.

@@@ GOOD

Definition. The Bible describes three types of *good*: (1) **Human Good**; (2) **Morality Good**; and (3) **Divine Good**. The **first** is associated with the production of human actions divorced from God and is pure evil. The **second** is associated with the effective functioning of the Divine Institutions and is useful. The **third** is associated with the Trinity and is absolutely Perfect.

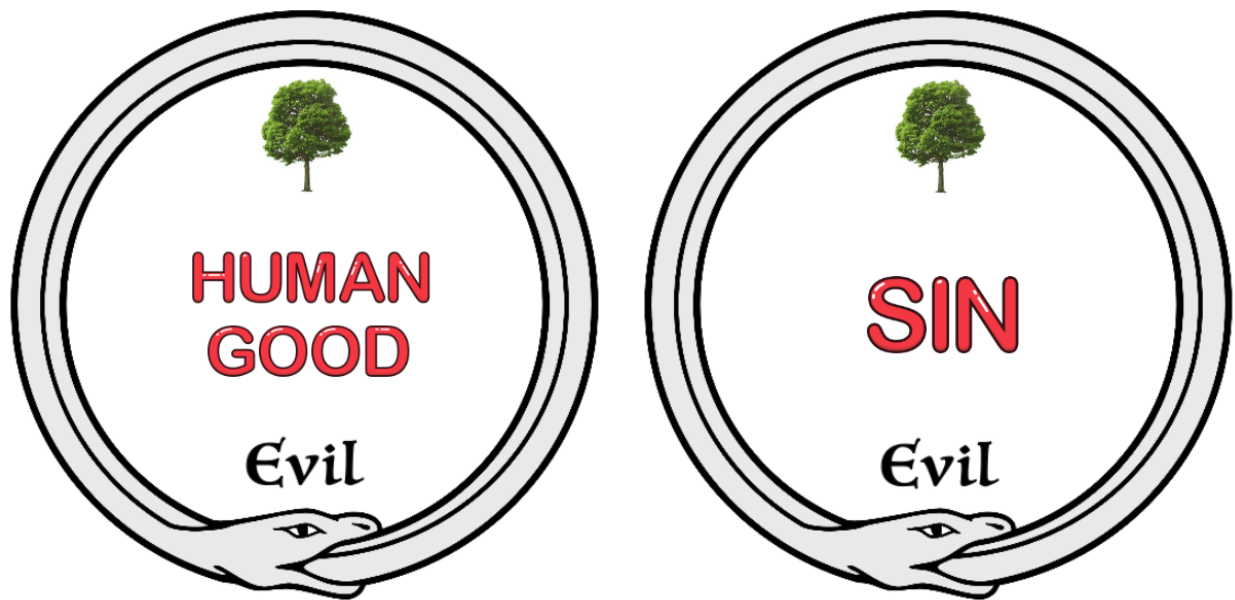
– HUMAN GOOD –

- (1) **Definition.** **Human Good** refers to the insidious *lie* that the practice of human deeds of worthiness constitutes, or can substitute for, the production of **Divine Good**. “*There is a way which seems right to a man (human good deeds for fellowship with God), but its end is the way of death (Spiritual Death in the Lake of Fire)*” [Prov. 14:12]. Thus, when human good activities are employed as a vehicle to provide salvation for the unBeliever or spirituality for the Believer [Matt. 16:23] it is *anti-God and evil*. Only Perfect Divine Good is acceptable to God, never human good. Indeed, all acts of human good are “*like a filthy___ garment*” [Isa. 64:6] in the sight of God and only those spiritually mature Believers who have “*not soiled their garments (with human good deeds) ... will walk with Me in white, for they are worthy*” [Rev. 3:4]. Note: human good must be distinguished from the utility of **Morality Good** [see *infra*] which is vital for the operation of the Divine Institutions.

ISAIAH 64:6

For all of us have become like one who is unclean [*tame (impure)*], and all our [*self*] righteous deeds [*tsedaqah – human good works [-r]*] are like a filthy [*ed (the menstrual flux)*] garment [*relative to God’s Perfect Holiness of [+R]*]; and all of us wither like a leaf, and our iniquities [*avon – human good and sin*], like the wind, take us away [*from the presence of Perfect God*].

- (2) **Evil’s Coin.** Like a coin, *evil has two sides*. One side is human good, which is variously described as *kakos* (bad), *phaulos* (bad), or *nekros ergon* (dead works), or sometimes simply shortened to *ergon* (works), depending on the context. On the flip side of the coin is human sin. While all can agree that engaging in sin constitutes *evil*, few understand that human good also constitutes gross evil. Thus, the evil of human good, not sin, is directly referenced by “*the tree of the knowledge of good and evil*” [Gen. 2:17].



– Evil's Coin –

- (3) **Total Depravity.** Arrogantly immersed in human self-sufficiency, those who champion human good reject the Bible Doctrine of the *total depravity of man* i.e., man's possession of an imperfect righteousness [**-r**] relative to the Perfect Righteousness [**+R**] of God, and actually promote Satan's lie that human good works can gain the approbation of Perfect God, when in reality He can only condemn them. See Phil. 3:9; Rom. 3:23; 4:4-5; Eph. 2:8-9; Ps. 14:3-4; 39:5.

EPHESIANS 2:8-9

For by grace you have been saved through faith; and that not of yourselves [Holy Spirit takes the amount of faith exhaled at the point of Gospel hearing and makes it efficacious for salvation], it is the gift of God; not as a result of works [*ergon* – human good works], so that no one may boast.

ROMANS 4:4-5

Now to the one who works [human good works of righteousness from man's **-r**], his wage is not credited as a favor, but as what is due. But to the one who does not work, but believers in Him who justifies the ungodly, his faith is credited as righteousness [God imputes His Perfect **+R** for salvation].

PSALM 39:5

Behold, You [God] have made my days *as* handbreadths, and my lifetime as nothing in Your sight; surely every man at his best [human righteousness [-r] and human good works] is a mere breath. Selah.

PHILIPPIANS 3:9

And may be found in Him, not having a righteousness of my own derived from the Law [human good works] but through that which is through faith in Christ, the righteousness which comes from God on the basis of faith.

- (4) **Christ's Paid for Sin Only.** Christ died on the cross for the evil of human sin so that those who believe in Him can receive the [+R] of God. *Christ did not die for the evil of human good.* Thus, being without the imputed [+R] of God, the unBeliever's [-r] and his accumulated acts of human good serve as the basis for his indictment at the Great White Throne Judgment [Rev. 20:12-15]. In turn, for the Believer all of his human good production will be destroyed at the Judgment Seat of Christ [1 Cor. 3:11-16]. *See infra* (12).
- (5) **Three Elements of Human Good.** The evil of human good is woven throughout Satan's Cosmic Systems and consists of *three key elements*.
 - (a) **Equality.** The cry of *equality (equity)* is a central component of human good. It is pure arrogance. Satan deceived Eve in perfect environment with the false offer of "equality with God" and she chose it, resulting in her immediate Spiritual Death [Gen. 3:1-12]. Adam followed suit in his own sin, but he was not deceived. Then, from human viewpoint – "*every man's way is right in his own eyes*" [Prov. 21:2] – their first act was to make fig leaves into a covering for their nakedness. In essence they sought the human good of equality under the lie that *if we are right with each other* – they covered up their obvious physical differences to look equal – *then we will be right with God*. In other words, they wanted God to acknowledge *their* human good efforts of equality. However, when Perfect God approached them in the "*cool of the day*" [Gen. 3:8] they hid, as human good and Spiritual Death cannot stand in the presence of Perfect God. God rejected their human good work for reconciliation and offered them His Divine Good work for salvation [*the seed of the woman*]. *See* Gen. 2:16-17, 3:7-15; Lk. 16:15.

GENESIS 2:16-17

The LORD God commanded the man, saying, “From any tree of the garden you may eat [*akal (to eat)*] freely; but from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat [*disobeying God is the sin which mandated judgment*], for in the day [*yom*] that you eat from it you will surely [*muth (die) – Spiritual Death*] die [*muth (die) – Physical Death; literally “dying spiritually you will die physically”*].”

GENESIS 3:5

[*Satan speaking to Eve*] For God knows that in the day you eat from it [*the tree of the knowledge of good and evil*] your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God [*the lie of equality*], knowing good and evil.

GENESIS 3:7-10

Then the eyes of both of them [*Adam and the woman after they sinned*] were opened, and they knew [*yada (to learn to know)*] that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves loin coverings [*they engaged in acts of human good*]. They heard the sound of the LORD God [*Jesus Christ as a Theophany*] walking in the garden in the cool of the day, and the man and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the LORD God among the trees of the garden [*human good cannot stand in the presence of Perfect Divine Good*]. Then the LORD God called [*qara (to call out; utter a loud sound)*] to the man [*Adam*], and said to him, “Where are you [*ay (why are you where you are)*]?” He said, “I heard the sound of You in the garden, and I was afraid [*yare (to be fearful)*] because I was naked; so I hid [*chaba (secretly conceal)*] myself.”

LUKE 16:15

And He [*Jesus*] said to them, “You are those who justify themselves in the sight of men [*human viewpoint approving their practices*], but God knows [*ginosko (to learn to know)*] your hearts [*kardia – the thoughts in their soul were against God’s plan for salvation*]; for that which is highly esteemed among men [*the equality factor of human good and human deeds of religion*] is detestable [*bdelugma (a foul thing)*] in the sight of [*enopion (in the presence of)*] God.”

1. **God's Work.** After Adam and Eve believed in the promised coming "*virgin*" [Isa. 7:14] born Savior/Messiah who would die for the sins of the world – "*born of a woman*" [Gal. 4:4-5]; "*her seed*" [Gen. 3:15] – He *took off the fig leaves and clothed them with the skin of an animal* which represented the Messiah's future work on the cross. See @@@ CROSS.
 2. **The Sacrifice.** From the very start of humanity post-Eden, the sacrifice of the innocent animal served as a powerful *teaching tool portraying the work of the coming Messiah* on the cross. This ritual was ordained by God [Phil. 2:6; Lk. 16:15; Gen. 3:5].
- (b) **Religion.** Human good is also deeply rooted in the lie of *works-religion*. Religion does not recognize or accept grace [Acts 15:1, 5]. Instead, God is supposed to accept man on the basis of his personal worthiness and religious activities. For instance, Cain offered to God his "vegetable stand" produced by his own human works to gain the approbation of God [Gen. 4:3]. Note: the ground which produced Cain's vegetable offering was something God had previously "*cursed*" [Gen. 3:17] as a consequence of the Fall. The ground represents the lie of human good works for God's approval [Gal. 3:10]. Again, human good deeds cannot satisfy Perfect God either in salvation or, for the Believer, in the Christian Way of Life. See Isa. 64:6; Matt. 7:21-23.

GALATIANS 3:10

For as many as are of the works of the Law are under a curse [*katara* (accursed) – *only Jesus kept all the precepts of the Mosaic Law*]; for it is written, "Cursed is everyone who does not abide by all things written in the book of the Law, to perform them."

Dr. Lewis Sperry Chafer, *Systematic Theology*, Vol. 1&2, (1947) pp. 110-111:

Great religious activities are possible without coming into complication with saving faith. It is possible to fight against sin and not present the Savior, or to urge the highest Scriptural ideals and yet offer no reasonable way of attainment. There is a strange fascination about these undertakings which are humanitarian, and are religious only in form and title. *And there is a strange attractiveness in the leader who announces that he is not concerned with*

the doctrines of the Bible, because the helping of humanity is his one passion and care ... Who can be the god of these systems? Certain religious systems which are in no way related to the Bible and have continued for millennia—including the ancient pagan systems and spiritism—have held the devotion of uncounted millions and bear every evidence of being inspired by Satan. The moral problem, which is felt to some degree by every human being, is seized upon by almost every unscriptural system. *The idea that man will stand on a basis of personal worthiness has been the chief heresy, opposing the central doctrine of grace, from the time of Christ's death to the present hour.* It so permeates the church that few who preach are able to exclude it from their attempts at gospel preaching. It is safe to say that wherever the element of human merit is allowed to intrude into the presentation of the plan of salvation, the message is satanic to that extent. *The ministers of Satan proclaim personal righteousness as the ground of the individual's right relations to God* (2 Cor. 11:13-15) [emphasis added].

- (c) **False Personal Love.** Human good strongly promotes *personal love for all mankind* as a third key element of *gross deception*. The belief that God will accept and bless anyone who loves or has “compassion” for his fellow man, particularly those in dire straits, is a lie. Furthermore, proponents falsely assert that God is the “father of all mankind,” making all humans “brothers” – the so-called fatherhood of God and brotherhood of man. However, the Bible clearly teaches that God is the Father of Believers only [Jn. 8:44-45]. In truth, the Devil is the *father* of the unBeliever who is called a *nothos* (bastard) in Heb. 12:8 and hostile/alienated to God [Rom. 5:10; 9:6-13; Col. 1:21; Eph. 2:11-15]. In fact, every single unBeliever is the “*son of the devil*” [Acts 13:10]. “*But as many as received Him, to them He gave the right to become the children of God, even to those who believe in His name*” [Jn. 1:12]. Only Believers are the “*children of God*” [1 Jn. 3:10].

JOHN 8:44-45

You [*Jesus was speaking to unBeliever religious leaders*] are of *your* father the devil [*diabolos* (slanderer) – Satan], and you want to do the desires of your father. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth [*aletheia* – Bible Doctrine] because there is no truth in him. Whenever he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own *nature*, for he is a liar and the father of lies. But because I [*Jesus*] speak the truth [*Doctrine*], you do not believe Me.

1 JOHN 3:10

By this the children of God [Believers] and the children of the devil [unBelievers] are obvious: anyone who does not practice [poieo (to do)] righteousness [dikaiosune – the unBeliever rejects God’s grace and seeks salvation by his own human righteousness [-r]] is not of God, nor the one who does not love [agape – impersonal love] his brother [the Believer is commanded to use impersonal agape love to include those in reversionism].

ROMANS 9:8, 13

That is, it is not the children of the flesh [sarx – all unBelievers] who are children of God, but the children of the promise [epaggelia (a promised good or blessing) – those unBeliever humans that responded to God’s grace solution for salvation are “born again” as God’s children] are regarded as descendants. ... Just as it is written, “Jacob I loved [agapao (to love dearly) – Jacob in the family of God because he possessed God’s [+R]], but Esau I hated [miseo (to hate; detest) – Esau was not in the family of God because he refused the offer of salvation and had only his own human [-r] which is unacceptable to God].”

- (6) **The Great Lie.** All three legs of human good – *equality, religion, and love* – mix together to form the *great lie*. Inspired by Satan, who “*disguises himself an angel of light*” [2 Cor. 11:14-15], the great lie places the focus on human righteousness [-r] and the production of human good works as the means to attain relationship/approbation of God. Again, the great lie applies to: (1) blinding the unBeliever for salvation; and (2) blinding the Believer for spiritual growth. **Satan’s Great Lie:**

All religions lead to God. As long as you sincerely try your best to be moral, seek equality, work for social justice, make the world a better place, and love your fellow man you will be accepted into Heaven.

- (7) **Human Good Rejected.** As with Adam and Eve, whether offered for salvation or for living the so-called “Christian” lifestyle, the production of human good works is *always rejected by God* [Isa. 64:6; Gen. 4:5]. So, while Believers are strongly commanded to be model citizens that follow the Divine Institutions, they must stay out of all socialistic programs and reject the propaganda of the Cosmic Systems to improve or “white-wash” the Devil’s world by preforming human good works [2 Tim. 2:26].

2 TIMOTHY 2:26

And they [**Believers**] may come to their senses [*ananepho* (recover self) – **choose Bible Doctrine**] *and escape* from the snare of the devil, having been held captive by him to do his will [**perform human good**].

- (a) **Social Problems.** Society's problems can never be solved by man-made legislation washed in human good. *Social engineering in the name of the greater good always causes greater problems.* Instead, leadership and culture must adhere to the Divine Institutions.
- (b) **Change.** The Believer can't change those involved in human good but these types of people can change the Believer. Likewise, no one can alter the truth of the Bible, but the Bible can alter the Believer to make him rich in "*rewards*" [1 Cor. 3:14]. *See* 2 Tim. 3:5.

2 TIMOTHY 3:5

Holding to a form of godliness [*eusebeia* (respect towards God) – **practicing religion with its human good**], although they have denied its power [**rejecting Bible Doctrine**]; Avoid [**the doctrine of separation**] such men as these.

- (c) **Illustration.** Believers in the Roman Empire were never told by the Apostles to work against the societal wrong of slavery [Col. 3:22-24]. In fact, those Believers who were slaves were told to do their jobs with dedication as "*slaves of Christ*" [Eph. 6:5-8] and to wait on the LORD for an opportunity for their freedom [1 Cor. 7:20-22]. The Creator has a unique purpose for the life of every Believer regardless of his economic condition or social status. In other words, God knew all about each and every Believer "*before the foundation of the world*" [Eph. 1:4] and provided for all their material needs.

1 CORINTHIANS 7:20-22

Each man must remain in that condition in which he was called [*kaleo* – **the point of salvation**]. Were you called while a slave? Do not worry about it; but if you are able also to become free, rather do that. For he who was called in the LORD while a slave, is the LORD's freedman; likewise he who was called while free, is Christ's slave.

- (8) **Altruistic.** Many unBelievers adhere to the norms of the Divine Institutions and engage in *altruistic activities* [Lk. 6:32; 11:13; 16:27-28; Rom. 9:8-16]. For instance, Esau was a morally superior person relative to his brother Jacob, but remained an unBeliever. Yet, Esau never believed in the Gospel and died as an unBeliever. Jesus Christ forcefully told the good works crowd: “*I never knew you; depart from Me, you who practice lawlessness (substituting their good works for Jesus’ work on the cross)*” [Matt. 7:22-23].

LUKE 11:13

If you then, being evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will *your* heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to those who ask Him [Old Testament Believers could ask to be endowed with the Holy Spirit]?

- (9) **Overcoming Human Good.** Since promoting human good is a matter of Satanic thinking – “*the schemes of the devil*” [Eph. 6:11] – escaping and defeating the Cosmic Systems can only be accomplished by the accumulation of maximum Doctrine residing in the Believer’s soul/spirit and the application of that Doctrine in order to fight as a mature warrior in the Angelic Conflict: “*Do not be overcome by evil, but overcome evil with [Divine] good*” [Rom. 12:21]; Num. 14:40-45; Heb. 5:12-14; Matt. 16:23.

MATTHEW 16:23

But He [Jesus] turned and said to Peter, “Get behind Me, Satan! You are a stumbling block to Me; for you are not setting your mind on God’s interests [the Plan of God for salvation requires Jesus to go to the cross], but man’s.”

- (10) **Salvation.** Human good or human worthiness concepts have *absolutely no place* in the Plan of God to provide salvation [2 Tim. 1:9; Tit. 3:5; Phil. 3:9]. Human good always distorts grace [Ps. 50:16-21; 52:1-5; Isa. 65:12] and as with the case of the Mosaic Law human good is called “*dead works*” [Heb. 6:1; 9:14; Col. 1:21] because it will not save anyone [Rom. 8:3; 9:30-31; 11:16; Gal. 2:21; 3:11; Tit. 3:5; Phil. 3:9; Eph. 2:8-9; 2 Tim. 1:9; Acts 8:20; 1 Cor. 10:21; Isa. 57:12-13]. Further, incorporating a mixture of “grace” and human works in a religious formula for salvation is also a dead-end. Any amount of human good immediately cancels out grace and is rejected by God.

God’s Grace + human good = Unacceptable

2 TIMOTHY 1:9

Who has saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven] us [the Believer] and called [*kaleo*] us with a holy calling [the ministry of the Holy Spirit in salvation], not according to our works [*ergon* – human acts of righteousness [-r]], but according to His own purpose [*prothesis* (the setting forth of a thing)] and grace which was granted us in Christ Jesus from all eternity [*aionios* (without beginning and end) – God always knew who would respond to grace and who would not].

ISAIAH 57:12-13

I [God] will declare your righteousness [*tsedaqah*] and your deeds [*maaweh* (deed; work) – human good], but they will not profit you [no salvation]. “When you cry out, let your collection of idols [the false man-made religious ideas about God and salvation] deliver you. But the wind will carry all of them up, and a breath will take them away [human good cannot stand up to Divine Good]. But he who takes refuge [*chasah* (to have confidence in)] in Me [Believers] will inherit the land and will possess My holy mountain.”

TITUS 3:5

He [God] saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven] us [Believers], not on the basis of [our] deeds [*ergon* (moral goodness) – human good] which we have done in righteousness [*dikaiosis* – human righteousness [-r]], but according to His mercy [*eleos* – grace in action], by the washing [*loutron* (a bath)] of regeneration [*paliggenesia* (a new birth)] and renewing [*anakainosis* (a complete change for the better)] by the Holy Spirit [the ministry of the Holy Spirit in salvation].

- (11) **No Spirituality.** Neither human good nor the provisions of the Mosaic Law will make the Believer spiritual or provide for his growth towards spiritual maturity [Gal. 2:16; 3:2-5]. Like Cain, *do-gooders want God to accept their human righteousness* [-r] per Gen. 4:3. However, God always rejects human good as a means of the Believer’s spiritual growth to “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1] and is only impressed with Divine Good, His own Perfect Righteousness [+R] and Divine work – “*For the LORD is righteous, He loves righteousness; the upright* (the Believer with God’s [+R] who reaches maturity) *will behold His face*” [Ps. 11:7]; Eph. 2:8-9; Lk. 3:22.

GALATIANS 2:16

Nevertheless knowing that a man is not justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – acceptable to God] by the works of the Law [the Mosaic Law cannot provide God's [+R]] but through faith in Christ Jesus, even we have believed in Christ Jesus, so that we may be justified by faith [*pistis* – saving faith provides the Believer with the [+R] of God] in Christ and not by the works of the Law; since by the works of the Law no flesh [*sarx* – unBeliever] will be justified.

- (a) **Human Good and Rebound.** A Believer *does not Rebound from human good*. Jesus Christ did not die on the cross for human good. He only paid the price for human sin. See @@@ CROSS.
- (b) **Impressing God.** A person may impress others with the human good he performs, but God, being Perfect, is *only impressed with Perfection*. In this regard, God is impressed with two items: (1) the Believer's Righteousness [+R] which He imputed at the point of salvation; and (2) the subsequent Bible Doctrine that the Believer acquires and then applies to the exigencies of life. "*My Father is glorified by this, that you bear much fruit, and so prove to be my disciples*" [Jn. 15:8]; Job 35:4-8; Rom. 4:2.
- (12) **A Continuing Test.** Since Jesus Christ was not judged for human good, human good *remains as a primary test of human volition* for the Believer in reaching spiritual maturity and for the unBeliever in salvation. "*But examine everything carefully; hold fast to that which is (Divine) good; abstain from every form of evil*" [1 Thess. 5:21-22].
- (a) **Not in Heaven.** The Believer's human good will not be allowed in Heaven [2 Pet. 3:10, 13]. Like "*wood, hay, straw*" it will be destroyed at the Judgment Seat of Christ by "*fire*" [1 Cor. 3:11-16] and find no place in eternity [2 Cor. 5:10; Rom. 14:10; 1 Pet. 1:7; Heb. 6:7-8].

2 PETER 3:10

But the day of the LORD [the creation of a new universe] will come like a thief, in which the heavens will pass away with a roar and the elements [*stoicheion*] will be destroyed with intense heat, and the earth and its works [*ergon* – human good] will be burned up [*katakaio* (to consume by fire)].

- (b) **Indictment.** The unBeliever may arrogantly claim that he did “*God’s work*” [Matt. 7:21-23] while on the earth, but that *human good is actually a basis for his damning indictment* at the Great White Throne Judgment [Rev. 20:12-15; Jn. 3:19-21; Heb. 9:27; Eccl. 12:14]. Without the Righteousness [+R] of God acquired only by faith in Jesus Christ, the unBeliever’s righteousness [-r] is incompatible with the Perfect Trinity and will not save him. Although the unBeliever’s sin is not mentioned, because Christ died for the sins of all humans, all unBelievers are still “*enemies*” [Rom. 5:10] of God and Perfect God can only condemn them. [Heb. 12:23; Ps. 34:16]. *No amount of human good deeds will save them. “No wonder, for even Satan disguises himself as an angel of light. Therefore it is not surprising if his servants also disguise themselves as servants of righteousness, whose end will be according to their deeds”* [2 Cor. 11:14-15].

JOHN 3:19-20

This is the judgment, that the Light [*phos* – Jesus Christ] has come into the world [*kosmos* – Satan rules the world], and men [*anthropos* (mankind) – unBelievers] loved [*agapao* (to love dearly)] the darkness rather than the Light, for their deeds [*ergon*] were evil [unBelievers are attracted to human good]. For everyone who does evil [*phaulos* (worthlessness; wickedness)] hates the Light [the unBeliever hates grace], and does not come to the Light for fear that his deeds will be exposed [*elegcho* (to refute, generally with shame) – human works of the unBeliever are not acceptable to God].

- (13) **Leadership.** Human good propaganda that infiltrate the national leadership *does tremendous harm to the nation* and the people therein. See Neh. 1:11; Dan. 3:1, 6; Prov. 17:11.
- (14) **Separation.** Because human good puts the emphasis on self-worthiness it leads to the worst forms of sin to include arrogance and boasting [Prov. 6:16-19; Rom. 4:2]. Believers are commanded to separate from human good. See Phil. 3:2; 1 Thess. 5:22; Rom. 12:1-2; Gen. 48:16; 50:20; Ps. 91:10; 97:10; 119:101; 121:7; Prov. 1:33; 2:10-14; 3:7; 12:21; 19:23.

1 THESSALONIANS 5:22

Abstain [*apecho*] from every form of evil [*poneros* (wickedness)].

ROMANS 12:1-2

Therefore I [Paul] urge you, brethren, by the mercies of God, to present your bodies [*soma – reach spiritual maturity*] a living and holy sacrifice, acceptable [*euarestos (well pleasing)*] to God, *which is* your spiritual service of worship. And do not be conformed [*suschematizo (to conform one's self to another's pattern)*] to this world [*Satan's Cosmic Systems of thinking*], but be transformed by the renewing [*anakainosis (complete change for the better)*] of your mind [*nous – transformation of the Believer's thinking requires maximum Bible Doctrine*], so that you may prove what the will of God is [*reach spiritual maturity and not to engage in human good*], that which is good [*agathos (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good*] and acceptable and perfect [*teleios (to make complete)*].

PSALM 97:10

Hate evil, you who love the LORD, who preserves the souls [*nephesh*] of His godly ones [*all Believers*]; He delivers them from the hand of the wicked.

- (15) **Distorting Matthew 25.** The Biblical passage routinely distorted by legalists to promote and even *celebrate the false doctrine of human good* for salvation and/or the Christian Way of Life is Matt. 25:34-46 [Matt. 7:21-23 clearly rejects “*good works*”]. Although these verses have absolutely nothing to do with salvation, they are nonetheless championed by the human good works crowd as the means to curry favor and acceptance from God – *engaging in do-good efforts for other humans* to include feeding, housing, clothing, or visiting them in prison. This spurious interpretation of Matt. 25:34-46, directly contradicts all the hundreds of Biblical verses which unequivocally proclaim *salvation by grace alone*, totally apart from any human good deeds whatsoever. In the clear context of chapters 24 and 25 of *Matthew*, which deal exclusively with Jesus Christ speaking to the disciples about the future Tribulation and His 2nd Advent, Matt. 24:34-46 specifically refers to those Tribulational Believers [saved by grace during the Tribulation] who risked their lives to house, clothe, feed, and give comfort to the 144,000 Jewish evangelists – “*one of these brothers of Mine, even the least of them, you did it to Me*” [Matt. 25:40] – operating around the globe that were being hunted and killed by Satan's forces [Rev. 7:4-17; 14:1-20]. Per the subject passage, these hero **Winner** Believers, many of whom will be murdered themselves for providing such aid, will receive special rewards from Jesus Christ.

– MORALITY GOOD –

- (1) **Definition.** **Morality Good** refers to the necessity *for all humans* to follow the precepts of conduct set out in the Divine Institutions which protect human freedom [Rom. 13:1-7; Job 35:4-8]. See @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS.
- (2) **Mosaic Law.** The Mosaic Law was given, in part, to *restrain the evil of human good*, but also to recognize the necessity of *morality good for the proper functioning of a healthy society*. See @@@ MOSAIC LAW.
- (3) **Human Good vs Morality Good.** Human good is not the same as morality good. Morality good supports rather than distorts the efficacy of the Divine Institutions, while human good generally attacks the Divine Institutions, and always attacks the grace of God [1 Cor. 15:33].

1 CORINTHIANS 15:33

Do not be deceived [*planao (to cause to stray)*]: “Bad company corrupts good [*chrestos (virtuous)*] morals [*ethos – morality good*].”

- (4) **Believers.** Morality good should be embraced by all mankind and Believers are specifically commanded to practice the highest levels of morality good as *model citizens* in the nation of residency. “*Whatever you do, do your work heartily, as for the LORD rather than for men*” [Col. 3:23-24]; 1 Pet. 2:12.

1 PETER 2:12

Keep your [**Believers**] behavior [*anastrophe (manner of life)*] excellent [*kalos (commendable)*] among the Gentiles [*ethnos – unBelievers*], so that in the thing in which they slander [*katalaleo*] you as evildoers [*kakopoios – for being Christians and promoting grace*], they may because of your good [*kalos*] deeds [*ergon – morality good*], as they observe [*epopteuo (to watch)*] them, glorify God in the day of visitation [*episkope (inspection) – when they too become Believers*].

- (5) **Can't Save/Can't Make Spiritual.** Since Christianity is not a system of morality but a relationship with God, morality good will not provide salvation nor will it make the Believer spiritual – either in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit or growth to spiritual maturity.

– DIVINE GOOD –

- (1) **Definition. Divine Good** [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value)] refers to God's Perfect *nature, thoughts, and actions*. Not only is Divine Good the antithesis of human good, it cannot be produced by the unBeliever, and the Believer can only produce Divine Good when fulfilling the mandates of the Christian Way of Life. “*They have all turned aside, together they have become corrupt; there is no one who does [Divine] good, not even one*” [Ps. 14:3]; Isa. 55:8-9; Eccl. 7:20; Ps. 14:3. Divine Good is often referred to as “*light*” *phos* (light) [Jn. 3:19; Lk. 8:16-17]. In direct contrast, human good, which is called “*darkness*” [Jn. 3:19], *skotos* (of night), has man making up his own pseudo light which leads to his inevitable destruction. See Isa. 50:10-11.

ISAIAH 50:10-11

Who is among you [*Jews in the Southern Kingdom of Judah*] that fears the LORD, that obeys the voice of His servant [*the prepared Pastor/Teacher*], that walks in darkness [*living in the Cosmic Systems*] and has no light [*nogahh* (bright light) – Divine Good]? Let him trust in the name of the LORD and rely on his God. Behold, all you who kindle a fire [*human good works*], who encircle yourselves with firebrands, walk in the light of your fire and among the brands you have set ablaze. This you will have from My hand: you will lie down in torment [*Divine Discipline Suffering*].

- (2) **Production of Divine Good.** Divine Good is *produced by grace* [Col. 1:9-10; 2 Tim. 2:21; 3:17; Tit. 2:7; Eph. 2:10]. Divine Good is manifested in the life of the Believer whenever he is: (1) “*filled with the [Holy] Spirit*” [Eph. 5:18]; (2) learns Bible Doctrine; and (3) applies his retained Bible Doctrine to solve problems and testings. See 1 Cor. 10:13.
- (3) **Loser Believers.** The Believer on negative [*-N*] volition to Bible Doctrine is in a state of perpetual evil [human good and sin] and cannot produce Divine Good. See Prov. 5:12-14; 11:18-19; 14:22; 15:3; 16:6; 22:3; 24:1-4.

PROVERBS 14:22

Will they not go astray [*taah*] who devise [*charash* (to engrave)] evil [*ra*]? But kindness and truth [*emeth* (faithfulness; truth)] will be to those who devise good [*tobe* – Divine Good].

- (4) **Divine Good Viewpoint.** The Divine Good viewpoint is commanded to be held by every Believer [2 Cor. 10:4-5; 2 Tim. 1:7]. Since Bible Doctrine is “*the mind of Christ*” [1 Cor. 2:16] such intake shapes the Believer’s mental attitude as he grows to spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1], “*until Christ is formed in you*” [Gal. 4:19]; 1 Cor. 15:10; 2 Cor. 9:8; Phil. 2:5; Ps. 54:5; Rom. 12:21; Eph. 5:16; 2 Thess. 2:17; 3:2-3; Prov. 23:7. The Believer must be “*trained to discern good and evil*” [Heb. 5:14; Eccl. 12:14] in order to *utilize the same decision-making processes used by the LORD Jesus Christ*. The production of the Divine Good stabilizes the Believer and glorifies God [Jn. 15:8].
- (5) **The Angelic Conflict.** Believers help resolve the ongoing Angelic Conflict each time they produce Divine Good [Rom. 12:21]. This is done by spending maximum time in the Divine Dynasphere [Rebound] and by fully engaging in all the gates in order to reach maturity and become a **Winner** Believer subject matter expert witness exhibit. See @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT.

ROMANS 12:21

Do not be overcome by evil [*kakos* (worthlessness) – human good in the Cosmic Systems], but overcome evil with good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good].

- (6) **Rewards.** The Believer’s degree and level of production of Divine Good during his lifetime is the basis for his eternal “*rewards*” [1 Cor. 3:14]; 2 Cor. 5:10. Time spent in Fellowship with God the Holy Spirit provides *basic* Divine Good rewards and reaching spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1] provides *advanced* Divine Good rewards. See 1 Tim. 4:8-10.

2 CORINTHIANS 5:10

For we must all appear [*phaneroo* – the Church Age Believer in his resurrection body] before the judgment seat [*bema* (raised place of the official seat of a judge) – occurs immediately after the Rapture of the Church] of Christ, so that each one may be recompensed [*kolumbao* (to care for)] for his deeds in the body [*soma* – the Believer’s mortal body while he was on the earth], according to what he has done [*prasso* (to practice)], whether good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good produced in the Christian Way of Life] or bad [*phaulos* (worthless) – human good].

@@@ GRACE

- (1) **Definition.** Grace is all that *God is free to do for mankind* on the basis of the cross totally apart from any human input whatsoever. Man cannot work for it, deserve it, or earn it. Christians know: “*But to each one of us grace was given according to the measure of Christ’s gift*” [Eph. 4:7]; 1 Cor. 4:7.

1 CORINTHIANS 4:7

For who regards you as superior? What do you have that you did not receive [by God’s grace]? And if you did receive it, why do you boast [*kauchaomai – that you did it by yourself*] as if you had not received it?

- (2) **Subject and Title.** Given the truth that *what the Righteousness [+R] of God demands the Justice of God executes*, grace is not only revealed through the absolute mercy of God, but it is also the subject and title of the Plan of God. Without compromise to His Perfect Divine attributes, God through His grace is able to save unBelievers on positive [+P] volition and to provide **Winner** Believers with great “*rewards*” [1 Cor. 3:14]. See Isa. 30:18-19; 55:8-9.

ISAIAH 30:18

“Therefore the LORD longs to be gracious to you, and therefore He waits on high to have compassion on you. For the LORD is a God of justice [*mishpat (the act of deciding a case)*]; how blessed are all those who long for Him [*unBelievers for salvation and Believers for spiritual maturity*].”

ISAIAH 55:8-9

“For My [God] thoughts [*machashabah (thought; plan; purpose)*] are not your thoughts [*of human good*], nor are your ways [*derek – the Cosmic Systems and religion*] My ways [*the Plan of God*],” declares the LORD. “For *as* the heavens are higher than the earth, so are My ways higher than your ways and My thoughts than your thoughts.”

- (3) **Mercy.** Because grace depends entirely on who and what God is; *eleos (mercy)* is the term used to describe *grace in action*. “*Blessed be the God and Father of our LORD Jesus Christ, who according to His great mercy has caused us to be born again*” [1 Pet. 1:3]; Tit. 3:5.

- (4) **Stands Alone in Salvation.** The great and ultimate issue for all humans is always God's Divine Good grace work for salvation vs. human good works by religion for salvation [Gal. 4:29-31]. See @@@ GOOD.

GALATIANS 4:29-31

But as at that time he who was born according to the flesh [*sarx* – Ishmael the unBeliever] persecuted him *who was born* according to the Spirit [*the Holy Spirit's ministry of salvation to Isaac*], so it is now also. But what does the Scripture say? “Cast out the bondwoman [*Hagar*] and her son [*the unBeliever cannot be saved by human works*], for the son of the bondwoman shall not be an heir [*kleronomeo* (to receive a part in an inheritance)] with the son of the free woman [*eleutheros* (a freeborn) – liberated from the power of Spiritual Death by grace, the Believer has nothing in common with the unBeliever].” So then, brethren [*Believers*], we are not children of a bondwoman, but of the free woman.

- (5) **Grace in Phase I – Salvation.** The unmatched “*grace of God has appeared*” – is available – “*to all men*” [Tit. 2:11]. God is Perfect and His Plan of God for salvation is Perfect. If imperfect man had anything to do with the Plan of God to provide salvation, the entire plan would be imperfect. Therefore, *works-religion hates the Perfect Plan of God*. See Gal. 4:29-31; Rom. 11:6.

ROMANS 11:6

But if [*First Class Condition, and it is*] it [*salvation*] is by grace [*charis*], it is no longer on the basis of [*human*] works [*ergon* – the lie of religion], otherwise grace is no longer grace.

- (6) **Salvation Mechanics.** At the *entrance point* into salvation every single “*born again*” [1 Pet. 1:3] Believer has “*tasted*” [1 Pet. 2:3] the grace of God at least once in their life [1 Jn. 2:2; Tit. 2:11]. See @@@ SALVATION.

TITUS 2:11

For the grace [*charis*] of God has appeared [*under the doctrine of unlimited atonement Jesus Christ died for the sins of all mankind*], bringing [*epiphaino* (to bring to light)] salvation [*soterion* – the opportunity for salvation] to all men [*anthropos* (mankind)].

1 PETER 2:3

If you [**born again Believer**] have tasted the kindness [*chrestos* (goodness)] of the LORD [*kurios* (God)] – in terms of salvation all Believers are the beneficiaries of the grace of God].

- (a) **Common** [Calling] **Grace**. The mechanics of the Holy Spirit's Divine *invitation for the unBeliever* to believe in Jesus as his Savior. The Holy Spirit makes the Gospel understandable to the spiritually dead unBeliever so he can then respond to the Gospel by an act of simple faith.
- (b) **Efficacious Grace**. If the unBeliever has positive [+P] volition to the Gospel, then the Holy Spirit takes the unBeliever's weak bleep of faith [whatever the output amount] and *makes it effectual for eternal salvation* [Eph. 1:13; 2:8-9; Rom. 8:28-30]. At that point, Forty Things are immediately given to the Believer [Tit. 3:5; Rom. 3:23-24; 4:4].

EPHESIANS 2:8-9

For by grace [*charis* – grace encapsulates the total Plan of God] you have been saved [*sozo* (to deliver)] – into the Kingdom of Heaven and guaranteed eternal security] through faith [*pistis* – the mechanics of salvation is by faith alone in Christ alone]; and that [the speck of human faith exhaled plus the entire package of what God does in grace] not of yourselves, *it is* the gift of God; not as a result of [human] works [*ergon*], so that no one may boast [*kauchaomai* (to boast on account of a thing)] – because the Holy Spirit takes the individual's faith output and makes it efficacious for salvation no one can boast about their so-called amount of faith exhaled upon hearing the Gospel].

(7) **Grace in Phase II – Believer's Life on Earth.**

- (a) The Church Age is a *special period of grace* due to all the unique privileges given to the Royal Family. See Jn. 1:16; Eph. 3:2, 8; 4:7; Col. 1:6; 2 Thess. 1:12; 2 Cor. 16:23; Rom. 5:17; 12:3; Jas. 4:6; Acts 4:33; 15:11. Maximum living grace is fully available for the Believer and is found in the following categories:

1. **Grace in Rebound**. Rebound is a grace function.

2. **Gifts.** Grace in the bestowing of spiritual “*gifts*” by the Holy Spirit to the Believer [Rom. 12:6]. Note: the Church in Corinth had more spiritual gifts than others and it was generally apostate.
3. **Grace in Prayer.** “*Therefore let us draw near with confidence to the throne of grace, so that we may receive mercy and find grace to help in time of need*” [Heb. 4:16].
4. **Grace in Suffering.** In a hopeless situation the Believer understands that he must rely on God [2 Cor. 12:9-10].

2 CORINTHIANS 12:9-10

And He has said to me [Paul], “My grace is sufficient [*arkeo* (to be possessed of unfailing strength)] for you, for power [*dunamis* (inherent power) – living inside the Divine Dynasphere] is perfected [*teleo* (to bring to a close) – reaching spiritual maturity] in weakness [Divine Suffering for Blessing].” Most gladly, therefore, I will rather boast about my weaknesses, so that the power of Christ may dwell [*episkeno* (to fix a tent)] in me. Therefore I am well content with weaknesses, with insults, with distresses, with persecutions, with difficulties, for Christ’s sake; for when I am weak [*under testings*], then I am strong [*dunatos* (mighty) – using the problem solving devices].

5. **Grace in Reaching Maturity.** The Believer realizes that a key purpose in the Plan of God [2 Pet. 3:18; Phil. 1:7; Acts 20:32] is “*to obtain an inheritance which is imperishable and undefiled and will not fade away, reserved in heaven for you*” [1 Pet. 1:4].

PHILIPPIANS 1:7

For it is only right for me [Paul] to feel this way about you all [Philippians], because I have you in my heart, since both in my imprisonment [Roman house arrest circa A.D. 60] and in the defense [*apologia*] and confirmation of the gospel [*euaggelion* – Bible Doctrine], you all are partakers of grace with me.

6. **Grace Stabilizes Life.** The Believer’s day to day life in the use of Bible Doctrine is *rooted in grace* as he grows to the high ground of spiritual maturity. See 1 Pet. 5:5-7, 12; 2 Tim. 2:1; 2 Cor. 1:12; Heb. 12:28; 13:19; Eph. 6:24; Jas. 4:6.

1 PETER 5:5

You younger men, likewise, be subject to *your* elders [*presbuteros* (the old man) – the Pastor/Teacher]; and all of you, clothe yourselves with humility toward one another, for God is opposed [*antitassomai* (to range in battle against)] to the proud [*huperephanos* (showing one's self above others)], but gives grace [*charis*] to the humble [*tapeinos* – a grace oriented positive [+P] volition Believer will reach maturity].

- (b) **Logistical Grace.** Logistical grace is provided by God for the Believer. See 2 Cor. 9:7-8; Phil. 4:19; Matt. 6:25-34; Ps. 33:18-19; 37:25; 56:13; 68:19; 79:11. It *applies to all Believers* due to the fact that all possess His Righteousness [+R] which attracts His Justice for Blessings. “*I have been young and now I am old, Yet I have not seen the righteous forsaken Or his descendants begging for bread*” [Ps. 37:25].
- (c) **Grace Rewards in Time.** Through grace, Escrow Account Blessing rewards are released to the mature Believer *in time* [Eph. 1:3, 11; 1 Pet. 1:4]. In addition, the mature Believer has the *capacity* to actually enjoy the Happiness of God and the blessings provided throughout his life.
- (d) **Greater Grace.** Reaching *spiritual maturity* is called the “*greater grace*” [Jas. 4:6]. Again, the purpose of his life is for the Believer to take in Bible Doctrine and reach maturity [2 Pet. 3:18]!

JAMES 4:6

But He [God] gives a greater [*megas*] grace [Suffering for Blessing in order for the Believer to reach the highest level of maturity]. Therefore *it* says, “God is opposed [*antitassomai* (to rage in battle against)] to the proud [*huperephanos* (to show one's self above others) – Divine Discipline Suffering], but gives grace to the humble.”

2 PETER 3:18

But grow [*auxano* (to cause to grow) – the positive [+P] volition Believer must reach maturity] in the grace and [*grow in the*] knowledge [*gnosis*] – understanding the full realm of Bible Doctrine] of our LORD and Savior Jesus Christ. To Him *be* the glory, both now and to the day of eternity. Amen.

- (8) **Problem Solving Device.** Grace is one of the *problem solving devices* in dealing with others. The Believer understands that since God's grace saved him as a worthless sinner, *a fortiori*, he should treat others in grace [particularly other Believers]. In other words, having "*realized*" [Eccl. 7:20-22] all that God has done for him he understands that in every circumstance *you are to treat others as God treats you* [Lam. 3:22-23; Matt. 18:22-35]!

LAMENTATIONS 3:22-23 (KJV)

It is of the LORD's mercies that we are not consumed [tamam (to completely consume to come to an end) – what we deserve], because His compassions fail not. They are new every morning: great is thy [God's] faithfulness.

MATTHEW 18:21-35

Then Peter came and said to Him, "LORD, how often shall my brother sin against me and I forgive him? Up to seven times?" Jesus said to him, "I do not say to you, up to seven times, but up to seventy times seven. For this reason the kingdom of heaven may be compared to a king who wished to settle accounts with his slaves. When he had begun to settle *them*, one who owed him ten thousand talents [about \$2 billion] was brought to him. But since he did not have *the means* to repay, his lord commanded him to be sold, along with his wife and children and all that he had, and repayment to be made. So the slave *fell to the ground* and prostrated himself before him, saying, 'Have patience with me and I will repay you everything.' And the lord of that slave felt compassion and released him and forgave the debt. But the slave went out and found one of his fellow slaves who owed him a hundred denarii [about \$1,000]; and he seized him and *began* to choke *him*, saying, 'Pay back what you owe.' So his fellow slave *fell to the ground* and *began* to plead with him, saying, 'Have patience with me and I will repay you.' But he was unwilling and went and threw him in prison until he should pay back what was owed. So when the fellow slaves saw what had happened, they were deeply grieved and came and reported to their lord all that had happened. Then summoning him, his lord said to him, 'You wicked slave, I forgave you all that debt because you pleaded with me. Should you not also have had mercy on your fellow slave, in the same way that I had mercy on you?' And his lord, moved with anger, handed him over to the torturers until he should repay all that was owed him. My heavenly Father will also do the same to you [Divine Discipline], if each of you does not forgive his brother from your heart."

(9) **Grace in Phase III – Eternity.**

- (a) **Dying Grace.** This occurs at the *transfer of the Believer* from the earth to the Third Heaven. “*And I will dwell in the House of the LORD forever*” [Ps. 23:6]. The only exception is the Believer at the Rapture of the Church who is transformed out of his mortal body and into a supernatural resurrection body. See Ps. 116:15.

PSALM 116:15

Precious [*yaqar* (valuable; prized)] in the sight of the LORD is the death [*maveth* – Physical Death] of His godly ones [all Believers possess the Righteousness [+R] of God].

- (b) **Escrow Account Grace.** Bestowing of *eternal* “rewards” [1 Cor. 3:14] on the Believer. See Eph. 1:3, 11; 1 Pet. 1:4; Rom. 8:28; Ps. 116:15; Jas. 1:12; 1 Cor. 15:10, 58; 2 Cor. 6:1; 1 Tim. 1:14.
- (10) **Disorientation to Grace.** Disorientation to grace describes the ungrateful **Loser** Believer in reversionism who lives his life in the Cosmic Systems. “*See to it that no one comes short of the grace of God; that no root of bitterness springing up causes trouble, and by it many be defiled*” [Heb. 12:15]; 2 Cor. 6:1; Gal. 1:6-7; 2:21; 5:4.

GALATIANS 5:4

You [the Believer in reversionism] have been severed [(*katargeo* (to render idle; unemployed) – Operational Death of the Believer)] from Christ, you who are seeking to be justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous)] by law [nomos – these Believers rejected the Christian Way of Life and sought to please God by keeping the Mosaic Law]; you have fallen [*ekpipto* (to fall out)] from grace [these Believers are still saved but grace cannot operate with religion].

- (11) **Grace Answers Satan’s Lie.** Grace answers Satan’s false Angelic Conflict objection that God is unfair. The Plan of God was designed to provide salvation for all humans. Those who reject grace, simply reject their Creator’s love. In short, all those who reject God’s grace *send themselves to Hell*.
- (12) **Pride Rejects Grace.** Four areas of pride [arrogance] that rejects grace.

- (a) **Eternal Security.** The grace provision of eternal security is rejected. The Believer assumes that some aspect of his personal sins are bigger than the Plan of God. *See @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY.*
- (b) **Traditions of Men.** Pseudo-spirituality associated with the various man-made traditions where religion, personal morality, human good, and taboos are more important than the Plan of God – “*you hold to the tradition of men*” [Mk. 7:7-13]; Col. 2:8. “*I do not nullify the grace of God, for if righteousness comes through the Law, then Christ died needlessly*” [Gal. 2:21].
- (c) **Suffering Syndrome.** The **Loser** Believer’s attitude of “no one has suffering as I do” syndrome [1 Cor. 10:9-13].

1 CORINTHIANS 10:9-11

Nor let us try the LORD, as some of them did [**Exodus**], and were destroyed by the serpents. Nor grumble, as some of them did, and were destroyed by the destroyer. Now these things happened to them as an example, and they were written for our instruction, upon whom the ends of the ages have come.

- (d) **Emotion.** The emotional type, where personal feelings of emotion and/or experiences are greater than the Word of God.
- (13) **Not for Sale.** The grace provisions of Bible Doctrine are *not for sale* as with those, “*who suppose that godliness is a means of gain*” [1 Tim. 6:5]; 2 Cor. 12:14-18; Mic. 3:11-12; Acts 3:6.

ACTS 3:6

But Peter said, “I do not possess silver or gold, but what I do have I give to you: In the name of Jesus Christ the Nazarene—walk [**he was healed**]!”

MICAH 3:11

Her leaders pronounce judgment for a bribe, her priests instruct [**yarah**] for a price and her prophets divine for money. Yet they lean on the LORD saying, “Is not the LORD in our midst? Calamity will not come upon us.”

@@@ HAPPINESS

Definition. Happiness generally refers to a state of enjoyment/contentment and is expressed in the Bible in three categories: (1) **God's Happiness** [+H]; (2) **Pleasure Happiness** [-H]; and (3) **Neutral Happiness** [nH].

– GOD'S HAPPINESS –

- (1) **God's Happiness** [+H]. There *never was a time* when God was not perfectly [+H] in a state of contentment, tranquility, and enjoyment. This [+H] is a part of His Perfect character in the Trinity – “*according to the glorious gospel of the blessed [makarios (happinesses)] God, with which I have been entrusted*” [1 Tim. 1:11]. See @@@ TRINITY.
 - (a) **[+H] in the Plural.** [+H] is often described in the Bible in the plural and should be rendered: *happinesses*. For the “*mature*” [Eph. 4:13] Believer, exercising [+H] refers to both spiritual and temporal aspects.
 - (b) **Biblical Words for [+H].** Hebrew = *asheri* (blessed; happiness); Greek = *makarios* (blessed; happinesses); *chara* (joy; happiness).
- (2) **Sharing God's Happiness.** In eternity past God *desired to share His* [+H] – “*the joy of the LORD*” [Neh. 8:10]. However, the relationship must be compatible with His Holiness and can be acquired by the **Winner** Believer in time so that: “*My joy may be in you*” [Jn. 15:10-11]. “*My heart shall rejoice in Your salvation*” [Ps. 13:5]; Eccl. 3:1; Heb. 2:10; Ps. 16:11; 1 Pet. 1:4.

JOHN 15:10-11

If you keep My [Jesus Christ] commandments [learn Bible Doctrine], you will abide in My love; just as I have kept My Father's commandments and abide in His love. These things I have spoken to you so that My joy [*chara – God's Perfect Happiness*] may be in you, and *that* your joy may be made full [*pleroo* (to fill to the full) – *sharing the Happiness of God is a problem solving device*].

PSALM 16:11

You will make known to me the path of life; in Your presence is fullness of joy [*simchah*]; in Your right hand there are pleasures forever [*rewards*].

- (3) **Grace.** The mechanics whereby God can share with the Believer in time His own [+H] without compromise to His Perfect essence is *rooted in grace*. See Ps. 9:14; 31:7; 51:12; 97:12; Hab. 3:18. See @@@ GRACE.

HABAKKUK 3:18

Yet I will exult [*alaz (to be jubilant)*] in the LORD, I will rejoice in the God of my salvation [*yesha (deliverance) – into the Kingdom of Heaven*].

- (4) **Believer's Potential.** All Believers enter the Plan of God by faith alone in Christ alone and are spiritual “*infants*” [1 Cor. 3:1; Heb. 5:13] and “*babies*” [1 Pet. 2:2]. Thus, the possibility for [+H] in time begins at the point of salvation, but actually sharing His [+H] in time is only a potential. Given the presence of the Old Sin Nature and the evil of the Cosmic Systems which must be washed out of the Believer's soul, there is no such thing as instant [+H] for the Believer [Rom. 7:17-19]. In short, *as the Christian grows* to spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1] in the Devil's world his [+H] also grows.
- (5) **Two Sources.** There are two sources contributing to [+H].
- (a) **The Filling of God the Holy Spirit.** This is accomplished through Rebound. See Gal. 5:22-23; Prov. 16:20; 28:14; Ps. 146:5.

GALATIANS 5:22-23

But the fruit of the [Holy] Spirit is love [*agape – impersonal love*], joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness [*agathosune (uprightness of life)*], faithfulness, gentleness [*prautes (mildness of disposition)*], self-control; against such things [*the Believer at maturity in the Divine Dynasphere*] there is no law.

- (b) **Bible Doctrine.** The *application of Bible Doctrine* to life's problems provides [+H] – “*these things I (Jesus Christ) speak in the world so that they may have My joy made full in themselves*” [Jn. 17:13]. “*How blessed is the man who finds wisdom and the man who gains understanding*” [Prov. 3:13]. See @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.
- (6) **Eternal Life.** [+H] is *firmly woven* into the Believer's eternal life in Heaven. “*Now to Him who is able to ... make you stand in the presence of His glory blameless with great joy*” [Jude 24]; Rev. 21:4. See @@@ LIFE.

- (7) **Maintaining Happiness.** Believers are commanded to have [+H]. *“Finally, my brethren, rejoice in the LORD”* [Phil. 3:1]; 4:4; Rom. 14:22. This command means to reach maturity: *“I speak in the world so that they may have My joy made full in themselves”* [Jn. 17:13]. [+H] is achieved and maintained by placing the true emphasis on the *Divine viewpoint*. *“On the contrary, blessed are those who hear the word of God and observe it”* [Lk. 11:28]; Jer. 15:16; Matt. 4:4; 1 Jn. 1:4; Ps. 119:130; Eph. 4:23.
- (8) **Problem Solving Device.** [+H] is one of the *problem solving devices*. The Believer must trust and obey God. *“Therefore ... keep seeking the things above, where Christ is, seated at the right hand of God. Set your mind on the things above, not on the things that are on earth”* [Col. 3:1-2]; 1 Cor. 2:16; Jn. 15:11; 17:17; 1 Jn. 1:4; Jer. 15:16; Col. 1:9-11; 2 Cor. 8:2; 12:9-12; Jas. 1:25; 2 Jn. 12. It is expressed in various circumstances of life and is part of *“the fruit of the Spirit ... joy”* [Gal. 5:22]; Phil. 4:11-12; Heb. 13:5-6. Jesus Christ constantly used the problem solving device of [+H], even to face taking on the curse of all human sin on the cross – *“for the joy set before Him”* [Heb. 12:2]; 1 Tim. 6:15. See @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES.

HEBREWS 12:2

Fixing our eyes on Jesus, the author and perfecter of faith [*pistis* – *saving faith*], who for the joy [*chara*] set before Him endured the cross [*Jesus suffered Spiritual Death on the cross*], despising [*kataphroneo* (to disregard)] the shame [*aischune* – *of coming into judgment for all human sin*], and has sat down at the right hand of the throne of God [*Operation Footstool*].

- (9) **Divine Suffering for Blessing.** There is great [+H] in Divine Suffering for Blessing when one reaches *“maturity”* [Heb. 6:1; 1 Cor. 10:13] and receives fantastic *“rewards”* [1 Cor. 3:14] by which God *“is glorified”* [Jn. 15:8]; 1 Pet. 3:14; Jas. 1:1-3; 12]. See @@@ MATURITY; @@@ REWARDS.

JAMES 1:12

Blessed is a man who perseveres under trial [*peirasmos* – *Divine Suffering for Blessing*]; for once he has been approved [*dokimos* (acceptable; pleasing) – *God approves those who reach maturity*], he will receive the crown of life [*an eternal reward*] which *the LORD* has promised to those who love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] Him [*the Winner Believer actually loves the LORD*].

- (10) **Positive Outcomes.** (1) [+H] is related to military victory in war [Ps. 137:8-9; Jos. 23:10]; (2) [+H] is related to national prosperity [Ps. 144:15; Neh. 12:43]; (3) [+H] is related to association with mature Believers [Phil. 2:28-29; Rom. 15:32; 1 Cor. 16:17-18; 2 Cor. 7:13; Phm. 7]; and (4) [+H] is related to a clear conscience. “*Happy is he who does not condemn himself in what he approves*” [Rom. 14:22]; 2 Cor. 1:12].

2 CORINTHIANS 1:12

For our [Paul and his traveling seminary team] proud confidence is this: the testimony of our conscience, that in holiness and godly sincerity, not in fleshly [sarkikos] wisdom [sophia – the human viewpoint] but in the grace of God, we have conducted ourselves in the world, and especially toward you.

- (11) **The Millennium.** There will be great emotional [+H] joy amongst human Believers in the 1,000 years when the LORD Jesus Christ rules from Jerusalem in the Millennium. Nature itself will “*rejoice with rejoicing and shout of joy*” [Isa. 35:2]; 64:4-5; 65:18-19; 66:10; Matt. 5:5; 1 Cor. 2:9.

– PLEASURE HAPPINESS –

- (1) **Pleasure Happiness [-H].** [-H] occurs throughout the extent of human life and is *experienced by the Believer and the unBeliever*.
- (2) **Two Types of [-H].** First, [-H] results when one engages in the sphere of *personal sin* to include revenge, fornication, drunkenness, abuse of power, gossip, criminal activity, etc. Second, [-H] results when one exploits/enjoys the *details of life* apart from Bible Doctrine. In either case, pleasure [-H] is superficial and extremely unstable with the associated “enjoyment” or stimulation always short lived. Accordingly, those who habitually practice pleasure [-H] with its “highs and lows” are inevitably bored and miserable, particularly Believers. “*Your beauty, O Israel, is slain on your high places! How have the mighty fallen!*” [2 Sam. 1:19-20]; Eccl. 1:14.

ECCLESIASTES 1:14

I [Solomon] have seen all the works [maaweh (deeds)] which have been done under the sun, and behold, all is vanity [hebel (vapor; vanity) – [-H]] and striving after wind [Solomon had no capacity to enjoy his possessions].

– NEUTRAL HAPPINESS –

- (1) **Neutral Happiness [nH]**. [nH] is based on one's *adherence to the laws of the Divine Institutions*. See @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS.
- (2) **Eligible [nH]**. Neutral Happiness [nH] can be experienced by the *unBeliever and the Believer*. See Eccl. 9:9; 11:8-9; Ps. 89; 144:15; Prov. 23:24-25; 29:18; Rom. 13:1-10. “*He causes His sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sends rain on the righteous and the unrighteous*” [Matt. 5:45]. For example, an unBeliever with a *good spouse* [Deut. 24:5] and a *good job* can derive [nH] enjoyment in time by simply following the establishment institutions set up by God to maintain order and freedom in the human race. Thus, he can enjoy the various levels of [nH] before he dies and goes to Hell. Furthermore, while the Believer can also experience the benefits of [nH], it is *not designed as a substitute for his expected possession of [+H]* which comes only via living the Christian Way of Life.

ECCLESIASTES 9:9

Enjoy life with the woman whom you [unBeliever] love all the days of your fleeting life [chay] which He [God] has given to you under the sun; for this is your reward in life and in your toil in which you have labored under the sun.

ROMANS 13:1-7

Every person is to be in subjection to the governing authorities. For there is no authority except from God, and those which exist are established by God [the Divine Institutions]. Therefore whoever resists authority has opposed the ordinance of God; and they who have opposed will receive condemnation upon themselves. For rulers are not a cause of fear for good behavior, but for evil. Do you want to have no fear of authority? Do what is good and you will have praise from the same; for it is a minister of God to you for good. But if you do what is evil, be afraid; for it does not bear the sword [capital punishment] for nothing; for it is a minister of God, an avenger who brings wrath on the one who practices evil. Therefore it is necessary to be in subjection, not only because of wrath, but also for conscience sake. For because of this you also pay taxes, for *rulers* are servants of God, devoting themselves to this very thing. Render to all what is due to them: tax to whom tax *is due*; custom to whom custom; fear to whom fear; honor to whom honor.

@@@ HEATHENISM

- (1) **Definition.** The term *heathenism* describes the status of the spiritually dead unBeliever. It comes from the Gothic word *haithi* (open spaces). The Greek word *ethne* is also often used as a technical term to describe the unBeliever.
- (2) **God's Directive Will.** God, in His Plan of God, desires that *all humans should be saved*. See 2 Pet. 3:9; 1 Tim. 2:4; 1 Jn. 3:23; Isa. 45:22.

2 PETER 3:9

The LORD is not slow about His promise [the Rapture will occur at some point], as some count slowness, but is patient toward you, not wishing [boulomai (to will deliberately)] for any to perish [apollumi (to put out of the way entirely) – the will of God is for all humans to be saved and none go to Hell] but for all to come to repentance [metanoia (a change of mind) – reject religion and accept God's salvation].

- (3) **God is Fair.** God is Perfect and it is *impossible for Him to be unfair*. “*God does not show partiality*” [Deut. 10:17; Rom. 2:11; 1 Pet. 1:17]. Accordingly, the unmatched “*grace of God has appeared*” – is available – “*to all men*” [Tit. 2:11] as a real potential for their salvation. “*Ask, and it will be given to you; seek, and you will find; knock, and it will be opened to you. For everyone who asks receives, and he who seeks finds, and to him who knocks it will be opened*” [Matt. 7:7-8]; Acts 17:6; 1 Tim. 3:16; Col. 1:6; Isa. 55:1. Jesus went to the cross to “*taste (spiritual) death for everyone*” [Heb. 2:9]. See @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT.

TITUS 2:11

For the grace of God has appeared [under unlimited atonement Jesus Christ died on the cross for all], bringing salvation [soterion – the opportunity for salvation] to all men [anthropos (mankind)].

ISAIAH 55:1

Ho! Every one who thirsts [tsame – positive [+P] volition in their soul], come to the waters [of salvation]; and you who have no money [grace is free] come, buy and eat. Come, buy wine and milk without money and without cost.

- (4) **God's Plan.** God the Father formed a Perfect Plan of God to save fallen man, and the LORD Jesus *Christ did all the necessary work* on the cross to accomplish His objective. Thus, all humans have an equal opportunity to be saved [Lk. 2:10-11; Isa. 52:15] and all peoples and nations that have ever existed on the earth will be represented in Heaven. *See* Rev. 5:9; Dan. 7:13-14; Jn. 12:32. *See supra* (7)(c). *See* @@@ SALVATION.

LUKE 2:10-11

But the angel said to them [*herdsmen*], “Do not be afraid; for behold, I bring you good news of great joy which will be for all the people; for today in the city of David there has been born for you a Savior [*soter (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven*], who is Christ the LORD.”

REVELATION 5:9

And they [*senior angels*] sang a new song, saying, “Worthy are You [*Jesus Christ*] to take the book and to break its seals; for You were slain [*sphazo (to put to death by violence) – Christ died to provide salvation*], and purchased [*agorazo (to do business in the market place) – under the doctrine of Soteriology God is satisfied with the work of Christ on the cross*] for God with Your blood [*the substitutionary work of Christ on the cross*] men [*Believers*] from every tribe [*phule (Jewish tribes)*] and tongue [*glossa (language)*] and people [*laos (a group of people)*] and nation.”

- (5) **Faith in Christ.** Entrance into the Royal Family of God [Church Age] is through *faith alone in Jesus Christ alone*. The unBeliever rejects God's grace provision and is not in His family. “*Not everyone who says to Me, ‘LORD, LORD’ will enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My Father (believe in Jesus Christ for salvation) who is in heaven will enter*” [Matt. 7:21-23]; Heb. 4:2; 12:8.

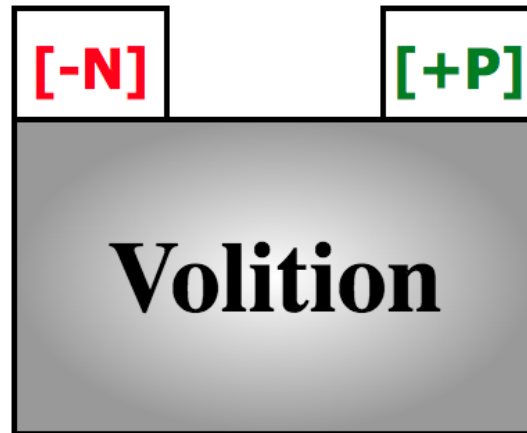
HEBREWS 4:2

For indeed we [*Believers*] have had good news preached [*euangelizo – the Gospel of salvation*] to us, just as they [*unBelievers*] also; but the word [*logos – the Gospel*] they heard did not profit [*opheleo (to be advantageous; to benefit)*] them, because it was not united [*sugkerannumi (to mix together)*] by faith [*pistis – the unBeliever did not believe it via faith*] in those who heard.

HEBREWS 12:8

But if you are without discipline [*the unBeliever on negative [-N] volition who rejects the Plan of God*], of which all have become partakers [*metochos (sharing in) – the Believer accepted God’s free gift of salvation*], then you are illegitimate [*nothos (a bastard) – the unBeliever is not in Union with Christ*] children and not sons [*uihos – not in the family of God*].

- (6) **God Awareness.** Because the human mind can comprehend the idea that God exists, *every normal human reaches God awareness* [God consciousness] at some point in early childhood. However, because it is impossible for the human mind to comprehend the character or person of God, the Creator in His grace must reveal Himself. Thus, the agnostic unBeliever who acknowledges that there is a God is far more honest than the atheist who vainly denies the existence of God. *See Rom. 1:18-32.* The following methodologies by which humans conclude that God exists include:
- (a) **Cosmological Approach.** The law of “cause and effect” requires something to exist – what Socrates called “the unmoved mover.”
 - (b) **Anthropological Approach.** Man’s soul has volition and a conscience that understands right and wrong. Thus, there must be an absolute Being who set up a system of intrinsic morality. *See Rom. 1:18-23.*
 - (c) **Ontological Approach.** Man’s inner ability to think about the concept of maximal greatness in terms of “God” indicates His existence in reality. *See Jer. 29:13; Acts 17:27; Ps. 42:1-2.*
 - (d) **Teleological Approach.** The universe is “tuned” with a mathematical complexity – both microscopic and telescopic – that is so precise that it demands a Creator to explain; both its creation and preservation. The *“heavens are telling the glory of God; and their expanse is declaring the work of His hands”* [Ps. 19:1]; Col. 1:16-17. The Anthropic Principle is the scientific recognition of the fine tuning of the universe.
- (7) **Volitional Response.** When the normal child reaches God consciousness that person is *held accountable for his decisions*. The volition in his soul either goes **NEGATIVE [-N]** or **POSITIVE [+P]** towards wanting to know about and/or have a relationship with God, his Creator.



– Human Free Will –

- (a) **If Positive Volition.** If [+P] volition occurs in the unBeliever then God is obligated by His own Perfect character to *provide Gospel information* to that person [Rom. 1:18-32; 10:17; Acts 17:27; Jer. 29:13; Jn. 6:44; 7:17; 12:32; Ps. 14:2; Isa. 45:22]. Accordingly, across all dispensations the Gospel is available, e.g., the surprising exchange of Abram from Ur with Melchizedek the King of Salem, who called the coming Messiah *eil Elyon*, “*God Most High*” [Gen. 14:19-20; Heb. 7:6-7], in his own language. They both happily discovered that they were fellow children of God who had independently revealed Himself and His salvation mechanics to them in their own language and cultural context. Also, Nebuchadnezzar, a Chaldean, knew Him as *illy edah*, “*Most High God*” [Dan. 4:2]. In many cases, the ritual of the animal sacrifice was a critical Gospel teaching tool about the Messiah’s work.
- (b) **If Negative Volition.** If [-N] volition controls the unBeliever, then God is *not required to present the Gospel* as that person *will not under any circumstances* respond. The Gospel “*is veiled to those who are perishing*” [2 Cor. 4:3-4]. Nevertheless, in innumerable instances the Holy Spirit does provide the Gospel to unBelievers, as illustrated by the Pharaoh of the Exodus [Ex. 10:27]; Rom. 9:17; 2 Cor. 6:2; 2 Thess. 1:7-9. “*For many are called, but few chosen*” [Matt. 22:14]. Indeed, unBelievers on negative [-N] volition will not believe the Gospel even if someone “*from the dead*” [Lk. 16:19-31] came back to life and gave it to them! Jesus said that the “*gate*” of rejection of God’s salvation is wide and the “*way is broad that leads to destruction (Hell), and there are many who enter through it*” [Matt. 7:13].

LUKE 16:26-31

“And besides all this, between us [Believer] and you [unBeliever] there is a great chasm fixed, so that those who wish to come over from here to you will not be able, and *that* none may cross over from there to us.” And he [unBeliever in Hell] said, “Then I beg you, father [Abraham], that you send him [Lazarus, the Believer in Paradise] to my father’s house—for I have five brothers [unBelievers]—in order that he may warn them, so that they will not also come to this place of torment [the compartment of Sheol for the unBeliever].” But Abraham said, “They have Moses and the Prophets; let them hear them.” But he said, “No, father Abraham, but if someone goes to them from the dead, they will repent [metanoeo (to change the mind) – about Christ]!” But he [Abraham] said to him, “If they do not listen to Moses and the Prophets, they will not be persuaded [peitho (to convince by words)] even if someone rises from the dead [Jesus Christ would in fact rise from the dead and unBelievers on negative [-N] volition still would not believe in Him].”

2 THESSALONIANS 1:7-9

The LORD Jesus will be revealed from heaven with His mighty angels in flaming fire, dealing out retribution [ekdikesis] to those who do not know God [unBelievers on negative [-N] volition] and to those who do not obey [those unBelievers who actually heard but rejected salvation] the gospel of our LORD Jesus. These [unBelievers] will pay the penalty of eternal destruction, away from the presence [prosopon (the face)] of the LORD [eternal separation from God in the Lake of Fire] and from the glory [the Holy Trinity] of His power.

2 CORINTHIANS 4:3-4

And even if our gospel is veiled [kalupto (concealed) – a particular unBeliever on negative [-N] volition that does not hear the Gospel presentation], it is veiled to those who are perishing [apollumi (to be lost; to be put out of the way entirely) – God has always known who would respond to the Gospel and who would not], in whose case the god of this world [Satan is the ruler of the world] has blinded the minds [noema (mental perception)] of the unbelieving [apistos – the unBeliever on negative [-N] volition actually blinds himself although Satan always takes credit] so that they might not see the light [phos – Jesus is the Light of the World] of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image [eikon (exact likeness)] of God.

- (c) **Automatically Saved.** All children who die before they reach the point of accountability [God awareness or consciousness] are *automatically saved*. See 2 Sam. 12:23; Rom. 2:11-12; Acts 10:34; Ps 51:5. By implication, morons that never reach accountability are also saved.

2 SAMUEL 12:23

But now he [David's son by Bathsheba] has died [*muth – after a short illness the baby died*]; why should I [David] fast? Can I bring him back again? I will go to him [*in Paradise David will see his minor son as a soul/spirit*], but he will not return to me [*while David is living on the earth*].

- (8) **Quality of Presentation.** Since a person's volitional attitude towards God determines if they will respond to the Gospel, a good or bad presentation will not hinder salvation [Jn. 10:4, 27; 18:38; 2 Cor. 6:2]. For example, Jesus gave perfect presentations of the salvation message but with few responses. Again, a person on negative [-N] volition will reject the Gospel no matter how well it is presented and a person on positive [+P] volition will have the nonsense filtered out via the Holy Spirit's ministry and be saved. Even in the Millennium, where the message of salvation information saturates the entire planet, unBelievers will multiply in fantastic numbers [Rev. 20:7-8].

2 CORINTHIANS 6:2

For He [*Holy Spirit*] says, "At the acceptable time I listened to you, and on the day of salvation I helped you [*Holy Spirit ensures Gospel hearing*]." Behold, now is "the acceptable time," behold, now is "the day of salvation."

- (9) **Forced Salvation.** Why doesn't God force the unBeliever to believe in Him? Axiom: If you destroy negative [-N] volition you also destroy positive [+P] volition. Created as a free agent, *man is truly free to make his own decisions* and to reap the consequences of same [Matt. 7:13-14]. *Most reject salvation*.

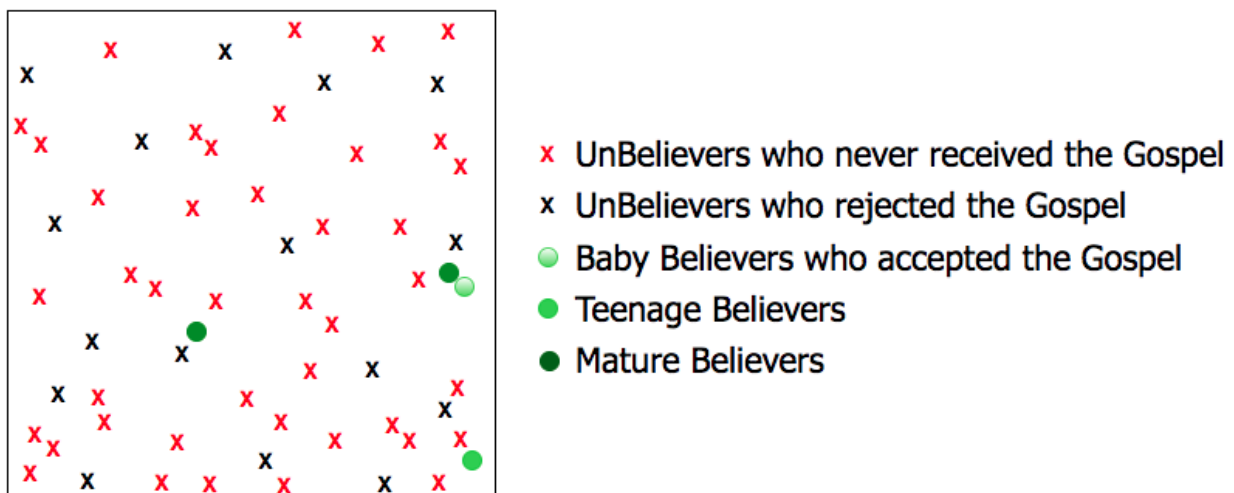
MATTHEW 7:13-14

"Enter through the narrow gate; for the gate is wide and the way is broad that leads to destruction [*apoleia (utter destruction) – the Lake of Fire*], and there are many who enter through it. For the gate is small and the way is narrow that leads to life [*eternal life with God*], and there are few who find it."

- (10) **Clustering.** Under the Plan of God, the Gospel shifts back and forth across human history to those on positive [+P] volition. Indeed, God geographically “*clusters*” groups of humans in each generation. “*He himself gives all people life and breath and all things; and made from one man, every nation of mankind to live on all the face of the earth, having determined their appointed times and boundaries of their habitation, that they would seek God*” [Acts 17:25-26]; Isa. 55:11; Matt. 8:10-13; Rom. 10:19-21; Col. 1:23. “*So will My word be which goes forth from My mouth; it will not return to Me empty, without accomplishing what I desire, and without succeeding in the matter for which I sent it*” [Isa. 55:11]. Thus, God sent the Prophet Jonah to Nineveh where thousands in that generation were on positive [+P] volition and were saved [Jon. 3:1-10]. The town of Sychar also had maximum positive [+P] volition responders to the Gospel [Jn. 4:1-42] in Jesus’ day, but in other spots, like Nazareth, Jesus noted that there were few takers of the Gospel. “*And He wondered at their unbelief*” [Mk. 6:1-6]. In short, God controls history for His purposes in the Plan of God: “*For this very purpose I raised you (Pharaoh) up, to demonstrate my power in you*” [Rom. 9:13-17].

ROMANS 10:20

And Isaiah is very bold and says, “I [salvation] was found by those who did not seek Me [by means of following the Mosaic Law], I became manifest to those [non-Jews] who did not ask for Me.”



– Generational Clusters of Positive [+P] Volition –

- (11) **Conclusion.** The heathen are heathen because *they reject* a relationship with their Creator, not because they never heard, or had an opportunity to hear, the Gospel. Either they reject or neglect God – “*The fool has said in his heart, ‘There is no God’*” [Ps. 14:1] – but all unBelievers will take responsibility for their choices. “*Let them (Pharisees) alone; they are blind guides of the blind. And if a blind man guides a blind man, both will fall into a pit*” [Matt. 15:14]. “*But the Pharisees and the lawyers rejected God’s purpose for themselves*” [Lk. 7:30]; Jn. 3:18; Isa. 65:12; Rom. 1:18-25; Prov. 5:6.

PROVERBS 5:6

She does not ponder the path of life [*negative [-N] volition to God*]; her ways are unstable, she does not know *it* [*God’s truth for salvation*].

ROMANS 1:18-25

For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness [*asebeia (unBelievers)*] and unrighteousness of men who suppress the truth [*Plan of God*] in unrighteousness, because that which is known about God is evident within them; for God made it evident to them. For since the creation of the world His invisible attributes, His eternal power and divine nature, have been clearly seen, being understood through what has been made, so that they are without excuse. For even though they knew God, they did not honor Him as God or give thanks, but they became futile [*mataioo (to make empty)*] in their speculations, and their foolish heart was darkened [*[-N] volition*]. Professing to be wise, they became fools, and exchanged the glory of the incorruptible God for an image in the form of corruptible man and of birds and four-footed animals and crawling creatures. Therefore God gave them over in the lusts of their hearts [*OSN*] to impurity, so that their bodies would be dishonored among them. For they exchanged the truth of God for a lie, and worshiped and served the creature rather than the Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen.

JOHN 3:18

He who believes in Him [*Jesus Christ*] is not judged; he who does not believe has been judged already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God [*the unBeliever is unacceptable to the Justice of God because he does not possess the Righteousness [+R] of God*].

@@@ HEAVEN

- (1) **Definition.** The term *heaven* is employed to describe three different places; context dictates. “*God created the heavens (1st & 2nd)*” [Gen. 1:1]. “*Behold, heaven (2nd) and the highest heaven (3rd) cannot contain You*” [1 Kngs. 8:27]. “*He who ascended far above all the heavens (1st & 2nd)*” [Eph. 4:10].
 - (a) **First Heaven.** The First Heaven consists of the band of *atmosphere covering* the earth. “*God called the expanse [raqiya (expanse covering the earth; heaven)] heaven*” [Gen. 1:6-8]; “*of the air*” [*aer* (the atmospheric region)] [Eph. 2:2]; Rev. 8:3; 19:17; Ps. 68:8; Deut. 30:4.
 - (b) **Second Heaven.** The Second Heaven consists of the *entire universe*; it is beyond measurement. “*If the heavens above can be measured*” [Jer. 31:37]. “*And beware not to lift up your eyes to heaven [shamayim (the abode of the stars; the visible universe)] and see the sun and the moon and the stars, all the host of heaven*” [Deut. 4:19]. See Acts 7:42 [*ouranos* (the universe)]; Gen. 14:19; 2 Pet. 3:5-10; Rev. 8:10.
 - (c) **Third Heaven.** The Third Heaven stands for God’s headquarters [HQ] which is outside the universe. “*For I (Jesus Christ) have come down from heaven*” [Eph. 5:28]. Paul was “*caught up to the third heaven*” [2 Cor. 12:2]; Heb. 8:5; 9:11, 23 [*epouranos* (the abode of God and angels)]; Eph. 1:3; 2:6; 3:10; 4:10; 6:12; 1 Kngs. 8:27; 2 Cor. 12:2-4; Neh. 9:27; Ps. 68:33; Phil. 3:20; Matt. 5:3; 7:11, 21; Rev. 4:1; 9:1; 21:2.
- (2) **First Human in Heaven.** In His resurrection body the LORD Jesus Christ passed through the First and Second Heavens as the first human to present Himself to God the Father in the Third Heaven per Operation Footstool. He also led all Old Testament Believers out of Paradise with Him [Eph. 4:8-10].

EPHESIANS 4:8-10

Therefore it says, “When He [*Christ*] ascended on high, He led captive a host of captives [*Old Testament Believers in Paradise*], and He gave gifts to men.” (Now this *expression*, “He ascended,” what does it mean except that He also had descended into the lower parts of the earth [*ge* (the land mass)]? He who descended is Himself also He who ascended far above all the heavens [*into the Third Heaven*], so that He might fill [*Operation Footstool*] all things).

- (a) **In Paradise.** Prior to the ascension of the LORD Jesus Christ [forty days after His resurrection] the soul/spirit of all *Old Testament Believers went to Paradise*, a compartment of Hell, at their Physical Death. Note: Elijah was taken up in the First Heaven where he died and then went straight to Paradise [1 Kngs. 2:11]. See @@@ HELL.
- (b) **In Heaven.** Since the ascension of Jesus Christ, the soul/spirit of all Believers *go directly to the Third Heaven* where they wait for the Rapture of the Church to occur at which time they will receive their resurrection bodies and soon thereafter any eternal “*rewards*” [1 Cor. 3:14]. See 2 Cor. 5:8; Jn. 14:1-3; 1 Thess. 4:16-17.

JOHN 14:1-3

Do not let your heart be troubled; believe in God, believe also in Me [*Jesus Christ*]. In My Father’s house [*oikia (an inhabited dwelling)*] are many dwelling places; if it were not so, I would have told you; for I go to prepare [*hetoimazo (to make ready)*] a place for you. If [*and I do*] I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you to Myself [*at the Rapture*], that where I am, *there* you may be also [*in the Third Heaven*].

1 THESSALONIANS 4:16-17

For the LORD [*Jesus Christ*] Himself will descend [*katabaino (to go down)*] from heaven with a shout [*keleuma (an order)*], with the voice of *the* archangel [*archaggelos (a chief angel)*] and with the trumpet of God, and the dead [*nekros (physical death)*] in Christ will rise [*anistemi (to cause to rise up)* – *Church Age Believers in their resurrection bodies*] first. Then we who are alive and remain [*living Church Age Believers*] will be caught up [*harpaxo (to snatch out or away)* – *in resurrection bodies*] together with them [*the dead Church Age Believers*] in the clouds [*nephele (a cloud)*] to meet [*apantesis (to meet one)*] the LORD [*kurios – Jesus Christ*] in the air [*aer (the atmospheric region)* – *the place of the Rapture of the Church Age Believers*], and so we shall always be [*pantote (at all times, always)*] with the LORD [*in Heaven*].

- (c) **Right Now in the Third Heaven.** Currently, being in union with Jesus Christ, all living Believers have Positional Sanctification and their “*citizenship is in heaven*” where Christ is, right now [Phil. 3:20-21]! See Eph. 2:6; Col. 3:4; 1 Cor. 6:11; 13:12; 2 Thess. 2:13.

EPHESIANS 2:6

And raised us [all Believers in the Church Age] up with Him [in Union with Christ], and seated us with Him in the heavenly [epouranios (existing in heaven – the Third Heaven)] places in Christ Jesus.

- (3) **Demons in Heaven.** Certain Fallen angels are allowed in the Third Heaven [Job 1:6-8] during the appellate portion of the Angelic Conflict, but once Satan is cast out of the Third Heaven in the middle of the Tribulation no Fallen angel will ever be allowed into the Third Heaven again. See Rev. 12:7-17; Isa. 14:12; Ezk. 28:16.

REVELATION 12:7-9

And there was a war in heaven [in the middle of the Tribulation], Michael and his angels waging war with the dragon. The dragon and his angels waged war, and they were not strong enough, and there was no longer a place found for them in heaven. And the great dragon was thrown down, the serpent of old who is called the devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was thrown down to the earth [ge], and his angels were thrown down with him.

- (4) **New Heavens.** After the Great White Throne Judgment, which sees all unBelievers separated to the “lake of fire” [Rev. 20:11-14], along with all demons, God will destroy the current earth, the First Heaven, and the Second Heaven. “*Then I saw a new heaven and a new earth; for the first heaven and the first earth passed away*” [Rev. 21:1]; 2 Pet. 3:10-13. “*And, ‘You, LORD, in the beginning laid the foundation of the earth, and the heavens are the works of Your hands; they will perish, but You remain; and they all will become old like a garment, and like a mantel You will roll them up; like a garment they will also be changed. But You are the same, and Your years will not come to an end’*” [Heb. 1:10-12].

2 PETER 3:10

But the day of the LORD [the creation of a new universe at the end of the Millennium] will come like a thief, in which the heavens [ouranos – First and Second Heavens] will pass away with a roar and the elements [stoicheion (the elements from which all things have come)] will be destroyed with intense heat, and the earth and its works [ergon – human good] will be burned up.

- (5) **Eternity in Heaven.** The Believer in his indestructible resurrection body will *spend eternity with God in the new earth, the new universe, and the Third Heaven*, a concept beyond human comprehension [Rev. 21:1-4]. “*In My Father’s house are many dwelling places; if it were not so, I would have told you; for I go to prepare a place for you*” [Jn. 14:2]; 1 Cor. 2:9; Ps. 23:5-6; 2 Tim. 4:18; 1 Thess. 4:17; 1 Pet. 1:4-5.

PSALM 23:5-6

You [God] prepare a table before me [King David] in the presence of my enemies; You have anointed my head with oil; my cup overflows [with rewards in time and eternity]. Surely goodness and lovingkindness [chesed (mercy) – grace in action] will follow [radaph (to pursue; to run after)] me all the days of my life, and I will dwell in the house [bayith (home; house containing a family)] of the LORD forever [eternal life in Heaven].

1 PETER 1:4-5

To obtain an inheritance which is imperishable and undefiled and will not fade away, reserved [tereo (to post a guard)] in heaven for you, who are protected by the power of God through faith [pistis – Bible Doctrine guarantees it] for a salvation [soteria (to deliver) – given by God] ready to be revealed in the last time [Believers get a resurrection body and any rewards at the Rapture].

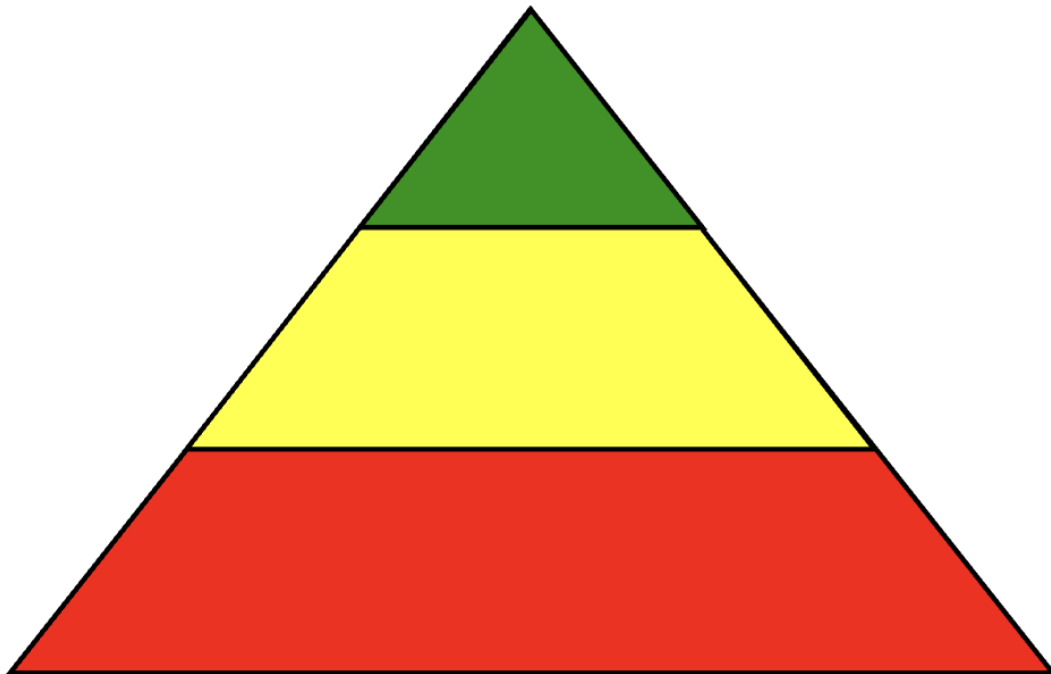
1 CORINTHIANS 2:9

But just as it is written, “Things which eye has not seen and ear has not heard, and which have not entered the heart of man, all that God has prepared [hetoimazo (to make ready beforehand) – tailored rewards] for those who love [agapao (to love dearly) – only mature Believers can love God] Him.”

- (6) **No Equality.** There is no *equality* in the Third Heaven for Believers or for angels. In fact, the Third Heaven and the new universe is a *place of vast inequality* where the few **Winner** Believers who advanced to spiritual maturity in time will receive fantastic rewards which extend on out for all eternity [Matt. 25:23]. On the other hand, the vast majority of Believers will have little, if any, eternal rewards bestowed. In short, Heaven can be viewed as a *very flat pyramid*. While all Believers are guaranteed a slot at the base of the pyramid, very few reach the top echelons. See @@@ REWARDS.

MATTHEW 25:23

His master [Jesus Christ at the Judgment Seat of Christ] said to him [Winner Believer], “Well done, good [Divine Good produced by the Winner Believer] and faithful [*pistos* – faithful to the Plan of God] slave. You were faithful with a few things [staying inside the Divine Dynasphere], I will put you in charge [*kathistemi* (to set one over a thing)] of many things [fantastic eternal rewards in Heaven for the Winner Believer]; enter into the joy of your master [God is glorified by the Believer advancing to spiritual maturity].”



– Hierarchy in Heaven –

- (7) **No Human Good.** Absolutely *no human good will be allowed* to enter into the new universe. All the Church Age Believer’s human good production – “*wood, hay, straw*” [1 Cor. 3:11-15] – accomplished in his mortal body [while in the Cosmic Systems] will be totally destroyed at the Judgment Seat of Christ [similar judgments will separately occur for all other Believers in all other dispensations]. In addition, with the destruction of the old universe and its “*works*” [2 Pet. 3:10], following the end of the Millennium all things that are not associated with Divine Good are destroyed so that the new universe is entirely purged of imperfection and evil.

1 CORINTHIANS 3:11-15

For no man [*oudeis* (no one; nothing)] can lay a foundation [*themelios* (the foundation of a building)] other than the one which is laid, which is Jesus Christ [there is no other way for a human to be saved except by the grace system set out in the Perfect Plan of God]. Now if any man [the Believer on positive [+P] volition] builds on the foundation with gold, silver, precious stones [Divine Good produced during the Believer's life], [or] wood, hay, straw [human good produced by the Believer on negative [-N] volition], each man's work will become evident [*phaneros* (apparent; manifest)]; for the day will show it [at the Judgment Seat of Christ] because it is *to be* revealed with [through] fire [*pur*], and the fire itself will test [*dokimazo* (to test; to examine)] the quality of each man's work. If any man's [the Believer on positive [+P] volition] work [*ergon* (production) – Divine Good] which he has built on it remains [*meno*], he will receive a reward [*misthos* (dues paid for work) – eternal rewards]. If any man's [the Believer on negative [-N] volition] work is burned up [*katakaio* (to consume by fire) – the wood, hay, and straw], he will suffer loss [*zemioo* (to sustain damage; forfeit) – no rewards]; but he himself will be saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – the Loser Believer is delivered into Heaven per the doctrine of eternal security], yet so as through fire.

- (8) **No Pain, Death, or Old Sin Nature.** There will no longer be “*death*” or the Old Sin Nature, as God “*will wipe away every tear from their eyes; and there will no longer be any death; there will no longer be any mourning, or crying, or pain*” in the Third Heaven or the new universe [Rev. 21:4]. “*For from days of old they have not heard or perceived by ear, nor has the eye seen a God besides You, who acts in behalf of the one who waits for Him*” [Isa. 64:4]. Even **Loser** Believers will have great joy in eternity as they will then see and celebrate the glory and grace of God.

REVELATION 21:4

And He [God] will wipe away [*exaleipho* (to anoint or wash in every part; to erase)] every tear [*dakru*] from their [the Believer] eyes; and [in Heaven] there will no longer be *any* death [*thanatos* (with the implied idea of future misery in hell)]; there will no longer be *any* mourning [*penthos*], or crying [*krauge*], or pain [*ponos* (great trouble)]; the first [*protos* (first in time)] things have passed away [*aperchomai* (to go away; depart)].

@@@ HELL

- (1) **Definition.** The word *hell* is not a transliteration of a Greek or Hebrew word. Hell is an English word that in the context of various Biblical passages is used to describe one of *two general locations* in space and time.
 - (a) **Sheol/Hades.** **First:** [Hebrew] *Sheol* or *Shachath* (the pit) and [Greek] *Hades*. Note: when the Hebrew Scriptures were translated into the Greek circa 250 B.C., the word *Hades* was used for the words *Sheol* and *Shachath*. Located under the earth, it is described as an abode for the souls of dead humans and certain demons. *See infra* (2).
 - (b) **Lake of Fire.** **Second:** [Hebrew] *Tophet/Hinnom* (place of fire) [Jer. 7:31] or [Greek] *limne pur* (lake of fire), where the souls of all unBelievers, demons, and Nephilim will spend eternity in a state of separation from God. No creature is currently in the “*lake of fire*” [Rev. 20:10-15], but it will be populated fully by all unsaved beings following the Great White Throne Judgment at the close of the Millennium. *See infra* (3). Note: the word *Sheol* in the Old Testament is sometimes used to designate the eternal Lake of Fire [Eccl. 9:10; Job 33:23-24].
- (2) **Four Compartments in Sheol/Hades.** The Bible describes *four separate compartments* in *Sheol* [Job 11:8; Isa. 14:9; Hos. 13:14; Ps. 88:3-5; 1 Sam. 2:6] or *Hades*. The four compartments are respectively: (A) Paradise; (B) Torments; (C) Tartarus; and (D) the Abyss. In many cases, the context of the passage determines which compartment of *Sheol/Hades* is meant.

COMPARTMENT A

Paradise or Abraham’s Bosom. This is the place where the soul/spirit of all Believers in the Old Testament went at Physical Death *waiting to be transferred* to the Third Heaven by the promised Messiah Himself, the LORD Jesus Christ, coterminous with His ascension per Operation Footstool. Thus, no Old Testament Believer went to the Third Heaven, but to the *holding place* of Paradise. “*Why have you disturbed me (the Prophet Samuel in Paradise) by bringing me up?*” [1 Sam. 28:15]; “*I will go to him (David’s son in Paradise, when David dies), but he will not return to me*” [2 Sam. 12:23]; Gen. 42:38; Lk. 16:19-31; 23:39-43; Hos. 13:14; Matt. 27:51-53; Ps. 16:10; 30:2-3; 116:1-5; 2 Cor. 11:25; 12:2; Acts 2:27, 31; 13:35-37; Eph. 4:8-10.

PSALM 30:2-3

O LORD my God, I [David] cried to You for help, and You healed me [after David's Rebound]. O LORD, You have brought up my soul [nephesh] from Sheol [Sheol (the Old Testament designation for the abode of the dead) – David almost died the sin unto death and as a Believer his soul/spirit would have then gone to Paradise in Hell]; You have kept me alive, that I would not go down to the pit [Physical Death].

GENESIS 42:38

But Jacob said, “My son [Benjamin was the youngest son of Jacob] shall not go down [travel to Egypt] with you [the other older brothers of Benjamin]; for his brother [Joseph] is dead, and he alone is left. If harm should befall him on the journey you are taking, then you will bring my gray hair down to Sheol [Sheol (the Old Testament designation for the abode of the dead) – as a Believer, Jacob's soul/spirit would go to the compartment called Paradise when he physically died] in sorrow.”

LUKE 16:26-31

“And besides all this, between us [the soul/spirit of the Believer] and you [the soul of the unBeliever] there is a great [megas] chasm [gulf] fixed [sterizo (to render constant)], so that those who wish to come over from here to you will not be able, and *that* none may cross over from there to us.” And he [the soul of the unsaved unBeliever rich man in Hell] said, “Then I beg you, father [Abraham], that you send him [Lazarus, the Believer in Paradise] to my father's house—for I have five brothers [unBelievers]—in order that he may warn [diamarturomai (to give a solemn testimony)] them, so that they will not also come to this place of torment [basanos (torture) – the compartment of Sheol for the unBeliever called Torments].” But Abraham said, “They have Moses and the Prophets; let them hear [akouo (to perceive the sense of what is said)] them.” But he said, “No, father Abraham, but if someone goes to them from the dead [nekros], they will repent [metanoeo (to change the mind) – about Christ]!” But he [Abraham] said to him, “If they do not listen [akouo] to Moses and the Prophets, they will not be persuaded [peitho (to convince by words)] even if someone rises from the dead [nekros – Jesus Christ would in fact rise from the dead and unBelievers on negative [-N] volition still would not believe].”

PSALM 16:10

For You [**God the Father**] will not abandon my [**Jesus**] soul [*nephesh*] to Sheol [*Sheol* (the Old Testament designation for the abode of the dead) – **Paradise or Abraham's Bosom**]; nor will You allow Your Holy One [**Jesus Christ**] to undergo decay [**Jesus' physical body would not rot away prior to His resurrection in three days**].

- (a) **Christ in Paradise.** Just prior to His ascension to the Third Heaven, the resurrected LORD Jesus Christ *descended into Paradise* and He *carried all those Old Testament Believers* [Eph. 4:8-10] who had been kept in a holding pattern until the sin bearing event occurred – for He had “*passed over the sins previously committed*” [Rom. 3:25] – to the Third Heaven. See @@@ FOOTSTOOL.

EPHESIANS 4:8-10

Therefore it says, “When He [**Jesus Christ in His resurrection body**] ascended [*anabaino*] on high [*hupsos* (of a place, heaven)], He led captive [*aichmaloteuo* (to make captive)] a host of captives [**the soul/spirit of the Old Testament Believers in Paradise**], and He gave gifts to men.” (Now this expression, “He ascended,” what does it mean except that He also had descended into the lower parts of the earth [*ge* (the land mass of the earth) – **into Paradise**]? He who descended is Himself also He who ascended far above all the heavens [*ouranos* – **He entered the Third Heaven**], so that He might fill [*pleroo* (to fill to the top) – **Operation Footstool**] all things).

- (b) **Empty.** Since the ascension of Jesus Christ leading all the Believers out of the compartment called Paradise in *Sheol/Hades*, that place is now *totally empty* as all subsequent Believers [including the Church Age] go directly to the Third Heaven at their Physical Death to be face to face “*at home with the LORD*” [2 Cor. 5:8]; Phil. 1:21-23.

2 CORINTHIANS 5:8

We [**Believers**] are of good courage, I [**Paul**] say, and prefer rather to be absent [*ekdemeo* (to go or live abroad)] from the body [*soma* – **at Physical Death the soul/spirit of the Believer departs the body**] and to be at home [*endemeo* (to be among one's own people)] with the LORD [**in the Third Heaven**].

COMPARTMENT B

Torments. This is the place where the *souls of all the unBelievers*, in all dispensations, go to at their Physical Death. It is called “*torments*” [Lk. 16:23], as well as other unpleasant descriptive language of accommodation terminology such as: “*burning*,” “*gnashing of teeth*,” and “*thirst*” [Matt. 8:11-12; 22:13; 24:51; 25:30; Lk. 13:28]. The unBeliever *remains in confinement here until he is called before the Great White Throne Judgment for a final trial* by the LORD Jesus Christ. Because the unBeliever does not possess God’s Righteousness [+R], he is judged from the book of his *ergon* (good deeds) human righteousness [-r], which only serves to condemn him [Matt. 7:21-23]. This event takes place at the end of the Millennium. Torments is found in Lk. 16:19-31; Ps. 9:17; 49:16-17; Ezk. 31:15-17; Rev. 20:13; Num. 16:30; Job 33:24. See @@@ JUDGMENT.

PSALM 9:17

The wicked [*rasha* (guilty one) – the unBeliever] will return [*shub* (to turn back from God)] to Sheol [*Sheol* (the Old Testament designation for the abode of the dead) – Torments], even all the nations who forget God.

JOB 33:24

Then let him [God] be gracious to him [the Believer], and say, “Deliver him from going down to the pit [*shachath* – Torments], I have found [*matsa* (to secure)] a ransom [*kopher* (price of a life; ransom) – under the doctrine of Soteriology Jesus Christ paid the price of sin on the cross].”

REVELATION 20:13

And the sea [*thalassa*] gave up the dead [*nekros*] which were in it [these are the Nephilim who were all killed by the waters in the Great Flood and are now held in a special compartment of Hell that is closely associated with Tartarus], and death [*thanatos* (death with the implied idea of future misery in Hell)] and Hades gave up the dead [*nekros*] which were in them [all the unBeliever humans in Torments]; and they were judged [*krino* (to separate)], every one of them according [*kata* (according to a norm or standard)] to their [good] deeds [*ergon* – the indictment at the Great White Throne Judgment lists the good deeds of the unBeliever, not his sin].

COMPARTMENT C

Tartarus. Called *tartaroo* [2 Pet. 2:4], Tartarus is the place where *certain offending demons*, the *beni ha elohim* of Gen. 6:2, are kept “*for the day of judgment*” [Jude 6]; Job 1:6; 2:1; 38:7; Dan. 3:25; Mk. 9:48-49; 1 Pet. 3:18-22; Heb. 2:9-16. Gen. 6:1-13, describes the Satanic plot to stop the coming of a human Messiah with certain fallen angels instructed to breed out the human race by copulating with human females. Their offspring were called *the Nephilim* [*ha Nephilim*] and they are confined nearby in a place termed by the way in which they were destroyed – by the waters of the Great Flood. See “*under the waters*” [Job 26:5] and “*the sea gave up the (Nephilim) dead which were in them*” [Rev. 20:13]. Before His ascension, the resurrected Jesus Christ visited Tartarus and *proclaimed His victory* to these demons [2 Pet. 2:4; 1 Pet. 3:18-20; Heb. 2:9-16]. Note: the “*Rephaim*” [1 Chron. 20:4-6; Deut. 3:11] were human “*giants*” and the Israelites who encountered them declared: “*we became like grasshoppers in our own sight*” [Num. 13:32-33].

2 PETER 2:4

For if [*First Class Condition*] God did not spare angels when they sinned [*the demons that had sex with women producing the Nephilim*], but cast them into hell [*tartaroo (the abode of the wicked) – Tartarus a compartment of Hell*] and committed them to pits of darkness, reserved [*tereo (guarded)*] for judgment [*karsis (a trial) – judged at the Great White Throne Judgment*].

JUDE 6

And angels who did not keep their own domain [*arche – a certain class of demons that had sex with human women*], but abandoned [*apoleipo (to depart)*] their proper abode [*oiketerion (habitation)*], He [*God*] has kept in eternal bonds under darkness [*zophos (blackness) – in Tartarus*] for the judgment of the great day [*Great White Throne Judgment*].

JOB 26:5

The departed spirits [*the set of demons that had sex with human women*] tremble under the waters and their inhabitants [*the Nephilim*]. Naked is Sheol [*Sheol (the Old Testament designation for the abode of the dead) – Tartarus*] before Him [*God*], and Abaddon [*a senior officer demon*] has no covering.

COMPARTMENT D

The Abyss. This is the place where the following happens:

- (a) **Demons.** Termed the “*abyss*” [Lk. 8:30-31], this is the site in the *lower parts of the earth* where certain huge demon armies reside, waiting to be released during the Tribulation [Rom. 10:7; Rev. 9:1-2; 11:7]. A senior demon commander “*Abaddon*” [Rev. 9:11; Job 26:5] is named. In addition, other demons who violate certain parameters of activity on earth during the Angelic Conflict can be sent to the Abyss now.

LUKE 8:30-31

And Jesus asked him [*the senior demon indwelling an unBeliever*], “What is your name?” And he said, “Legion [*legeon (a Roman Legion was about 5,000 men)*]”; for many demons had entered him. They were imploring Him not to command [*epitasso (to order)*] them to go away into the abyss [*abussos*].

- (b) **Super Demon.** A special high-ranking demon, *therion (a brutal, bestial man)*, will come out of the Abyss during the Tribulation to influence the rise of the Revived Roman Dictatorship [Rev. 17:8]. Also, a second demon army is located under the Euphrates River per Rev. 9:13-21.

REVELATION 17:8

The beast [*therion*] that you saw was, and is not, and is about to come up out of the abyss [*abussos (the abode of demons in the lower parts of the earth)*] and go to destruction. And those who dwell on the earth, whose name has not been written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, will wonder when they see the beast, that he was and is not and will come [*refers to Rome*].

- (c) **Jailed.** The Abyss is where Satan will be held for 1,000 years, from the 2nd Advent of Christ to the end of the Millennium [Rev. 20:1-3].

REVELATION 20:1-2

Then I saw an angel coming down from heaven, holding the key of the abyss [*abussos*] and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold of the dragon, the serpent of old, who is the devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years.

- (3) **The Lake of Fire.** The “*lake of fire*” [Rev. 20:14-15] is the *final place where all unBelievers, demons, and Nephilim* are sent following the Great White Throne Judgment. In Spiritual Death, they are all *eternally separated “away from the presence of the LORD”* [2 Thess. 1:7-9] in a status of *neshiyah (oblivion)* [Ps. 88:12] or essentially as *nothingness* [Eccl. 9:9-10]; Matt. 5:21-22, 30; 25:4; Isa. 40:43; 66:24. Rejecting grace, the basis for their indictment is that they do not possess God’s Righteousness [+R]. See Jn. 3:18-21, 36; Heb. 9:27; Eccl. 12:14; Dan. 12:2. Most descriptions of the Lake of Fire are set in *language of accommodation*. For example, Jesus often used the word *gehenna* to stand for the Lake of Fire [Mk. 9:43, 48-49; Lk. 12:5; Matt. 10:28; 23:5]. The earthly *gehenna* was a dump site outside of Jerusalem where refuse and animal remains were burned. Formally, it was near the same place, “*Topheth, ... Hinnom*,” where the apostate Jews of the Old Testament would “*burn their sons and their daughters in the fire*” [Jer. 7:31] to demons.

MATTHEW 5:22

“But I say to you that everyone who is angry with his brother shall be guilty before the court; and whoever says to his brother, ‘You good-for-nothing’ shall be guilty before the supreme court [*God’s judgment*]; and whoever says, ‘You fool’ [*moros (foolish; godless) – unBelievers denouncing the Gospel*], shall be guilty *enough to go into the fiery hell [gehenna – the Lake of Fire]*.”

MATTHEW 10:28

Do not fear those who kill the body but are unable to kill the soul [*psuche*]; but rather fear Him [*God*] who is able to destroy [*apollumi (to put out of the way entirely, abolish)*] both soul and body in hell [*gehenna – the Lake of Fire*].

2 THESSALONIANS 1:7-9

And *to give* relief to you who are afflicted and to us [*Paul’s seminary team*] as well when the LORD Jesus will be revealed from heaven with His mighty angels in flaming fire, dealing out retribution [*ekdikesis (vindication punishment)*] to those who do not know God [*unBelievers on negative [-N] volition*] and to those who do not obey [*unBelievers reject the Gospel*] the gospel of our LORD Jesus. These [*unBelievers*] will pay the penalty [*dike (a suit at law)*] of eternal destruction [*olethros*], away from the presence of the LORD [*eternal separation in the Lake of Fire*] and from the glory of His power.

MARK 9:48-49

Where their [**unBeliever**] worm does not die, and the fire [**pur**] is not quenched [**Lake of Fire is irreversible**]. For everyone will be salted with fire.

REVELATION 20:14-15

Then death [**thanatos – Spiritual Death**] and Hades were thrown into the lake [**limne (a lake)**] of fire [**pur (burning)**]. This is the second [**deuteros**] death [**thanatos**], the lake of fire [**eternal separation from God in the Lake of Fire**]. And if anyone's name was not found written [**grapho**] in the book [**biblos**] of life [**zoe – the unBeliever has been blotted out of the Book of Life**], he was thrown into the lake of fire.

DANIEL 12:2

Many [**rab (abounding in numbers)**] of those who sleep in the dust of the ground [**Physical Death**] will awake, these to everlasting [**olam (without end)**] life [**chay – the Believer gets his resurrection body**], but the others to disgrace and everlasting contempt [**the unBeliever is judged at the Great White Throne and cast into the Lake of Fire**].

MATTHEW 5:30

If your right hand makes you stumble, cut it off and throw it from you; for it is better for you to lose one of the parts of your body, than for your whole body to go into hell [**geenna – unBeliever must let nothing stop him from responding to the Gospel, so that they avoid the eternal Lake of Fire**].

ECCLESIASTES 9:9-10

Enjoy life with the woman whom you love all the days of your fleeting life which He [**God**] has given to you under the sun; for this is your reward in life and in your toil in which you have labored under the sun. Whatever your hand finds to do, do *it* with *all* your might; for there is no activity [**maaweh (work; business)**] or planning [**chashab (to invent; to think about)**] or knowledge [**daath (premeditation; knowledge)**] or wisdom [**chokmah**] in Sheol [**sheol (the abode of the dead) – the Lake of Fire**] where you [**the unBeliever**] are going.

@@@ HISTORY

- (1) **Definition.** History is the accurate understanding of the causes and effects of events and occurrences as they unfold in the ebb and flow of time.
- (2) **Jesus Christ Controls.** Although Satan is “*the ruler of this world*” [Jn. 12:31], *Jesus Christ controls history* in accordance with the Plan of God [2 Cor. 4:4; Isa. 55:11; Col. 1:16-17]. “*So will My word be which goes forth from My mouth; it will not return to Me empty, without accomplishing what I desire, And without succeeding in the matter for which I sent it*” [Isa. 55:11]. In fact, Satan cannot control his own Kingdom. See *infra* (7).

COLOSSIANS 1:16-17

For by Him [**Jesus Christ**] all things were created, *both* in the heavens and on earth, visible and invisible [*aeonatos (unseen)*], whether thrones or dominions or rulers or authorities—all things [*pas*] have been created through Him and for Him. He is before all things, and in Him all things hold together.

- (3) **Key Considerations.** Anyone who reads a “history book” is simply reading the writer’s interpretation of what he thinks drives events. In fact, it is God who controls human history which He set out long ago by His Divine Decrees in the Plan of God so that without violating the operation of human free will, the primary and precise outcome of every aspect of history is *bent around two key Divine Directives*. The “*Most High God is ruler over the realm of mankind*” [Dan. 5:21]. “*For there is no authority except from God*” [Rom. 13:1]. “*It is He who changes the times and the epochs; He removes kings and establishes kings*” [Dan. 2:21]. See @@@ HEATHENISM.
 - (a) **First Divine Will Directive: All Humans Should Be Saved.** Any human on positive [+P] volition in his soul will receive the message of salvation and be saved [Ps. 27:1]. “*He himself gives all people life and breath and all things; and made from one man, every nation of mankind to live on all the face of the earth, having determined their appointed times and boundaries of their habitation, that they would seek God*” [Acts 17:25-26]. On the other hand, those humans on [-N] volition will not respond to the Gospel under any circumstances and Satan always takes credit for their unbelief – “*the evil one comes and snatches away what has been sown*” [Matt. 13:19]. See 2 Cor. 4:4.

2 CORINTHIANS 4:4

In whose case the god of this world [*aion* (a period of time) – Satan is the ruler of the world] has blinded [*tuphloo* (to make bind)] the minds [*noema* (a mental perception)] of the unbelieving [*apistos* – the unBeliever on negative [-N] volition] so that they might not see the light [*phos*] of the gospel [*euaggelion* (good news)] of the glory [*doxa*] of Christ, who is the image [*eikon* (exact likeness)] of God.

- (b) **Second Divine Will Directive:** Believers Should Reach Maturity. God provides the necessary tools so that the Believer can learn and apply the fullness of Doctrine. “*For the eyes of the LORD move to and fro throughout the earth that He may strongly support those whose heart is completely His*” [2 Chron. 16:9]; Phil. 2:12-13; Heb. 6:1.

PHILIPPIANS 2:12-13

So then, my beloved [Paul is writing to positive [+P] volition Believers who desire to learn Bible Doctrine], just as you have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out [*katergazomai* (to perform; to accomplish; to do that from which something results)] your salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – to deliver self from a state of an adolescent Believer to the state of a mature Believer] with fear [*phobos* (respect) – the highest respect for Bible Doctrine and the Pastor/Teacher] and trembling [*tromos* (the anxiety of one who distrusts his ability completely to meet all requirements to perform a duty)]; for it is God who is at work in you, both to will and to work for *His* good pleasure [through Predestination and Election God has made it possible for the Believer to reach spiritual maturity].

- (4) **Mechanics of Control.** In conference with the two Divine Directives at *supra* (3) and looking down through the annals of time in His Omniscience, God allows certain events to occur or not to occur, but always in a manner that does not infringe on individual human free will. The Holy Spirit controls history by the following:
- (a) **Permissive Will.** In concert with his own Perfect Plan of God, God *allows/permits human free will to operate to certain degrees of functionality* in order to resolve the Angelic Conflict. God also allows indirect actions to occur under the workings of the Divine Institutions.

- (b) **Directive Will.** God's Sovereign Directive Will operates throughout human history [Isa. 40:14-15]. *See supra* (3).

ISAIAH 40:14-15

With whom did He [**God**] consult and *who* gave Him understanding [*biyn* (to discern)]? And *who* taught Him in the path of justice and taught Him knowledge and informed Him of the way of understanding? Behold, the nations are like a drop from a bucket, and are regarded as a speck of dust on the scales; behold, He lifts up the islands like fine dust.

- (c) **Preventative or Overruling Will.** God *intervenes directly* in history [Isa. 37:26]. Again, this does not alter the workings of human free will. *See @@@ DIVINE GUIDANCE at* (5)(d), regarding Balaam.

ISAIAH 37:26

Long ago I did it, from ancient times I planned it. Now I have brought it to pass, That you should turn fortified cities into ruinous heaps.

- (d) **Angels Participate.** In strict accordance with Divine directions, vast number of angels *actively participate in controlling* the “wheels” of history by “*patrolling*” the earth and performing other actions as assigned to include combat missions against humans and demons: “*‘Do not fear, for those who are with us (killer angels) are more than those who are with them’ ... And the LORD opened the servant’s eyes and he saw; and behold, the mountain was full of horses and chariots of fire all around*” [2 Kngs. 6:16-17]; Ezk. 1:4-25; 9:2-11; 10:3-22; Zech. 1:9-11; 6:1-8; Dan. 10:20; Rev. 14:14-18; 15:6-8.
- (5) **Believer in History.** To interpret history the Believer must fully understand the Plan God. As Robert E. Lee exemplified, one must endeavor *to do their duty but always acknowledge the supremacy of Divine Providence* in all things, meaning that there are no “mistakes” or “tragedies” in history. In fact, for the **Winner** Believer no disaster in life is greater than the Plan of God. Indeed, if the Believer allows the problems and details of life to get him down for any length of time, it is his own failure and fault because all mature Believers are actually above and even *outside* of human history [Ps. 27:1]. For them, God causes “*all things to work together for good*” [Rom. 8:28-31].

PSALM 27:1

The LORD is my light and my salvation [*yesha* (deliverance) – into the Kingdom of Heaven and then on to maturity]; whom shall I fear [*yare* – problems are irrelevant]? The LORD is the defense [*maoz* (a stronghold)] of my life; whom shall I dread?

GENESIS 50:20

As for you, you meant evil against me [*Joseph*], but God meant it for good in order to bring about this present result, to preserve many people alive.

ROMANS 8:28-31

And we know that God causes all things to work together for good [*agathos* – Divine Good] to those who love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] God [*only the mature Believer loves God*], to those who are called [*kletos* (called; invited to a banquet)] according to *His* purpose [*prothesis* (a predetermined plan)]. For those whom He foreknew [*proginosko* (to have knowledge beforehand)], He also predestined [*proorizo* (to decide beforehand) – provisions in time to get the Believer to maturity] to become conformed to the image of His Son, so that He would be the firstborn [*Jesus' resurrection*] among many brethren; and these whom He predestined, He also called; and these whom He called, He also justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – God's [+R]]; and these whom He justified, He also glorified [*doxazo* (to honor) – giving of rewards]. What then shall we say to these things? If God *is* for us, who *is* against us?

- (6) **Dispensational Theology.** A Believer properly oriented to the Plan of God must fully understand the *doctrine of dispensations*. For instance, under the concept of freedom there will always be national entities throughout human history [Matt. 24:7; 2 Chron. 15:6; Rev. 20:8]. In turn, God blesses a client nation when there is a large number of “*mature*” [Eph. 4:13] Believers via the pivot. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS; @@@ PIVOT.
- (7) **Satan's Frustration.** Human sin greatly *frustrates Satan's rulership* of the world. “*Therefore, just as through one man sin entered into the world, and death through sin, and so death spread to all men, because all sinned*” [Rom. 5:12].

@@@ HOLY SPIRIT

- (1) **Definition.** God the “*Holy Spirit*” [1 Cor. 6:19] is the Third Person of the Godhead Trinity. The Holy Spirit is absolutely *coequal and coeternal* in essence with the Father and Son. See 2 Cor. 13:17; 1 Cor. 2:10-11; 3:16; 12:11; Acts 5:3-4; Ps. 143:10; Gen. 1:1-2; Isa. 6:8-9; cf. Acts 28:25; Isa. 63:10; Jer. 31:31-34; cf. Heb. 10:15-17. See @@@ TRINITY.

GENESIS 1:1-2

In the beginning God created [*bara*] the heavens [*shamayim*] and the earth [*erets* – this action took place in the unknown past and resulted in a perfect universe and earth]. The earth was [*became*] formless [*tohu*] and void [*bohu (waste)*], and darkness was over [*al (covered)*] the surface of the deep [*tehom (deep waters)*] – as a consequence of the Angelic Conflict, the earth was corrupted and suffered negatively due to angelic sin, to the point of being frozen in an icepack], and the [*Holy*] Spirit of God was moving over the surface of the waters [*mayim* – at some point in time God then restored the earth in the “six” days of restoration of life to the planet].

- (a) **God.** The Holy Spirit is called God *kurios (LORD)* in the Bible [2 Cor. 3:17].

2 CORINTHIANS 3:17

Now the LORD [*kurios (God)*] is the Spirit [*pneuma – Holy Spirit*], and where the Spirit of the LORD is, *there* is liberty [*eleutheria (liberty to do or to omit things having no relationship to salvation) – the Christian Way of Life*].

- (b) **Jehovah.** The Holy Spirit is called God, *Jehovah* [Isa. 6:8-9].

(2) The Old Testament.

- (a) **Salvation.** The Holy Spirit *convicts the unBeliever of his helpless state* vis-a-vis the Perfect Holiness of God [Jn. 16:7-11; 1 Cor. 2:11-14; Gen. 6:3; 2 Cor. 3:14-18; Eph. 1:13; Rom. 1:6; 9:24]. As in the Church Age, in the Old Testament period the Holy Spirit regenerated – to be “*born again*” [Jn. 3:5-7; 1 Pet. 1:23] – the Believer at the point of salvation, creating a human spirit. See @@@ SALVATION.

JOHN 3:5-7

Jesus answered [**Nicodemus**], “Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born [**gennao (to be born)**] of water [**hudor – the water of the Gospel**] and the Spirit [**pneuma – the salvation ministry of the Holy Spirit to save the unBeliever**] he cannot enter into [**eiserchomai (to come in or go out)**] the kingdom of God. That which is born of flesh [**sarx**] is flesh [**sarx – the unBeliever**], and that which is born of the [**Holy**] Spirit [**pneuma**] is spirit [**pneuma – the Believer’s human spirit given at the point of salvation**]. Do not be amazed that I [**Jesus Christ**] said to you, ‘You must [**dei (it is necessary)**] be born again [**anōthen (of things which come from heaven)**].’”

- (b) **No Indwelling.** The Holy Spirit **did not Indwell** anyone in the Old Testament [Jn. 14:17]. He could be **para (beside)** a particular Old Testament Believer, but never **en (in)** as in all Church Age Believers.
- (c) **Fellowship.** All Old Testament “Fellowship” with God by the Believer was **via the Faith/Rest technique** [Ps. 37:1-7; Heb. 11]. See @@@ FAITH; @@@ REBOUND.
- (d) **Endue.** The Holy Spirit was given as a power source to **endue a few Believers** to assist them to perform special functions: (1) Joseph [Gen. 41:38]; (2) artists [Ex. 28:3; 31:3]; (3) Moses’ seventy elders [Num. 11:25]; (4) Joshua [Num. 11:25; 27:18]; (5) Othniel [Jdg. 3:10], (6) Gideon [Jdg. 6:34], (7) Jephthah [Jdg. 11:29], (8) Samson [Jdg. 14:6; 15:14]; (9) certain Kings of Israel [1 Sam. 10:9-10; 16:13]; (10) Daniel [Dan. 4:8; 5:11-12; 6:3]; (11) David [Ps. 51:11]; and (12) all the writers of Holy Scripture [1 Pet. 1:11].
- (e) **Departs.** This enduement or “resting” of the Holy Spirit **could be taken away** or depart from the Old Testament Believer, e.g., under Divine Discipline [1 Sam. 16:14; Ps. 51:11; Lk. 11:13].

1 SAMUEL 16:14

Now the [**Holy**] Spirit of the LORD departed [**sur (to turn aside)**] from Saul, and an evil [**ra**] spirit [**ruach**] from the LORD terrorized [**baath**] him [**Per the doctrine of demonism, God allowed a demon to torment King Saul who was in the state of reversionism**].

PSALM 51:11

Do not cast me [King David] away from Your [God] presence and do not take [laqach (to take from)] Your Holy Spirit [ruach] from me.

- (f) **Ask.** The Old Testament Believer could request the enduement of the Holy Spirit [2 Kngs. 2:9-10; Lk. 11:13; Jas. 1:17]. In this context, Jesus gave, *para*, the Holy Spirit to endue certain Old Testament Jerusalem Believers, His disciples, without their request in order to sustain them for the 10 days until the start of the Church Age at Pentecost [Jn. 20:22].

LUKE 11:13

If you then, being evil [*phoneros* – humans all possess an Old Sin Nature], know how to give good gifts to your children [*teknon*], how much more will *your* heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to those who ask Him [Old Testament Believers could ask for the enduing of the Holy Spirit]?

- (g) **Christ Glorified.** Jesus Christ had to be glorified per Operation Footstool before the Holy Spirit could be given for Indwelling the Believer in the Church Age [Jn. 7:39; 14:16-17, 26].
- (3) **In the New Testament.**
- (a) **Enables Salvation.** God the Holy Spirit enables the salvation of the Believer *exactly as in the Old Testament* [2 Cor. 6:2].

2 CORINTHIANS 6:2

For He [the Holy Spirit] says, “At the acceptable time [God’s timing is perfect] I [God the Holy Spirit] listened to you [the unBeliever on positive [+P] volition], and on the day of salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – salvation] I helped you [the Holy Spirit ensures Gospel hearing].” Behold, now is “the acceptable time,” behold, now is “the day of salvation.”

1. **Common Grace.** The Holy Spirit *takes the place of a human spirit* to make the Gospel understandable to the unBeliever who has no human spirit. See 1 Cor. 2:11-14; Gen. 6:3; Jn. 16:8-11; 2 Thess. 2:13.

2. **Efficacious Grace.** God the Holy Spirit takes the positive [+P] volition unBeliever's faith [any amount] and *makes it effectual for salvation*. See Eph. 1:13; 2:8-9; Rom. 8:28-30; 9:24; 11:29; 1 Cor. 1:2, 9, 26; Gal. 1:14; Matt. 9:13; 1 Tim. 6:12; 1 Pet. 2:9.

EPHESIANS 2:8-9

For by grace [*charis* – grace is the total Plan of God] you have been saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven and guaranteed eternal security] through faith [*pistis* – the mechanics of salvation is by faith]; and that [the speck of human faith exhaled plus the entire package of what God does in grace] not of yourselves, *it is* the gift [*doron* (a gift)] of God; not as a result of [human] works [*ergon*], so that no one may boast [*kauchaomai* (to boast on account of a thing) – because the Holy Spirit takes the individual's faith output and makes it efficacious for salvation no one can boast about their so-called amount of faith exhaled upon hearing the Gospel].

- (b) **Human Spirit.** God the Holy Spirit *creates a human spirit* which immediately merges with the human soul of that new Believer [Jn. 1:13; 3:3-7; Tit. 3:5; 1 Cor. 2:12]. This process is called being “*born again*” [1 Pet. 1:23] into the family of God. Again, this action also occurred in the Old Testament period at the moment of salvation but as part of the mystery doctrine, only the Church Age Believer is a member of the Royal family of God. See @@@ MYSTERY.
- (c) **Baptizes.** The Holy Spirit *baptizes each Believer* in the Church Age into Union with Christ at the moment of salvation [Eph. 4:4-5; 1 Cor. 12:13]. This is a supernatural *dry baptism and is not manifested with any special phenomena*, nor felt by the new Believer as an emotion. *But see infra* (c)(1). See @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST.

EPHESIANS 4:4-5

There is one body [*soma* – all Believers are in Union with Christ] and one [Holy] Spirit, just as also you were called [*kaleo* (to utter with a loud voice)] in one [*heis*] hope [*elpis* (confidence)] of your calling; one LORD [*kurios* (God) – Jesus Christ the Savior], one faith [*pistis* – salvation by faith alone in Christ alone], one baptism [*baptisma* – the dry baptism mechanics of the Holy Spirit accomplished at salvation].

1. **Predicted.** Jesus Christ predicted this dry baptism which started the Church Age [Jn. 14:20; Acts 1:5; Matt. 16:15] and initial manifestations on certain Believers in Jerusalem were extremely overt, e.g., tongues of fire over their heads [Acts 11:15-17].
 2. **Mechanics of the Baptism.** Once and for all the Believer is identified with Jesus Christ in His unique death. Retroactive Positional Truth. *See* 1 Cor. 12:13 [aorist]; Eph. 4:5; Col. 2:12; 3:4; Rom. 6:3-4; 1 Pet. 3:21. *See* @@@ BAPTISM.
 3. **Resolves Angelic Conflict.** The dry baptism of the Holy Spirit resolves the Angelic Conflict [Heb. 2:7-15]. While Satan always takes credit for Believers that fail, his forces of evil cannot defeat a **Winner** Believer because “*greater is He that is in you than he that is in the world*” [1 Jn. 4:4]. *See* @@@ DEMONISM.
 4. **Basis for Current Positional Truth.** At salvation, the Believer is entered into Union with the LORD Jesus Christ [Eph. 1:3-6; Col. 3:1] and shares His Sonship, Heirship, and Eternal Life.
- (d) **Indwells.** The Holy Spirit Indwells the body of every Believer in the Church Age. *See* 1 Cor. 3:16; 6:19-20; 1 Jn. 3:23-24; 4:4; Rom. 8:9; 11:29; Gal. 3:2; 4:6; Jn. 7:39; 14:16-17; Acts 2:38; 11:16-17.

GALATIANS 3:2

This is the only thing I [Paul] want to find out from you: did you receive the Spirit [Indwelling of the Holy Spirit] by the works of the Law [Mosaic Law], or by hearing [the Gospel] with faith [*pistis* – saving faith in Jesus Christ]?

1. **Temple.** The Holy Spirit makes the Believer’s body a “*temple*” [1 Cor. 3:15-18; 6:19] for the Indwelling of Jesus Christ [Jn. 1:14; 7:49; 16:14; 2 Cor. 6:16; Heb. 9:5; Rom. 8:11].

1 CORINTHIANS 6:19

Or do you [the Believer] not know [*heneka* (on account of)] that your body [*soma*] is a temple of the Holy Spirit who is in you, whom you have from God, and that you are not your own [the Believer is in the Royal Family of God]?

2. **Enables Metabolization.** Believers metabolize Bible Doctrine via the action of the Holy Spirit. See @@@ OPERATION Z.
- (e) **Divine Dynasphere.** At salvation, the Holy Spirit enters the Believer into the Divine Dynasphere where the Believer is “*filled with the [Holy] Spirit*” [Eph. 5:18]. See @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE.
- (f) **Seals.** The Holy Spirit “*seals*” all Believers for eternal security and as an absolute guarantee of the blessings of the escrow account “*rewards*” [2 Jn. 8]. See 2 Cor. 1:22; Eph. 1:13-14; 4:30; Rev. 7:2-8.

2 CORINTHIANS 1:22

Who [*God the Holy Spirit*] also sealed [*sphragizo (to set a seal upon) – eternal security*] us [*Believers*] and gave *us* the Spirit [*God the Holy Spirit*] in our hearts as a pledge [*arrhabon (money which in purchases is given as a pledge or down payment)*].

- (g) **Spiritual Gift.** The Holy Spirit gives at least one of the spiritual “*gifts*” to each Believer for service [1 Cor. 12:4-12]. See @@@ GIFTS.
- (4) **Indwells Forever.** Along with Jesus Christ and God the Father, the Holy Spirit will Indwell the Believer for all eternity in the resurrection body [Jn. 14:16].
- (5) **Filling of Holy Spirit.** The Holy Spirit’s post salvation ministry is centered on the Church Age Believer being “*filled with the [Holy] Spirit*” [Eph. 5:18] as he advances to spiritual maturity. *It is the power source!* See @@@ REBOUND; @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES.

EPHESIANS 5:17-18

So then do not be foolish, but understand what the will of the LORD is [*reaching maturity*]. And do not get drunk with wine, for that is dissipation [*asotia (a dissolute life) – self-induced misery*], but be filled [*pleroo (to make full)*] with the Spirit [*stay in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit by Rebound*].

- (a) **Command to Walk.** Believers are commanded to “*walk by the [Holy] Spirit*” [Gal. 5:16] in their daily lives. See @@@ WALKING.

- (b) **An Absolute Status.** At any given moment the Believer is either “*spiritual*” *pneuma* [1 Cor. 3:1], in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit, or “*carnal*” [1 Cor. 3:3 KJV] *sarkinos*, out of Fellowship with the Holy Spirit. See 1 Jn. 3:4-9; Gal. 5:16-17. This is the *absolute concept of spirituality* [the *relative* side of spirituality is growing up to spiritual maturity]. *The Holy Spirit is integral in each category of spirituality.* In the Church Age, the Christian Way of Life for the Royal Family of God is a *supernatural way of life* and demands a supernatural and non-meritorious means of execution – the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. While an unBeliever can follow the Divine Institutions, no unBeliever can be Filled with God the Holy Spirit. See Rom. 5:5; 8:1-4; 1 Jn. 3:5-6, 9; Gal. 2:21. See @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.

GALATIANS 5:16-17

But I [Paul] say, walk by the [Holy] Spirit [Fellowship by Rebound], and you will not carry out the desire [*epithumia* (lust)] of the flesh [*sarx* – the lust patterns of the Old Sin Nature]. For the flesh sets its desire against the [Holy] Spirit, and the [Holy] Spirit against the flesh; for these are in opposition to one another, so that you may not do the things that you please [*thelo* (to intend; to desire) – the Believer must reject the influences of the OSN].

1 CORINTHIANS 3:1, 3

And I brethren, could not speak to you as to spiritual [*pneuma* – Believers in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit and growing in their spiritual life] men, but as to men of flesh [*sarkinos* (carnal) – Believers under control of the Old Sin Nature], as to infants in Christ ... for you are still fleshly. For since there is jealousy and strife among you, are you not fleshly, and are you not walking like mere men [*imitating Believers*]?

- (c) **Lost and Found.** Spirituality – Filling of the Holy Spirit – for the Believer is lost through *personal sin and recovered immediately through use of the Rebound technique* per 1 Jn. 1:9. Again, at any given moment in life the Believer is either *spiritual* or *carnal*.
- (d) **Grace System.** The Filling of God the Holy Spirit is not based on human emotion or something that can be worked for, it is a grace system. See Rom. 16:17; 18:2; 2 Cor. 6:11-12; Gal. 3:2-6.

- (e) **Operational.** The Holy Spirit is the *power source* for learning Bible Doctrine! The Filling of the Holy Spirit *guides the Believer to the truths* of Bible Doctrine so that he can learn the “*mind of Christ*” [1 Cor. 2:16]. “*But when He, the Spirit of truth, comes, He will guide you into all truth ... He will glorify Me, for He will take of Mine and will disclose it to you*” [Jn. 16:13-14]. Thus, the Believer’s “*faith would not rest on the wisdom of men, but on the power of God*” [1 Cor. 2:5]. See 1 Cor. 2:9-16; Jn. 14:26; 16:12-16; 2 Cor. 3:16-18; 4:6; Rom. 5:3-5; 8:9; 1 Jn. 2:27. See *infra* (5); @@@ OPERATION Z.

1 CORINTHIANS 2:12-13

Now we have received, not the spirit of the world [*Cosmic Systems*], but the [*Holy*] Spirit who is from God, so that we may know the things freely given to us by God, which things we [*Paul and his team*] also speak, not in words taught by human wisdom, but in those taught by the Spirit, combining spiritual [*pneumatikos (relating to the human spirit)*] *thoughts* with spiritual *words*.

- (f) **Glorify God.** Believers *glorify God* through the Filling of the Holy Spirit [Phil. 1:20-21; Eph. 4:30]. Indeed, every second logged in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit is subject to some degree of “*rewards*” [2 Jn. 8]. Thus, it is critical that the Believer stays in Fellowship and does not “*quench the [Holy] Spirit*” [1 Thess. 5:19] by committing personal sins. See @@@ REWARDS.

1 THESSALONIANS 5:19

Do not quench [*sbennumi (to extinguish)*] the [*Holy*] Spirit.

- (g) **Priesthood.** Being “*filled with the [Holy] Spirit*” [Eph. 5:18] is a function of the Royal Priesthood and is not subject to the Levitical priesthood [Rom. 8:2-4; 10:4; 13:8; Gal. 5:18; 1 Pet. 2:9].
- (h) **Guidance.** The Filling of the Holy Spirit provides Divine guidance for the Believer [Rom. 8:14-16]. See @@@ DIVINE GUIDANCE.
- (i) **Prayer.** All prayer by the Believer must be made when Filled with God the Holy Spirit so that the Believer is prepared to “*pray at all times in the [Holy] Spirit*” [Eph. 6:18]. See @@@ PRAYER.

EPHESIANS 6:18

With all prayer [*proseuche* (prayer addressed to God)] and petition pray at all times [*kairos* (a fixed and definite time)] in [Fellowship with] the [Holy] Spirit, and with this in view, be on the alert with all perseverance [*proskarteresis*] and petition for all the saints [*hagios* (set apart ones)].

- (j) **Worship Activity.** All forms of Christian worship to include learning Bible Doctrine and the LORD's Supper *must be done when* “filled with the [Holy] Spirit” [Eph. 5:18]. See Jn. 4:24; Phil. 3:3.

PHILIPPIANS 3:3

For we [Believers on positive [+P] volition to Bible Doctrine] are the *true* circumcision [*peritome*], who worship in the Spirit of God [Rebound and producing the full fruit of the Holy Spirit at spiritual maturity] and glory [*doxa*] in Christ Jesus and put no confidence [*peitho* (to make friends with; to trust)] in the flesh [*sarx* – human good].

- (k) **Divine Good.** Every second of the Filling of the Holy Spirit produces Divine Good [1 Cor. 3:12-14].
- (l) **Descriptions.** Being consistently “filled with the [Holy] Spirit” [Eph. 5:18] is also described by Paul as to “walk by the [Holy] Spirit” [Gal. 5:16, 25] and “to walk ... according to the [Holy] Spirit” [Rom. 8:2-5]. John also described the Filling of the Holy Spirit as Believers who “walk in the Light” [1 Jn. 1:7]. Peter described the Filling of the Holy Spirit as being “partakers of the Divine nature” [2 Pet. 1:4].

ROMANS 8:4-5

So that the requirement [*dikaionoma* (the force of a right law)] of the Law [*nomos* – the Mosaic Law demands Perfection] might be fulfilled [*pleroo*] in us, who do not walk [*peripateo* (lifestyle)] according to the flesh [*sarx* – the Old Sin Nature controlling the Believer] but according to the Spirit [the Believer walking in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit]. For those who are according to the flesh set their minds [*phroneo* (to think)] on the things of the flesh [sin and human good], but those who are according to the [Holy] Spirit, the things of the [Holy] Spirit.

- (m) **Fruit.** By reaching spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1] the positive [+P] volition Believer produces the “*fruit*” [Gal. 5:22-23] of the Holy Spirit. Such fruit is the byproduct of the Christian Way of Life and *increases in quantity and quality* as the Believer reaches the higher progressive levels of spiritual maturity. A top fruit is the use of *agape impersonal love* as one of the Divine problem solving devices. In turn, this allows the Believer to *have a Fellowship relationship* with God the Father and Jesus Christ. “*If anyone loves Me, he will keep My word; and My Father will love him, and We will come to him and make Our abode with him (Fellowship)*” [Jn. 14:23]; 2 Jn. 9; Eph. 1:3-6, 12; 4:6. “*My Father is glorified by this, that you bear much fruit, and so prove to be my disciples*” [Jn. 15:8]; Job 35:4-8; Rom. 4:2.

GALATIANS 5:22-23

But the fruit [*karpos* (production)] of the [Holy] Spirit is love [*agape – impersonal love*], joy [*chara*], peace [*eirene*], patience [*makrothumia*], kindness [*chrestotes* (integrity; moral goodness)], goodness [*agathosune* (uprightness of life)], faithfulness, gentleness [*prautes* (mildness of disposition)], self-control; against such things [the Believer at spiritual maturity operating in the Divine Dynasphere] there is no law [*nomos*].

(6) Sin and the Holy Spirit.

- (a) **Unpardonable Sin.** The unBeliever resists the Holy Spirit’s ministry to provide salvation by refusing the Gospel [Acts 7:51; Jn. 16:8-11]. Resisting of the Holy Spirit will result in the *unpardonable sin* called “*blasphemy against the [Holy] Spirit*” [Matt. 12:31-32; Mk. 3:28-29; Jn. 3:18-21]. Jesus Christ did not die on the cross for the sin of rejecting the Gospel. “*Therefore I said to you that you will die in your sins; for unless you believe that I am He, you will die in your sins*” [Jn. 8:24].
Note: The Believer cannot commit this unpardonable sin.

MARK 3:28-29

“Truly I say to you, all sins shall be forgiven the sons of men, and whatever blasphemies they utter [Jesus Christ did not die for the sin of rejection of the Gospel]; but whoever blasphemes against the Holy Spirit never has forgiveness, but is guilty of an eternal sin [the unpardonable sin].”

ACTS 7:51

You men [**Stephen speaking to Jews**] who are stiff-necked [*sklerotrachelos* (stubborn; obstinate)] and uncircumcised in heart and ears are always resisting [*antipto* (to strive against)] the Holy Spirit [**they will not respond to the Holy Spirit's common and efficacious grace**]; you are doing just as your fathers did [**most Jews were unBelievers**].

- (b) **Not Filled.** When out of Fellowship with God the Holy Spirit the Believer is said to: “*lie to the Holy Spirit*” [Acts 5:1-3]; “*grieve the Holy Spirit*” [Eph. 4:30]; and “*quench the [Holy] Spirit*” [1 Thess. 5:19]. Without using Rebound, Believers remain in perpetual carnality.
- (7) **Restraining.** The restraining ministry of the Holy Spirit *counters the forces of demonism from destroying the human race*. It will be removed at the Rapture of the Church giving Satan the opportunity to fulfill his arrogant boast to construct a “perfect environment” [2 Thess. 2:6-7].

2 THESSALONIANS 2:6-7

And you [**Believers**] know what restrains [*katecho* (to hold back)] him [**Satan**] now, so that in his time he will be revealed [**during the Tribulation Satan will have vast powers**]. For the mystery of lawlessness [*anomia* (the condition without law)] is already at work [**Satan is the ruler of the world now**]; only he [**God the Holy Spirit**] who now restrains [**God controls history**] *will do so* until he [**the Holy Spirit**] is taken out of the way [**at the Rapture of the Church**].

- (8) **Holy Spirit and Scripture.** Without altering their personality or style, God the Holy Spirit directly *moved the writers* of the Bible to pen the Word of God – “*the sword of the [Holy] Spirit, which is the word of God*” [Eph. 6:17]; “*men moved by the Holy Spirit spoke from God*” [2 Pet. 1:20-21].
- (9) **Holy Spirit and Bible Doctrine.** Pastor/Teachers [other means in other dispensations were provided to include Prophets and the Levitical priests] are provided by the Holy Spirit to teach Bible Doctrine to Believers – “*the Spirit said to him (Peter), ... get up, go downstairs and accompany them without misgivings, for I have sent them Myself*” [Acts 10:19-20]. “*You bore with them (Jews) for many years, And admonished them by Your [Holy] Spirit through Your prophets*” [Neh. 9:30].

(10) Holy Spirit and Jesus Christ.

- (a) **23 Pure Male Chromosomes.** God the Holy Spirit supernaturally provided to Mary the “*male*” genetic material to conceive the Savior, so *Jesus was born perfect* – “*the Child who has been conceived in her is of the Holy Spirit*” [Matt. 1:18-21]; Lk. 1:35; Heb. 10:5-10.
- (b) **Jesus Indwelt and Filled.** Jesus was Indwelt and Filled by the Holy Spirit “*without measure*” [Jn. 3:34]. “*Jesus of Nazareth, how God anointed Him with the Holy Spirit*” [Acts 10:38]. See Jn. 1:32; Lk. 4:1, 14-18; Isa. 11:2-3; 42:1; 61:1-2; Matt. 3:16; 12:18. The Holy Spirit guided Jesus during His earthly ministry [Matt. 4:1; Isa. 61:1].

MATTHEW 4:1

Then Jesus was led up by the [Holy] Spirit into the wilderness [*eremos (deserted places)*] to be tempted [*peirazo (to test; to make a trial)*] by the devil.

- (c) **Power.** Jesus used the power of the Holy Spirit and not His own Deity, e.g., to *perform miracles*, unless absolutely in the Plan of God provisions; Jesus used His own Deity to read the minds of the religious leaders [Matt. 12:25]. See Lk. 4:18-21; Matt. 12:28; Acts 10:38.
- (d) **The Cross.** Jesus and was *sustained in part by the Holy Spirit* while on the cross – “*who through the eternal [Holy] Spirit*” [Heb. 9:13-14].
- (e) **Resurrection.** The Holy Spirit assisted in the resurrection of Jesus Christ and will provide every Believer with his own indestructible resurrection body in the future [Rom. 8:11; 1 Pet. 3:18].

ROMANS 8:11

But if the Spirit [God the Holy Spirit] of Him who raised [*egeiro (to cause to rise)*] Jesus from the dead [*nekros (physical death)*] dwells [*oikeo*] in you [the Believer], He [Holy Spirit] who raised Christ Jesus from the dead will also give life [*zoopoieo (to produce alive)*] to your mortal [*thnetos (liable to death)*] bodies [*soma – the Believer will get a resurrection body*] through His Spirit [the Holy Spirit performs this task] who dwells in you.

@@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION/CHRIST

- (1) **Definition.** In the person of Jesus Christ are “*two natures, inseparably united, without mixture or loss of separate identities, without loss or transfer of properties or attributes, the union being personal and eternal.*” The Greek word to describe this union is *hupostasis* (to take on a substance) [Heb. 1:3]. In turn, the title Christ, *christos* [in the Greek] is the exact equivalent of the Hebrew word Messiah, *mashiyach* [Dan. 9:25]. Both words mean (the anointed one). “*Because the LORD has anointed Me (Messiah) to bring good news*” [Isa. 61:1] of providing salvation to sinful man. “*You are the Christ, the Son of the Living God*” [Matt. 16:16]. See Jn. 4:7-41; 1 Jn. 5:1.

JOHN 4:25-26

The woman said to Him [Jesus of Nazareth], “I know that Messiah [*Messias* (anointed)] is coming (He who is called Christ); when that One comes, He will declare all things to us.” Jesus said to her, “I who speak to you am *He*.”

- (2) **No Transfer of Attributes.** The hypostatic union is Divine and personal. Undiminished Deity and true humanity come together as the Incarnate Union. There is *no loss of attributes* from either side and *no transfer of attributes* between His Deity and His humanity, making Jesus Christ the unique person of the universe – Deity remains Deity and humanity remains humanity. Thus, the LORD Jesus Christ was weak and strong at the same time. On the cross Jesus stated, “*I thirst*” [Jn. 4:6-7; 19:28], while at that very moment He was upholding the universe “*by the word of His power*” [Heb. 1:3-8; Col. 1:17]; 1 Tim. 3:16; Heb. 2:9; 13:8; Phil. 2:5-11, 26; Jn. 1:1-14; 8:24, 58; 10:30-33; Rom. 1:2-5; 9:5; Isa. 7:14; 9:6-7; Matt. 1:23; 2:2; Mk. 2:5-10; Rev. 1:17-18.

PHILIPPIANS 2:6-9

Who, although He [Jesus Christ] existed in the form of God [Trinity], did not regard equality with God a thing to be grasped, but emptied Himself, taking the form of a bond-servant [in accordance with the predetermined Plan of God], and being made in the likeness of men. Being found in appearance as a man, He humbled Himself by becoming obedient to the point of death [*thanatos* – Spiritual Death], even death on a cross [*stauros*]. For this reason also, God [the Father] highly exalted Him, and bestowed on Him the name which is above every name.

- (3) **Jesus Christ is God.** Jesus Christ is a full member of the Trinity. “*Jesus is the Son of God ... This is the true God and eternal life*” [1 John 5:5, 20]. The “*Child shall be called the Son of God*” [Lk. 1:24]. “*And they all said, ‘Are You the Son of God, then?’ And He said to them, ‘Yes, I am’*” [Lk. 22:70]. See Mic. 5:2; Rom. 9:5; Jn. 1:1-5, 29-30; 5:18; 8:58; 10:30; Tit. 2:13; Heb. 1:8-10; Col. 1:15; Isa. 9:6; 44:8. “*He was in the beginning with God*” [Jn. 1:2]. As a *true mediator* – true God and true humanity – He agreed to fulfill the Plan of God by taking on human form and dying Spiritual Death on the cross for the sins of the world. See Heb. 9:15; 1 Tim. 2:5; Jn. 1:1-2; Ps. 2:7-9; 22:1-6; 40:7 [cf. Heb. 10:5-7]; 110:1; Dan. 9:7.

JOHN 1:1-5

In the beginning was the Word [*logos – Jesus Christ*], and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He [*Jesus Christ*] was in the beginning with God [*Trinity*]. All things came into being through [*dia (by means of)*] Him, and apart from Him nothing came into being that has come into being. In Him was life, and the life was the Light of men [*the only means of salvation*]. The Light [*the Plan of God to save mankind*] shines in the darkness [*skotia – the Cosmic Systems*], and the darkness did not comprehend [*katalambano (to lay hold of with the mind; to seize upon) – negative [-N] volition*] it.

ISAIAH 9:6

For a child will be born to us, a son [*Jesus*] will be given to us; and the government will rest on His shoulders [*the true King of Israel rules forever*]; and His name will be called [*the following describes His character*] Wonderful Counselor [*the perfect advisor*], Mighty God [*Jesus Christ is God*], Eternal Father [*the Creator and Sustainer of all things*], Prince of Peace [*Jesus will reconcile man with Perfect God by His atoning work on the cross*].

JOHN 1:29-30

The next day he [*John the Baptist*] saw Jesus coming to him and said, “Behold, the Lamb of God who takes away the sin [*hamartia – Spiritual Death and sin*] of the world [*kosmos – Jesus Christ provided unlimited atonement*]! This is He on behalf of whom I said, ‘After me comes a Man [*aner (nobleman)*] who has a higher rank than I, for He existed before [*protos (first in time or place) – Jesus Christ as the 2nd Person of the Trinity*] me.’”

(4) **Pre-Incarnate Work.**

- (a) **Creation.** All acts of creation were done by the LORD Christ and He continues to *hold the universe together*. “*I Myself am working*” [Jn. 1:3; 5:17]. “*For by Him all things were created, both in the heavens and on earth, visible and invisible. ... all things have been created through Him and for Him. He is before all things, and in Him all things hold together*” [Col. 1:16-17]; Jn. 1:3; Heb. 1:1-4, 10; Gen. 1:1.

HEBREWS 1:1-3

God ... in these last days [*hemera – the Church Age mystery period*] has spoken to us in His Son [*Jesus Christ*], whom He appointed heir of all things, through whom also He [*Jesus Christ*] made the world [*aion (the universe)*]. And He is the radiance [*apaugasma (reflected brightness)*] of His glory [*doxa – all three members of the Trinity share the same essence*] and the exact representation of His nature [*hupostasis (the thing put under; substructure) – in hypostatic union Jesus Christ is still God*], and upholds [*phero (to carry)*] all things by the word [*rhema (that which has been uttered by a living voice)*] of His power [*dunamis (inherent power)*]. When He had made purification [*katharismos (a cleansing from sins) – the work of Jesus Christ on the cross*] of sins [*hamartia*], He sat down at the right hand of the Majesty on high [*Operation Footstool*].

- (b) **As a Theophany.** In the Old Testament, Jesus Christ made visible appearances in various forms. See @@@ THEOPHANY.
- (5) **Humanity of Jesus.** Jesus Christ is true humanity minus an Old Sin Nature and without Adam’s original sin imputed at His virgin birth [Isa. 7:14; Lk. 1:30-35]. Born perfect, *He never committed a sin*. See *supra* (17). At His Physical Death: (1) His body went into the grave [Lk. 23:53]; (2) His soul went to Paradise [Lk. 23:43; Acts 2:27, 31; 13:35-37; Eph. 4:9; Ps. 16:10]; and (3) His human spirit went to the Third Heaven [Lk. 23:46; Jn. 19:30].

LUKE 23:46

And Jesus, crying out [*phoneo (to speak loudly)*] with a loud voice, said, “Father [*pater*], into Your hands I commit [*paratithemi (to set forth)*] My [*human*] spirit [*pneuma*].” Having said this, He breathed His last.

PSALM 16:10

For You [God the Father] will not abandon my [Jesus] soul [*nephesh*] to Sheol [*Sheol* (the Old Testament designation for the abode of the dead) – Paradise or Abraham's Bosom]; nor will You allow Your Holy One [Jesus Christ] to undergo decay [Jesus' physical body would not rot away prior to His resurrection in three days].

LUKE 23:43

And He [Jesus] said to him, "Truly I say to you [the thief being executed next to Jesus], today [*semeron* (this very day)] you shall be with Me in Paradise [*paradeisos* – Paradise or Abraham's Bosom is a separate compartment in Hell which was the temporary abode of Old Testament Believers]."

- (6) **The Name.** LORD *Kurios* [Deity] Jesus *Iesous* [humanity] Christ *Christos* [the anointed mission]. He is absolutely *coequal* with the Father and the Holy Spirit. See Jn. 5:18; 6:63; 10:30; Gal. 4:6; Acts 16:6-7; Phil. 1:19; 2 Cor. 4:4; Ps. 110:1; Isa. 44:6; Matt. 22:41-46. See *supra* (3).

PSALM 110:1

The LORD [*Jehovah* – God the Father] says to my LORD [*adonay* (the title for God spoken in place of Jehovah) – Jesus Christ]: "Sit at My right hand until I make Your enemies [*ayab* (to be hostile to)] a footstool for Your feet [Operation Footstool]."

MATTHEW 22:41-46

Now while the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them a question: "What do you think about the Christ [*Christos* (the anointed one; Messiah)], whose son [*uihos*] is He?" They said to Him, "The son of David." He said to them, "Then how does David in the Spirit [David wrote Scripture under the ministry of the Holy Spirit] call Him 'LORD' [*kurios* (God)], saying, 'The LORD [*kurios* (God)] said to My LORD [*kurios* (God)], sit at My right hand, until I put Your enemies [*echthros* (hostile)] beneath Your feet [Operation Footstool]'"? "If David then calls Him 'LORD [*kurios* (God)],' how is He his son?" No one was able to answer Him a word, nor did anyone dare from that day on to ask Him another question.

JOHN 5:18

For this reason therefore the Jews were seeking all the more to kill [*apokteino* (to kill in any way whatever)] Him [*Jesus*], because He not only was breaking the Sabbath [*Jewish leadership distorted the Mosaic Law*], but also was calling God His own Father, making Himself equal with God.

2 CORINTHIANS 4:4

In whose case the god of this world [*Satan is the ruler of the world*] has blinded the minds of the unbelieving [*apistos – the unBeliever on negative [-N] volition*] so that they might not see the light of the gospel [*euangelion* (good news)] of the glory of Christ, who is the image [*eikon* (exact likeness)] of God.

- (7) **The Anointed One.** Messiah/Christ. “*Jesus is the Christ*” [1 Jn. 5:1]. The *Son of God* became man to save the world. In order for the humanity of Christ to qualify as Savior, Jesus was born without an Old Sin Nature [OSN] which passes down to all other humans as follows: male sex cells divide into sperm cells [23 chromosomes] without loss of genetic material. On the other hand, through meiosis and polar bodies, the female sex cell casts off “contaminated” genetic nuclei leaving an ovum with 23 “pure” chromosomes. When the contaminated male sperm links to the pure female ovum during copulation [making 46 chromosomes], it immediately contaminates the new biological life. Furthermore, *at the same time that God imputes human life to the biological life at birth, making each human physically alive, God also imputes Adam’s original sin, making all babies spiritually dead*. Thus, for Jesus to be born Perfect, the Holy Spirit provided 23 pure male chromosomes to Mary’s ovum so that Jesus was born without an OSN and with no subsequent imputation of Adam’s original sin at His birth [Lk. 1:35; Matt. 1:18]. Because Jesus was “*born of a woman*” [Gal. 4:4-5] as the promised human Savior born from “*her seed*” [Gen. 3:15], He is called the “*last Adam*” [1 Cor. 15:45] and the “*second man*” [1 Cor. 15:47]. Jesus was born as Adam was created – Perfect in His being. See 1 Tim. 3:16; Heb. 10:5-7; Ps. 2:7-9.

ISAIAH 44:6

Thus says the LORD, the King of Israel and his Redeemer [*gaal – Jesus Christ is the God of Israel and the Savior of the world*], the LORD of Hosts: “I am the first and I am the last, and there is no God besides Me.”

GENESIS 3:15

And I will put enmity [*eybah* (hatred)] between you [*Satan*] and the woman, and between your seed [*zera* – unBelievers in Satan’s Cosmic Systems] and her seed [*Believers*]; He [*the Perfect seed of the woman in hypostatic union, Jesus Christ*] shall bruise [*shuph* (to crush)] you on the head [*rosh* – Satan and sin will be destroyed], and you shall bruise [*shuph*] him [*Jesus Christ*] on the heel [*aqeb* – Christ will suffer the venom of Satan, which is Spiritual Death, on the cross].

LUKE 1:35

The angel [*aggelos*] answered and said to her [*Mary*], “The Holy Spirit will come upon [*eperchomai* (to come; to arrive)] you [*to provide 23 pure male chromosomes to fertilize her egg*], and the power of the Most High will overshadow [*episkiazo* (to envelop in a shadow)] you; and for that reason the holy Child [*Jesus*] shall be called the Son of God.”

HEBREWS 10:5-7

Therefore, when He [*Jesus Christ*] comes into the world [*kosmos*], He says, “Sacrifice and offering You [*God the Father*] have not desired [*thelo* (to take delight in; to desire) – the rituals of the Mosaic Law are teaching tools and cannot provide salvation], but a body [*soma*] You [*the Holy Spirit*] have prepared [*katartizo* (to equip; to arrange)] for Me [*Jesus*]; in whole burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin [*hamartia*] You have taken no pleasure. Then I said, ‘Behold, I [*Jesus Christ*] have come [*heko* (to arrive)] (in the scroll of the book it is written of Me) [*all the Old Testament prophecies about Jesus Christ*] to do your will [*thelema* (what one determines shall be done) – to die on the cross for all sin], O God [*God the Father*].”

PSALM 2:7-9

I will surely tell of the decree of the LORD: He [*God the Father*] said to Me [*God the Son*], “You are My Son, today I have begotten You. Ask of Me, and I will surely give the nations as Your inheritance, and the very ends of the earth as Your possession. You shall break them with a rod of iron, you shall shatter them like earthenware [*2nd Advent of Jesus Christ, He will come to judge the world*].”

1 CORINTHIANS 15:47

The first man [Adam] is from the earth [ge], earthy; the second man [Jesus Christ] is from heaven [ouranos].

1 TIMOTHY 3:16

By common confession, great is the mystery of godliness [eusebeia – the Church Age mystery doctrines]: He [Jesus Christ] who was revealed in the flesh, was vindicated [dikaioo (to render righteous)] in [by] the [Holy] Spirit, seen by angels, proclaimed among the nations, believed on in the world [kosmos – humans in every generation will accept the gift of salvation], taken up [analambano – the resurrection and acceptance of Jesus Christ by God the Father per Operation Footstool] in glory [doxa – essence of the Trinity].

- (8) **Promised Messiah.** As predicted throughout the books of the Old Testament, *Jesus of Nazareth was the promised Messiah* [Christ] who fulfilled each and every prophecy about Him in the Bible. Indeed, the Jews of His day rightly anticipated His coming per Dan. 9:24-26; Matt. 2:1-8. “*We have found the Messiah (which translated means Christ.) He brought him to Jesus*” [Jn. 1:41-42]. “*Yes, LORD; I have believed that You are the Christ, the Son of God, even He who comes into the world*” [Jn. 11:27]. In fact, if Jesus was not the promised Messiah, then no one else in history qualifies or can even make the claim – the Romans obliterated the Jewish Temple’s genealogy records in A.D. 70 so that no Jew can now prove his tribal lineage.

- (a) **Abraham.** Jesus Christ was both the “*son of Abraham*” [Matt. 1:1] and the “*God of Abraham*” [Gen. 50:24]. See Gen. 12:1-3.

GENESIS 12:3

And I [God] will bless those who bless you [Abram], and the one who curses you I will curse. And in you all the families of the earth will be blessed [as the descendent of Abraham, Jesus Christ alone provides salvation].

- (b) **Jacob.** Jesus was descended through the line of Jacob [Gen. 32:9-12].
- (c) **Judah.** Jesus Christ was from the rulership tribe of “*Judah*” [Gen. 49:10], where all Jewish Kings must come [Heb. 1:8-9; cf. Ps. 45:6-7].

GENESIS 49:10

“The scepter shall not depart from Judah [**the tribe of Judah**], nor the ruler’s staff from between his feet, Until Shiloh [*shiylah* (an epithet of the Messiah)] comes, and to him *shall be* the obedience of the peoples.”

- (d) **David’s Son.** Jesus of Nazareth was of the family of David through the line of Nathan. “*Jesus, Son of David, have mercy on me*” [Mk. 10:47]. “*How is it that they say the Christ is David’s son?*” [Lk. 20:41]. See Ezk. 37:24-28; 2 Sam. 7:12-13.

2 SAMUEL 7:12-13

When your [**David**] days are complete and you lie down with your fathers [**Physical Death**], I [**God**] will raise up your descendant [*zera* (offspring) – **Jesus Christ**] after you, who will come forth from you, and I will establish his kingdom. He shall build a house [*bayith* (household; family)] for My name, and I will establish the throne of his kingdom forever.

EZEKIEL 37:24

My servant David [**King David died 500 years prior**] will be king over them [**at the 2nd Advent the LORD Jesus Christ, the direct descendant of King David, will rule over the Jews forever**], and they will all have one shepherd; and they will walk in My ordinances and keep My statutes and observe them.

- (e) **Enters Jerusalem on a Donkey.** See Zec. 9:9; Mk. 11:7-9.
- (f) **Virgin.** Jesus was *born of a virgin* [Isa. 7:14; Gen. 3:15]. The Hebrew word for virgin is *almah* (virgin; young woman) as in the Isa. 7:14 prophecy about the Messiah. While *almah* can also be interpreted as “young woman,” when the *Septuagint* [translation of Hebrew Bible into Greek by 70 Jewish scholars] was written about 200 years prior to the birth of Jesus, the Jewish scholars used the Greek word *parthanos* (a woman who has never had sexual intercourse) to translate the Hebrew *almah* in Isa. 7:14. The Greek word *parthanos* unequivocally means a virgin and never a young woman. Again, *parthanos* has only this single meaning and the *Septuagint* did not use the Greek word *numphe* (young woman; bride) to translate the Hebrew word *almah* in Isa. 7:14.

ISAIAH 7:14

Therefore the LORD Himself will give you a sign: Behold, a virgin will be with child [*hareh (pregnant)*] and bear a son, and she will call His name Immanuel [*(God with us)*].

- (g) **Bethlehem.** Jesus was born in David's Bethlehem [Mic. 5:2].

MICAH 5:2

But as for you, Bethlehem Ephrathah, *too* little to be among the clans of Judah, from you One [*Jesus Christ*] will go forth for Me [*God*] to be ruler in Israel. His goings forth [*motsaah (origin; place of going out from)*] are from long ago, from the days of eternity [*olam (forever, always)*].

- (h) **Die for the Sins of the World.** See Ps. 22; Isa. 53.
- (9) **Humanity of Christ.** Jesus was Filled and Indwelt by God the Holy Spirit and *quickly reached spiritual maturity in His humanity* by the maximum intake of Bible Doctrine [Lk. 1:80; 2:40, 52; Heb. 5:8; Matt. 4:1-11].

LUKE 2:40

The Child [*Jesus*] continued to grow and become strong, increasing [*pleroo (to make full)*] in wisdom; and the grace [*charis*] of God was upon Him.

LUKE 2:52

And Jesus kept increasing in wisdom [*sophia*] and stature [*helikia (length of life; in height and comeliness of stature)*], and in favor with God and men.

- (10) **Expressions of Deity, Humanity, or Both.**
- (a) **Attributes True of the Whole Person.** He is the “*King of Kings*” [Rev. 17:14], “*the Messiah*” [Matt. 16:15-16], and the “*Lamb of God*” [Jn. 1:19]. See also Matt. 11:28; Col. 1:14; Jn. 6:47.
- (b) **Attributes True of the Deity but the Whole Person is the Subject.** Jesus said, “*before Abraham was born, I am*” [Jn. 8:57-58]; Heb. 1:3.

- (c) **Attributes True of the Humanity but the Whole Person is the Subject.** Jesus prayed: “*My Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass from Me*” [Matt. 26:39].
 - (d) **Described According to His Divine Nature but the Predicate is on the Human Nature.** Jesus said: “*I was dead, and behold, I am alive forevermore, and I have the keys of death and of Hades*” [Rev. 1:18].
 - (e) **Described According to His Human Nature but the Predicate is on the Divine Nature.** “*Son of Man*” [Jn. 6:62] nomenclature describes His human nature but going up “*to where He was before*” is His Deity.
 - (f) **Described According to His Divine Nature but the Predicate is on Both Natures.** Jesus’ “*authority to execute judgment*” [Jn. 5:25-27].
 - (g) **Described According to His Human Nature but the Predicate is on Both Natures.** As prophesied, Jesus cried out: “*My God, My God, why have you forsaken Me?*” [Matt. 27:46; Ps. 22:1]; Jer. 30:21.
- (11) **Use of His Deity.** Jesus restricted the exercise of His Deity and *never used His Deity to sustain His humanity*. See Jn. 1:43-51 [seeing Nathanael]. He remained under the Holy Spirit’s power [Phil. 2:7; Matt. 4:1; 12:8; Lk. 4:14, 18]. Flashes of His Deity, Transfiguration, did occur [Jn. 18:6; Matt. 17:2].

JOHN 18:6

So when He [**Jesus**] said to them, “I am [**eimi**] *He*,” they [**the arresting contingent**] drew back and fell to the ground.

- (a) **On the Cross.** The Holy Spirit helped sustain Jesus Christ on the cross – “*who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself*” [Heb. 9:14].
- (b) **Equality.** Jesus Christ *did not seek to maintain equality* with God per Phil. 2:6, but took on humanity to fulfill the Plan of God. See Jn. 12:50.

JOHN 12:50

I [**Jesus**] know that His commandment is eternal life [**to believe in Christ**]; therefore the things I speak, I speak just as the Father has told Me.

- (12) **Necessity of Hypostatic Union.** Jesus Christ: “*He is the mediator*” [Heb. 9:15] between God and man. A true *mediator must be equal to both parties* [1 Tim. 2:5-6; Job 9:2-3, 32-33; Jer. 30:21]. Because Jesus Christ is true God and true humanity, He represents both parties in solving the sin barrier issue.

JEREMIAH 30:21

“Their [*the Jewish people*] leader [*addiyr (great one; majestic one)*] shall be one of them [*the Messiah*], and their ruler [*mashal (to exercise dominion) – Messiah will rule forever*] shall come forth from their midst; and I [*God the Father*] will bring him near and he shall approach Me [*only the Perfect human Jesus Christ in a resurrection body is qualified to approach Perfect God*]; for who would dare to risk his life [*Perfect God can only condemn imperfect mankind*] to approach Me?” declares the LORD.

JOB 9:33

There is no umpire [*yakach – a mediator that is equal to God and man*] between us [*between Perfect God and all humans*], who may lay his hand upon us both [*to represent both parties and bring them together*].

- (a) **Jesus Christ is the Firstborn.** Only Jesus Christ has a resurrection body now and is “*the firstborn of all creation*” [Col. 1:15], as all Church Age Believers will get a resurrection body exactly like His at the Rapture of the Church. See Phil. 3:10-11, 21; 1 Jn. 3:2.
- (b) **Jesus Christ as the Believer’s High Priest.** In the new priesthood, He must be a man to represent a man. Jesus was not from the tribe of Levi. He is a new type of Priest after “*the order of Melchizedek*” [Heb. 7:4-28], the King as well as the High Priest of Salem.
- (c) **Jesus Christ as the Promised Davidic King.** Only the God/man could rule forever and ever as promised to King David. Joseph was the legal “stepfather” of Jesus [Solomon’s line in Matt. 1]. In Joseph’s line the 14th descendant of David through Solomon was the evil King Jeconiah [Matt. 1:11]. However, because Jeconiah’s bloodline was cut off per Jer. 22:30, Joseph could not be in the blood line of the Messiah, but Mary could as her line came from *David’s son Nathan* [Lk. 3:23-31; Jer. 23:5-6; 33:14-22; Ezk. 37:24; 2 Sam. 7:8-16; Ps. 2:7; 89:20-37].

- (d) **Jesus Christ as the Savior.** Deity cannot die on the cross [Heb. 2:14-15; 10:5-10]. Jesus Christ provided a substitutionary Spiritual Death “*for*” *huper* (on behalf of) all humanity per Gal. 3:13; Rom. 5:8; 1 Pet. 3:18; 1 Cor. 11:24. *See also* Jn. 1:29; 1 Cor. 5:7; Heb. 9:13-14; Rom. 8:31; Ex. 12:5; Lev. 1:3; Gen. 3:15. *See @@@ CROSS.*
- (13) **Temptation and Sin.** Jesus Christ never committed a sin. He was *not able to sin* [Deity] *and able not to sin* [humanity].
- (a) **Deity is Not Temptable, it is Impeccable.** *See* Jas. 1:13; Matt. 4:7.
- (b) **His Humanity is Temptable and Peccable.** “*Which one of you convicts Me of sin?*” [Jn. 8:46]. “*He appeared in order to take away sins; and in Him there is no sin*” [1 Jn. 3:5]. Jesus “*offered Himself without blemish to God*” [Heb. 9:14]; Heb. 4:15; 1 Pet. 2:22-23.

1 PETER 2:22-23

Who [**Jesus Christ**] committed no sin [*hamartia – never committed a personal sin*], nor was any deceit found in His mouth [**Jesus never committed a mental attitude sin**]; and while being reviled [*loidoreo* (to heap abuse upon)], He did not revile in return; while suffering [*pascho – on the cross*], He uttered no threats, but kept entrusting [*paradidomi* (to give into the hands of another)] Himself to Him [**in accordance with the Plan of God**] who judges righteously.

- (c) **Copper Around Iron. In Hypostatic Union the LORD Jesus Christ is Temptable but Impeccable.** *See* 2 Cor. 5:21. The analogy of taking a *copper wire* [His humanity] and *wrapping it around an iron crowbar* [His Deity] is descriptive – the two items remain separate but form a new thing. The essence of Deity cannot be changed [iron], but to alter a single attribute of His humanity [copper] would destroy the Union.

2 CORINTHIANS 5:21

He [**God the Father**] made Him [**Jesus Christ**] who knew no sin [**Jesus never committed sin and had no Old Sin Nature**] *to be sin* [*hamartia – He took the judgment for all sin while on the cross*] on our behalf [*huper* (as a substitute for)], so that we might become the righteousness [*dikaiosune – God’s Perfect Righteousness* **[+R]** *is imputed to the Believer for salvation*] of God in Him.

(14) **Titles of Jesus Christ.**

- (a) **Arm** – His work to provide salvation. “*The LORD has bared His holy arm*” [Isa. 52:10]; 40:10; 52:10; 53:1; 59:1; 63:12; Ps. 89:13-15.
- (b) **Son of God** – “*You are my Son, today I have begotten You*” [Ps. 2:7]. “*I will be his father and he shall be My son*” [1 Chron. 17:13]. See Jn. 1:18; 6:46; 8:37; 20:31; 1 Tim. 6:16; 1 Jn. 4:12; 5:10-13; Matt. 3:17.
- (c) **Son of David** – “*Have mercy on me, LORD, Son of David*” [Matt. 15:22]; Acts 2:30; 2 Sam. 7:9-16; Matt. 20:30-31; 21:9, 15; Jer. 33:14-22. His humanity came through the line of David, the Davidic dynasty.
- (d) **LORD of LORDS and King of Kings** – Rev. 17:14; 19:16; Ezk. 10:16. Christ’s human family is the Royal Family of Church Age Believers – “*but now you are the people of God*” [1 Pet. 2:9-10]; Eph. 1:5.
- (e) **Son of Man** – Dan. 7:13-14. The prophetic title “*Son of Man*” was used by Jesus Christ for Himself more than any other. This title *communicated exactly to the religious leaders of the day who He was* – a human that was also God [Matt. 16:13, 27-28; 17:9, 12, 22; 18:11; 19:28; 20:18, 28; 24:27, 30, 37, 39, 44; 25:13, 31; 26:2, 24, 45, 64; Mk. 2:10, 28; 8:31, 38; 9:9, 12, 31; 10:33, 45; 13:32, 34; 14:21, 41, 62]!

DANIEL 7:13-14

I [Daniel] kept looking in the night visions; and behold, with the clouds of heaven One like a Son of Man [Jesus Christ] was coming, and He came up to the Ancient of Days [God the Father] and was presented before Him. And to Him [Jesus Christ] was given dominion [*sholtan (sovereignty)*], Glory and a kingdom, that all peoples, nations and *men of every* language might serve Him [Believers]. His dominion is an everlasting dominion which will not pass away; and His kingdom is one which will not be destroyed.

- (f) **The Light** – Isa. 9:2; 49:6; 60:1; Jn. 1:4; 8:12; 2 Sam. 23:4. “*This is the judgment, that the Light has come into the world, and men loved the darkness rather than the Light, for their deeds were evil. For everyone who does evil hates the Light and does not come to the Light, for fear that their deeds will be exposed*” [Jn. 3:19-20].

-
- (g) **The Messiah** (the anointed one) – Dan. 9:26; Isa. 61:1; Jn. 4:25. His mission of appointment to go to the cross. The equivalent Greek word is *christos* (Christ). “*Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God*” [Jn. 20:31].
 - (h) **Prince of Peace; Wonderful Counselor** – “*For a child will be born to us; a son will be given to us, and the government will rest on His shoulders; and His name will be called Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Eternal Father, Prince of Peace*” [Isa. 9:6]. This title refers to His work of making reconciliation between God and imperfect man.
 - (i) **Branch** – Isa. 1:11; 4:2; 60:21; Jer. 23:5-6; 33:15-16; Zech. 3:8; 6:12.
 - (j) **Lamb of God** – Jn. 1:28; Rev. 13:8. Old Testament animal sacrifices were *shadows of Christ's work*, focused on His mission to die for sin.
 - (k) **Good/Great Shepherd** – Jn. 10:11-18; Heb. 13:20.
 - (l) **I Am** (*hayah* (the self-existing one)) – “*I AM WHO I AM; and He said, ‘Thus you shall say to the sons of Israel, I AM has sent me to you’*” [Ex. 3:14]; Jn. 8:58.
 - (m) **Redeemer** – Jer. 50:34; Job 19:25; Isa. 44:6, 24; 47:4; 48:17; 54:8; 59:20; 60:16. To buy back unBelievers from sin's slave market. “*Thus says the LORD (Jesus Christ) your Redeemer, ... ‘I am the LORD, your Holy One, the Creator of Israel, your King’*” [Isa. 43:14-15].
 - (n) **Alpha & Omega** – Rev. 1:8. “*I am the Alpha and the Omega, the first and the last, the beginning and the end*” [Rev. 22:13].
 - (o) **The Holy One of Israel** – Isa. 29:23; 37:23; 48:17.
 - (p) **Savior** – “*I, even I, am the LORD, And there is no savior besides Me*” [Isa. 43:11]. See Isa. 45:15; 60:16; Heb. 2:14-15.
 - (q) **The Breaker** – “*The breaker goes up before them*” [Mic. 2:13].
 - (r) **Teacher** – Jn. 13:13. Jesus Christ consistently taught Bible Doctrine.
 - (s) **Chief Cornerstone** – “*Himself being the corner stone*” [Eph. 2:20].

- (t) **The Prophet** – Deut. 18:18-19; Jn. 1:21; 6:14; Acts 3:22. Moses' prediction of "*the Prophet*" who must be heard and precisely obeyed.

DEUTERONOMY 18:18-19

I will raise up a prophet [*nabiy* (spokesman) – **Jesus Christ**] from among their countrymen [**Jews**] like you [**Moses**], and I will put My words in his mouth, and he shall speak to them all that I command him. It shall come about that whoever will not listen to My words which he shall speak in My name [**Gospel**], I Myself will require [*darash* (to require, of blood)] *it* of him.

- (u) **The Rock** – 1 Cor. 10:4; Isa. 26:4; Matt. 16:18; Ex. 17:6. "*The Rock! His work is perfect, for all His ways are just*" [Deut. 32:4].
- (v) **Leader/Ruler** – Jer. 30:21.
- (w) **Master** – Lk. 17:13.
- (x) **Servant** – Phil. 2:7; Isa. 42:1; 52:13; 53:11; and *Mark*.
- (y) **Pillar of Fire** – Ex. 13:21-22; 40:34-38. Guiding the Hebrews.
- (z) **The Sunrise** – Sent by God the Father and the Holy Spirit, Jesus Christ at the First Advent. "*Because of the tender mercy of our God, With which the Sunrise from on high will visit us*" [Lk. 1:78]; Mal. 4:2.
- (aa) **Umpire/Mediator** – "*He is the mediator*" [Heb. 9:15]; Job 9:33; 1 Tim. 2:5. Jesus Christ is the only bridge as true God and true human.
- (bb) **Shiloh** – Ezk. 21:26-27. Representing heavenly peace.
- (cc) **The LORD of Hosts** – Isa. 3:1; 48:2.
- (dd) **Seed of the Woman** – Gen. 3:15. The first prophecy of the Savior.
- (ee) **Pillar of Cloud** – 1 Cor. 10:2; Ex. 13:21-22; 40:34-38.
- (ff) **The Word** – "*In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God*" [Jn. 1:1]; 1 Cor. 1:18; Rev. 19:13.

- (gg) **The Righteous One** – “*By His knowledge the Righteous One, My Servant, will justify the many, As He will bear their iniquities*” [Isa. 53:11]; Heb. 10:38.
- (hh) **Holds the Keys** – “*I have the keys of death and Hades*” [Rev. 1:18].
- (ii) **The Bright Morning Star** – “*I am the root and the descendant of David, the bright morning star*” [Rev. 22:16]. As the Creator, Jesus’ title is eternal. The creature Satan abrogated a similar title, “*star of the morning*” [Isa. 14:12] by sin. See @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT.
- (15) **Old Testament Documentation.** See Heb. 1:5-13 for numerous Old Testament quotations about the Messiah: (1) Heb. 1:5 [Ps. 2:7; 2 Sam. 7:14]; (2) Heb. 1:6 [Ps. 97:7]; (3) Heb. 1:7 [Ps. 104:4]; (4) Heb. 1:8 [Ps. 45:6]; (5) Heb. 1:9 [Ps. 45:7; Isa. 61:1-3]; and (6) Heb. 1:10-13 [Ps. 102:25-27; 110:1].
- (16) **Christ’s 2nd Advent.** Jesus Christ returns to the earth at the 2nd Advent to wage “*war*” [Rev. 19:11-16] *against demons and unBelievers and to rule the earth for 1,000 years*. See Isa. 63:1-6; Zech. 14:3-4; Rev. 1:12-18.

ISAIAH 63:1-3

Who is this who comes from Edom, with garments of glowing colors from Bozrah, this One who is majestic in His apparel, marching in the greatness of His strength [**Jesus Christ at the 2nd Advent**]? “It is I [**Christ**] who speak in righteousness, mighty to save.” Why is Your apparel red, and Your garments like the one who treads in the wine press? I have trodden the wine trough alone, and from the peoples there was no man with Me [**only Christ died for sin**]. I also trod them [**unBelievers at the 2nd Advent**] in My anger and trampled them in My wrath; and their lifeblood [*netsach* (blood; gore)] is sprinkled on My garments, and I stained all My raiment.

REVELATION 19:12-13, 15

His eyes are a flame of fire ... He is clothed with a robe dipped in blood ... From His mouth comes a sharp sword, so that with it He may strike down the nations, and He will rule them with a rod of iron; and He treads the wine press of the fierce wrath of God, the Almighty [**on unBelievers at the 2nd Advent**].

@@@ INDWELLING OF CHRIST

- (1) **Definition.** At the moment of salvation, Jesus Christ Indwells – *enoikeo* (indwell) – *the body of every Church Age Believer* as one of the Forty Things that God provides for the new Believer. This is part of the mystery information of the Church Age. See Col. 1:26-27; Jn. 14:20; 17:22-23; Rom. 8:10; 2 Cor. 13:5; Gal. 2:20; 1 Jn. 2:24. In addition, God the Father and God the Holy Spirit also Indwell every Believer in the Church Age. See Jn. 14:23; Eph. 4:6; 2 Jn. 9 [God the Father]; Rom. 8:11; 1 Cor. 3:16; 6:19-20; 2 Cor. 6:16 [God the Holy Spirit]. See @@@ MATURITY; @@@ MYSTERY.

COLOSSIANS 1:26-27

The mystery which has been hidden from the *past* ages and generations, but has now been manifested to His saints [*hagios* (set apart ones)], to whom God willed to make known what is the riches [*ploutos* (riches; wealth)] of the glory [*doxa*] of this mystery [*musterion* – the mystery doctrine of the Church Age] among the Gentiles [*ethnos*], which is Christ in you [all Believers have the Indwelling of Christ], the hope [*elpis*] of glory [a guarantee of the Believer's resurrection body and eternal security].

- (2) **Baptism by Holy Spirit.** God the Holy Spirit Indwells the Believer and also prepares a place in the Believer's body, *a Temple*, for the Indwelling of Jesus Christ at the instant of salvation [1 Cor. 3:16; 6:19-20; Rom. 8:11]. This fact also serves as a function of Retroactive and Current Positional Truth. See Gal. 2:20; 3:37; Rom. 6:1-8; Col. 2:12; 3:1. See @@@ SOTERIOLOGY.
- (3) **Indwelling Understood.** The Indwelling of Christ is reflected in the life of the **Winner** Believer upon reaching spiritual "*maturity*" [Heb. 6:1] when that Believer has obtained a fellowship relationship with Christ by the intake of Bible Doctrine. "*I will not be put to shame in anything, but that with all boldness, Christ will even now, as always, be exalted in my body, whether by life or by death*" [Phil. 1:20]; 2 Cor. 3:14-18; Gal. 4:19; 1 Jn. 3:23-24.

GALATIANS 4:19

My [Paul] children, with whom I am again [*palin* (repetition of action)] in labor until Christ is formed [*morphoo*] in you [Paul taught Bible Doctrine so Believers could grow to spiritual maturity and have the thinking of Christ].

- (4) **Church Age Only.** Neither God the Father, the Holy Spirit, nor Jesus Christ Indwelt Believers in any of the other dispensations. The prophecy of the Indwelling of Christ for all Believers in the Church Age, regardless of their spiritual growth status, was proclaimed by Jesus [Jn. 14:19-20; 17:22-23, 26].

JOHN 17:26

And I [Jesus Christ] have made Your [God the Father] name known to them [the Plan of God], and will make it known, so that the love [agape (to love dearly)] with which You loved [agapao (to love dearly)] Me may be in them, and I in them.

- (5) **Indwelling is Permanent.** As with God the Father and the Holy Spirit, the Indwelling of Christ is *permanent and cannot be lost* by the Church Age Believer, even in the status of reversionism. See Jn. 14:20; 2 Cor. 13:5; Rom. 8:10; Gal. 2:20; Col. 1:27; 1 Jn. 2:24. See @@@ REVERSIONISM.
- (6) **Fellowship with Christ is Not Permanent.** As with maintaining a fellowship relationship with God the Father, having a *fellowship relationship* with the LORD Jesus Christ is for the **Winner** “*mature*” [Eph. 4:13] Believer *only*. “*You are My friends (fellowship) if you do what I command you*” [Jn. 15:13-16]. Accordingly, the fellowship relationship with Jesus Christ can be lost by the Believer who goes into reversionism [Rev. 3:20; 2 Cor. 13:5], which means that the Believer must consistently use Rebound and remain on positive [+P] volition towards Bible Doctrine all his life. “*If anyone loves Me, he will keep My word; and My Father will love him, and We will come to him and make Our abode with him (fellowship with God and Jesus)*” [Jn. 14:23].

REVELATION 3:20

Behold, I [Jesus Christ] stand at the door [to the Believer’s volition] and knock [the Suffering of warning Divine Discipline]; if [Third Class Condition] anyone hears [akouo (to consider what is or has been said)] My voice and opens the door [positive [+P] volition to Bible Doctrine], I will come in to him and will dine [deipneo (to have supper) – Fellowship with Christ] with him, and he with Me.

- (7) **Shekinah Glory.** The relationship of the Old Testament’s Shekinah Glory and the Indwelling of Christ.

- (a) **God of Israel.** The Hebrew noun *shekinah* (to dwell) and *kabod* (glory) spoke to Christ as the God of Israel. *See, e.g.,* Lev. 26:11-12; Lk. 1:68. Jesus Christ dwelled between two golden cherubs [which represented the Righteousness and Justice of God] set out on opposite sides of the mercy seat lid on top of the Ark. *See* Ex. 25:21-22. *See* Rom. 3:13-14, 25; Ps. 99:1; Isa. 37:16; Hab. 2:20; 1 Kngs. 8:10; 2 Chron. 5:13-14; 7:1-3; 1 Sam. 4:4, 19; Num. 3:4; 26:61; Lev. 10:12; 16:1-2.
- (b) **Exodus.** During the Exodus from Egypt, the visible manifestation of the Shekinah Glory was the *cloud and the pillar of fire* that led the people from place to place. This represented security and guidance for the Hebrews [Ex. 13:21-22; 40:34-38]. For other visible signs of the “*glory*” of Christ *see* Ex. 16:10; Lev. 9:23; Num. 14:10; 16:19, 42; 20:6.
- (c) **Ritual for the Shekinah Glory.**
 - 1. **Day of Atonement.** Only the High Priest was permitted into the Holy of Holies once a year on the Day of Atonement. Under the Mosaic Law the High Priest made an initial animal sacrifice for his own personal sins and then one for the sins of the people. *See* Ex. 40:35; Lev. 16:1-34; Num. 15:25; Heb. 9:6-7.

HEBREWS 9:6-7

Now when these things have been so prepared, the priests are continually entering the outer tabernacle performing the divine worship, but into the second [*Holy of Holies*], only the high priest *enters* once a year, not without *taking* blood [*representing the substitutionary death of Christ*], which he offers for himself and for the sins of the people committed in ignorance.

- 2. **The Ark.** When the Jews used the Ark as a *good luck charm* disaster followed as in 1 Sam. 4:4-11.

1 SAMUEL 4:10-11

So the Philistines fought and Israel was defeated, and every man fled to his tent; and the slaughter was very great, for there fell of Israel thirty thousand foot soldiers. And the ark of God was taken; and the two sons of Eli, Hophni and Phinehas, died.

- (d) **Christ's Relationship.** Christ was “*among*” [Lev. 26:11; Jn. 1:14] the Hebrews, but is now “*in*” [2 Cor. 6:16; Rom. 8:11] all Church Age Believers. Paul changed the Old Testament quotation to show this.
 - (e) **Shekinah Glory in Structures.** (1) The Tabernacle; (2) Solomon's Temple [Ezk. 10:1-19]; (3) Zerubbabel's Temple [the 2nd Temple]; (4) in the Tribulation [no Shekinah Glory, Matt. 24:15; Rev. 11:1]; (5) Millennium Temple [Isa. 40-47]; (6) in the Third Heaven [Rev. 11:19; 13:6; 15:5; 21:4, 11, 22-23].
- (8) **Purpose of Indwelling.**
- (a) **Badge.** Insignia of Royalty as a member of the Royal Family of God.
 - (b) **Saved.** A sign of eternal security [Col. 1:7; Heb. 13:5].
 - (c) **Rewards.** Jesus Christ as the Escrow Officer [2 Cor. 5:10; Eph. 1:3].
 - (d) **Motivate.** The Believer's spiritual growth [Gal. 2:20; Rev. 3:20].
 - (e) **Relationship.** Basis of a “God relationship” [1 Jn. 2:24].
 - (f) **Walking.** Occupation/Fellowship with Jesus Christ [Eph. 2:10].
 - (g) **Glory.** Basis for glorification of Christ [Jn. 15:5, 8; 17:22-23, 26].
- (9) **Indwelling and Fellowship.** Indwelling never departs the Believer, but constant evaluation is required to reach maturity so that the Believer can have a *fellowship relationship* with Jesus Christ [2 Cor. 13:5]. *See supra* (6).

2 CORINTHIANS 13:5

Test [*peirazo* (to ascertain his quality)] yourselves [*Rebound*] *to see* if you are in the faith [*pistis* – the positive [+P] volition Believer learning Bible Doctrine in order to accelerate to maturity]; examine yourselves! Or do you not recognize this about yourselves, that Jesus Christ is in you [*for the purpose of Fellowship*]*—unless indeed you fail the test* [*adokimos* (not standing the test) – Believer in reversionism]?

@@@ JEALOUSY

- (1) **Definition.** Jealousy is “*feeling or showing envy of someone or their achievements and advantages.*” Listed as a sin in the Ten Commandments [*chamad* (covet; envy)] per Ex. 20:17, it is one of the *strongest of the mental attitude sins* and produces resentment, hatred, and bitterness particularly in a rivalry situation. As in the parable of the “*landowner*” paying “*laborers for his vineyard*” the same “*wages*” for different hours of work. “*Is it not lawful for me to do what I wish with what is my own? Or is your eye envious because I am generous?*” [Matt. 20:15]; 1 Cor. 3:3; Prov. 27:3-4.

PROVERBS 27:3-4

A stone is heavy and the sand weighty, but the provocation [*kaas* (anger)] of a fool [*eviyil*] is heavier than both of them. Wrath is fierce and anger is a flood, but who can stand before jealousy [*qinah* (ardor of anger)]?

1 CORINTHIANS 3:3

For you [*Believers*] are still fleshly [*sarkikos* (carnal) – the Believer under the control of the OSN]. For since there is jealousy [*zelos*] and strife among you, are you not fleshly, and are you not walking like mere men [*unBelievers*]?

- (2) **Old Testament Offerings.** Jealousy was so devastating to civil society that the Mosaic Law had special Rebound Levitical offerings. One was for jealousy with cause and another for jealousy without cause [Num. 5:11-31].
- (3) **Destroys Love, Friendship, Family.** “*Jealousy is as severe as Sheol*” [S.S. 8:6]. It can destroy Category II [marriage] and Category III [friendship] love. The Prodigal Son’s “*older*” brother resented with unrelenting bitterness his father’s celebration for his once “*lost*” brother’s return [Lk. 11:25-32]!
- (4) **Destroys the Soul.** Left unchecked, “*jealousy kills the simple*” [Job 5:2] by destroying the normal functions of the soul. See Prov. 14:30.
- (5) **Seeks Revenge.** Jealousy always seeks revenge and “*enrages a man*” [Prov. 6:34-35]. For example, Saul became perpetually jealous of David when the people praised him for his victory over Goliath. “*Saul looked at David with suspicion from that day on* (and sought to kill David)” [1 Sam. 18:9].

PROVERBS 6:34-35

For jealousy [*qinah*] enrages [*chemah (hot displeasure)*] a man, and he will not spare in the day of vengeance. He will not accept any ransom, nor will he be satisfied [*abath (to yield)*] though you give many gifts.

- (6) **Split a Nation.** Jealousy of one group of people to another group can split a nation apart with hatred. *See* Isa. 11:13.
- (7) **Plots Against Jesus.** The sin of “*envy*” [Mk. 15:10] motivated the Jewish leadership to plot the murder of Jesus of Nazareth [Matt. 27:18].

MARK 15:10

For he [*Jesus*] was aware that the chief priests had handed [*paradidomi (to deliver one up to custody to be judged)*] Him over [*to Pilate*] because of envy [*phthonos (jealousy)*].

- (8) **Resents Authority.** Because jealousy resents all levels of authority it is a key component of the Satanic evil of *equality/equity* washed in human good and is illustrated throughout the Bible, e.g., from Eve’s sin to the older brothers of Joseph who resented his status over them [Acts 7:9]. *See* @@@ GOOD.

ACTS 7:9

The patriarchs became jealous [*zeloo*] of Joseph and sold him into Egypt. *Yet* God was with him.

- (9) **Negative Volition.** Negative [-N] volition manifests itself in a whole host of sins to include “*envy*” [Rom. 1:27-29].

ROMANS 1:29

Being filled with all unrighteousness, wickedness, greed, evil; full of envy [*phthonos (jealousy)*], murder, strife, deceit, malice; *they are* gossips [*psithuristes (a whisperer; secret slanderer; detractor)*].

- (10) **Rejects Bible Doctrine.** Jealously rejects Doctrine and causes strife and bitterness to self and others. *See* Heb. 12:15; Acts 13:45; 17:5; Jas. 3:14-16.

JAMES 3:14-16

But if you [**Believer**] have bitter jealousy and selfish ambition in your heart, do not be arrogant [*katakauchaomai* (to boast against)] and so lie against the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – **Bible Doctrine**]. This wisdom [*sophia* – thinking in terms of human viewpoint] is not that which comes down from above, but is earthly [*epigeios* (existing upon the earth)], natural [*psuchikos* (soulish) – the Believer is thinking like an unBeliever in the Cosmic Systems], demonic. For where jealousy and selfish ambition exist, there is disorder [*akatastasia* (confusion; instability)] and every evil [*phaulos* (wicked)] thing.

HEBREWS 12:15

See to it that no one comes short of the grace of God; that no root of bitterness [*pikria* (bitter hatred)] springing up causes trouble, and by it many be defiled.

ACTS 13:45

But when the Jews saw the crowds [**many Jews were listening to the teaching of Paul about Jesus Christ**], they were filled with jealousy [*zelos* (an envious and contentious rivalry) – religion always lusts for big crowds around them] and began contradicting the things spoken by Paul, and were blaspheming.

- (11) **Cosmic Systems.** Living in the Cosmic Systems produces jealousy and **super charges** the operation of the Old Sin Nature [1 Tim. 6:3-5]. “***But when the Jews saw the crowds, they were filled with jealousy and began contradicting the things spoken by Paul, and were blaspheming***” [Acts 13:45]; Rom. 1:28-29; Acts 13:45.

1 TIMOTHY 6:3-4

If anyone advocates a different doctrine [**not Bible Doctrine**] and does not agree with sound words, those of our LORD Jesus Christ, and with the doctrine conforming to godliness [*eusebeia* – **executing the Christian Way of Life**], he is conceited *and* understands nothing; but he has a morbid interest in controversial questions and disputes about words, out of which arise envy [*phthonos* (jealousy)], strife, abusive language [*blasphemia*], evil suspicions.

@@@ JUDGMENT

- (1) **Definition.** To make considered decisions, particularly as it refers to God's ultimate judgment: (1) unBelievers at the Great White Throne Judgment; and (2) bestowing of eternal "*rewards*" [2 Jn. 8] to **Winner** Believers at the Judgment Seat of Christ. "*But they will give account to Him who is ready to judge the living (Believers at the Judgment Seat of Christ) and the dead [unBelievers at the Great White Throne Judgment]*" [1 Pet. 4:5]; Dan. 12:2; Jer. 17:10; Jn. 5:25-28; 1 Cor. 4:5 [*"bring to light"*]; 3:11-15.

DANIEL 12:2

Many [*rab (abounding in numbers)*] of those who sleep in the dust of the ground will awake, these to everlasting life [*Believers to Heaven*], but the others to disgrace *and* everlasting contempt [*unBelievers to Lake of Fire*].

- (2) **Delegated to Jesus Christ.** God the Father delegated to the LORD Jesus Christ, who holds the "*keys of death and of Hades*" [Rev. 1:18], the authority to execute the final judgment for both Believers and unBelievers [Jn. 5:25-29]. "*He has given all judgment to the Son*" [Jn. 5:22]. "*One who has been appointed by God as Judge of the living and the dead*" [Acts 10:42]. "*But when the Son of Man comes in His glory, and all the angels with Him, then He will sit on His glorious throne*" [Matt. 25:31-33]. "*There is only one Lawgiver and Judge, the One who is able to save and to destroy*" [Jas. 4:12]. See also, "*resurrection of judgment*" [Jn. 5:29]; "*judge the secrets of men*" [Rom. 2:16]; and "*in righteousness He judges*" [Rev. 19:11-16].

JOHN 5:25-29

Truly, truly, I say to you, an hour is coming and now is, when the dead [*nekros – the spiritually dead unBelievers Jesus was addressing*] will hear the voice of the Son of God, and those who hear will live. For just as the Father has life in Himself, even so He gave to the Son also to have life in Himself; and He gave Him authority to execute judgment, because He is *the* Son of Man. Do not marvel at this; for an hour is coming [*future judgments by Christ*], in which all who are in the tombs will hear His voice, and will come forth; those who did good *deeds* [*agathos – belief in Christ*] to a resurrection of life, those who committed the evil *deeds* [*phaulos (worthless) – rejection of the Gospel*] to a resurrection of judgment [*krisis – Great White Throne Judgment*].

(3) **Great White Throne Judgment.**

- (a) **God Desires Salvation.** Under the Plan of God, Jesus Christ came into the world to save the unBeliever, *not to condemn him* [Jn. 3:17; Lk. 9:56]. However, all those that reject God's grace offer of salvation will face a final judgment at the end of the Millennium called the "*great white throne*" judgment [Rev. 20:11-15]; 2 Pet. 3:7-9. "*God is now declaring to men that all people everywhere should repent, because He has fixed a day in which He will judge the world in righteousness through a Man whom He has appointed, having furnished proof to all men by raising Him from the dead*" [Acts 17:30-31].

JOHN 3:17

For God did not send [1st Advent] the Son into the world to judge the world, but that the world might be saved [*sozo (to deliver) – all humans have equal opportunity of salvation*] through Him [*the work of Christ on the cross*].

2 PETER 3:7-9

But by His word the present heavens and earth are being reserved for fire, kept for the day of judgment and destruction of ungodly men [*unBelievers at the Great White Throne Judgment*]. But do not let this one *fact* escape your notice, beloved, that with the LORD one day is like a thousand years, and a thousand years like one day. The LORD is not slow about His promise, as some count slowness, but is patient toward you, not wishing for any to perish [*apollumi – God's desire is that all should be saved*] but for all [*unBelievers*] to come to repentance [*metanoia (to change the mind) – about Jesus Christ*].

- (b) **UnBelievers Only.** The Great White Throne Judgment is set out for unBelievers only. "*The rest of the dead (resurrected unBelievers) did not come to life until the thousand years were completed*" [Rev. 20:5]; Heb. 6:2; 9:27; Rev. 20:11-15.

HEBREWS 6:2

And the resurrection of the dead [*all unBelievers*] and eternal judgment [*krima – the Great White Throne Judgment awaits the unBeliever, all fallen angels, and the Nephilim*].

HEBREWS 9:27

And inasmuch as it is appointed for men [**the unBeliever**] to die once and after this *comes* judgment [*krisis* – the “second” resurrection of all unBelievers who will face the Great White Throne Judgment and suffer the “second” death].

- (c) **No Believers Present.** Since the Believer is saved – “*I will not erase his name from the book of life*” [Rev. 3:5] – he will *not go before the Great White Thorne Judgment*. “*Blessed and holy is the one who has a part in the first resurrection; over these the second death has no power*” [Rev. 20:6]. “*Therefore there is no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus*” [Rom. 8:1]; Rev. 21:8; Jn. 3:18; Ps. 69:28.

JOHN 3:18

He who believes in Him [**Jesus Christ**] is not judged; he who does not believe has been judged already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God [**he does not possess the Righteousness [+R] of God**].

- (d) **The Indictment.** Because Jesus Christ died for all sin, the unBeliever’s sins are not the basis for his appearance at the Great White Throne Judgment – no one goes to the “*lake of fire*” for their sins. Rather, because the unBeliever does not have God’s Righteousness [**+R**] and was “*blotted out of the book of life*” and not “*recorded with the righteous*” [Ps. 69:28], it is impossible for his personal righteousness [**-r**] consisting of his accumulated human good works to equate to God’s [**+R**]. “*Whoever has sinned against Me (rejects the Gospel), I will blot him out of My book*” [Ex. 32:33]. Thus, at the unBeliever’s judgment other “*books were opened*” and “*the dead were judged according to the things which were written in the books, according to their [good] deeds*” [Rev. 20:12] resulting in *every case with a guilty verdict*, since no amount of human good can reach God’s Perfect [**+R**]. “*No wonder, for even Satan disguises himself as an angel of light. Therefore it is not surprising if his servants also disguise themselves as servants of righteousness, whose end will be according to their deeds*” [2 Cor. 11:14-15]. In short, the unBeliever falsely believes that his personal worthiness and good deeds will cement his relationship with God, when in reality it *condemns him*. See Heb. 6:2; 9:27; Mk. 9:47-49; Rev. 20:11-16. See @@@ GOOD; @@@ RELIGION.

REVELATION 20:11-15

Then I saw a great white throne [Great White Throne Judgment] and Him [Jesus Christ] who sat upon it, from whose presence earth and heaven fled away, and no place was found for them. And I saw the dead [*nekros* – all unBelievers], the great and the small, standing before the throne, and books were opened [records of good deeds]; and another book was opened, which is *the book of life*; and the dead were judged from the things which were written in the books, according to their deeds [*ergon* – all their good deeds]. And the sea gave up the dead which were in it [the Nephilim killed in the Great Flood], and death [*thanatos* (implied idea of future misery in Hell)] and Hades gave up the dead which were in them [unBeliever humans in Torments]; and they were judged [*krino* (to separate)], every one of *them* according to their [good] deeds [*ergon* – the indictment lists the good deeds of the unBeliever, not his sin]. Then death [*thanatos* – Spiritual Death] and Hades were thrown into the lake [*limne*] of fire. This is the second [*deuteros*] death [*thanatos*], the lake of fire [eternal separation from God in the Lake of Fire]. And if anyone's name was not found written in the book of life [*zoe* – the unBeliever has been blotted out of the Book of Life], he was thrown into the lake of fire.

- (e) **On Hold.** Currently, all deceased unBelievers are being held in a compartment of Hell called Torments, *waiting* to receive a resurrection body and be brought before the Great White Throne Judgment [2 Pet. 2:9; Dan. 12:2]. “*These will go away into eternal punishment, but the righteous into eternal life*” [Matt. 25:46]. See *supra* (3).

2 PETER 2:9

The LORD knows how to rescue the godly from temptation, and to keep the unrighteous [*adikos* – unBelievers] under punishment [*kolazo* – they await the second resurrection] for the day of judgment [*krisis*].

- (f) **Nephilim.** The Nephilim – “*the sea gave up the dead*” – will also be judged at the “*great white throne*” [Rev. 20:11-15]; 2 Pet 2:4. In turn, those demons who fathered the Nephilim [see Gen. 6:1-6] are currently confined in a special compartment of Hell called Tartarus, “*kept in eternal bonds under darkness for the judgment of the great day*” [Jude 6]. Both groups of “*departed spirits tremble under the waters and their inhabitants*” [Job 26:5]. See @@@ HELL.

2 PETER 2:4

For if God did not spare angels when they sinned [*hamartano* – the demons that had sex with human women and produced the half human/half angel Nephilim], but cast them into hell [*tartaroo* (the abode of the wicked) – Tartarus is a compartment of Hell] and committed them to pits of darkness [*zophos* (used of the darkness of the nether world)], reserved for judgment [*karsis* (a trial) – the final judgment at the Great White Throne Judgment].

- (g) **The Lake of Fire.** Also called *Tophet/Hinnom* (place of fire), the “*lake of fire*” [Rev. 20:11-15] is where all unBelievers, Nephilim, and demons are sent following their judgment at the Great White Throne Judgment. They are *eternally separated* in *neshiyah* (oblivion) [Ps. 88:12] from God under Spiritual Death. See Matt. 5:21-22, 30; 25:4; 2 Thess. 1:7-9; Isa. 40:43; 66:24. Rejecting grace, the basis for their indictment is that they do not possess God’s Righteousness [+R]. See Jn. 3:18-21, 36; Heb. 9:27; Eccl. 9:9-10; 12:14; Matt. 8:11-12; 28-32; Dan. 12:2. Descriptions of the Lake of Fire are set in language of accommodation. Jesus used the word *gehenna* [Mk. 9:43, 48-49; Lk. 12:5; Matt. 10:28; 23:5]. The earthly *gehenna* was a dump site outside of Jerusalem where refuse and animal remains were burned. Formally, it was near the same place, “*Topheth, ... Hinnom*,” where the apostate Jews of the Old Testament would “*burn their sons and their daughters in the fire*” to demon “*gods*” [Jer. 7:31].

MATTHEW 10:28

Do not fear those who kill the body but are unable to kill the soul [*psuche*]; but rather fear Him [God] who is able to destroy [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely, abolish)] both soul and body in hell [*geenna* – the Lake of Fire].

ECCLESIASTES 9:9-10

Enjoy life with the woman whom you love *all* the days of your fleeting life which He [God] has given to you under the sun; for this is your reward in life and in your toil in which you have labored under the sun. Whatever your hand finds to do, do *it* with all your might; for there is no activity or planning [*chashab* (to invent; to think about)] or knowledge [*daath* (premeditation)] or wisdom in Sheol [Lake of Fire] where you [unBeliever] are going.

- (4) **The Judgment Seat of Christ.** No Believer will face the Great White Throne Judgment. Instead, starting with the Rapture, which ends the Church Age, all Believers will be called before the “*judgment seat of Christ*” [2 Cor. 5:10] to give an account for the time God provided to them to reach spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1], and to stand for any “*rewards*” [1 Cor. 3:14]. Since all Believers have the potential for temporal rewards in time and also for unimaginable eternal rewards in eternity [Rev. 3:11; 22:12; 1 Cor. 2:9; 3:11-15; 9:24-25; 2 Cor. 4:16-18; Rom. 14:10-14; Jn. 12:26; 2 Tim. 2:12; 4:8; 1 Pet. 1:7-8; 5:4; Jas. 1:12; 1 Thess. 2:19], Heaven is a place of vast inequality for Believers. As with a *flat pyramid*, most Believers will find themselves placed at the base levels with only a few at the higher levels. In turn, all Old Testament Believers and deceased Tribulational Believers will be evaluated just prior to the 2nd Advent of Christ and Millennial Believers will be evaluated later at their own Judgment Seat of Christ. “*For God will bring every act to judgment, everything which is hidden, whether it is [Divine] good or evil*” [Eccl. 12:14]. See @@@ REWARDS; @@@ GOOD.

2 CORINTHIANS 5:10

For we must all appear [all Church Age Believers in their resurrection bodies] before the judgment seat [*bema* (raised place of the official seat of a judge) – this event occurs immediately after the Rapture of the Church] of Christ, so that each one may be recompensed for his deeds in the body [the Believer’s level of spiritual maturity attained while he was on the earth], according to what he has done [*prasso* (to practice)], whether good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good produced in the Christian Way of Life] or bad [*phaulos* (worthless) – human good works produced by the Believer in the Cosmic Systems].

2 TIMOTHY 4:8

In the future there is laid up [*apokeimai* (to be laid away)] for me [the Roman’s would execute Paul soon] the crown [*stephanos* (a wreath of garland which was given as a prize to victors in public games)] of righteousness [*dikaiosune*], which the LORD, the righteous Judge, will award [*apodidomi* (to deliver)] to me on that day [Paul’s rewards at the Judgment Seat of Christ]; and not only to me, but also to all who have loved [*agapao* (to love dearly)] His appearing [*epiphaneia* – all Believers who reach spiritual maturity].

@@@ LEAVEN

- (1) **Definition.** Any substance, like yeast, used to foment fermentation in liquid or dough is called leaven. The Greek word is *zume*.
- (2) **Human Works.** In the Bible leaven is most often used to illustrate the point that the evil of religion, legalism, and human effort *hinders or cancels out grace*. This is both in terms of salvation for the unBeliever and the reception of Bible Doctrine for the Believer [Gal. 5:9]. *But see infra* (5) and (6).

GALATIANS 5:9

A little leaven [*zume* – human good works] leavens the whole lump of dough.

- (3) **The Passover.** Per the Mosaic Law, “*no leaven*” [Ex. 12:8, 15, 19-20] was to be used for the food or drink in the Passover ritual because leaven was analogous to human good works and in opposition to the Divine work of God, who alone brought the Hebrews out of their status of slavery in Egypt, and it is He alone who provides salvation. The seven-day Feast of Unleavened Bread which began immediately after the Passover reinforced this point.

EXODUS 12:19-20

Seven days there shall be no leaven [*weor*] found in your houses; for whoever eats what is leavened, that person shall be cut off from the congregation of Israel, whether *he is* an alien or a native of the land. You shall not eat anything leavened; in all your dwellings you shall eat unleavened bread [*matstsah*].

- (4) **Leaven and Religion.** The condemnation of leaven was used by Jesus in His earthly ministry to *underscore the evil of the religious Jews* who mixed human philosophy with the dogmatic truth of the Bible [the Sadducees] and/or their religious man-made traditions with the Bible [the Pharisees]. “*But in vain do they worship Me, teaching as doctrines the precepts of men*” [Matt. 15:9]; Mk. 8:15; Lk. 12:1; Matt. 16:6, 12; 22:29-30; Col. 2:8.

COLOSSIANS 2:8

See to it that no one takes you captive through philosophy and empty deception according to the tradition of men.

MATTHEW 16:12

Then they [**Jesus' disciples**] understood that He did not say to beware of the leaven of bread, but of the teaching of the Pharisees and Sadducees [**teaching legalism, lies, and religion**].

- (5) **Salvation Faith.** Jesus Christ used the concept of leaven to represent the fact that **only a tiny amount** of human positive [**+P**] volition faith is sufficient for salvation. See Lk. 13:20-21; Matt. 13:33. See @@@ SALVATION.

LUKE 13:20-21

And again He [**Jesus speaking to a crowd of unBelievers**] said, “To what shall I compare [**homoioo (to be made like)**] the kingdom of God [**Jesus is explaining how to receive entrance into the kingdom of God**]? It is like leaven, which a woman took and hid [**(krupto (to escape notice))**] in three pecks [**saton (a kind of dry measure; 3 gallons)**] of flour until it was all leavened [**salvation results from only a tiny amount of faith**].”

- (6) **Thinking Doctrine.** Believers are to “**clean out the old leaven**” [1 Cor. 5:5-7] in their thinking which means to reject the demonic viewpoints of the Cosmic Systems and human good. See @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS.

1 CORINTHIANS 5:5-7

I [**Paul**] have decided to deliver [**paradidomi (to give into the hands of another)**] such a one [**a Believer having sexual relations with his own mother**] to Satan for the destruction of his flesh [**sarx – the sin unto death**], so that his [**human**] spirit [**pneuma**] may be saved [**sozo (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven**] in the day of the LORD Jesus [**at the Rapture of the Church he will receive a resurrection body**]. Your boasting is not good [**some members of the congregation had boasted about this person**]. Do you not know that a little leaven [**zume**] leavens the whole lump of dough? Clean out [**ekkathairo (to clean thoroughly)**] the old leaven [**of Cosmic System thinking**] so that you may be a new lump, just as you are *in fact* unleavened [**azumos (free from leaven)**]. For Christ our Passover also has been sacrificed.

- (7) **Tribulation Apostasy.** Leaven defines rampant religious apostasy in the Tribulation. See *Revelation*.
-

@@@ LIFE

- (1) **Definition.** Only God can create a *human life*, not man [Eccl. 11:5]. Human life consists of a biological physical body which is *material and real*, coupled with a human soul which is *immaterial and real*. Eternal life for the Believer in eternity will consist of a soul/spirit encased in a supernatural resurrection body. Note: *animals lack souls*. “*For as for the life of all flesh, its blood is identified with its life.*” [Lev. 17:10-14].
- (2) **Non-Biblical Views on Human Life.**
 - (a) **Traducianism.** Human life, which consists of the soul encased in biological life, is transmitted solely through natural generation processes via human copulation which creates a new human being.
 - (b) **Creationism.** At some point in the process of development – from initial conception to actual birth – human life is imputed directly by God to the biological life with its waiting “format soul.”
 - (c) **Metempsychosis.** This is reincarnation. The soul migrates from the old human body at Physical Death into a new human body that is born to new parents.
 - (d) **Pre-existence of the Soul.** The soul exists in Heaven prior to being imputed to a human biological body by God.
 - (e) **Evolution.** Human life/biological life developed randomly through a process of chance and natural selection. The theory of evolution denies the existence of an immaterial human soul. *But see* Ps. 14:1; 100:3.
- (3) **Biblical View.** God imputes the “*breath of life*” [*neshamah* (the breath of life; to breathe)] [Gen. 2:7] to the viable fetus’ biological life at the point it *emerges from the mother’s womb* at birth which immediately activates an immaterial soul into existence. There is no soul/human life in the womb as the fetus develops biologically during pregnancy, only biological life of the fetus and *a format for the soul* is located in the womb. While human life only comes directly from God at birth, the mortal body consists of the chemical elements that make up earth’s “*dust*” [Gen. 3:19] and are configured by God through His *natural laws of biology* [Job 3:3, 10; Isa. 49:5; Ps. 139:13-16].

JOB 3:3, 10

Let the day perish on which I was to be born [*yalad* (to be born) – human life given by God], and the night *which* said, “A boy is conceived [*harah* (to become pregnant)].”... Because it did not shut the opening of my *mother’s* womb [*biological life precedes human life*], or hide trouble from my eyes.

- (a) **Hebrew Words.** Old Testament words used to describe God’s Sovereign act of creating a human life include: *ruach* (breath; soul life; spirit) and *neshamah* (the breath of life; to breathe).
- (b) **Soul Activated.** The soul is activated via the *neshamah*, and the word *bara* (make something out of nothing) describes the entire package of the *soul coming into existence out of nothing* [Isa. 43:7; Ezk. 37:6, 10]. “*God in whose hand are your life-breath*” [Dan. 5:23]. This pattern is set with Adam in Gen. 2:7 [*neshamah chay* (breath of lives)], and is in the plural – “*the breath of lives*.” With perfectly created Adam and Eve, God imputed to them a human spirit along with the soul.

EZEKIEL 37:6, 10

“I [*God*] will put sinews on you, make flesh grow back on you, cover you with skin and put breath [*ruach* (breath of the living; breathing being in man)] in you that you may come alive [*chayah* (to live; to remain alive)]; and you will know that I am the LORD.” ... So I [*Ezekiel*] prophesied as He commanded me, and the breath [*ruach*] came into them, and they came to life [*chayah*] and stood on their feet, an exceedingly great army.

ISAIAH 43:7

Everyone [*the Believer*] who is called by My name [*God*], and whom I have created [*bara* (to make something out of nothing) – the human soul] for My glory, whom I have formed [*yatsar* (formed) – biological life], even whom I have made [*awah* (to make; to fashion) – the human being].

- (c) **Biological Life.** Genetically, all humans are *descended from Adam* and Eve, and the influence of the Old Sin Nature has seen the average life span drop dramatically over time. “*As for the days of our life, they contain seventy years, Or if due to strength, eighty years*” [Ps. 90:10].

- (d) **God Imputes Human Life.** For all humans after Adam and Eve, the spark or “*breath of life*” *neshamah* is imputed to the biological life/format soul [located in the brain] when the biological fetus emerges from the mother’s womb at birth and is viable. “*O God, God of the spirits [ruach (soul life)] of all flesh*” [Num. 16:22]. “*He Himself gives to all people life and breath and all things*” [Acts 17:25].
- (e) **Biological Functions.** Reflex motility in/of the fetus in the womb is the natural functioning of biological life. Thus, the fetus’ motility, neurogenic function, and reflex are *actions of biological life only*. For instance, in Lk. 1:41-44, when “*Elizabeth heard Mary’s greeting, the baby leaped in her womb*” describes the mother’s response to the excitement *she* experienced which caused the fetus in her womb to react as a motor function only. Again, God established the workings of His “natural laws” in the formation of biological life. The only exceptions were Adam, who was formed directly from the “*dust*,” and Eve, [Gen. 2:7, 22] who was formed from the biological material of one of Adam’s “*ribs*.” See *infra* (6). “*For You formed my inward parts; You wove me in my mother’s womb. I will give thanks to You for I am fearfully and wonderfully made*” [Ps. 139:13]; 100:3; Isa. 42:5; Eccl. 3:20; 5:15-16; 12:7; Job 3:3, 10; 33:4.

GENESIS 2:7

Then the LORD God formed man of dust from the ground [*biological life*], and breathed [*naphach*] into his nostrils the breath [*neshamah*] of life [*chay (living)*]; and man became a living being [*nephesh (soul)*].

JOB 33:4

The Spirit of God has made me [*biological life*], and the breath [*neshamah*] of the Almighty gives me life [*chayah (to give life) – Job’s human soul life*].

ISAIAH 42:5

Thus says God the LORD, who created the heavens and stretched them out, who spread out the earth and its offspring, who gives breath [*neshamah (the breath of life; to breathe)*] to the people on it and spirit [*ruach (soul life)*] to those who walk in it.

ECCLESIASTES 12:7

Then [at Physical Death] the dust [*aphar – the elements of biological life*] will return to the earth as it was, and the spirit [*ruach (soul life)*] will return to God who gave [*nathan (to bestow)*] it.

PSALM 100:3

Know that the LORD Himself is God; it is He who has made [*awah (to make)*] us, and not we ourselves [*only God can create life*]; *we are* His people and the sheep of His pasture.

- (4) **Mosaic Law.** The Jews always understood the Mosaic Law truth that there was *no human life in the womb*, only biological life [Ex. 21:22-25]. The penalty for “killing” the fetus when two men were brawling and bumped into a pregnant woman causing a miscarriage was a monetary fine, not capital punishment. If there was a “human being” in the woman’s womb the penalty would have been death per “*an eye for any eye*” [Lev. 24:19-21]. Also, the husband of the pregnant woman who had the miscarriage could sue in civil court for monetary damages. *See also*, Hammurabi’s Code, Law 209.

EXODUS 21:22-25

If men struggle [*natsah (fighting)*] with each other and strike [*nagaph (to smite)*] a woman with child [*hareh (a pregnant woman)*] so that she gives birth [*yalad (to bring forth)*] prematurely [*yatsa (bear out) – a miscarriage*], yet there is no injury [*ason (hurt; harm) – to the woman*], he [*the man fighting*] shall surely be fined [*anash (paying a fee)*] as the woman’s husband may demand of him, and he shall pay [*nathan (to give; bestow)*] as the judges *decide*. But if there is *any further* injury [*ason – to the woman*], then you shall appoint *as a penalty* life for life, eye for eye, tooth for tooth, hand for hand, foot for foot, burn for burn, wound for wound, bruise for bruise.

- (5) **Omniscience of God.** While human life is clearly described as coming into being out from [*mibeten (out from; away from; separated from)*] the mother’s womb this does not negate God’s Omniscience which always “*knew from the beginning*” [Jn. 6:64], in eternity past, all about every person that would ever come into being, to include their physical and mental status. *See* Isa. 44:2, 24; 49:1, 5; Job 1:21; 3:3, 10; Jer. 1:5; Ps. 22:9-10; 139:16; Rom. 9:8-11.

PSALM 139:16

Your eyes [God] have seen my unformed substance [*golem* (embryo; fetus)]; and in Your book were all written the days that were ordained [*yatsar* (to form)] *for me*, when as yet there was not one of them [God knew all about each human billions and billions of years ago].

ROMANS 9:8-11

That is, it is not the children [*teknon*] of the flesh [*sarx* – unBelievers] who are children [*teknon*] of God, but the children [*teknon*] of the promise [*epaggelia* (the act of promising a good or blessing) – salvation by faith in the coming Christ] are regarded [*logizomai* (to count)] as descendants [*sperma* (the seed of Abraham)]. For this is the word [*logos*] of promise [*epaggelia* (the act of promising a good or blessing)]: “At this time I will come, and Sarah shall have a son.” And not only this, but there was Rebekah also, when she had conceived [*koite* (the marriage bed; sexual intercourse)] *twins* by one man, our father Isaac; for though *the twins* were not yet born [*gennao* (of women giving birth to children)] and had not done [*prasso* (to practice)] anything good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] or bad [*phaulos* (wicked)], so that God’s purpose [*prothesis* (setting forth a thing)] according to *His* choice [*ekloge* (the act of picking out; choosing)] would stand, not because of works [*ergon* – salvation cannot be obtained by human works of religion] but because of Him who calls [*kaleo* – ministry of the Holy Spirit].

JEREMIAH 1:5

Before I [God] formed [*yatsar* (to form; to fashion) – God forms biological life by means of His laws of biology] you [Jeremiah] in the womb [*beten* (belly; womb)] I knew [*yada* (to perceive and see; to know) – God in His Omniscience knew all about Jeremiah in eternity past] you, and before you were born I consecrated [*qadash* (to set apart)] you [Jeremiah, a positive [+P] volition Believer, was selected to be a Prophet to Judah].

PSALM 22:10

Upon You [God] I was cast [*shalak* (to be propelled)] from birth; You have been my God from [when God imputed the breath of life to biological life] my mother’s [*em*] womb [*beten*].

- (6) **Old Sin Nature.** The Old Sin Nature is *passed down genetically* through Adam, who intentionally committed the first sin, to all subsequent humans *via copulation* [see @@@ **HYPOSTATIC UNION** at (7) for a description of the mechanics]. See 1 Cor. 15:21-22; Gen. 3:15; 5:3; 1 Tim. 2:13-14; Rom. 5:12, 17-19; Ps. 51:5. Further, at the same time that God imputes human life *neshamah* to the biological life at birth, making each human *physically alive*, God also imputes Adam's original sin to the genetically formed Old Sin Nature, making all babies *spiritually dead*. Finally, God allows biological life to be impacted by various categories of genetic mutations and imperfections under the workings of the Plan of God. *"For there are eunuchs who were born that way from their mother's womb"* [Matt. 19:12]. *"As He passed by, He saw a man blind from birth. And His disciples asked Him, 'Rabbi, who sinned, this man or his parents, that he would be born blind?' Jesus answered, 'It was neither that this man sinned, nor his parents; but it was so that the works of God might be displayed in him'"* [Jn. 9:1-3].

ROMANS 5:17

For if by the transgression [*paraptoma* (a lapse or deviation from truth)] of the one [*Adam's original sin*], death [*thanatos* (physical death with the implied idea of future misery in hell) – *Spiritual Death*] reigned [*basileuo* (to be king)] through the one, much more those [*all Believers*] who receive the abundance of grace and of the gift [*dorea* (a gift without cost)] of righteousness [*dikaiosisune* – *God's Righteousness [+R]* given to the Believer at the point of *salvation*] will reign in life through [*dia* (by means of)] the One, Jesus Christ.

- (7) **Jesus' Remarks.** Jesus corrected the rude woman who interrupted Him during a Bible class about venerating His mother for giving Him *"life in her womb."* Jesus Christ retorted with the true issue of being *"born again"* [Jn. 3:5-7], not conceived again, into the Family of God. The first birth is the beginning of human life; the second birth is spiritual birth into the Family of God. See Lk. 11:27-28; Ps. 139:16; Rom. 9:8-11.

LUKE 11:27-28

While Jesus was saying these things, one of the women in the crowd raised [*epairo*] her voice [*phone* – *she rudely interrupted Him as He was teaching*] and said to Him, "Blessed is the womb that bore You and the breasts at which You nursed." But He said, "On the contrary [*oun* (wrong)], blessed are those who hear [*akouo*] the word of God [*the Bible Doctrine of salvation*] and observe [*phulasso* (to keep watch; to guard)] it."

- (8) **Prolonging Life.** Respecting the Plan of God can *extend the physical life* of the Believer. “*For by me (Bible Doctrine) your days will be multiplied, and years of life will be added to you*” [Prov. 9:11]; Prov. 3:1-2; 10:27. On the other hand, reversionism can cause the Believer’s death “*before your time*” [Eccl. 7:17-18]. See @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH.

PROVERBS 3:1-2

My son, do not forget my [Solomon taught Bible Doctrine] teaching [torah – Bible Doctrine], but let your heart [leb – the Believer’s positive [+P] volition decisions] keep my commandments; for length of days and years of life and peace [shalom (prosperity) – maturity and rewards] they will add to you.

ECCLESIASTES 7:17-18

Do not be excessively [rabah] wicked [rasha (to act wickedly) – stay out of the Cosmic Systems] and do not be a fool [sakal (foolish) – do not reject Bible Doctrine]. Why should you [a Believer] die [muth] before your time [eth – the sin unto death]? It is good that you grasp one thing [Bible Doctrine] and also not let go of the other [living a long and fruitful life in time to reach maturity and receive rewards]; for the one who fears God [yare (to revere) – the Believer on positive [+P] volition] comes forth with both of them.

PROVERBS 10:27

The fear [yirah (respect)] of the LORD prolongs [yasaph (to add; to increase)] life [the life of the Believer on positive [+P] volition to Bible Doctrine], but the years of the wicked will be shortened.

- (9) **Believer’s Life.** The Believer *must use the time* God has provided to him to reach “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1] in the Angelic Conflict – “*though our outer man is decaying (biological life), yet our inner man (the soul/spirit) is being renewed day by day (spiritual growth)*” [2 Cor. 4:16]; Prov. 8:33.

PROVERBS 8:33

Heed instruction [Bible Doctrine] and be wise [reach maturity], and do not neglect it [stay on positive [+P] volition all the days of your life].

@@@ LOVE

- (1) **Definition.** As in the Bible the word *love* in the English language is used to describe a variety of categories of thought. The context will determine the meaning. For the Christian there are four categories of love.
 - (a) **Category I To God** – Deut. 6:5; Rom. 8:35; 1 Jn. 4:19.
 - (b) **Category II To Spouse** – S.S. 8:6-7.
 - (c) **Category III To Friends** – Jn. 11:11; 15:13-14; 2 Sam. 1:26.
 - (d) **Category IV To Mankind** – Jn. 3:16. Maintaining a relaxed mental attitude for others [Gal. 6:10]. This is the “technical” use of *agape* love denoting *impersonal love*.
- (2) **Two Greek Words.** There are two primary words translated from the Greek as “love” in the New Testament – *agape* and *philos*. While both words are regularly used to denote “personal love” [e.g., in Phm. 7, *agape (to love dearly)* is used to describe the Believer’s personal love towards God], in many other passages the word *agape* is employed solely in a *technical* sense to describe an *agape impersonal love* attitude, not personal love, towards other members of the human race. *Understanding this distinction is critical!*
- (3) **Impersonal Love.** The noun *agape* and the verb *agapao* are often employed to describe a technical theological concept which is the preeminent of the problem solving devices for the Believer. When used in this manner, *agape* is properly defined as “*agape impersonal love*,” a relaxed mental attitude free of any sin regardless of the circumstances. In short, *agape impersonal love* places all the focus and attention on *the integrity of the subject*, not the attractiveness, or unattractiveness, of the object.
 - (a) **Subject Dependent.** Since *agape impersonal love* is totally dependent on the subject’s character [the Believer] and not the object’s character [the object can be hateful, deceitful, jealous, vindictive, spiteful, etc.], the Believer does not react/respond to the object with any of the various types of sin – verbal, mental, or overt. In short, *agape impersonal love* is 100% fueled by the Bible Doctrine possessed by the subject, not the attractiveness of the object [1 Cor. 13:4-7]. *See infra* (c).

I [subject] **love** [transitive verb, *agapao*] **you** [object].

– Impersonal Love –

1 CORINTHIANS 13:4-7

Love [*agape* – impersonal love] is patient [*makrothumeo* (to persevere bravely under unjust treatment)], love [*agape* – impersonal love] is kind [*chresteuomai* (to show one's self mild)] and is not jealous; love [*agape* – impersonal love] does not brag [*perpereuomai* (to boast one's self)] and is not arrogant, does not act unbecomingly [*aschemoneo* (has good manners, not rude)]; it does not seek its own [not preoccupied with self], is not provoked [*paroxuno* (to arouse to anger)], does not take into account a wrong suffered, does not rejoice in unrighteousness [*adikia* (injustice)], but rejoices with the truth [*aletheia* – the Plan of God]; bears [*stego* (to keep secret the errors or faults of others)] all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures [*hupomeno* (to persevere under misfortunes and trials)] all things.

- (b) **Turn the Other Cheek.** With the employment of *agape* impersonal love circulating in his soul/spirit, the Believer cannot “*have a bad day*.” “*This is a day which the LORD has made; Let us rejoice and be glad in it*” [Ps. 118:24]. As set out in 1 Cor. 13:4-7, the Believer should not get upset, frustrated, jealous, disappointed, revengeful, etc. For example, if the object attacks the Believer in some manner, the Believer employs *agape* impersonal love and doesn't respond in kind – he employs the idiom of “*turn the other*” cheek [Matt. 5:38-44]. Note: this command does not apply to an actual physical attack. In such a case, the Believer is authorized to employ self-defense which he can do while maintaining a relaxed mental attitude of *agape* impersonal love towards the offending perpetrator. See Lk. 6:29-36.

MATTHEW 5:44

But I [*Jesus*] say to you [*His disciples*], love [*agapao* – impersonal love] your enemies [*echthros* (a man that is hostile)] and pray for those who persecute [*dioko*] you.

MATTHEW 5:38-39

You have heard that it was said [the Mosaic Law], “An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth.” But I [Jesus Christ] say to you, do not resist [*anthistemi* (to set one’s self against)] an evil [*poneros*] person; but whoever slaps you on your right cheek, turn the other to him also [idiom to employ *agape impersonal love*].

- (c) **Origin.** The availability of *agape impersonal love* only comes from *maximum Bible Doctrine* [*epignosis* (full knowledge)] in the soul and is fully available to the **Winner** Believer at spiritual maturity. See 1 Jn. 3:23; Phil. 1:9; 2 Pet. 1:8. Again, the motivation for the Believer to use *agape impersonal love* to face the exigencies of life flows from Bible Doctrine in his soul/spirit. See 1 Jn. 4:15-21; 2 Cor. 5:14; Matt. 5:44.

1 JOHN 3:23

This is His [God the Father] commandment [*entole* (an order)], that we believe [*pisteuo*] in the name of His Son Jesus Christ, and love [*agape – impersonal love*] one another [*allelon* (one another of the same kind) – other Believers under the Law of Love], just as He [Jesus] commanded us.

- (d) **Number One.** The use of *agape impersonal love* – “*whoever slaps you on your right cheek, turn the other to him also*” [Matt. 5:38-39] – is the strongest of all the problem solving devices [1 Cor. 13:13].

1 CORINTHIANS 13:13

But now faith [*pistis – Faith/Rest*], hope [*elpis* (confident expectation)], love [*agape – impersonal love*], abide [*meno* (remain)] these three [*of the problem solving devices*]; but the greatest of these is love [*agape – impersonal love is the greatest of the three*].

- (e) **Commanded.** Believers are commanded to utilize *agape impersonal love* for all mankind in all circumstances of life, *pleasant or unpleasant*. “*But I say to you who hear, love your enemies, do good to those who hate you*” [Lk. 6:27]. See Gal. 5:14; Mk. 12:31; 1 Jn. 3:23; 4:7, 11, 20-21; Lk. 10:27; Matt. 5:38-39; 22:39; Jn. 15:12, 17; Jas. 2:8; Lev. 19:18; Rom. 13:9; Lk. 6:35.

- (f) **Take Up Your Cross.** The command to “*take up his cross*” [Matt. 10:38-40; Mk. 8:34] requires the Believer to have *agape impersonal love*. In turn, the Old Sin Nature is said to be “*crucified with Him*” [Rom. 6:6], motivating the Believer to use Rebound to regain the Filling of the Holy Spirit [1 Jn. 3:6; Gal. 5:16]. See @@@ CROSS.

MATTHEW 10:38-40

And he [Believer] who does not take his cross [testing via Divine Suffering for Blessing] and follow after Me is not worthy of Me. He who has found his life [*psuche* (soul) – the Believer saved by grace] will lose [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely)] it [rejects the Cosmic Systems], and he who has lost his life [the Believer that is positive [+P] to Doctrine, not the Cosmic Systems] for My sake will find it [spiritual and physical rewards].

- (4) **Imitation by UnBelievers.** An unBeliever can attempt to imitate *agape impersonal love* by *stoicism, denial, meditation, or other activities*, but only the “*mature*” [Eph. 4:13] Believer “*filled with the [Holy] Spirit*” [Eph. 5:18] can rely on reverse rationales of various Bible Doctrines and glorify God in the Angelic Conflict and not self in stoicism. See Matt. 5:38-39.
- (5) **Brotherly Love.** Believers are commanded to have a *philadelphia* (brotherly love) for other Believers as part of the Royal family of God [1 Pet. 1:22] – we all possess God’s [+R]. This command is based on the fact that all Believers are in Union with Christ, but in many instances the apostate Believer in reversionism must be “loved” [*agape impersonal love*] from afar. In other cases, the Believer is to greet Winner Believers “*with a holy kiss*” [Rom. 16:16] and to rejoice in their company. The mature Believer is what God calls the “*majestic ones* (mature Believers) *in whom is all my delight*” [Ps. 16:3], for he understands: “*We know love by this, that He laid down His life for us; and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren*” [1 Jn. 3:16].

1 PETER 1:22

Since you [Believers] have in obedience to the truth purified your souls [advanced to spiritual maturity] for a sincere love [*philadelphia* (brotherly love)] of the brethren, fervently love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] one another from the heart [*kardia* – recognizing that all share God’s [+R]] the Believer can love his fellow Believer as members of the Royal family].

- (6) **Personal Love.** In direct contrast to *agape impersonal love*, personal love puts all the emphasis on the attractiveness of the object. Personal love is commonly denoted in the Bible by either the noun *philos* (to have personal attachment as a matter of sentiment or feeling; affection for) [verb *phileo*] or the general use of the word *agape* (to love dearly). Richard Trench, *Synonyms of the New Testament*, states that *philos* is the “stronger” expression for personal love in the Greek than the general use of the word *agape* (to love dearly) [the non-technical use of *agape* love]. Indeed, the only personal *philos* love which operates with absolute virtue is the Believer’s love for God because the Trinity, as the object, is absolutely Perfect. Of course, the capacity for the Believer to use personal *philos* love for Perfect God only comes via Bible Doctrine [Jn. 11:33-37; 16:27; Jas. 2:23]. God’s Perfect characteristics progressively revealed by growth to spiritual maturity attract the **Winner** Believer and motivate him to learn even more Bible Doctrine.

I [subject] **love** [transitive verb, *phileo* or *agapao*] **YOU** [object].

– Personal Love –

JOHN 11:33-37

When Jesus therefore saw her [**Mary**] weeping [*klaio* (to mourn; to weep)], and the Jews who came with her *also* weeping, He was deeply moved in spirit [*pneuma*] and was troubled [*tarasso* (to agitate)], and said, “Where have you laid him [**Lazarus**]?” They said to Him, “LORD, come and see.” Jesus wept [*dakruo* (to shed tears) – **legitimate emotion**]. So the Jews were saying, “See how He loved [*phileo* (personal love)] him!” But some of them said, “Could not this man, who opened the eyes of the blind man, have kept this man also from dying?”

JOHN 16:27

For the Father Himself loves [*phileo* (personal love)] you [**the Winner Believer**], because you have loved [*phileo* (personal love)] Me and have believed that I came forth from the Father.

- (a) **The Tandem.** Personal love for God motivates *agape impersonal love* for all mankind. Thus: “*If someone says, “I love God,” and hates his brother, he is a liar*” [1 Jn. 4:20]. Note: the context of the Bible passage is always critical in determining if *agape* is used for personal love or *impersonal love*, as in the multiple uses of the word in 1 Jn. 4:20, where the verb *agapao* is used to make the point of *the tandem relationship*. In fact, in 1 Jn. 4:20, it is used once in the technical sense of *agape impersonal love* and then twice in the general sense of *agape love (to love dearly)* – the passage is a measuring rod of capacity.

1 JOHN 4:20

If someone [a Believer] says, “I love [*agapao (to love dearly)*] God,” and hates [*miseo (to detest; pursue with hatred)*] his brother [*adelphos – this Believer fails to use agape impersonal love towards his fellow Believer*], he is a liar [*pseustes*]; for the one who does not love [*agapao – maintains an agape impersonal love*] his brother whom he has seen, cannot love [*agapao (to love dearly)*] God whom he has not seen [*only the mature Believer can perform both categories of love – personal and impersonal*].

- (b) **Love of God.** Every Believer falls under the *maximum personal love of God* because he possesses His Perfect “*righteousness*” [+R] imputed directly to his human soul/spirit at salvation. See 1 Jn. 2:1-6; 4:10; Jas. 2:23; 2 Cor. 5:21; Eph. 1:5; 2:4, 7; Rom. 3:22.

ROMANS 3:22

Even *the* righteousness [*dikaiosune – God’s Perfect Righteousness [+R]*] is imputed to the Believer’s soul/spirit at salvation] of God through [*dia (by means of)*] faith [*pistis – saving faith*] in Jesus Christ for all those who believe; for there is no distinction [*diastole (difference)*].

JAMES 2:23

And the Scripture was fulfilled [*pleroo (to fill up)*] which says, “And Abraham believed [*pisteuo*] God, and it was reckoned [*logizomai (to pass over to one’s account; to credit)*] to him as righteousness [*dikaiosune – Abram received God’s Righteousness [+R]*],” and he was called the friend of God [*philostheou (lover of God)*] – Abraham reached the status of maturity much later in life].

- (c) **The Son.** God also has a personal love for every Believer because every Believer is in Union with Christ. Despite the Believer's state of maturity, the *relative* side of the Christian Way of Life, *God loves each and every Believer as much as He loves the Son*. See 2 Pet. 1:17; Matt. 3:17; Col. 3:12; Eph. 1:6; 1 Jn. 3:2. *However, most Believers do not love God*. See *infra* (f).

EPHESIANS 1:6

To the praise of the glory [*doxa*] of His grace, which He freely bestowed [*charitoo*] on us [*the Believer*] in the Beloved [*our Union with Christ*].

- (d) **Divine Discipline.** As a full member of the Royal Family, God provides Divine Discipline to all Believers in His grace because of the fact that the Believer possesses God's Righteousness [*+R*], which God loves with a personal *philos* love. "*God deals with you as with sons; for what son is there whom his father does not discipline?*" [Heb. 12:5-11]; Rev. 3:19. See @@@ SUFFERING.

REVELATION 3:19

Those whom I [*God*] love [*phileo* (personal love) – *all Believers*], I reprove [*elegcho* (to correct)] and discipline [*paideuo* (a father punishing his son)]; therefore be zealous [*zeloo* (to burn with zeal; to be heated or to boil) – *be positive* [*+P*] *volition to Bible Doctrine*] and repent [*metanoeo* (change the mind) – *get out of the Cosmic Systems*].

- (e) **To Love God.** Believers are commanded to "*love the LORD*" [1 Cor. 16:22] with a personal *philos* love. See 2 Cor. 5:14; Rom. 5:5; 8:28; 1 Pet. 1:6-8. In short, this is a command to reach *spiritual* "*maturity*" [Heb. 6:1] so that a Believer can become a *philostheou* (lover of God) [Jas. 2:23]. Note: as stated, in some verses *agape* (to love dearly) is also used in its general definition to mean "personal love."

1 CORINTHIANS 16:22

If anyone does not love [*phileo* (personal love)] the LORD [*kurios* – *the Loser Believer that rejects Bible Doctrine and falls into reversionism*], he is to be accursed. Maranatha [(*LORD come!*)].

- (f) **Know God.** *You can't love what you don't know!* Only a Believer in status quo maturity can love God with a personal *philos* love and also love mankind with *agape impersonal love*. Again, while God loves all Believers equally, because all possess His Righteousness [+R], most Believers do not love God. See Rom. 8:28-30; 1 Pet. 1:6-8.

ROMANS 8:28-30

And we [Paul and all mature Believers] know that God causes all things to work together [*sunergeo*] for good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] to those who love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] God [only the positive [+P] volition Believer who reaches spiritual maturity can love God], to those who are called [*kletos* (called; invited to a banquet)] according to His purpose [*prothesis* (a predetermined plan)]. For those whom He foreknew [*proginosko* (to have knowledge beforehand) – the Believers who would grow to maturity], He also predestined [*proorizo* (to decide beforehand) – God made provisions in time to get the positive [+P] volition Believer to maturity] to become conformed [*summorphos* (having the same form as another)] to the image of His Son, so that He would be the firstborn [the first human with a resurrection body] among many brethren [*adelphos* (brothers)]; and these whom He predestined [*proorizo*], He also called [*kaleo* (to call aloud; to invite)]; and these whom He called, He also justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – by receiving God's Righteousness [+R]]; and these whom He justified, He also glorified [*doxazo* (to honor) – by the giving of rewards].

- (7) **The UnBeliever.** Holy God can only express *agape impersonal* “love” [Jn. 3:16] for the unBeliever. Since unBelievers do not possess the Righteousness [+R] of their Creator, they have *absolutely no relationship* with Perfect God, they are “*illegitimate children and not sons*” of God [Heb. 12:8]. Instead, all unBelievers are under the “*wrath of God*” [Jn. 3:36] and remain “*accursed*” [Matt. 25:41] by His Perfect Justice. See 1 Jn. 4:9-10; Rom. 5:8-10.

JOHN 3:16

For God so loved [*agapao* – impersonal love] the world [*kosmos* – unsaved mankind], that He gave His only begotten [*monogenes*] Son [Jesus Christ], that whoever believes [*pisteuo*] in Him shall not perish [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely; to utterly destroy) – judgment and separation from God], but have eternal [*aionios* (without beginning and end)] life [*zoe*].

1 JOHN 4:9-10

By this the love [*agape – impersonal love*] of God was manifested in us [*Believers*], that God has sent His only begotten [*monogenes* (single of its kind)] Son [*Jesus Christ*] into the world so that we might live [*zao* (to have true life)] through Him. In this is love [*agape – impersonal love*], not that we loved [*agapao* (to love dearly)] God, but that He loved [*agapao – impersonal love*] us and sent His Son *to be* the propitiation [*hilasmos* (an appeasing)] for our sins.

- (8) **Personal Love Plus.** God has an *additional dose of personal philos love* for the positive [**+P**] volition **Winner** Believer based on the degree of Bible Doctrine in their soul and the application of that Bible Doctrine in time. See Jas. 2:23; 1 Cor. 2:9; Matt. 15:13-14. Accordingly, Believers who reach spiritual maturity receive vast “*rewards*” [1 Cor. 3:14]. See @@@ TIME.

1 CORINTHIANS 2:9

But just as it is written, “Things which eye has not seen and ear has not heard, and *which* have not entered the heart [*kardia*] of man, all that God has prepared [*hetoimazo* (to make ready beforehand) – the fantastic rewards placed in an Escrow Account in eternity past are beyond human comprehension] for those who love [*agapao* (to love dearly) – only the positive [**+P**] volition Believer at spiritual maturity can love God] Him.”

- (9) **Love in Eden.** The relationship between God and man in the Garden of Eden was based on personal *philos* love – personal love can’t condemn; it can only bless. Thus, as long as the perfectly created couple didn’t sin by eating the forbidden fruit, they had a *conditional contract* that was only as strong as their volition. In contrast, the Believer’s relationship now is based on grace, not love, and his point of contact with God rests entirely on God’s Righteousness [**+R**] imputed to the Believer, making salvation fixed. The Believer has a much more secure relationship – it is eternal and unconditional – than Adam and Eve in the Garden.
- (10) **Marriage and Friendship.** For the Believer, Category II and III love cannot be sustained without the constant use of Category IV love. In addition, Category II love demands some level of teaching to become operational, as it is not instinctive to humans [Tit. 2:4; Col. 3:13-14].

COLOSSIANS 3:13-14

Bearing [*anechomai* (to hold up)] with one another [other Believers], and forgiving [*charizomai* (to show one's self gracious; to grant forgiveness)] each other, whoever has a complaint against anyone; just as the LORD [Jesus Christ] forgave [*charizomai*] you, so also should you. Beyond all these things put on love [*agape – impersonal love*], which is the perfect bond of unity [*sundesmos* (that which binds together) – the Royal Law].

- (11) **Command to Love.** Per *supra* (3), Believers are *regularly commanded* in the Bible to utilize *agape impersonal love*, but not personal *philos* love towards fellow Believers. Apart from being in the Royal Family of God as “*brothers*” [1 Jn. 4:20], in many cases the **Loser** Believer is to be *loved from afar* via *agape impersonal love*. See 1 Jn. 3:16-18.
- (12) **Love in War.** Love in the form of *agape impersonal love* is exercised by the Believer when killing the enemy in war. “*One of your men puts to flight a thousand, for the LORD your God is He who fights for you, just as He promised you*” [Jos. 23:10]. A Christian should strive to be the best “*killer*” in the regiment when serving his country.
- (13) **UnBeliever Love.** An unBeliever can express *agapao* (to love dearly) love as a neutral [nH] happiness when following the *laws of the Divine Institutions* [Jn. 3:19]. This [nH] love can provide some degree of enjoyment and joy in time [Eccl. 9:9-10]. See @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS.

ECCLESIASTES 9:9-10

Enjoy [*raah* (to be pleased with)] life [*chay – the unBeliever living under the umbrella of the Divine Institutions*] with the woman [*ishshah* (wife; female)] whom you [the unBeliever] love [*ahab*] all the days of your fleeting [*hebel*] life [*chay*] which He [God] has given to you under the sun; for this is your reward [*cheleq* (a portion; share)] in life and in your toil [*amal* (labor)] in which you have labored under the sun. Whatever your hand finds to do, do it with *all* your might [*koach* (human strength)]; for there is no activity [*maaweh* (work; business)] or planning [*chashab* (to invent; to think about)] or knowledge [*daath* (premeditation; knowledge)] or wisdom [*chokmah*] in Sheol [the Lake of Fire] where you [the unBeliever] are going.

@@@ MANNA

- (1) **Definition.** The word *manna* (what is it?) is a Hebrew expression for a whitish colored food that was supernaturally provided by the grace of God to the Exodus Jews as they wandered in the wilderness under Divine Discipline for Suffering for 40 years [Ex. 16:31]. Manna ceased to be provided when the Jews entered the Promised Land under Joshua.

EXODUS 16:31

The house of Israel named it manna [*manna* (what is it?)], and it was like coriander seed, white, and its taste was like wafers with honey [*debash – this was the true taste to the mature Believer*].

- (2) **Daily Provision.** Manna came every day to the Hebrews except for Saturday, whether they were mature or carnal Believers [Ex. 16:4-5]. This represented the fact of *eternal security and logistical grace*.

EXODUS 16:4-5

Then the LORD said to Moses, “Behold, I will rain bread from heaven for you; and the people shall go out and gather a day’s portion every day, that I may test [*nasah*] them, whether or not they will walk in My instruction [*torah* (law)]. On the sixth day, when they prepare what they bring in, it will be twice as much as they gather daily.”

- (3) **Equal Amounts.** Those who gathered a lot of manna got no more than those who gathered a little [Ex. 16:16-18]. This indicates that all Believers are equal at the point of salvation and have *equal opportunity to reach maturity*.
- (4) **Manna Spoiled.** Manna spoiled after morning [Ex. 16:19-21]. The *textbook Bible* is loaded with Bible Doctrine, but it is of *no use until taken into the soul/spirit*. Like manna, the Believer must take in Doctrine every day. See 1 Cor. 2:5; Matt. 4:4; 2 Cor. 4:16-18. See @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.
- (5) **Manna in the Ark.** Although manna spoiled if kept after morning, one golden pot of it was preserved for hundreds of years in the Ark of the Covenant to represent human sin – the Jews largely rejected God’s provision. See Ex. 16:33; Heb. 9:4; 25:10-22; Num. 21:5.

HEBREWS 9:4

Having a golden altar of incense and the ark of the covenant covered on all sides with gold, in which was a golden jar holding the manna [representing the rejection of God's provision], and Aaron's rod which budded [representing the rejection of God's authority], and the tables of the covenant [representing the rejection of God's law].

- (6) **Hatred of Manna.** Manna *tasted great to a very few and terrible to most* [Ex. 16:31; Num. 21:5]. This phenomenon is a direct analogy to Bible Doctrine – it tastes like honey to the few positive [+P] volition Believers, but sour to the many negative [-N] volition Believers. Most Jews hated manna and suffered the “*sin unto death*” [1 Jn. 5:16, KJV]; Num. 21:5-9; 1 Cor. 10:5.

NUMBERS 21:5

The people spoke against God and Moses, “Why have you brought us up out of Egypt to die [*muth*] in the wilderness? For there is no food and no water, and we loathe [*quts (to abhor)*] this miserable [*qeloqel (contemptible)*] food.”

- (7) **Manna Melted.** Manna melted in the sun [Ex. 16:21]. This fact represents the problems in life. If the Believer has not gathered in the manna of Bible Doctrine he cannot deal with suffering and testing.
- (8) **No Eternal Life.** Manna could not provide eternal life [Jn. 6:31-35].
- (9) **Special Manna.** Believers who reach spiritual maturity will receive eternal “*rewards*” [2 Jn. 8; 1 Cor. 3:14] to include a special “*hidden manna*” [Rev. 2:17]. See @@@ REWARDS.

REVELATION 2:17

He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To him who overcomes [*nikao (to carry off the victory)*] – the positive [+P] volition Believer who reaches maturity], to him I [Jesus Christ] will give *some* of the hidden [*krupto (to conceal)*] manna [of special access Bible Doctrine], and I will give him a white stone, and a new name written on the stone which no one knows but he who receives it.

@@@ MARRIAGE

- (1) **Definition.** Ordained by God from the very beginning, marriage is the legal union of one biological man and one biological woman [Gen. 2:24-25].

GENESIS 2:24-25

For this reason a man shall leave [*azab* (to depart from)] his father and his mother, and be joined [*dabaq* (to join to)] to his wife; and they shall become one flesh [*this was a prediction*]. And the man and his wife were both naked [*arom*] and were not ashamed [*bush* (to feel shame) – prior to the Fall].

- (2) **Stability in Society.** Marriage is one of the Divine Institutions set out for Believers and unBelievers in order to maintain stability in the human race. Thus, *per se*, *marriage is a legal not a “religious” function*.
- (3) **Sanctification of Love.** Marriage is also the sanctification of male/female love [Heb. 13:4; 1 Thess. 4:2-4; Mk. 10:6-9]. The couple is to *subordinate all other relationships in life*, to include parents, as their commitment to the marriage is now supreme. “*For this reason a man shall leave his father and his mother, and be joined to his wife*” [Gen. 2:24-25]. See S.S. 8:6-7. See @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS.

1 THESSALONIANS 4:2-4

For you know what commandments we [*Paul and his team*] gave you by *the authority* of the LORD Jesus. For this is the will of God, your sanctification [*hagiasmos* (consecration) – to reach spiritual maturity]; *that is*, that you abstain [*apecho* (to hold back)] from sexual immorality [*porneia* (illicit sexual intercourse)]; that each of you know how to possess [*ptaomai* (to marry a wife) – how to properly treat your spouse in marriage] his own vessel [*skeuos* – the spouse’s body and soul] in sanctification and honor [*time*].

- (4) **No Polygamy.** *One man joining with one woman* is the Divine standard in marriage. See Gen. 2:18-22, 24; 1 Cor. 7:2; Prov. 18:22; Matt. 19:3-8. Even though polygamy was sometimes practiced in the Old Testament dispensation it was always against the Divine Institutions and the Mosaic Law, and a source of great personal suffering for those who engaged in it. See Gen. 4:19-24; Deut. 22:28-29; 2 Sam. 3:2-5. See @@@ MOSAIC LAW.

MATTHEW 19:3-8

*Some Pharisees came to Jesus, testing Him and asking, “Is it lawful *for a man* to divorce [*apoluo (to dismiss; to send away)*] his wife for any reason [*aitia*] at all?” And He answered and said, “Have you not read that He who created *them* from the beginning made them male and female, and said, ‘For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined [*kollao (to glue together)*] to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh’? So they are no longer two, but one flesh. What therefore God has joined together, let no man separate.” They said to Him, “Why then did Moses command to give her a certificate of divorce and send *her* away?” He said to them, “Because of your hardness of heart Moses permitted you to divorce your wives; but from the beginning [*in the Garden of Eden*] it has not been this way.”*

- (5) **Christian Marriage.** The Christian marriage has the potential to function far above the establishment purposes of the marriage bond. This is because the Christian marriage is also a *candidate for special recognition and rewards* as a subject matter *corporate expert witness exhibit in the Angelic Conflict*. For this reason, Satan disrupted the first marriage [Adam & Eve] and seeks to destroy all Christian marriages, particularly those between two mature **Winner** Believers. False teachers in the Cosmic System even go so far as to “*forbid marriage*” [1 Tim. 4:3] for Believers. However, the Christian marriage that remains intact and sees spiritual growth demonstrates that Satan cannot do it in a particular case – Bible Doctrine is far stronger. *See infra* (8).
- (6) **Do Not Marry An unBeliever.** The single Believer is commanded *not to marry an unBeliever* [2 Cor. 6:14]. However, if he does marry an unBeliever he is to Rebound and stay as he is. *See @@@ DIVORCE.*

2 CORINTHIANS 6:14

Do not be bound together [*heterozugeo (to be unequally yoked)*] with unbelievers [*apistos*]; for what partnership [*metoche (a sharing)*] have righteousness [*dikaiosune – the Believer possesses God’s Righteousness [+R]*] and lawlessness [*anomia (wickedness; contempt and violation of the law) – the unBeliever rejects God’s grace and does not possess His [+R]*], or what fellowship [*koinonia (association)*] has light [*phos – the Divine Institutions*] with darkness [*skotos – the Cosmic Systems is where the unBeliever resides*]?

- (7) **Same Sex.** So-called “gay marriages” – between members of the same sex – is a sin and *extremely destructive to the Divine Institutions* regarding the stability of general societal order and the positive working functions of the nuclear family. See Rom. 1:26-27; 1 Cor. 6:9.

ROMANS 1:26-27

For this reason [unBelievers on negative [-N] volition to the Plan of God] God gave them over to degrading passions [*pathos* (an affliction of the mind)]; for their women exchanged the natural [*phusikos* (produced by nature)] function [*chresis* (of the sexual use of a woman)] for that which is unnatural [*phusis* (perverse; abnormal)], and in the same way also the men abandoned the natural function of the woman and burned [*ekkaio* (to set on fire)] in their desire toward one another [*allelon* (one another of the same kind)], men with men committing [*katergazomai* (to perform)] indecent acts [*aschemosune* (of one's nakedness, shame)] and receiving in their own persons the due penalty of their error [Divine Discipline for Suffering].

- (8) **Happiness.** Christian marriage is not primarily designed for happiness. Only Bible Doctrine is designed for happiness. Thus, for a Christian marriage to operate properly as intended it is essential that the parties each reach spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1]. See @@@ HAPPINESS.
- (9) **A Unique Partnership.** Although marriage is a unique partnership, as the “initiator” *the man* [women are “responders”] *is the authority senior partner* in the marriage. See 1 Tim. 2:12; Col. 3:18-19; Tit. 2:3-5; 1 Pet. 3:1-6. Wives are commanded to submit, *hupotasoo* (obey; submit), to the authority of “*your own husbands*” [Eph. 5:22-23]. Ideally, she must have respect and also be ready to use *agape impersonal love* in order to do so. Why? Since life is made up of systems of authority, marriage cannot function without it, e.g., 1 Cor. 14:34. On the other hand, the husband is commanded to exercise his authority in wisdom and the highest form of love, *see infra* (e) and (12). Both must use Eph. 4:32 – “*forgiving each other.*” See @@@ AUTHORITY.

EPHESIANS 5:22-23

Wives, *be subject* to your own husbands [*aner*], as to the LORD. For the husband is the head [*kephale*] of the wife, as Christ also is the head of the church [*ekklesia*], He Himself *being* the Savior of the body.

EPHESIANS 4:32

Be kind [*chrestos* (virtuous; benevolent)] to one another [*allelon* (one another of the same kind) – other Believers], tender-hearted [*eusplagchnos* (compassionate; having strong bowels)], forgiving [*charizomai* (to show one's self gracious)] each other [the Royal Law], just as God in Christ also has forgiven you [no Believer deserves salvation].

- (a) **Delegation.** The husband delegates authority to his wife in the marriage relationship. Nevertheless, *a wife can certainly engage in all types* of commercial activities and hold high positions in the business, educational, or political world. See Prov. 31:10-31.
- (b) **Women Taught.** A single woman must be taught how to properly love her husband – “*just as Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him lord*” [1 Pet. 3:6]; Tit. 2:3-5. Ironically, she actually desires to control him as part of the female's curse set out by God as a consequence of the Fall [Gen. 3:16; Ex. 4:24-26; Prov. 21:9, 19].

TITUS 2:3-5

Older women [*presbutis* (an aged woman)] likewise are to be reverent in their behavior, not malicious gossips [*diabolos* (to slander)] nor enslaved to much wine, teaching what is good, so that they may encourage [*sophronizo* (to make of sound mind)] the young women to love [*philandros* (to love her husband)] their husbands, to love their children, to be sensible, pure [*hagnos* (chaste; modest)], workers at home [*oikouros* (keeper of the house)], kind, being subject to [*hupotasso* (under the authority)] their own husbands, so that the word of God will not be dishonored [*blasphemeo*].

- (c) **Something Better.** By saying “*I do*,” a woman uses her volition to surrender herself to the marriage bond. If she has married a mature Believer man and she is a mature Believer, *she does not desire to be a free agent as she now has something far better*. Indeed, if the Believer wife is mature and her husband is not, she still does not desire to be free. Instead, she follows God's mandates to do her duty “*as for the LORD*” [Col. 3:23]. Naturally, this case requires maximum application of the problem solving devices and is often encountered as a prime testing factor in the Angelic Conflict. See 1 Pet. 3:1-6; Eph. 4:32.

1 PETER 3:1-2

In the same way, you [**the positive [+P] volition Believer**] wives [*gune*], be submissive [*hupotasso* (obey; to be subordinate to) – **under the authority**] to your own husbands so that even if any *of them* [**the husband is a Loser Believer on negative [-N] volition or perhaps an unBeliever**] are disobedient [*apeitheo* (not to allow one's self to be persuaded; to refuse or withhold belief)] to the word [*logos* – **negative [-N] volition to Bible Doctrine**], they may be won [*kerdaino*] without a word by the behavior [*anastrophe* (manner of life) – **the use of impersonal love**] of their wives, as they observe your chaste [*hagnos* (pure from carnality)] and respectful [*phobos*] behavior [*anastrophe* – **the witness of the life in the Christian Way of Life**].

- (d) **Sex.** In sexual relations in marriage **there is no authority**. Each may initiate and/or respond in sexual advances and activities [1 Cor. 7:4-5]. The husband should not demand sex, but the wife should not refuse sex. Any exceptions to suspend the “love life” between the two are to be for short periods of time *per* 1 Cor. 7:5.

1 CORINTHIANS 7:4-5

The wife [*gune* (woman, of any age)] does not have authority over [*exousiazō* (to have full and entire authority over the body)] her own body [*soma*], but the husband *does*; and likewise also the husband [*aner*] does not have authority over [*exousiazō*] his own body, but the wife *does*. Stop depriving [*apostereo*] one another [**of sex**], except by agreement for a time, so that you may devote yourselves to prayer, and come together again [**in sex**] so that Satan will not tempt [*peirazo* (to test)] you because of your lack of self-control.

- (e) **Husbands.** Believer husbands are commanded “**to love their own wives as their own bodies**” and “**just as Christ also loved the Church**” [Eph. 5:25-29]; Col. 3:19; 1 Pet. 3:7. These seemingly impossible dual commands can only be fulfilled when the Believer husband possesses sufficient Bible Doctrine, particularly in regard to utilizing the problem solving devices. Like all honorable leaders the husband exercises his authority in marriage with **wisdom, sacrifice, and patience, putting his wife's needs above his own**. At a minimum, each partner does not seek to change the other's **personality, style, interests, volition**, etc.

1 PETER 3:7

You husbands [*aner* (gentlemen)] in the same way, live with *your wives* in an understanding way, as with someone weaker, since she is a woman [*gunaikeios* (belonging to a woman) – women are wired to be responders to their husbands]; and show her honor [*time* (utmost respect)] as a fellow heir of the grace of life, so that your prayers will not be hindered.

EPHESIANS 5:25

Husbands, love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] your wives, just as Christ also loved [*agapao* (to dearly love) – the Trinity can only express impersonal love for the unBeliever but has a personal love for the Believer] the church and gave Himself up for her [*Jesus Christ died on the cross to provide salvation*].

COLOSSIANS 3:19

Husbands, love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] your wives and do not be embittered [*pikraino* (to make bitter; render angry)] against them.

- (f) **Protection.** The husband protects his wife always, both physically and socially. “*And his banner over me is love*” [S.S. 2:4].
- (g) **Wives.** Since the woman is a responder *per* Gen. 3:16, the wife should respond to her own husband with affection when he is present. “*Let his left hand be under my head and his right hand embrace me*” [S.S. 2:6; 8:3]. Furthermore, she should have unwavering devotion to her own husband when he is absent. “*My beloved is to me a pouch of myrrh which lies all night between my breasts*” [S.S. 1:13; 4:6]. See *supra* (9)(c).
- (10) **Time Allotted.** God has set aside a fixed amount of time for Category II love in marriage. “*A time to love*” [Eccl. 3:8]. However, certain negative functions in the Believer’s volition where he makes bad life decisions over and over can destroy or shorten this time. “*On my bed night after night I sought him whom my soul loves; I sought him but did not find him*” [S.S. 3:1].
- (11) **Mental Attitude Sins.** Mental attitude sins attack marriage [1 Jn. 5:18; S.S. 8:6-7]. Indeed, the pernicious sin of jealousy can totally destroy a marriage.

- (12) **Wife as Blessing.** A mature wife is a *blessing to her husband* and to all around her. Prov. 31:10-31, sees the wife as a wonderful partner, successful business executive, caring mother, and fantastic lover. “*And rejoice in the wife of your youth. As a loving hind and a graceful doe, let her breasts satisfy you at all times; be exhilarated always with her love*” [Prov. 5:18-19].
- (13) **Wrong Reasons to Marry.** Many people marry for the wrong reasons: (1) sex; (2) status; or (3) security. In addition, common sense would dictate that the Believer should stay clear of marrying a jealous person, a compulsive gambler, a drunk, an irrational person, a gossip, or a violent tempered person.
- (14) **Problems in Marriage.** There are many trials and tribulations in marriage which sees *two Old Sin Natures living together*. The unhappily married man seeks substitutes or engages in sublimation. The unhappily married woman gets pushy and gossipy and seeks satisfaction/stimulation by social unfaithfulness [e.g., Eve/snake]. Problems include: personality conflicts; legalism/moral degeneracy [Rom. 11:6]; lack of reciprocation; unfaithfulness parlayed into immoral degeneracy, where the mate seeks the company of others in either sexual or social relationships; lack of concentration; initial attractiveness departs; no rapport; and, most critically, not “*forgiving each other, just as God in Christ also has forgiven you*” [Eph. 4:32].
- (15) **The Right Partner.** In eternity past God provided for each Believer – “*as a favor from the LORD*” [Prov. 18:22] – *a specific right mate* as part of that Believer’s temporal rewards. “*It is not good for the man to be alone; I will make him a helper suitable for him*” [Gen. 2:18-22]; Prov. 19:14. This grace provision from God excludes all substitutes for the single **Winner** Believer such as the sins of fornication and autoeroticism [masturbation]. The single Believer must wait on the LORD’s timing to provide this person. “*Be strong and let your heart take courage; Yes, wait for the LORD*” [Ps. 27:14].

PROVERBS 19:14

House and wealth are an inheritance from fathers, But a prudent [*wakal (circumspect, wisely understand, prosper)*] wife is from the LORD.

PROVERBS 18:22

He who finds a wife finds a good thing and obtains favor from the LORD.

- (16) **Recognizing the Proper Mate.** Finding a proper mate is a gift from the grace of God; no one earns it. “*An excellent wife is the crown of her husband*” [Prov. 12:4]; Eph. 5:31. Although a particular right man/woman was designed by God for the Believer, this fact can only be fully realized and appreciated by the **Winner** Believer that reaches spiritual maturity. *See supra* (15).
- (a) **Time.** God has set aside time for a Category II love in marriage for the Believer [Eccl. 3:8]. Note: rare exceptions to this axiom do exist, either by choice [1 Cor. 9:5] or by adverse genetic issues [Matt. 19:12].
- (b) **Capacity.** For the Believer, there is really no benefit in meeting a proper mate if the Believer has **no capacity** to “recognize” or appreciate them. Capacity to enjoy the opposite member comes only through the intake of Bible Doctrine. In short, it is not about “meeting the right person” as Hollywood movies suggest, it is really about **being the right person** before the LORD. For example, King Solomon never married his “right” mate due to his own extensive reversionism, even though God allowed him to encounter her late in his life. *See Song of Solomon.*
- (c) **Cheating Self.** In order to **gratify a biological or emotional urge**, fornication and autoerotism [masturbation] are cheap substitutes for the proper sexual relationship designed for marriage only. Unchecked by Rebound, it can destroy the person’s capacity to enjoy his future [or current] spouse in marriage. *See Prov. 5:1-23; 30:18-19.*
- (d) **Flee Fornication.** *See* 1 Cor. 6:18; 2 Tim. 2:22. The single Believer should not put himself in situations that are conducive to the area of weakness in his Old Sin Nature’s lust pattern. “*Marriage is to be held in honor among all, and the marriage bed is to be undefiled, for fornicators and adulterers God will judge*” [Heb. 13:4]. Unchecked, fornication will destroy the capacity of the Believer to enjoy sex and/or a rapport relationship with his future partner in marriage.

1 CORINTHIANS 6:18

Flee [*pheugo* (to run away quickly)] immorality [*porneia* (illicit sexual intercourse)]. Every *other* sin that a man commits is outside the body, but the immoral man sins against his own body [**the capacity for true love in the soul is destroyed by adultery and fornication**].

- (17) **Dating Stages – Common Sense.** Accepting or requesting a date must come from the free will of the person; that which is not freely given isn't worth having [S.S. 3:4]. In all dating activities the female should be protected and respected by the male, as she is someone's future wife. As stated, in dating the Believer should not engage in activities that unduly arouse sexuality [1 Cor. 7:1, 9]. Ideally, there are three stages of social contact [dating] leading to marriage, although most choose to marry before they reach the third stage.
- (a) **Attraction.** A great many members of the opposite sex may fall into this category because "attraction" is based on a wide variety of legitimate factors ranging from physical attributes to mental acumen [1 Cor. 7:9; cf. S.S. 4:1-16]. Note: attraction may also include the negative arousal of lust patterns. In this stage of dating, one should closely observe how the date treats other people, particularly those who can do nothing for them, as a person's attitude towards other people is a barometer on their capacity to love you. Above all, determine if they are Believers and actually understand grace. For the wise Believer this initial stage of dating a particular candidate is generally very brief.
 - (b) **Compatibility.** "*This is my beloved and this is my friend*" [S.S. 5:16]. The compatibility stage is where the dating partners move from the attraction stage and now ascertain compatible norms and standards that match – likes and dislikes. This stage takes time. For the Believer it is critical to ascertain if the opposite person has positive [+P] volition to Bible Doctrine. In many instances, the "proper mate" label is sensed or recognized by both, even if one or both are not yet "*mature*" [Eph. 4:13] Believers. See S.S. 7:10.
 - (c) **Rapport.** This is the final stage. "*I am my beloved's and my beloved is mine*" [S.S. 6:3]; 8:6-7. The proper mate will arouse the soul and provide a fragrance of memory. "*Tell me, O you whom my soul loves*" [S.S. 1:7]; 3:1; 1 Cor. 7:9. If ever achieved, this stage is post-marriage.

1 CORINTHIANS 7:9

But if they [male and female Believers in dating] do not have self-control, let them marry [*gameo*]; for it is better to marry than to burn [*puroo* (to burn with fire)] with passion [at the final stage of dating prior to marriage each will burn with mental passion in soul and body].

SONG OF SOLOMON 8:6-7

Put me [a man telling his girl-friend] like a seal [*chotham* (a signet ring worn on a woman's necklace) – premarital sex is always forbidden] over your heart [*leb*], like a seal on your arm. For love [*ahabath* (soul and sex love)] is as strong as death [*maveth* – God provided for each Believer's Physical Death and for a right mate], jealousy [*qinah* (to burn up)] is as severe as Sheol [the grave robs the loved one and so does jealousy]; its [love] flashes [*resheph* (flame)] are flashes of fire, the very flame of the LORD. Many waters [pressures and problems of life] cannot quench love, nor will rivers overflow it; if a man were to give all the riches of his house for love, it would be utterly despised [*buz* (total scorn) – no one can earn true love].

- (18) **Faithfulness to God.** Marriage is often used in the Bible as an analogy to the Believer's response to Bible Doctrine [Eph. 5:23-33]. God is the initiator, as the "*husband*" [Isa. 54:5], and the Believer, as the wife, is supposed to respond. This analogy is used in the many instances of the Jews' rejection of God in the Old Testament. See, e.g., Ezk. 16:23-52; Isa. 54:5; Hos. 1:1-5.

ISAIAH 54:5

For your husband [*baal* (to marry; rule over)] is your Maker, whose name is the LORD [*Jehovah* (the self-existing One)] of hosts [*tsaba* (an army)]. And your Redeemer is the Holy One of Israel.

HOSEA 1:2

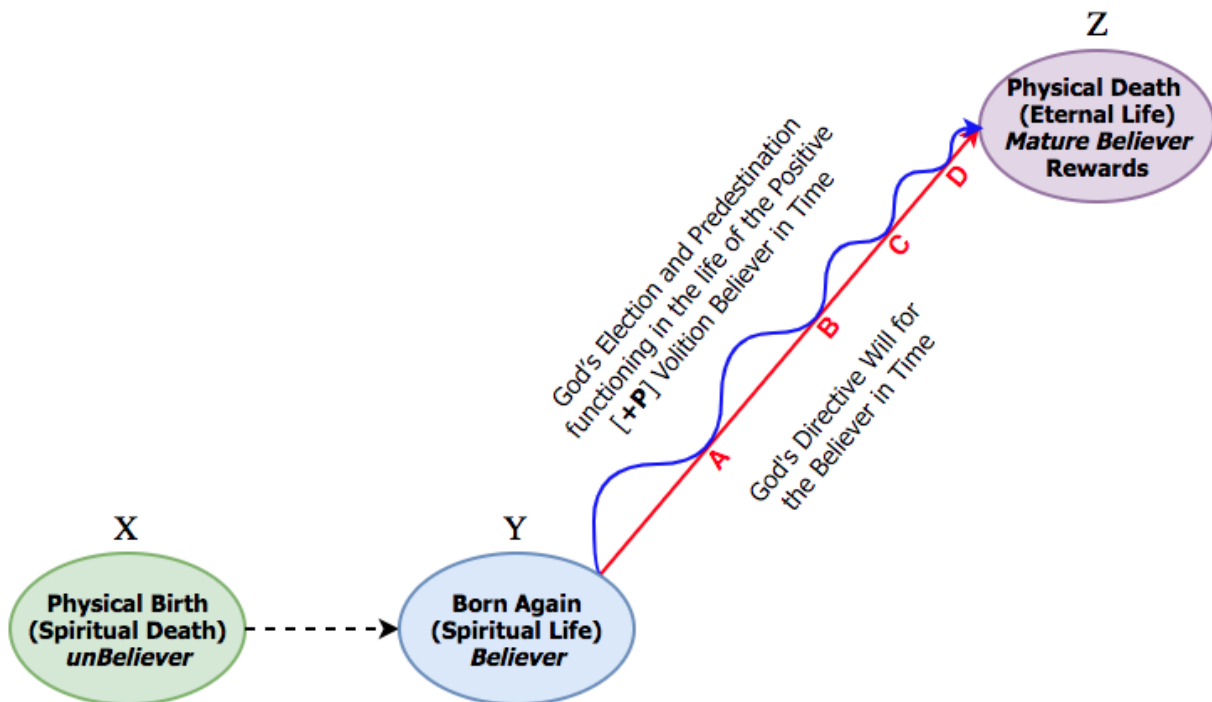
When the LORD first spoke through Hosea, the LORD said to Hosea, "Go, take to yourself a wife of harlotry [*zanun* (a prostitute)] and have children of harlotry; for the land [the Northern Kingdom of Israel] commits flagrant harlotry, forsaking the LORD."

EZEKIEL 16:32

You adulteress [*naaph* (to commit adultery)] wife [the Southern Kingdom of Judah], who takes [*laqach* (to marry)] strangers [the Jews worshiped the heathen idols of other nations] instead of her husband [the God of Israel]!

@@@ MATURITY

- (1) **Definition.** *“For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments”* [1 Jn. 5:2-3]! The **reoccurring command** by God is for the Believer to keep *“increasing in the knowledge of God”* [Col. 1:10] and to *“grow in the grace and knowledge of our LORD and Savior Jesus Christ”* [2 Pet. 3:18] in order to reach the status of a *“mature man”* [Eph. 4:13]. Since every new Believer starts out as a spiritual baby, God made provisions via Election and Predestination under His Plan of God to advance the positive **[+P]** Believer step-by-step – *“until Christ is formed in you”* [Gal. 4:19] – to *“maturity”* [Heb. 6:1]; Phil. 2:12-13; Eph. 1:3-6; 3:17-19; Heb. 5:12-14; Rev. 3:2. God wants all Believers to advance: *“But he became angry and was not willing to go in; and his father came out and began pleading with him”* [Lk. 15:28].



– Tracking The Positive **[+P]** Volition **Winner** Believer –

REVELATION 3:2

Wake up, and strengthen the things that remain [**stored Bible Doctrine**], which were about to die; for I [**Jesus Christ**] have not found your deeds completed in the sight of My God [**Believers are expected to reach spiritual maturity**].

PHILIPPIANS 2:12-13

So then, my beloved, just as you have always obeyed [to learn Bible Doctrine], not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – deliver self from a spiritual adolescent Believer to maturity] with fear [*phobos* (respect) – respect for Bible Doctrine and the Pastor/Teacher] and trembling [*tromos* (the anxiety of one who distrusts his ability completely to meet all requirements to perform a duty)]; for it is God who is at work in you, both to will and to work for *His* good pleasure [through Predestination and Election].

HEBREWS 5:12-14

For though by this time you [Believers no longer living the Christian Way of Life] ought to be teachers [*didaskalos* – given the quantity and quality of Bible Doctrine taught by their Pastor/Teacher], you have need again for someone [Pastor/Teacher] to teach you the elementary principles of the oracles [*logion* (the words or utterances of God) – the basic foundations of Doctrine] of God, and you have come to need milk [*gala*] and not solid food [*trophe*]. For everyone who partakes *only* of milk is not accustomed to the word of righteousness [*dikaioisune* – a negative [-N] volition Believer cannot metabolize advanced Bible Doctrine], for he is an infant [*nepios* (little child; infant)]. But solid food is for the mature, who because of practice [*hexis* (a habit whether of body or mind)] have their senses [*aistheterion* (faculty of the mind for perceiving)] trained [*gumnazo* (to exercise vigorously) – the positive [+P] volition Believer's self-discipline to make Bible Doctrine the number one priority in time] to discern [*diakrisis* (judging)] good [*kalos* (precious; excellent) – Divine Good] and evil [*kakos* (wicked) – human good].

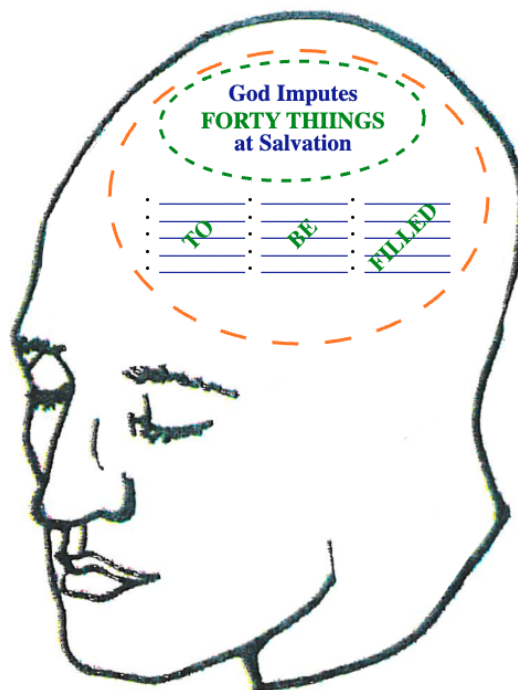
1 JOHN 5:2

By this we know that we love [*agape*] the children of God, when we love God and observe His commandments [you cannot love what you do not know and therefore the Believer must learn the full realm of Bible Doctrine].

LUKE 11:23

He who is not with Me [*Jesus*] is against Me; and he who does not gather with Me, scatters.

- (2) **Glorify God.** God is not a hypocrite; *He can only approve/accept His own Perfection*. Apart from providing the Forty Things given to the Believer at salvation, God is “*impressed*” when: (1) the Believer puts *God’s thinking*, i.e., categories of Bible Doctrine, into his soul/spirit; and (2) the Believer *applies that Divine thinking* to the exigencies of life. In other words, God orders the new Believer to now fill up the rest of his “empty” soul with “*the mind of Christ*” [1 Cor. 2:16] so that he can then engage as a mature Believer in the spiritual “*war*” [2 Cor. 10:3-5] against Satan’s Cosmic Systems and be entered as a subject matter expert witness exhibit [2 Tim. 2:14] in the Angelic Conflict. “*‘You are My witnesses,’ declares the LORD*” [Isa. 43:10]. “*You shall be My witnesses ... to the remotest part of the earth*” [Acts 1:8]. See Rev. 2:10-13; Gal. 4:19; Eph. 4:15-16; Ps. 19:7-9; Heb. 6:1-3; 2 Tim. 1:7; 2:15; 1 Pet. 2:2; 1 Cor. 3:1-2. In this manner, step-by-step in his spiritual life the Believer glorifies God. “*Thus says the LORD, ... ‘let him who boasts boast of this, that he understands and knows Me, ... for I delight in these things’ declares the LORD*” [Jer. 9:23-24]. In turn, God releases to that growing Believer corresponding “*rewards*” [2 Jn. 8] in time and, later, at the Judgment Seat of Christ, a whole new fantastic set of rewards for eternity. “*My Father is glorified by this, that you bear much fruit, and so prove to be my disciples*” [Jn. 15:8]; Job 35:4-8; Rom. 4:2; Phil. 2:5; Eph. 1:3-6.



– Filling the Soul/Spirit with the Word of God –

GALATIANS 4:19

My [Paul] children, with whom I am again in labor until Christ is formed [morphoo] in you [grow to maturity and have the thinking of Christ].

PHILIPPIANS 2:5

Have this attitude [phroneo – the Believer is commanded to think Bible Doctrine – “the mind of Christ”] in yourselves which was also in Christ Jesus.

EPHESIANS 1:3-6

Blessed *be* the God and Father of our LORD Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with every spiritual blessing [Rewards] in the heavenly *places* in Christ [tailored rewards placed on deposit in Heaven with Christ as the Escrow Officer], just as He chose us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we would be holy [hagios – God desires all Believers to reach maturity] and blameless before Him. In love He predestined [proorizo (a predetermined plan)] us [God made provisions to get the positive [+P] volition Believer to the status of maturity] to adoption as sons through Jesus Christ to Himself [Union with Christ], according to the kind intention of His will, to the praise of the glory of His grace, which He freely bestowed on us in the Beloved.

HEBREWS 6:1-3

Therefore leaving the elementary teaching [basic categories of Bible Doctrine taught by the Pastor/Teacher] about [1] the Christ [christos (the anointed one) – the person and work of Jesus Christ in hypostatic union], let us press on to maturity [teleiotes (the state of the more intelligent) – the positive [+P] volition Believer’s goal is to reach spiritual maturity], not laying again [palin] a foundation [themelios] of [2] repentance [metanoia (a change of mind)] from dead [nekros] works [ergon – the change of mind about the false claim of salvation by human works of religion] and [3] of faith [pistis – Faith/Rest] toward God, [4] of instruction about washings and laying on of hands [Rebound], and [5] the resurrection [anastasis] of the dead [nekros – the first resurrection for Believers; the second resurrection for unBelievers] and [6] eternal [aionios (without beginning and without end)] judgment [krima – the Great White Throne Judgment for the unBeliever]. And this we will do, if God permits [epitrepo (to allow to happen)].

1 PETER 2:2

Like newborn babies, long for the pure milk of the word [**Bible Doctrine**], so that by it you may grow in respect to [**learning about**] salvation [**soteria (to deliver)**] – **deliver the Believer from a baby to an adult Believer at maturity**].

1 CORINTHIANS 3:1-2

And I [**Paul**], brethren, could not speak to you as to spiritual men [**pneumatikos – not advancing in their spiritual life**], but as to men of flesh [**sarkinos – under the influence of their OSN, they act like any unBeliever**], as to infants in Christ. I gave you milk to drink, not solid food [**no advanced Bible Doctrine**]; for you were not yet able *to receive it*. Indeed, even now you are not yet able.

PSALM 19:7-9

The law of the LORD is perfect [**tamiym (complete; whole)**], restoring the soul; the testimony of the LORD is sure, making wise the simple. The precepts [**Doctrine**] of the LORD are right, rejoicing the heart; the commandment of the LORD is pure, enlightening the eyes. The fear of the LORD is clean, enduring forever; the judgments of the LORD are true; they are righteous altogether.

EPHESIANS 4:15-16

But speaking the truth in love, we are to grow up [**to spiritual maturity**] in all *aspects* into Him who is the head, *even* Christ, from whom the whole body [**all Believers**], being fitted and held together by what every joint [**haphe – the prepared Pastor/Teacher provides Bible Doctrine**] supplies, according to the proper working of each individual part, causes the growth of the body for the building up [**Edification Complex of the Soul**] of itself in love.

- (3) **Stages of Growth.** While salvation requires only a single decision, reaching maturity requires **thousands of positive volition [+P] decisions** over a span of time. Per *supra* diagram at (1), there are progressive stages of growth for the Believer. In 2 Tim. 4:8, Paul details a “**greater grace**” [Jas. 4:6] level for the highest level of maturity [Gal. 4:19; Heb. 5:12-14]. “**We know love by this, that He laid down His life for us; and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren**” [1 Jn. 3:16]. See @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES. Sign posts of maturity:

- (a) **Mental Stability.** A “*renewing of the mind*” [Rom. 12:2-3].
- (b) **Impersonal Love.** Composure marked by self-assurance with *agape impersonal love* for all mankind causing the Believer’s *tolerance level* to increase so that he is less threatened by the exigencies of life.
- (c) **Good Decisions.** Making good decisions *from a position of strength*, “*I have learned to be content*” [Phil. 4:11], while maintaining personal control of the life apart from negative influences. *See* Prov. 3:4-7.
- (d) **Possessing a Grace Orientation to Life.** A *live and let live* attitude that does not “*judge*” [Rom. 14:10], i.e., sit in judgment of others.
- (e) **Doctrinal Orientation.** Having a Bible Doctrine based orientation to reality with a *sense of humor* that is coupled with Happiness.
- (f) **Instant Reaction Force [IRF].** Anticipating sudden/surprise testings in life, keeping an *IRF* of *problem solving devices* at the ready, spearheaded by *agape impersonal love*.
- (g) **Sense of Destiny.** Enjoying a *personal sense of destiny* with a complete understanding of the ramifications of the Plan of God.
- (h) **Scale of Values.** A scale of values which puts *Bible Doctrine first* [1 Cor. 2:16; Lk. 12:16-21]. *See* @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.
- (i) **Testing.** Standing by and ready for *increased tests* of undeserved Divine Suffering for Blessing. *See* 1 Cor. 10:13; 1 Pet. 1:7; Jas. 1:3.
- (j) **Tongue.** Control the tongue. “*If anyone thinks himself to be religious (threskos – fearing God), and yet does not bridle his tongue but deceives his own heart, this man’s religion is worthless*” [Jas. 1:26].
- (k) **Friend of God.** The “*mature*” [Eph. 4:13; Heb. 5:14] Believer is in a *Fellowship relationship* with God the Father and Jesus Christ. He is a “*friend of God*” [Jas. 2:23; 1 Jn. 4:16] as well as a “*friend*” [Jn. 15:12-15] of Christ. Both the Father and Son “*will come to him and make Our abode with him*” [Jn. 14:23] so that “*the one who abides in the teaching, he has both the Father and the Son*” [2 Jn. 9]; Jn. 14:23.

PHILIPPIANS 1:9

And this I pray, that your love [*agape* – *impersonal love is a key indicator of spiritual growth*] may abound still more and more in real knowledge [*epignosis*] and all discernment [*application of the problem solving devices*].

- (4) **Undeserved Suffering.** To assist the Believer to “*press on to maturity*” [Heb. 6:1] in his spiritual life, “*for the sake of righteousness*” [1 Pet. 3:14], God will administer undeserved Divine Suffering for Blessing – “*trials*” [1 Pet. 1:6-8] or “*testing*” [Jas. 1:2-3, 12]. “*Now it came about after these things, that God tested Abraham*” [Gen. 22:1]. See 2 Tim. 3:11-12; Matt. 5:10-14; Lam. 3:21-24; Eph. 1:6; 3:19-21; Ps. 23:5-6; 1 Cor. 10:12-13; 2 Cor. 4:16-18.

1 PETER 1:6-8

In this you greatly rejoice, even though now for a little while, if necessary, you have been distressed by various trials [*peirasmós* (*putting to proof*) – *Divine Suffering for Blessing*], so that the proof of your faith, *being* more precious than gold which is perishable, even though tested by fire, may be found to result in praise and glory [*rewards at the Judgment Seat of Christ*] and honor at the revelation [*apokalupsis* (*manifestation*) – *the Rapture*] of Jesus Christ; and though you have not seen Him, you love Him [*the ability to love Jesus via Doctrine*], and though you do not see Him now, but believe in Him, you greatly rejoice with joy inexpressible and full of glory.

- (5) **Synonyms.** Synonyms in the Bible for reaching spiritual maturity include the following terms and concepts: (1) *epignosis* (*full knowledge*) by developing a high spiritual IQ level through learning and retaining Bible Doctrine in the soul/spirit [Eph. 1:17; 4:13]; (2) “*an altar*” [Heb. 13:10] – building an altar of Bible Doctrine in the soul; (3) “*building up of the body*” [Eph. 4:12, 16] – building a completed structure of Bible Doctrine in the soul; (4) “*godliness*” [1 Tim. 6:3-4; 2 Pet. 1:8]; (5) salt; (6) “*carry his own cross*” [Matt. 10:38; Mk. 8:34; Lk. 9:23; 14:27]; (7) various military battle terms [1 Tim. 1:18; Eph. 6:11-13; Heb. 12:1-2; Col. 2:5-8; Gal. 5:1]; (8) having positive [*+P*] volition as the command and control system of the soul & spirit, e.g., Eph. 6:10, 17; Phil 3:1-16, where Paul wrote about his new priorities following his sad lapse into reversionism regarding his unauthorized journey to Jerusalem from Corinth in A.D. 58; and (9) “*be holy yourselves*” [1 Pet. 1:15-16] and “*the one who is holy, still keep himself holy*” [Rev. 22:11]; Num. 16:5-7.

PHILIPPIANS 3:7-8

But whatever things were gain [*kerdos* (advantages in life)] to me [Paul], those things I have counted as loss for the sake of Christ. More than that, I count all things to be loss in view of the surpassing value of knowing [via Bible Doctrine] Christ Jesus my LORD, for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and count them but rubbish [*skubalon* (the excrement of animals and humans) – all human good deeds and celebrityship are worthless] so that I may gain Christ [putting “*the mind of Christ*” in his mind].

- (6) **Headwinds.** The Believer consistently engaged in self-pity, boredom, and instability has not reached spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1]. “*For this reason we must pay much closer attention to what we have heard* (Bible Doctrine), *so that we do not drift away from it*” [Heb. 2:1]; Gal. 2:20-21; Phil. 3:10-14.

PHILIPPIANS 3:13-14

Brethren, I do not regard myself as having laid hold of *it* [the highest level maturity] yet; but one thing *I do*: forgetting what *lies* behind [Paul’s past failures were dealt with by Rebound] and reaching forward to what *lies* ahead [the fantastic eternal rewards and a resurrection body], I press on toward the goal for the prize of the upward call of God in Christ Jesus.

GALATIANS 2:20-21

I [Paul] have been crucified with Christ; and it is no longer I who live, but Christ lives in me; and the *life* which I now live in the flesh [physical body] I live by faith [Faith/Rest] in the Son of God, who loved me and gave Himself up for me. I do not nullify the grace of God, for if righteousness [*dikaiosune* – God’s imputed Righteousness [+R]] comes through the Law [*nomos*], then Christ died [Spiritual Death] needlessly.

- (7) **Key to Maturity.** The **Winner** Believer controls his OSN and *perseveres* [Lk. 8:15] using *prudence in his lifestyle*. “*I discipline my body and make it my slave*” [1 Cor. 9:27], “*reaching forward to what lies ahead*” [Phil. 3:13-14]. He knows that God’s love has “*dealt bountifully with me*” [Ps. 13:6]. “*Create in me a clean heart, O God, and renew a steadfast spirit within me*” [Ps. 51:10]; Jer. 9:23. **SLAGG:** *Study, Learn, Apply, Grow, Glorify!*

@@@ MEMORY

- (1) **Definition.** Memory involves the “*mental capacity of retaining unconscious traces of conscious impressions and of recalling those traces to consciousness with attendant perception.*” Memory includes the power of retention as well as the ability of recollection. Thus, memory is a combination of retention and recollection, of identification and perception.
- (2) **The Soul.** Memory is a vital function of the mentality of the soul related to the Believer’s capacity for life and the absorption of Bible Doctrine into the soul/spirit [Ps. 119:11]. See @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT.

PSALM 119:11

Your [God] word [*imrah – Bible Doctrine*] I have treasured [*tsaphan (to hide or store up treasure)*] in my heart [*leb – the soul/spirit*], that I may not sin [*chata – the positive [+P] volition Believer understands the reality of continued sinning and the use of Rebound in the Plan of God*] against You.

- (3) **Directed to God.** Memory directed towards God is expressed in Category I love. The communion table is a *fragrance of memory* in regard to the LORD [1 Cor. 11:24-25]. The Communion is commanded by Jesus Christ as a “*remembrance of Me*” [Lk. 22:19-20]; 2 Pet. 3:1-2; 1 Cor. 11:23-26.

LUKE 22:19

And when He [Jesus] had taken *some* bread *and* given thanks, He broke it and gave it to them [*the disciples*], saying, “This is My body [*soma – Jesus never committed a sin*] which is given for you; do this in remembrance [*anamnesis (a recollection; a remembering)*] of Me.”

2 PETER 3:1-2

This is now, beloved, the second letter I [Peter] am writing to you in which I am stirring up [*diegeiro (to wake up)*] your sincere mind [*dianoia (the mind as a faculty of learning)*] by way of reminder [*hupomnesis (remembrance)*], that you should remember [*mimnesko (to be recalled to mind)*] the words spoken beforehand by the holy prophets and the commandment of the LORD and Savior *spoken* by your apostles [*the content of the Bible*].

- (4) **The Holy Spirit.** Memory related to time spent in Fellowship with God the Holy Spirit via Rebound. A deepening fragrance of memory begins to evolve as the Believer spends more time in Fellowship with God the Holy Spirit and learning the Word. *See* 2 Cor. 2:14; 1 Jn. 1:3-4; Jn. 14:26.
- (5) **Old Langsyne.** *Old Langsyne* is a Scottish folk song regarding a fragrance of memory *for the kindness and joy of certain people*. For the “*mature*” [Eph. 4:13; Heb. 5:14] Believer it is applied to the LORD Jesus Christ as a byproduct of the mature life. *See supra* (3). It then overflows to other people [Phil. 1:3] to include the marriage partner [S.S. 3:1; 4:6; 8:6] as well operating in tandem with a well-developed use of the problem solving devices.

PHILIPPIANS 1:3

I [Paul] thank [*eucharisteo* (to give thanks)] my God in all my remembrance [*mneia* (memory; mention; remember)] of you [the Believers in Philippi that were on positive [+P] volition to Bible Doctrine].

- (6) **Rot.** While the memory of a mature Believer is a blessing, the name of the unBeliever or the Believer in reversionism will “*rot*” [Prov. 10:7] in the subconscious.

PROVERBS 10:7

The memory [*zakar* (remembrance)] of the righteous is blessed, but the name [*shem* (mark of individuality)] of the wicked will rot.

- (7) **Storing Good Memory.** Believers should be storing up good memories of their time on the earth under God’s protection and blessings all of their lives. Such use of the memory is a wonderful insulation against the difficult days of suffering and aging [Ps. 145:7-10; Eccl. 12:1]. *See @@@ SUFFERING*.

ECCLESIASTES 12:1

Remember [*zakar*] also your Creator in the days of your youth, before the evil days come [punishment for reversionism] and the years draw near when you will say, “I have no delight in them [the body breaks down in old age and the time available to reach spiritual maturity is reduced].”

- (8) **Bible Doctrine First.** Getting Bible Doctrine in the soul/spirit memory center must have *number one priority* for Believer's life [2 Pet. 1:12-13].

2 PETER 1:12-13

Therefore, I [**Peter**] will always be ready to remind [*hupomimnesko* (to cause one to remember)] you [**Believers**] of these things [**the Bible Doctrines he had taught them**], even though you *already* know *them*, and have been established [*sterizo* (to make stable)] in the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration)] which is present with *you*. I consider it right, as long as I am in this *earthly* dwelling, to stir you up [*diegeiro* (to arouse the mind)] by way of reminder [*hupomnesis* – to keep going over Bible Doctrine].

- (a) **Stabilized. Winner** Believers are stabilized by the “*remembrance*” [Lam. 3:21] of the Bible Doctrine they possess.

LAMENTATIONS 3:20-23 (KJV)

My soul [*nephesh*] hath *them* still in remembrance [*zakar*], and is humbled within me [**the positive [+P] volition Believer**]. This I recall [*shub*] to mind [**memory of the Bible Doctrine in their soul/spirit**], therefore I have hope [*yachal* (confidence; trust)]. *It is of* the LORD'S mercies [*chesed* (mercy)] that we are not consumed [*tamam* (to completely consume to come to an end) – without God's grace in action all humans would be immediately consumed for just cause], because His compassions [*racham*] fail not. *They are* new every morning: great is thy [**God's**] faithfulness [*emunah* (fidelity; steadfastness)].

- (b) **Rate of Learning.** The importance of keeping Bible Doctrine in the memory center. Since the *rate of learning Scripture must exceed the rate of forgetting*, the Believer will never be at the place where he can stop learning Bible Doctrine. Therefore: “**Acquire wisdom! Acquire understanding! Do not forget nor turn away from the words of my mouth**” [Prov. 4:5]; Ps. 119:16, 93, 109, 141.

PSALM 119:16

I [**Believer**] shall delight in Your [**God**] statutes; I shall not forget [*shakach* (to cease to care)] Your word [**Bible Doctrines**].

- (9) **Logistical Grace.** Bible Doctrine in the memory center is designed to orient the **Winner** Believer so that he can also express gratitude for the principle of logistical grace to include his personal angelic protection detail [Ps. 103:2].

PSALM 103:2

Bless the LORD, O my soul [*nephesh*], and forget [*shakach*] none of His benefits [*the Plan of God to give rewards to the mature Believer*].

- (10) **In Rebound.** The memory center has the *unpleasant but necessary job* of recalling personal sin in order to Rebound. “*But if we judged ourselves rightly, we would not be judged*” [1 Cor. 11:31]; Num. 5:15; Heb. 10:3. After Rebound, the Believer must then forget the sin that “*lies behind and*” move “*forward to what lies ahead*” [Phil. 3:13] in the Christian Way of Life. No self-recrimination over sin is authorized as “*God causes all things to work together for good to those who love God*” [Rom. 8:28], which always operates for the **Winner** Believer heading towards spiritual maturity. *See Acts 23:11.*
- (11) **Negative Aspects.** The negative aspects of memory include:
- (a) **Judging, Self-Pity, and Maligning.** These things destroy the pleasant memories once stored. “*Your memorable sayings are proverbs and ashes*” [Job 13:12].
 - (b) **Drunkenness.** Excessive drinking causes leaders and rulers to forget their responsibilities. “*Ben-hadad was drinking himself drunk in the shelters with the thirty-two kings*” [1 Kngs. 20:16]; Prov. 31:4-5.
 - (c) **Judgment.** God’s judgment of an evil nation blots out the memory of that nation in history. “*I will utterly blot out the memory of Amalek from under heaven*” [Ex. 17:14].
 - (d) **The Reversionist is Not Remembered.** “*Memory of him perishes from the earth*” [Job 18:17]. In turn, the Believer in reversionism does not remember the LORD at all, even when he is under the “*sin unto death*” [1 Jn. 5:16, KJV].
- (12) **Stimulated by Love.** Happiness and love are stimulated by good memories.
-

@@@ METAMORPHOSE

- (1) **Definition.** The Greek word *metamorphoo* (to change in form) refers to a number of things listed in the Bible that change in form.
- (2) **Innocent Man to Spiritual Death.** Innocent man in the Garden becomes a spiritually dead sinner [Gen. 3:6].
- (3) **Woman to Child Bearer.** Woman becomes a child bearer [Gen. 3:15].
- (4) **God to Man.** The Second person of the Trinity becomes the God/man [Heb. 10:5-10; 1 Tim. 2:5]. See @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION.

HEBREWS 10:5-7

Therefore [*dio* (on account of)], when He [*Jesus Christ*] comes into the world [*kosmos*], He says, “Sacrifice and offering You [*God the Father*] have not desired [*thelo* (to take delight in; to desire) – the rituals of the Mosaic Law are teaching tools and cannot provide salvation], but a body [*soma*] You [*the Holy Spirit*] have prepared [*katartizo* (to equip; to arrange)] for Me [*Jesus*]; in whole burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin [*hamartia*] You have taken no pleasure. Then I said, ‘Behold, I [*Jesus Christ*] have come [*heko* (to arrive)] (in the scroll of the book it is written of Me) [*all the Old Testament prophecies about Jesus Christ*] to do your will [*thelema* (what one determines shall be done) – to die on the cross], O God [*God the Father*].”

- (5) **Born Again.** The spiritually dead unBeliever is regenerated, i.e., “*born again*” [Jn. 3:1-15; 1 Pet. 1:23] to a new spiritual birth [Tit. 3:5; Gal. 4:3-7] into the family of God.

TITUS 3:5

He [*God*] saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven] us, not on the basis of [*our*] deeds [*chrestotes* (moral goodness) – human works] which we have done in righteousness [*dikaiosune* – human righteousness [-r]], but according to His mercy [*eleos* – grace in action], by the washing [*loutron* (a bath)] of regeneration [*paliggenesia* (a new birth)] and renewing [*anakainosis* (a complete change for the better)] by the Holy Spirit [*the ministry of the Holy Spirit in salvation*].

- (6) **Baby Believer to Adult Believer.** The temporal metamorphosis of the baby, “*infant*” [Heb. 5:13] Believer to the spiritually “*mature man*” [Eph. 4:13; Heb. 5:14] Believer. See 2 Cor. 3:18; Gal. 4:19; Rom. 12:1-2.

ROMANS 12:1-2

Therefore I [Paul] urge you, brethren, by the mercies of God, to present your bodies [*soma* – stay inside the Divine Dynasphere and reach spiritual maturity] a living and holy sacrifice, acceptable [*euarestos* (well pleasing)] to God, which is your spiritual service of worship. And [Believer] do not be conformed [*suschematizo* (to conform one’s self to another’s pattern)] to this world [*aion* (period of time) – Satan’s Cosmic Systems of thinking controls the world], but be transformed [*metamorphoo* – the Believer is expected to reject the Cosmic Systems and transform himself to the status of maturity] by the renewing [*anakainosis* (a renewal; complete change for the better to another form)] of your mind [*nous* – transformation of the Believer’s thinking requires maximum Bible Doctrine in the soul/spirit], so that you may prove [*dokimazo* (to test; to prove)] what the will of God is [the Believer is commanded to reach spiritual adulthood and not to engage in human good], that which is good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] and acceptable and perfect [*teleios* (to make complete)].

- (7) **Earthly Body to Resurrection Body.** At the Rapture of the Church, the mortal remains of dead Believers change to an eternal and indestructible resurrection body while all the living Believers instantly receive a resurrection body. “*Martha said to Him, ‘I know that he (Lazarus had died) will rise again in the resurrection on the last day’*” [Jn. 11:24]; Phil. 3:10-11.

PHILIPPIANS 3:10-11

That I [Paul] may know [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] Him [the mind of Jesus Christ] and the power [*dunamis* (inherent power)] of His resurrection [*anastasis* – the power that raised Christ from death is available to all Believers] and the fellowship of His sufferings [*pathema* – the categories of Divine Suffering for Blessing], being conformed [*summorphoo* (to receive the same form)] to His death [*thanatos* (death with the implied idea of future misery in hell)]; in order that I may attain to the resurrection from the dead [*nekros* – at the Rapture of the Church Paul will get his resurrection body and eternal rewards].

(8) **Signifies New Status.** Changing of a name signifies a change in status or a change in terms of the Believer's spiritual growth.

- (a) **Ishshah** [woman] to **Eve** [mother of all living] – Gen. 3:20.
- (b) **Abram** [exalted father] to **Abraham** [father of a multitude] – Gen. 17:5.
- (c) **Sarai** [“*princess*”] to **Sarah** [noble woman] – Gen. 17:15.
- (d) **Jacob** [supplanter; cheater] to **Israel** [Prince of God] – Gen. 32:28.

GENESIS 32:28

He [**Jesus Christ in a Theophany**] said, “Your name shall no longer be Jacob [*yaaqob* (heel holder; supplanter)], but Israel [*yiwrael* (God prevails)]; for you have striven with God and with men and have prevailed.”

- (e) **Gideon** [“*valiant warrior*”] to **Jerubbaal** [contender with Baal] – Jdg. 6:12-32.
- (f) **Simon** [hearing; listen] to **Peter** [*petros* (a little stone)] – Matt. 16:18.

MATTHEW 16:18

I [**Jesus**] also say to you that you are Peter [*petros* (little rock chip)], and upon this rock [*petra* (gigantic rock) – **Jesus Christ is the foundation cornerstone of salvation, the Church, and all Believers**] I will build My church [*ekklesia*]; and the gates [*pule* (likened to a vast prison)] of Hades will not overpower [*katischuo* (to prevail)] it.

- (g) **Saul** [prayed for] to **Paul** [little] – Acts 13:9.

ACTS 13:9

But Saul [*saulos* (desired)], who was also *known as* Paul [*paulos* (small; little) – **the name Paul reflected the fact of God's grace**], filled [*pletho* – **in Fellowship**] with the Holy Spirit, fixed his gaze on him [**Elymas**].

@@@ MIRACLES

- (1) **Definition.** Miracles are supernatural displays of Divine power that operate outside of God's natural laws and cannot be explained upon any natural basis.
- (2) **Immediate and Witnessed.** Almost all miracles recorded in the Bible were performed in the presence of a multitude of credible witnesses. In addition, the vast majority of miracles were *immediate in result* and never slow progressive acts. "*And he (the paralytic cripple) got up and immediately picked up the pallet and went out in the sight of everyone*" [Mk. 2:9-12]. Jesus turned plain "*water*" into fantastic "*wine*" [Jn. 2:1-11] immediately.

MARK 2:9-12

"Which is easier [*Jesus speaking to religious scribes*], to say to the paralytic, 'Your sins are forgiven'; or to say, 'Get up, and pick up your pallet and walk?' But so that you may know that the Son of Man has authority on earth to forgive sins [*because of the cross*]"—He said to the paralytic, "I say to you, get up, pick up your pallet and go home." And he got up and immediately picked up the pallet and went out in the sight of everyone, so that they were all amazed and were glorifying God, saying, "We have never seen anything like this."

- (3) **Purpose.** *Bold claims need bold proof.* The purpose of miracles was to address some aspect of Bible Doctrine. "*God also testifying with them, both by signs and wonders by various miracles and by gifts of the Holy Spirit according to His own will*" [Heb. 2:4]. In turn, the hundreds of miracles performed by Jesus demonstrated the veracity of the claim that He was the promised Messiah, as prophesied: "*'But He will save you.' Then the eyes of the blind will be opened And the ears of the deaf will be unstopped. Then the lame will leap like a deer, And the tongue of the mute will shout for joy*" [Isa. 35:4-6]. "*'Rabbi, we know ... no one can do these signs that You do unless God is with him'*" [Jn. 3:2]. "*Go and report to John what you hear and see: the blind receive sight and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up*" [Matt. 11:5; Lk. 7:21].
- (4) **Types of Miracles.** Miracles recorded in the Bible fall into several categories.
 - (a) **Creation.** The "*worlds were prepared by the word of God, so that which is seen was not made out of things that are visible*" [Heb. 11:3].

- (b) **Nature.** Certain temporary suspensions of the laws or forces of nature. Again, many miracles were done to *proclaim the Messiahship of Jesus* of Nazareth. See Matt. 8:23-27; Lk. 7:18-23; 8:25; Jn. 6:1-14; 16-21.

JOHN 6:18-21

The sea [*Sea of Galilee*] *began* to be stirred up because a strong wind was blowing. Then, when they [*the disciples*] had rowed about three or four miles, they saw Jesus walking on the sea and drawing near to the boat; and they were frightened. But He said to them, “It is I; do not be afraid.” So they were willing to receive Him into the boat, and immediately the boat was at the land to which they were going.

- (c) **Death.** Divine power over all categories of disease, illness, and Physical Death [1 Kngs. 17:17-24; 2 Kngs. 4:18-37]. To demonstrate His Messiahship, Jesus performed miracles on both Believers and unBelievers. The method was by thought, touch, or word. Jesus’ purpose in performing miracles *was not to alleviate human suffering in the world* but to fulfill all the Old Testament prophecies about His person and mission. See Jn. 6:1-2; 11:41-44; Matt. 8:1-3, 5-13; 11:2-6.

MATTHEW 8:5-13

When Jesus entered Capernaum, a centurion [*hekatontarches* (a Roman officer)] came to Him, imploring Him, and saying, “LORD, my servant [*pais* (a child)] is lying paralyzed at home, fearfully tormented.” Jesus said to him, “I will come and heal him.” But the centurion said, “LORD, I am not worthy for You to come under my roof, but just say the word [*logos*], and my servant will be healed. For I also am a man under authority, with soldiers under me; and I say to this one, ‘Go!’ and he goes, and to another, ‘Come!’ and he comes, and to my slave, ‘Do this!’ and he does *it*.” Now when Jesus heard *this*, He marveled and said to those who were following, “Truly I say to you, I have not found such great faith [*pistis* – Faith/Rest] with anyone in Israel. I say to you that many will come from east and west, and recline *at the table* with Abraham, Isaac and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven; but the sons of the kingdom [*unBeliever Jews*] will be cast out into the outer darkness; in that place there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth [*in Hell*].” And Jesus said to the centurion, “Go; it shall be done for you as you have believed.” And the servant was healed that *very* moment.

MATTHEW 11:2-6

Now when John [the Baptist], while imprisoned [by King Herod Antipas], heard of the works of Christ [christos], he sent word by his disciples and said to Him, “Are You the Expected One, or shall we look for someone else?” Jesus answered and said to them, “Go and report to John what you hear and see: *the* blind receive sight and *the* lame walk, *the* lepers are cleansed and *the* deaf hear, *the* dead are raised up, and *the* poor [ptochos – the unBeliever] have the gospel preached to them [John should apply the proper Bible Doctrine]. And blessed is he who does not take offense at Me.”

MATTHEW 8:1-3

When Jesus came down from the mountain, large crowds followed Him. And a leper came to Him and bowed down before Him, and said “LORD [kurios – this man is a Believer], if You are willing [thelo – this Believer recognizes that the Plan of God is supreme], You can make me clean.” Jesus stretched out His hand and touched him, saying, “I am willing; be cleansed.” And immediately [eutheos] his leprosy was cleansed.”

JOHN 6:1-2

After these things Jesus went away to the other side of the Sea of Galilee (or Tiberius). A large crowd followed Him, because they saw the signs [semeion (miracle; an unusual occurrence, transcending the common course of nature)] which He was performing on those who were sick [Jesus healed hundreds and hundreds of people of all types of diseases, deformities, and illnesses].

JOHN 11:41-44

So they removed the stone [Lazarus was now several days dead inside the tomb]. Then Jesus raised His eyes, and said, “Father, I thank You that You have heard Me. I knew that You always hear Me; but because of the people standing around I said it, so that they may believe that You sent Me.” When He [Jesus] had said these things, He cried [kraugazo (shout)] out with a loud [megas] voice, “Lazarus, come [deuro (hither to this place)] forth [exo (outside)].” The man who had died came forth, bound hand and foot with wrappings, and his face was wrapped around with a cloth. Jesus said to them, “Unbind him, and let him go.”

- (d) **Demon Removal.** The casting out of demons who possessed the bodies of unBelievers. This demonstrated God’s superior power over demons [Matt. 8:28-32]. Note: demons know that they are under a prior sentence to the “*lake of fire*” [Rev. 20:11-15], per Matt. 25:41.

MATTHEW 8:28-32

When He [**Jesus**] came to the other side into the country of the Gadarenes, two men who were demon-possessed met Him as they were coming out of the tombs. *They were* so extremely violent that no one could pass by that way. And they cried out, saying, “What business do we have with each other, Son of God? Have You come here to torment [*basanizo*] us before the time [**the Great White Throne Judgment**]?” Now there was a herd of many swine feeding at a distance from them. The demons *began* to entreat Him, saying, “If You *are going to* cast us out, send us into the herd of swine.” And He said to them, “Go!” And they came out and went into the swine, and the whole herd rushed down the steep bank into the sea and perished in the waters.

- (5) **Not Fake.** Extra Biblical sources record that Jesus performed many miracles. Due to the *quantity and quality* of the miracles, His enemies never denied Jesus’ supernatural powers as acts of fakery. Instead, they attributed them to Satan’s power. “*This man casts out demons only by Beelzebub the ruler of demons*” [Matt. 12:22-24; Lk. 11:14-23]. Interestingly, however, some religious leaders asked Jesus to perform a miracle of military victory – “*to show them a sign from heaven*” [Matt. 16:1; Lk. 11:16] – by destroying the Romans. They wanted the prophesied Messiah of the 2nd Advent.

MATTHEW 12:22-24

Then a demon-possessed man *who was* blind and mute was brought to Jesus, and He healed him, so that the mute man spoke and saw. All the crowds were amazed, and were saying, “This man cannot be the Son of David, can he?” But when the Pharisees heard *this*, they said, “This man casts out demons [*daimonion*] only by Beelzebub, the ruler [*archon*] of demons.”

- (6) **Apostles.** The miracles performed by the Apostles such as Peter and John were not denied by the Pharisees, scribes, and elders. Rather, the Jewish leaders sought to use threats of violence to halt the impact of the eye witness testimonies upon the general population. *See Acts 4:13-17.*

ACTS 4:13-17

Now as they [the religious leaders] observed the confidence of Peter and John and understood that they were uneducated and untrained men, they were amazed, and *began* to recognize them as having been with Jesus. And seeing the man who had been healed [see Acts 3:1-10, the man born lame] standing with them, they had nothing to say in reply. But when they had ordered them to leave the Council, they *began* to confer with one another, saying, “What shall we do with these men? For the fact that a noteworthy miracle [semeion] has taken place through them is apparent to all who live in Jerusalem, and we cannot deny it. But so that it will not spread any further among the people, let us warn them to speak no longer to any man in this name.”

- (7) **Salvation and Spirituality.** *Miracles cannot save the unBeliever or make the Believer grow up to maturity.* “For if the miracles had occurred in Tyre and Sidon which occurred in you, they would have repented long ago” [Matt. 11:21]; Ex. 15:22-25; Lk. 8:25; 16:26-31. Those on negative [-N] volition will not respond to God under any circumstances to include someone rising from the dead. Still, as in the case of Jesus bringing Lazarus back to life, “many ... saw what He had done, and believed in Him” [Jn. 11:45]. Indeed, even Believers who had the gift did not advance in their spiritual growth by the performance of miracles, see, e.g., Elisha [2 Kngs. 4:30-37].

LUKE 16:26-31

“And besides all this, between us [dead Believer] and you [dead unBeliever] there is a great chasm fixed, so that those who wish to come over from here to you will not be able, and *that* none may cross over from there to us.” And he [the unBeliever rich man in Hell] said, “Then I beg you, father [Abraham], that you send him [Lazarus, the Believer in Paradise] to my father’s house—for I have five brothers [unBelievers]—in order that he may warn [diamarturomai (to give a solemn testimony)] them, so that they will not also come to this place of torment [unBeliever in Torments].” But Abraham said, “They have Moses and the Prophets; let them hear them.” But he said, “No, father Abraham, but if someone goes to them from the dead, they will repent [metanoeo (to change the mind) – about Christ]!” But he said to him, “If they do not listen to Moses and the Prophets, they will not be persuaded even if someone rises from the dead [Jesus Christ would rise from the dead and yet those on negative [-N] volition will still not believe in Him for salvation].”

EXODUS 15:22-25

Then [immediately after God parted the Red Sea the Jews sang songs of praise and joy, *see Ex. 14:10-30 – 15:1-21*] Moses led Israel from the Red Sea, and they went out into the wilderness of Shur; and they went three days in the wilderness and found no water. When they came to Marah, they could not drink the waters of Marah, for they were bitter; therefore it was named Marah. So the people grumbled at Moses, saying, “What shall we drink?” Then he cried out to the LORD, and the LORD showed him a tree; and he threw *it* into the waters, and the waters became sweet. There He made for them a statute and regulation, and there He tested them [the Hebrews flunked every test related to Faith/Rest in the LORD].

- (8) **Miracles Ceased.** The supernatural gift of miracles by certain Believers ceased with the completion of *Revelation*. In 1 Cor. 13:8-10, Paul predicted that *all temporary spiritual gifts would cease*. The completed New Testament in A.D. 96, signaled the final cessation of miracles performed by certain Believers. *See @@@ GIFTS.*

1 CORINTHIANS 13:8-10

Love [*agape – impersonal love*] never fails [*pipto* (phased out)]; but if *there are gifts* of prophecy, they will be done away [*katargeo* (abolished; ceased; canceled out)]; if *there are* tongues [*glossa* (the language or dialect used by a particular people)], they will cease [*pauo* (to stop)]; if *there is* [the gift of] knowledge, it will be done away [*katargeo*]. For we [Believers] know [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] in part [in the pre-canon period of the Church Age] and we prophesy in part; but when the perfect [*teleios* (completed) – the word *teleios* is in the neuter which refers to a thing and not a person, i.e., the completed Bible] comes [*Revelation* was written in A.D. 96 and completed the Bible], the partial [*meros – the temporary spectacular gifts of the early Church*] will be done away [*katargeo*].

- (a) **Only Early On.** The 12 Apostles performed numerous miracles as Jesus predicted – “*the works that I do, he will do also; and greater works (in quantity) than these he will do*” [Jn. 14:12]. The purpose of the miracles was to establish their *supreme authority over any group of Believers and announce the start of the Church Age*. *See Col. 1:1; Acts 5:15-16; 16:16-18; 19:11; 28:8-9; 1 Cor. 12:7-11; Rom. 15:19.*

1 CORINTHIANS 12:7-11

But to each one [Believer] is given the manifestation [*phanerosis*] of the [Holy] Spirit for the common good [*sumphero* (to bear together at the same time)]. For to one is given the word of wisdom [*sophia*] through the [Holy] Spirit, and to another the word of knowledge [*gnosis*] according to the same [Holy] Spirit; to another faith [*pistis*] by the same [Holy] Spirit, and to another gifts [*charisma*] of healing [*iama*] by the one [Holy] Spirit, and to another the effecting of miracles [*dunamis*], and to another prophecy, and to another the distinguishing of spirits, to another various kinds of tongues [*glossa* (the language or dialect used by a particular people)], and to another the interpretation of tongues. But one and the same [Holy] Spirit works all these things, distributing [*diaireo* (to divide into parts)] to each one individually just as He [the Holy Spirit] wills [*boulomai* (to will deliberately)].

ACTS 5:15-16

To such an extent that they even carried the sick out into the streets and laid them on cots and pallets, so that when Peter came by at least his shadow might fall on any one of them. Also the people from the cities in the vicinity of Jerusalem were coming together, bringing people who were sick or afflicted with unclean spirits, and they were all being healed.

- (b) **Removed.** The *gift of miracles was removed* during the lifetime of the Apostles. For example, in Acts 19:11-12, Paul could heal sick people at will. Later, in Phil. 2:25-28 and 2 Tim. 4:20, Paul had lost the gift of healing. Paul could not heal his “*throne in the flesh*” [2 Cor. 12:7-9].

ACTS 19:11-12

God was performing extraordinary miracles [*dunamis* (power)] by the hands of Paul, so that handkerchiefs or aprons were even carried from his body to the sick, and the diseases [*nosos* (sickness; disease)] left [*apallasso* (to set free)] them and the evil spirits went out [*ekporeuomai* (to depart)].

2 TIMOTHY 4:20

Erastus remained in Corinth, but Trophimus I [Paul] left sick [*astheneo*] at Miletus [Paul could not heal him].

- (9) **False Miracles.** So-called modern-day miracles by “faith-healers.”
- (a) **Magic.** Magic or illusions are performed in such a way that the average person cannot explain them even though all such activities have natural explanations. Faith-healers of all categories seek to deceive by use of fakery or the “healing” of psychosomatic illnesses against a backdrop of extreme emotion and hysteria.
 - (b) **Demon Possession.** In many cases, any so-called “genuine” case of healing is simply the work of demon removal by the forces of Satan [Deut. 13:1]. Compare Jesus’ real act of demon removal in Lk. 11:14. See @@@ DEMONISM.

LUKE 11:14

And He [Jesus Christ] was casting out [*ekballo* (to drive out; to cast out)] a demon [*daimonion*], and it was mute [*kophos* (dumb; speechless)]; when the demon had gone out, the mute man spoke; and the crowds were amazed.

- (c) **Demons.** Demons perform “miracles” and in the Tribulation will do so on many occasions in order *to deceive* humans regarding Satan’s agenda – performing “*great signs, so that he (the beast) even makes fire come down out of heaven to the earth in the presence of men*” [Rev. 13:13-15]; Deut. 13:1-3; Acts 16:16-24 [a demon possessed girl].

DEUTERONOMY 13:1-3

If a prophet or a dreamer of dreams arises among you [Hebrews] and gives you a sign or a wonder [*mopheth* (miracle)], and the sign or the wonder comes true, concerning which he spoke to you, saying, “Let us go after other gods (whom you have not known) and let us serve them,” you shall not listen to the words of that prophet or that dreamer of dreams; for the LORD your God is testing you to find out if you love [*ahab* (human love for God)] the LORD your God with all your heart and with all your soul [*nephesh*].

- (10) **Miracles Today.** Since the completion of the Bible, *God heals illnesses directly* and it is entirely appropriate for the Believer to request such action from God *by means of prayer*. No human has the gift of healing.
-

@@@ MONEY

- (1) **Definition.** The possession and use of money is *necessary for life* and the operation of the capitalistic economy under the Divine Institutions. See Gen. 23:9; Jer. 32:44. It is not “wrong” to make or acquire money.
- (2) **Capitalism.** God *ordained capitalism* as the best system for economic and social prosperity. “*For wisdom is protection just as money is protection*” [Eccl. 7:12]. The commandment, “*You shall not steal*” [Ex. 20:15] recognizes the private ownership of property. Further, it is a sin to lust for another’s real property or personalty. “*You shall not covet*” [Ex. 20:17].

EXODUS 20:17

“You shall not covet [*chamad (to desire)*] your neighbor’s [*rea (fellow-citizen)*] house; you shall not covet your neighbor’s wife or his male servant or his female servant or his ox or his donkey or anything that belongs to your neighbor.”

- (3) **Get a Job.** The Bible commands the Believer to *work for a living* under free enterprise – “*and to make it your ambition to lead a quiet life and attend to your own business and work with your hands*” [1 Thess. 4:11]; 2 Thess. 3:10-12; Prov. 13:11; 20:4; 21:25; Rom. 10:7. He is to his “*pay taxes*” [Rom. 13:6]; “*render to Caesar the things that are Caesar’s*” [Lk. 7:25]. Capitalism may cause extreme suffering emanating from dishonesty by management or employees, but *socialism is inherently evil*. Furthermore, the Believer must provide for his family. “*A good man leaves an inheritance to his children’s children*” [Prov. 13:22], while the “*sluggard does not plow after the autumn, so he begs during the harvest and has nothing*” [Prov. 20:4].

2 THESSALONIANS 3:10-12

For even when we were with you [*Paul and his traveling missionary team*], we used to give you this order: if anyone is not willing to work, then he is not to eat, either. For we hear that some among you [*Loser Believers*] are leading an undisciplined life, doing no work at all, but acting like busybodies. Now such persons we command and exhort in the LORD Jesus Christ to work in quiet fashion [*hesuchia (quietness; does not meddle with the affairs of others)*] and eat their own bread [*an idiom for “mind your own business”*].

PROVERBS 21:25

The desire [*taavah* (longing of one's heart)] of the sluggard puts him to death [*muth* – Physical Death], for his hands refuse to work [*awah*].

- (4) **Christian Giving.** Giving of money is an expression of the Believer's *grace function as a Royal Priest* and is part of the Christian Way of Life. See 2 Cor. 8–9; Matt. 8:2-4. See @@@ GIVING.
- (5) **Love of Money.** Money is not evil, but the “*love of money*” [1 Tim. 6:10] as a top priority in life is a dead end and a great evil which causes fantastic misery. See Eccl. 5:10; 6:2; Heb. 13:5-6; Matt. 6:24; Lk. 16:9-13; Deut. 16:19 [taking bribes]. “*He who loves money will not be satisfied with money, nor he who loves abundance with its income. This too is vanity*” [Eccl. 5:10]. “*For it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God*” [Lk. 18:25].

MATTHEW 6:24

“No one can serve two masters; for either he will hate the one and love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] the other, or he will be devoted to one and despise the other. You cannot serve God [*making Bible Doctrine first*] and wealth [*mammonas* (riches, where it is personified and opposed to God)].”

1 TIMOTHY 6:10

For the love of money is a root of all sorts of evil, and some by longing for it have wandered away [*apoplanao* (to cause to go astray)] from the faith [*pistis* – Bible Doctrine] and pierced themselves with many griefs [*odune* (a consuming grief or pain) – self-induced suffering and lack of growth to spiritual maturity].

- (6) **Poor in Spirit.** Money cannot save the unBeliever from Hell. The term “*poor in spirit*” refers to the spiritually dead unBeliever – “*the poor have the gospel preached to them*” [Matt. 5:3; 11:5] – who has a soul but *no human spirit*, not the financially impoverished. Jesus Christ paid the cost for the “*poor in spirit*” unBeliever on the cross. In turn, money cannot purchase the needed growth from Bible Doctrine for the Believer to reach spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1]. See Mk. 8:36-37; Prov. 11:4; Matt. 6:24; Lk. 12:15-21.

PROVERBS 11:4

Riches do not profit in the day of wrath [Great White Throne Judgment for the unBeliever], but righteousness [God's imputed Righteousness [+R] to the Believer] delivers from death [the Believer from Spiritual Death].

MATTHEW 6:24

No one can serve two masters; for either he will hate the one and love [agapao (to love dearly)] the other, or he will be devoted to one and despise the other. You cannot serve [douleuo (to be a slave)] God and wealth [mammonas].

MARK 8:36-37

For what does it profit a man to gain [kerdaino (to gain; to acquire)] the whole world, and forfeit his soul [psuche – the unBeliever]? For what will a man give in exchange [antallagma] for his soul?

LUKE 12:19-21

And I [unBeliever] will say to my soul [psuche], “Soul, you have many goods laid up for many years *to come*; take your ease, eat, drink *and* be merry.” But God said to him, “You fool [aphron (one without reason)]! This *very* night your soul is required [apaiteo (to demand back) – at Physical Death the soul departs the body] of you; and *now* who will own what you have prepared?” So is the man who stores up treasure for himself, and is not rich [plouteo] toward God [theos – the only profitable wealth is possessing the [+R] of God for salvation and then learning and applying Bible Doctrine to reach spiritual maturity and rewards].”

- (7) **Credit with God.** Money has no credit with God, *only Bible Doctrine has credit* and is far “*more desirable than gold*” [Ps. 19:10], for in learning and applying Doctrine “*there is great reward*” [Ps. 19:11]. See Prov. 11:28; Ps. 119:72; Rom. 9:23; Col. 1:27; 2:2. See *infra* (11). See @@@ REWARDS.

PSALM 119:72

The law [tora – Bible Doctrine] of Your mouth is better [tob] to me than thousands of gold and silver *pieces*.

- (8) **Be Content.** The Believer should “*be content*” [Phil. 4:11] with what money and things he possesses at any given time in his life. *See* Heb. 13:5-6].

PHILIPPIANS 4:11

Not that I [Paul] speak from want [*husteresis (poverty)*], for I have learned [*manthano (to increase one’s knowledge)*] to be content [*autarkes (content with one’s lot; sufficient for one’s self)*] in whatever circumstances I am.

HEBREWS 13:5-6

Make sure that your [the Believer] character [*tropos (a manner of life)*] is free from the love of money [*aphilarguros (not loving money; not avaricious)*], being content [*arkeo (to be satisfied)*] with what you have; for He Himself has said, “I will never desert you, nor will I ever forsake you,” so that we confidently [*tharrheo (to be of good courage)*] say, “The LORD is my helper, I will not be afraid [*phobeo*]. What will man do to me?”

- (9) **Rewards of Money.** Part of the God given “*rewards*” [1 Cor. 3:14] for a Believer can be great temporal wealth in this life [2 Pet. 1:3; Prov. 10:22; Phil. 4:19; Gen. 14:22–15:1; Prov. 10:22]. In fact, God provides logistical grace support to all Believers [1 Pet. 5:5-6; Ps. 37:25] and can give wealth to “*mature*” [Heb. 5:14] Believers. However, for the **Loser** Believer the great irony is that wealth cannot be enjoyed without the accompanying *capacity*, which only comes through Bible Doctrine. Wealth without capacity brings great agony, e.g., King Solomon – “*a man to whom God has given riches and wealth ... yet God has not empowered him to eat from them*” [Eccl. 6:2].

PROVERBS 10:22

It is the blessing of the LORD that makes rich, and He adds no sorrow to it.

- (10) **Profiting on Bible Doctrine.** The Gospel and Bible Doctrine are *not for sale* [Rev. 22:17; Mic. 3:11; 1 Tim. 6:3-5]. Daniel refused money for interpreting the handwriting on “*the wall*” [Dan. 5:5-17], but God rewarded him with money and position anyway [Dan. 5:29]. Abraham refused money from the King of Sodom [Gen. 14:23], but God rewarded him with vast wealth. Paul always refused to make an issue out of money from Believers [2 Cor. 11:7-8] in order to never distract from the validity of his teaching.

2 CORINTHIANS 11:7-8

Or did I [Paul] commit a sin [*hamartia*] in humbling myself so that you [Corinthian Believers] might be exalted [*hupsoo* (to raise up to the very summit of prosperity) – Paul taught Bible Doctrine so the Believers could grow to spiritual maturity and receive rewards], because I preached the gospel [*euaggelion* – the good news of Bible Doctrine] of God to you without charge [*dorea*]? I robbed other churches [*ekklesia*] by taking wages *from them* to serve you [*even though Corinth was a rich church Paul received financial and logistical support from other churches as to not make an issue out of money*].

- (11) **Purchase God's Gold.** Believers must *prioritize* “*storing up for themselves the treasure*” [1 Tim. 6:19] of Bible Doctrine, the very “*power*” [Eph. 3:14-19] of God, which holds the fantastic wealth of all eternity/time/space, the “*unfailing treasure in heaven*” [Lk. 12:33]. This “*gold ... so that you may become rich*” [Rev. 3:18] comes directly from the grace of God [Rev. 22:17; Acts 3:6]. See @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER.

REVELATION 22:17

The [Holy] Spirit and the bride say, “Come.” And let the one who hears say, “Come.” And let the one who is thirsty [*dipsao* (to be thirsty) – on positive [+P] volition] come; let the one who wishes [*thelo* (to will)] take the water [*hudor* – Gospel of salvation] of life without cost [*dorea* (a gift)].

REVELATION 3:18

I [Jesus Christ] advise you [the Church at Laodicea] to buy from Me gold [*chrusion* (gold which lies embedded in the earth) – Bible Doctrine is gold in the earth] refined [*puroo* (to burn with fire)] by fire [*pur* – the job of the Pastor/Teacher is to take the ore, refine it into gold coins, and give it to the congregation as their spiritual money] so that you may become rich [*plouteo* (to be affluent in resources) – the Believer can now reach spiritual maturity], and white garments so that you may clothe yourself [with fantastic rewards], and *that* the shame of your nakedness will not be revealed [*phaneroo* (to make manifest or visible) – at the Judgment Seat of Christ the Believer will not be ashamed of his rewards]; and eye salve to anoint your eyes so that you may see [the Believer only sees God through Bible Doctrine].

@@@ MOSAIC LAW & JEWISH HOLY DAYS

– THE MOSAIC LAW –

- (1) **Definition.** The Mosaic Law was *given to Israel only*, as a Client Nation to God in the Old Testament. “*Thus, you are to be holy to Me, for I the LORD am holy; and I have set you apart from the peoples to be Mine*” [Lev. 20:26]. See Ex. 19:3; Lev. 26:46; Rom. 3:19; 9:4.
- (2) **Gentiles.** The Mosaic Law was *not given to the Gentiles* in the Old Testament or in the New Testament. See Deut. 4:8; Rom. 2:12-14.

ROMANS 2:14

For when Gentiles who do not have the [Mosaic] Law do instinctively the things of the Law, these, not having the Law, are a law to themselves [their conscience regarding sin acts to convict them of the need for a Savior].

- (3) **The Church Age.** As part of the Christian Way of Life, *the Church Age Believer is not under* the Mosaic Law: “*For through the Law I died to the Law, so that I might live to God*” [Gal. 2:19]; 5:18; Acts 15:5, 11, 24; Rom. 8:1-4; 6:14; 13:8. See @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.

ROMANS 8:1-4

Therefore there is now no condemnation [katakrima (a damnatory sentence)] for those who are in Christ Jesus [all Believers are in Union with Christ]. For the law [nomos – legal standard] of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has set you free from the law [nomos – legal standard] of sin and of death [thanatos (with the implied idea of future misery in hell)]. For what the Law [nomos – the Mosaic Law] could not do, weak [astheneo (to be without strength)] as it was through the flesh [sarx], God did: sending His own Son in the likeness [homoion (resemblance)] of sinful flesh and as an offering for sin, He condemned [katakrino (to give judgment against)] sin [hamartia] in the flesh, so that the requirement [dikaion (the force of a right law)] of the Law [nomos – the Mosaic Law demands perfection] might be fulfilled [pleroo] in us, who do not walk [peripateo (lifestyle)] according to the flesh [sarx – the Old Sin Nature controlling the Believer] but according to the Spirit [Fellowship with God the Holy Spirit].

(4) **Cannot Do.** What the Mosaic Law Cannot Do.

- (a) **No Salvation.** The Mosaic Law *cannot provide salvation*, since no one can keep all of its mandates. See e.g., Rom. 3:20-22, 28; Gal. 2:16, 21; 5:3; Acts 13:39; Phil. 3:9. The many requirements of the Mosaic Law are equated to a plate glass window, if you break it at one point it all shatters apart [Jas. 2:10; Gal. 3:10-13]. In fact, even mental attitude sins constitute violations of the Law. *“I say to you that everyone who looks at a woman with lust for her has already committed adultery with her in his heart”* [Matt. 5:28]. See @@@ SIN.

GALATIANS 3:10

For as many as are of the works of the Law [*nomos* – those attempting to be saved by keeping the Mosaic Law] are under a curse [*katara* (accursed) – only Jesus kept all the precepts of the Mosaic Law]; for it is written, “Cursed is everyone who does not abide by all things written in the book [*biblion*] of the Law, to perform [*poieo* (to do)] them.”

ROMANS 3:20-22

Because by the works of the Law no flesh [*sarx* – the unBeliever] will be justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous)] in His [God] sight [God only accepts [+R]]; for through the Law comes the knowledge of sin. But now apart from the Law the righteousness of God has been manifested, being witnessed by the Law and the Prophets [they taught this Bible Doctrine], even the righteousness of God through faith in Jesus Christ for all those who believe [*pisteuo* – the Believer receives God’s Perfect [+R]]; for there is no distinction [Jews and Gentiles alike are saved by faith alone in Christ alone].

GALATIANS 2:16

Nevertheless knowing that a man is not justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – acceptable to God] by the works of the Law [the Mosaic Law cannot provide God’s Righteousness [+R]] but through [*dia* (by means of)] faith [*pistis*] in Christ Jesus, even we have believed [*pisteuo*] in Christ Jesus, so that we may be justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous)] by faith [*pistis* – saving faith provides the [+R] of God] in Christ and not by the works of the Law; since by the works of the Law no flesh [*sarx* – unBeliever] will be justified.

JAMES 2:10

For whoever keeps the whole law [**Mosaic Law**] and yet stumbles [*ptaio* (to fall)] in one *point*, he has become guilty [*enochos* (in a forensic sense)] of all.

- (b) **No Eternal Life.** The Mosaic Law *cannot give eternal “life”* [Gal. 3:21] to anyone. *See* Rom 7:10.

GALATIANS 3:21

Is the Law then contrary to the promises of God [**God promised a means of salvation**]? May it never be! For if a law had been given which was able to impart life [*zoopoieo* – **eternal life**], then righteousness [**God’s Righteousness [+R]** is required for salvation] would indeed have been based on law.

- (c) **No Holy Spirit and Spirituality.** The Mosaic Law *cannot impart the Indwelling of the Holy “Spirit”* [Gal. 3:2] or provide for Rebound in the Church Age [Rom. 7:14]. *See* @@@ **REBOUND**.

GALATIANS 3:2

This is the only thing I [**Paul**] want to find out from you: did you receive the Spirit [**the Indwelling of the Holy Spirit**] by the works of the Law, or by hearing [**the Gospel**] with faith [*pistis* – **saving faith in Jesus Christ**]?

- (d) **No Maturity.** Following the Mosaic Law in the Church Age *cannot bring the Believer to spiritual maturity*. *See* Heb. 7:18-19.

HEBREWS 7:18-19

For, on the one hand, there is setting aside [*athetesis* (to abolish)] of a former commandment [**the Mosaic Law**] because of its weakness and uselessness (for the law made nothing perfect), and on the other hand there is a bringing in of a better hope [*elpis* – **God’s grace**], through which we draw near to God.

- (e) **Old Sin Nature.** The Mosaic Law could not fight off the negative influences of the Old Sin Nature. *See* Rom. 8:2-8.

- (5) **Can Do.** What the Mosaic Law Can Do.

- (a) **Point to Salvation.** As “*our tutor to lead us to Christ*” [Gal. 3:23-26], the Mosaic Law can *point to the only solution* for salvation. It absolutely proves to man that he is a sinner and needs a Savior to save him. See Rom. 3:20; 1 Tim. 1:9-10; 2:5-6. See @@@ SALVATION.

GALATIANS 3:23-26

But before faith [Christ’s work on the cross had not occurred] came, we [Believers] were kept in custody [*phroureo* (under a military guard)] under the law, being shut up to the *object of* faith which was later to be revealed. Therefore the Law has become our tutor *to lead us* to Christ, so that we may be justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – all Believers receive God’s Righteousness [+R]] by faith [*pistis* – saving faith]. But now that faith [Christ died on the cross] has come, we are no longer under a tutor [no need for the Mosaic Law rituals]. For you are all sons of God through faith in Christ Jesus.

- (b) **Order in Society.** The morality portion of the Mosaic Law can provide for *order in society under* the laws of the Divine Institutions. See (7).
- (6) **Jesus Kept the Law.** Only *Jesus Christ kept the Mosaic Law perfectly*. “*He who knew no sin*” [2 Cor. 5:21]. In fact, Jesus Christ is the end of the Mosaic Law regarding the imputation of God’s Righteousness [+R] to the Believer [Matt. 5:17; Rom. 10:4]. In turn, Jesus repeatedly pointed out the many man-made distortions of the Law by legalism and religious traditions [Matt. 23]. “*See to it that no one takes you captive through philosophy and empty deception, according to the tradition of men*” [Col. 2:8].

MATTHEW 5:17

Do not think that I [Jesus] came to abolish [*kataluo* (to disunite)] the Law [Mosaic Law] or the Prophets; I did not come to abolish but to fulfill [*pleroo* (to fill up) – everything pointed to His person and work].

- (7) **Three Parts.** The Mosaic Law consisted of *three separate parts or Codices*. The animal and food offerings of Codex II, *infra* (b) included: burnt offerings; grain offerings; peace offerings; sin offerings; and trespass offerings. See Lev. 1–7. The offerings covered matters related to the Trinity, salvation, and fellowship with God. These systems of offerings are no longer in effect for the Church Age Believer. See @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST.

- (a) **CODEX I – The Morality Code Given to Israel.** The many types of sin mentioned in Codex I are all related to the matter of *human morality*. Codex I also embraces the Divine Institutions [privacy, private ownership of property, and the sacredness of life]. Again, while Codex I can be outwardly observed to a certain degree by people, its primary purpose was to demonstrate that no human can keep the full requirements of Codex I. *See Ex. 20:1, 17; Rom. 7:1-25.*
- (b) **CODEX II – Soteriology and Christology Rituals.** Codex II contained the “*spiritual*” aspect of the Law which demonstrated the *person and work of the promised Savior/Messiah* and pointed to the mechanics of how salvation is obtained through grace. *See Leviticus; Ex. 25:10-22; Heb. 9:1-10* [describing the Ark of the Covenant].
1. **Tabernacle.** The original Tabernacle was a large tent [prior to Solomon’s Temple] with three compartmentalized parts: (1) the outer court represented the earth; (2) the Holy Place represented Heaven; and (3) the Holy of Holies represented the very presence of God. The Ark resided in the Holy of Holies. The Tabernacle was located in the middle of the Hebrew camp which signified that God and His Word are the most important things in life.
 2. **The Specs.** All of the design specifications for the Tabernacle were absolutely precise to indicate that God is Perfect and that the Believer must follow the perfect Plan of God and not his own ideas of religion. The brass represented Divine Judgment and the silver stood for salvation. The white linen cloth around the Tabernacle represented the Perfect Righteousness [+R] of God and the only entrance, which was a linen cloth door of blue, represented that there is only one way to salvation which is by faith in Christ. The other colors after blue represented various aspects of the work and person of Jesus Christ. *See Ex. 25-31.*
- (c) **CODEX III – An Authority System in Society.** Codex III covered nutrition, sanitation, jurisprudence, government operation, capitalism, and included a military mobilization plan in *Numbers*. It also set up a strict system of taxation based on across-the-board fixed percentages for everyone. While some of the restrictions on eating and sanitation had real health concerns, other restrictions did not. *See Leviticus.*

– SABBATH –

- (1) **Definition.** All Jewish Holy sabbaths pointed to some aspect *of grace and the person of Jesus Christ*, the God of Israel. Along with all the Old Testament rituals these things were described as shadows, *skia (an image that represents a reality)*, of the true reality. See Col. 2:17; Heb. 8:5; 10:1.
- (2) **The Jewish Sabbath.** The Sabbath was designed to teach that no human can work for God's grace. See Gen. 2:2; Isa. 58:11-14; Ezk. 20:8-11; Lev. 23:3; Deut. 5:12-15. God rested on the 7th day after the restoration of life to the earth. Between Gen. 2:2 and Ex. 16:23 the Sabbath is not even mentioned.
- (3) **Sabbatical Sabbath.** This was a *generation test* of Faith/Rest regarding economic prosperity. In an agricultural society the land was to rest once every seven years as they relied on God. See Ex. 23:10-11; Lev. 25:3-4; 26:33-36.
- (4) **Jubilee Sabbath.** Every 50th year. This test from God was to see if the nation would rely on Him for their protection and prosperity. See Lev. 25:8-55.
- (5) **Temporal Sabbath.** This refers to the *Faith/Rest technique* in the Believer's day-by-day walking with God throughout his life. See Heb. 3:11; 4:1-3.

HEBREWS 4:1

Therefore, let us [**Believers**] fear if, while a promise [*epaggelia (a promised good)*] remains of entering His rest [*katapausis (a resting place) – reaching spiritual maturity*], any one of you may seem to have come short of it [*hustereo (to be left behind in the race) – no rewards*].

- (6) **Eternal Sabbath.** This refers to *eternal life* for the Believer. See Deut. 33:27; Isa. 9:6; Jn. 20:31. See @@@ HEAVEN.

DEUTERONOMY 33:27

The eternal God is a dwelling place, and underneath are the everlasting arms; and He drove out the enemy from before you, and said, "Destroy!"

- (7) **Rejection.** The rejection of the Sabbath always symbolized apostasy and reversionism by the Jews. See Ezk. 23:37-39; Neh. 13:15-21.

- (8) **Church Age.** The observance of the Jewish Sabbath is interrupted during the Church Age. *See* Col. 2:16-17; Acts 20:7; 1 Cor. 16:2. In the Church Age all days are alike and there are no special days directed by God [Rom. 14:4-10].

ROMANS 14:5

One person regards one day above another, another regards every day *alike*. Each person must be fully convinced in his own mind [*nous*].

– FEASTS –

- (1) **Definition.** All *seven Feasts* [Lev. 23:4-43] were joyous events of *chag* and were designed to *teach various aspects of the Plan of God* centered on Christ's mission and work. At the 1st Advent, Messiah came "*humble, and mounted on a donkey*" [Zech. 9:9] so "*that the world might be saved through Him*" [Jn. 3:17]. At the 2nd Advent, He returns on "*a white horse*" when He "*judges and wages war*" [Rev. 19:11]. *See* Mk. 11:1-9; 12:10-11.
- (2) **1st Advent Feasts.**
- (a) (1) **Passover.** Celebrated in March-April, the Passover spoke of the deliverance out of Egyptian *slavery* and also of the sacrificial work of Jesus Christ *on the cross* [Ex. 12; Lev. 23:5; 1 Cor. 5:7]. The traditional Passover sacrifices began in the early afternoon – the same time frame that Jesus Christ suffered Spiritual Death on the cross. Followed by (2) **Unleavened Bread**, which spoke of Messiah's Holiness [1 Pet. 1:19; 2 Cor. 5:21] and the Believer's temporal Fellowship with God [Lev. 23:6-7; Rom. 2:28-29; 9:6-8; 1 Cor. 5:6-7; 11:24; Gal. 5:9]. Both Feasts were celebrated in tandem for an eight-day observance [Ex. 23:15].
 - (b) (3) **First Fruits.** Celebrated on the second day after Unleavened Bread, it spoke of the *resurrection of Christ* [1 Cor. 15:20-28; Lev. 23:9-14].
 - (c) (4) **Pentecost.** The start of the *Church Age*. Pentecost, called *Shavout*, was celebrated 50 days after Passover [Lev. 23:15-21; Acts 2:1-47].
- (3) **The Gap.** After Pentecost there was a lengthy period of no Feasts at all [approximately from June to September]. This gap spoke of the period of time which would be the *Church Age mystery* period. *See* @@@ MYSTERY.

(4) **2nd Advent Feasts.**

- (a) (5) **Feast of Trumpets.** Spoke of the *2nd Advent* of the LORD Jesus Christ and the promised regathering of the Jews and restoration of Israel as a Client Nation to God. *See* Num. 29:6-34; Isa. 5:26-30; 10:19-23; 11:11-16; 14:1-3; 60:4-6; Joel 2:16; Zech. 10:6-12; Ezk. 20:33-38; Lev. 23:23-25; Matt. 13:1-13]. September/October.

ISAIAH 5:26

He [*Jesus Christ at the 2nd Advent*] will also lift up a standard to the distant nation [*Jesus Christ will rule for 1,000 years at Jerusalem*], and will whistle for it [*all Believer Jews then alive*] from the ends of the earth; and behold, it will come [*the Believer Jews will go to Israel*] with speed swiftly.

- (b) (6) **Atonement.** Spoke of Jesus *Christ's work for salvation* and of all the unconditional *covenants to Believers in Israel* being fulfilled [Lev. 16:1-34; 23:26-32; Zech. 12:1-13:2]. *Yom Kippur* – in Temple times this was the only day out of the year that the High Priest entered the Holy of Holies with the blood sacrifice. October.
- (5) **Tabernacles.** (7) The Feast of Tabernacles [aka **Feast of Booths**] spoke of God's provision for the Hebrews *in the wilderness* and the *Millennium reign* of Jesus Christ [Lev. 23:33-43; Isa. 2:1-4; Zech. 14:9, 16; Jn. 7:37-39]. Jews would set up tents outside their homes for ten days to celebrate. October.

ZECHARIAH 14:9

And the LORD will be king over all the earth; in that day [*the start of the Millennium*] the LORD will be *the only* one, and His name *the only* one.

- (6) **Hanukah.** A holiday to celebrate the *Dedication of the Temple* on 25 Dec. 164 B.C., when the Jews reclaimed Jerusalem from the Greeks. "*At that time the Feast of the Dedication took place in Jerusalem; it was winter, and Jesus was walking in the temple in the portico of Solomon*" [Jn. 10:22-23].
- (7) **The New Moon.** A special feast to celebrate the *1st day of the month*. *See* Num. 10:10; 28:11-15; 2 Kngs. 4:23; Col. 2:16; Ezk. 46:1.
-

@@@ MYSTERY

- (1) **Definition.** An Attic Greek word used to indicate the secrets of a fraternal organization, *musterion* (mystery). This word is used in the New Testament to refer to certain categories of Bible Doctrine pertaining only to the Church Age which were *held back from Old Testament Believers* – “*according to the revelation of the mystery which has been kept secret for long ages past, but now is manifested*” [Rom. 16:25-26]; Eph. 3:1-6; Col. 1:25-27. Thus, the word mystery in the New Testament always deals with some aspect of the Church Age [Eph. 1:9; 3:9-10]. In fact, the Church Age is the central hub for all the other Dispensations and a major issue in the ongoing Angelic Conflict.

EPHESIANS 3:3-5

That by revelation there was made known to me [Paul] the mystery [*musterion*], as I wrote before in brief. By referring to this, when you read you can understand my insight into the mystery of Christ [Paul knew he was writing portions of the New Testament], which in other generations was not made known to the sons of men, as it has now been revealed [*apokalupto*] to His holy apostles and prophets in [*by*] the Spirit [*all of the Bible is inspired by God the Holy Spirit*].

EPHESIANS 3:9-10

And to bring to light what is the administration [*oikonomia* (the office of a manager)] of the mystery [*musterion* – special information in the Church Age] which for ages [*aion* (an unbroken age)] has been hidden [*apokrupto* (to conceal)] in God who created all things; so that the manifold [*polupoikilos* (marked with a great variety of colors)] wisdom [*sophia* (broad and full of intelligence)] of God might now be made known through [*dia* (by means of)] the church to the rulers [*arche* (the leaders) – senior demons] and the authorities [*exousia* (the power over mankind) – field grade demons] in the heavenly [*epouranios* (things that take place in heaven)] places.

- (2) **Church Age Only.** The mystery doctrines are set forth through God’s revelations to the Church *in the New Testament only*. See 1 Tim. 3:9; Col. 2:2; 1 Cor. 4:1; Matt. 13:11. Note: with the completion of the Bible in A.D. 96, there are no more visions, dreams, angelic communications, etc. in the Church Age. See @@@ HISTORY; @@@ DISPENSATIONS.

- (3) **Intercalation.** There is much information provided in the Old Testament about the 1st Advent of Christ, the 2nd Advent of Christ, and other future events such as the Millennium, but never the Church Age. This phenomenon of omission is termed “*intercalation*” [i], where one would expect the Church Age to be mentioned in a particular Old Testament passage, but it is not. For example: Dan. 2:40 [i] 41; Dan. 7:23 [i] 24; Dan. 9:26 [i] 27; Hos. 3:4 [i] 5; Isa. 61:1 [i] 2 [see Lk. 4:17, where Christ quoted only the first part of Isa. 61:1]. Note: per Dan. 9:24-27, the Age of Israel was brought to a halt in A.D. 30, coterminous with the rejection of the Messiah by the Jews. The remaining “*week*” [7 years] of the Age of Israel [Daniel’s “*seventy weeks*” prophecy] will start again after the Rapture of the Church and conclude at the 2nd Advent of Jesus Christ. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS.
- (4) **The Church.** The mystery doctrines are taught in local churches.
- (a) **Classroom.** The word *ekklesia* (a gathering place) and *oikos* (family house) are used to describe the local “*classroom*” where Bible Doctrine is taught. Generally, in the early Church period this was the “*house*” [Acts 20:21] of a wealthy Believer, because there was more space. See 1 Cor. 1:2; 11:18; 14:19; 28:35; Rom. 16:4-5; 1 Thess. 1:1; Rev. 2-3; Acts 7:38; 19:25, 30; Phil. 1:1; 4:15; Matt. 18:17; Phm. 2; Col. 4:15.

ACTS 20:20-21

How I [Paul] did not shrink from declaring to you [Ephesus Church] anything that was profitable [*sumphero* (to help; to be profitable) – so positive [+P] volition Believers could reach spiritual maturity by means of learning and applying Bible Doctrine], and teaching [*didasko* (to be a teacher)] you publicly [*demosios* (in public places)] and from house [*oikos* – Churches met in the private homes of selected Believers] to house, solemnly testifying [*diamarturomai*] to both Jews and Gentiles of repentance [*metanoia* (to change the mind) – reject religion’s method for salvation] toward God and faith [*pistis* – faith in Christ] in our LORD Jesus Christ.

- (b) **Pentecost.** The start of the Church Age was predicted [Matt. 16:18; Jn. 15:26-27] and officially opened in *A.D. 30 on the day of Pentecost* with the dry baptism of the Holy Spirit manifested in spectacular, yet short lived, public events. See Acts 1:5; 2:1-4; 11:15-16; 1 Cor. 12:12-13. See @@@ HOLY SPIRIT; @@@ MIRACLES.

ACTS 2:1-4

When the day of Pentecost had come, they [the 11 disciples] were all together in one place. And suddenly there came from heaven a noise like a violent rushing wind, and it filled the whole house where they were sitting. And there appeared to them tongues [glossa (the language or dialect of a particular people; the tongue)] as of fire [pur (burning flame)] distributing themselves, and they rested on each one of them. And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit and began to speak with other tongues [glossa], as the [Holy] Spirit was giving them utterance [apophtheggomai (to speak out)].

MATTHEW 16:18

I [Jesus] also say to you that you are Peter [petros (little rock chip)], and upon this rock [petra (gigantic rock) – Jesus Christ is the foundation cornerstone of salvation, the Church, and all Believers in all dispensations of time] I will build My church [ekklesia]; and the gates [pule (likened to a vast prison)] of Hades will not overpower [katischuo (to prevail)] it.

- (5) **Nine Mystery Doctrines.** There are nine specific mystery doctrines recorded in the New Testament. Again, none of these mystery doctrines were known to the Old Testament Believers [Eph. 6:19].

EPHESIANS 6:19

And pray on my [Paul] behalf, that utterance may be given to me [an open door opportunity] in the opening of my mouth, to make known with boldness [parrhesia (freedom in speaking)] the mystery of the gospel [euaggelion].

- (a) **One: Old Testament Rituals End and the Bible Completed.** The Gospel is fully manifested in the person of Jesus Christ. All Old Testament Levitical rituals associated with the coming Messiah cease [the only ritual for the Church Age is the LORD's Supper]. The Bible is completed [A.D. 96, with the book of *Revelation*] and made available to all positive [+P] volition Believers. In addition, the Divine Dynasphere replaces the Mosaic Law so that the Believer represents himself before God as a “*royal priesthood*” [1 Pet. 2:5, 9]. See Rom. 8:1-4; 1 Jn. 1:9; 1 Pet. 2:5, 9; Rev. 1:6; 5:10. See @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE.

1 PETER 2:9

But you [**Believers in the Church Age**] are a chosen race, a royal [*basileios*] priesthood [*hierateuma*], a holy nation, a people for *God's* own possession, so that you may proclaim the excellencies of Him who has called you out of darkness [*skotos – the status of Spiritual Death*] into His marvelous [*thaumastos* (wonderful)] light [*phos – Union with Christ*].

- (b) **Two: Royal Family of God.** All Believers make up the “*body of Christ*” [Eph. 4:12], i.e., the Church, and there is now *no distinction between Jew and Gentile*. This is due to all Church Age Believers being baptized by the Holy Spirit and put in Union with Christ [Eph. 1:13; 3:1-11; Acts 11:16; 1 Cor. 12:13; Col. 1:18]. Thus, Believers are called a “*new creature*” [2 Cor. 5:17] and make up the new Royal Family in Christ [1 Cor. 1:2, 30; 11:25; Rom. 8:1; 16:25-26; Rev. 1:20]. In turn, Church Age Believers “*are ambassadors for Christ*” [2 Cor. 5:20; Eph. 6:10]. See @@@ NEW SPECIES.

COLOSSIANS 1:18

He [**Jesus Christ**] is also head [*kephale*] of the body, the church [*ekklesia*]; and He is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead [*nekros – Jesus Christ has the first resurrection body*], so that He Himself will come to have first place in everything.

1 CORINTHIANS 11:25

In the same way *He* [**Jesus**] *took* the cup also after supper, saying, “This cup is the new covenant [*diatheke* (a compact) – **the Church Age mystery of union with Jesus Christ**] in My blood [*aima – the substitutionary work of Jesus Christ on the cross where He would die for the sins of the world*]; do this, as often as you drink *it*, in remembrance of Me.”

- (c) **Three: The Bride of Christ.** At the Rapture of the Church the “*body*” [Eph. 4:16] of Christ becomes the “*bride*” [Eph. 5:27-32; 2 Cor. 11:2; Rev. 9:7] of Christ. The Bride of Christ is then prepared in Heaven at the “*judgment seat of Christ*” [2 Cor. 5:10] where all Church Age Believers are evaluated by Jesus Christ and “*rewards*” [1 Cor. 3:11-15] are given out to the “*mature*” [Eph. 4:13] Believers by the LORD Christ.

EPHESIANS 5:27

That He [Jesus Christ] might present to Himself the church [ekklesia] in all her glory [doxa], having no spot [spilos (a moral blemish)] or wrinkle [rhutis] or any such thing; but that she [Church Age Believers after the Judgment Seat of Christ evaluation] would be holy [hagios] and blameless [amomos (without fault)].

- (d) **Four: The Rapture of the Church.** All Church Age Believers, those alive in mortal bodies and those deceased, will get resurrection bodies and “*will be caught up together ... in the clouds to meet the LORD in the air, and so we shall always be with the LORD*” [1 Thess. 4:13-18; 1 Cor. 15:51-57; 1 Thess. 3:13; 2 Thess. 2:3; Col. 2:14-15; Rev. 19:6-8]. See @@@ RAPTURE & SECOND ADVENT.

1 CORINTHIANS 15:51-54

Behold, I [Paul] tell you a mystery; we [all Church Age Believers] will not all sleep [koimao – Physical Death], but we will all be changed [allasso (to exchange one thing for another)], in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet [salpigx – closing out the Church Age at the Rapture of the Church]; for the trumpet will sound, and the dead [nekros (physical death) – Church Age Believers who have died] will be raised imperishable [aphthartos (immortal) – they will get resurrection bodies], and we [Believers that are then living at the time of the Rapture] will be changed [allasso – living Believers will exchange their mortal bodies for resurrection bodies]. For this perishable [phthartos – the human body] must put on the imperishable [aphthartos – the immortal resurrection body], and this mortal must put on immortality [athanasia (everlasting immortality)]. But when this perishable will have put on the imperishable, and this mortal will have put on immortality, then [at the Rapture] will come about the saying that is written, “Death [thanatos (with the implied idea of future misery in hell)] is swallowed up in victory [nikos (to utterly vanquish)].”

- (e) **Five: The Indwelling of the LORD Jesus Christ.** The Indwelling of Jesus Christ occurs at the moment of salvation and is *never lost* regardless of the Believer’s level of spiritual growth. “*Christ is in you*” [Rom. 8:10]; Col. 1:25-27; Jn. 14:20; 17:22-23; Gal. 2:20; Rev. 3:20; 1 Jn. 2:24. See @@@ INDWELLING OF CHRIST.

COLOSSIANS 1:25-27

Of *this church* I [Paul] was made a minister [*diakonos* – a Pastor/Teacher] according to the stewardship [*oikonomia* (overseer)] from God bestowed on me for your [Believers] benefit, so that I might fully carry out the *preaching* of the word of God, *that is*, the mystery [*musterion*] which has been hidden [*apokrupto* (to conceal; to keep secret)] from the *past* ages [*aion* (an unbroken period of time)] and generations [other dispensations in time], but has now been manifested [*phaneroo* (to make manifest or visible)] to His saints [*hagios* (set apart ones) – all Church Age Believers], to whom God willed [*thelo* (to have in mind; to intend)] to make known [*gnorizo*] what is the riches [*ploutos* (riches; wealth)] of the glory [*doxa*] of this mystery among the Gentiles [*ethnos*], which is Christ in you [all Believers have the actual Indwelling of Jesus Christ], the hope [*elpis*] of glory [a guarantee of the Believer's resurrection body and eternal security].

- (f) **Six: Indwelling of the Holy Spirit.** God the Holy Spirit Indwells every Believer and the *power source of absolute* spirituality is achieved by the Filling of the Holy Spirit through Rebound. “*Do you not know that you are a temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you?*” [1 Cor. 3:16]; 1 Tim. 3:16. See @@@ REBOUND.

1 TIMOTHY 3:16

By common confession [*homologoumenos* (by consent of all; without controversy)], great is the mystery [*musterion*] of godliness [*eusebeia* – the mystery doctrines of the Church Age]: He [Jesus Christ] who was revealed [*phaneroo* (to make manifest)] in the flesh, was vindicated [*dikaioo* (to render righteous)] in [by] the [Holy] Spirit, seen by angels, proclaimed among the nations [*ethnos*], believed on [*pisteuo*] in the world [*kosmos* – some humans in every generation will accept the free gift of salvation], taken up [*analambano* – the resurrection and acceptance of Jesus Christ by God the Father] in glory [*doxa*].

- (g) **Seven: Indwelling of God the Father.** God the Father also Indwells every Believer – “*one God and Father of all (Believers) who is over all and through all and in all*” [Eph. 4:6]. “*For it is not you who speak, but it is the Spirit of your Father who speaks in you*” [Matt. 10:20]; Jn. 17:23.

- (h) **Eight: The Blindness of Israel.** There is a *special scar tissue* on the souls of most Jews – “*a partial hardening has happened to Israel*” [Rom. 11:25] – during the Church Age, “*until the times of the Gentiles are fulfilled*” [Lk. 21:24]; Rom. 11:25. The vast majority of Jews in the Church Age reject Jesus Christ and will not respond to the Gospel. Indeed, most Jews are agnostic in their outlook of God.

ROMANS 11:25

For I [Paul] do not want you, brethren [Believers], to be uninformed [*agnoeo (to be ignorant)*] of this mystery—so that you will not be wise in your own estimation—that a partial [*meros (a part)*] hardening [*porosis (the mind of one who has been blunted)* – negative [-N] volition to the Gospel] has happened to Israel until the fullness [*pleroma*] of the Gentiles [*ethnos*] has come in [*eiserchomai (to go out or come in)* – this will end at the start of the Millennium].

- (i) **Nine: Surge in Demon Activity.** Called the “*mystery of lawlessness*” [2 Thess. 2:6-7], the *intensified phase of the Angelic Conflict* in the Church Age is capped by the removal of the restraining ministry of God the Holy Spirit at the Rapture, providing Satan a full opportunity to fulfill his illogical boast to create a perfect environment on the earth.

2 THESSALONIANS 2:6-7

And you [Believers] know [Paul’s teachings on the subject] what restrains [*katecho (to hold back)*] him [Satan] now, so that in his time he will be revealed [*apokalupto (to uncover; to lay bare)* – during the Tribulation Satan will have vast additional powers]. For the mystery of lawlessness [*anomia (the condition without law)*] is already at work [*energeo (to be operative)* – Satan is the ruler of the world now]; only he [the Holy Spirit] who now restrains [Satan rules the world but God the Holy Spirit controls history and keeps Satan within certain parameters] will do so until he [the Holy Spirit] is taken out of the way [at the Rapture of the Church].

- (6) **The Pastor/Teacher.** As “*stewards of the mysteries*” [1 Cor. 4:1; Col. 4:2-4], the Pastor/Teacher is *responsible for teaching* the full realm of the mystery Church Age doctrines in detail so that *Winner invisible heroes* will rise up in the Angelic Conflict [1 Cor. 13:13]. See @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT.

1 CORINTHIANS 4:1

Let a man regard [*logizomai* (to take into account)] us [**Paul and his traveling seminary team of Pastor/Teachers**] in this manner, as servants [*huperetes* (a man who works with his hands)] of Christ and stewards [*oikonomos* (the manager of a household; overseer)] of the mysteries [*musterion*] of God.

COLOSSIANS 4:2-4

Devote yourselves [**Believers in Colossae**] to prayer, keeping alert in it with *an attitude of thanksgiving*; praying at the same time for us [**Paul and his traveling seminary team**] as well, that God will open up to us a door for the word, so that we may speak forth the mystery [*musterion*] of Christ, for which I have also been imprisoned; that I may make it clear in the way I ought to speak.

- (7) **Power Source.** The *Filling* and *teaching ministry* of the Holy Spirit is *the power source* for the Believer in the Church Age and “*He will guide you into all truth*” [Jn. 16:13]. It is the Holy Spirit who provides the *complete thinking of Christ* – “*the power of God*” [2 Tim. 1:8] – to circulate in the Believer’s soul/spirit. Possessing the very “*mind of Christ*” [1 Cor. 2:16] underscores the fantastic impact on history which the Church Age Believer can have during the intensified stage of the Angelic Conflict. In the Old Testament there were very few visible heroes. In the Church Age every Believer has the opportunity to reach spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1] as an *invisible hero Winner* who glorifies the Plan of God, receives “*rewards*” [1 Cor. 3:14], and is entered as a subject matter expert witness exhibit in the Angelic Conflict. Paul wrote: “*My children, with whom I am again in labor until Christ is formed in you*” [Gal. 4:19]. See @@@ OPERATION Z.

1 CORINTHIANS 2:16

For who has known [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] the mind [*nous* (the mind, comprising alike the faculties of perceiving and understanding)] of the LORD [*kurios* (God) – *the thinking of Jesus Christ is Bible Doctrine*], that he [*any given person*] will instruct [*sumbibazo* (to cause to coalesce)] Him [**God**]? But we [**Paul and his traveling seminary**] have [*echo* (to have and to hold)] the mind of Christ [*these Pastor/Teachers were ready to teach Doctrine*].

@@@ NEW SPECIES

- (1) **Definition.** A species is a class of individuals having common attributes and designated by a common name. The New Testament uses the term to refer to a unique *mystery of the Church Age* where at the moment of salvation all Believers are born again as a new spiritual species in the Royal Family of God.
- (2) **The Jewish Race.** The basic racial variations in humans came from Shem, Ham, and Japheth [Gen. 10:1]. The Jewish race itself came from a totally hopeless situation where Abraham and Sarah who were both sexually dead [Sarah was always barren even before old age set in] and unable to procreate but nevertheless did produce a son, as God had promised them. See Gen. 21:12; 26:3-4; Rom. 4:17-21.
 - (a) **Jews.** The Jews were selected to *represent the Plan of God* before the world and to be the *custodian/guardian for the developing Bible* [Deut. 24:8]. The historical impact of the Jewish people in the Old Testament was visible for all peoples and nations to observe [Gen. 18:18; 22:18; 26:4]. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS.
 - (b) **Client Nation.** Throughout the Old Testament period, the Jews, as various Client Nations to God under the concept of the pivot were generally on negative [-N] volition to God and His Word. See 1 Cor. 10:5; Rom. 9:6-13; *Hosea*. See @@@ PIVOT & CLIENT NATION.
- (3) **Christian New Species.** Christians in the Church Age are *not called a new race*, but labeled as an entirely *new species* [*ktisis*] because they are Royal Family of God in Union with Christ and have access to the wonders of the Church Age mystery. 2 Cor. 5:17, “*new creature*” and “*new things*” terminology reflects this the new position. See @@@ MYSTERY.

2 CORINTHIANS 5:17

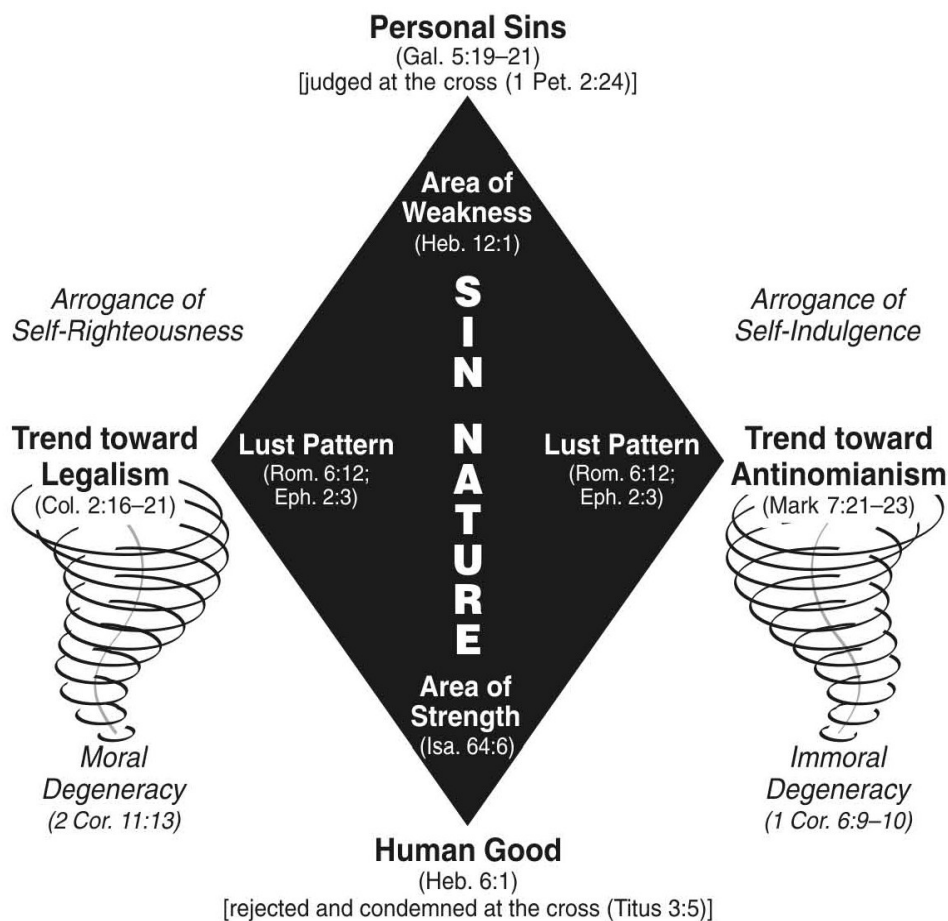
Therefore if anyone is in Christ, *he is* a new creature [*ktisis*]; the old [*archaios* (that which has been from the beginning) – the absolute enslavement to the Old Sin Nature and Spiritual Death] things passed away [*parerchomai* (to lose power over)]; behold, new things [*kainos* (a new unprecedented thing) – the Forty Things given by God to the Believer at the point of salvation] have come.

-
- (a) **Greek Word.** The Greek word to describe the “*new things*” in 2 Cor. 5:17, is *kainos* (a new unprecedented thing). The “*new things*” include the Forty Things that God does at salvation, not a change in morality or lifestyle [Gal. 3:3-5]. See @@@ FORTY THINGS.
 - (b) **False Meaning.** Many religious legalists wrongfully associate the truth of the new species as a false expectation that the adherent will now magically be motivated to perform increased acts of human good – that God has changed the lust patterns of his Old Sin Nature [OSN].
 - (c) **True Meaning.** In reality, the “*old things*” have “*passed away* [*parerchomai* (to lose power)]” terminology in 2 Cor. 5:17, should properly be translated as “*the old things have lost their power*” over the Believer due to the fact that the Believer can now employ the power of the Holy Spirit to fight off the influences of his OSN. In other words, although the “*old things*” refer to the power of the OSN and the Believer’s former position of Spiritual Death in Adam [1 Cor. 15:22], this does not mean that God has altered the OSN or that the Believer is now free from committing personal sin. Rather, it means that the Believer *can now choose* to live in the Divine Dynasphere “*so we too might walk in newness of life*” [Rom. 6:4], whereas before, as an unBeliever, he was trapped in the Cosmic Systems of Satan. Now, only the Believer’s human volition can give his OSN the power to control him. See @@@ OLD SIN NATURE; @@@ REBOUND.
- (4) **Bottom Line.** The real significance of the new species designation:
- (a) **Newness.** The Believer is taken from a hopeless situation of Spiritual Death and elevated to the position Union with Christ and adult sonship, Royal Family of God. See @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST.
 - (b) **Invisible.** The historical impact of the **Winner** Believer is mostly invisible. There are, of course, *great blessings by association* to family, friends, and country. See @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.
 - (c) **Prepared.** Knowing that the OSN wages “*war against the soul*” [1 Pet 2:11] for control, the **Winner** Believer is locked and loaded for combat in the Angelic Conflict. See Eph. 2:10; 1 Cor. 3:14.
-

@@@ OLD SIN NATURE

- (1) **Definition.** Located in the *biological cell structure* of every human, the invisible Old Sin Nature [OSN] is the Believer's primary source of temptation to commit sin and to perform acts of human good.

CHARACTERISTICS OF THE SIN NATURE



- (2) **Source of Spiritual Death.** As the genetic home for the imputation of Adam's original sin by God at birth [an affinity attraction], the OSN is also the source of Spiritual Death for all mankind. "*For since by a man (Adam) came death*" [1 Cor. 15:21-22]; Rom. 5:12; 6:23; 7:15, 17-18; Eph. 2:1; 2 Cor. 5:14; Ps. 51:5. *See infra* (3).

1 CORINTHIANS 15:21-22

For since by a man [Adam] came death, [*thanatos* (physical death with the implied idea of future misery in hell) – Spiritual Death], by a man [Jesus] also came the resurrection of the dead [*nekros* (lifeless)]. For as in Adam all die, [*apothnesko* (eternal death)], so also in Christ all [Believers] will be made alive [*with a resurrection body*].

- (3) **The Double Curse.** **First:** The OSN is transferred to each member of the human race genetically because of the action of the first man Adam, who committed the first sin [Eve sinned first, but was deceived]. This process is accomplished through *human copulation*. "*For as in Adam all die*" [1 Cor. 15:21-22]; Ps. 51:5; Gen. 3:15; 5:3; 1 Tim. 2:13-14; Rom. 5:12, 17-19; Gen. 5:3. **Second:** At the same time that God imputes human life to the biological life at birth, making each human *physically alive*, God also imputes Adam's original sin to the genetically formed OSN, making *all babies spiritually dead*, so that they are enemies of God and under his "*wrath*" [Jn. 3:36]. This function ensures salvation can only be by grace alone. *See @@@ GRACE.*

ROMANS 5:12

Therefore, just as through one man [Adam] sin [*hamartia* – the Old Sin Nature] entered into the world [*kosmos* – Satan is the ruler of the world], and death [*thanatos* (physical death with the implied idea of future misery in hell) – Spiritual Death] through sin, and so death [*thanatos* – Spiritual Death] spread to all men, because all sinned [*hamartano* – all humans possess Adam's OSN and also commit their own personal sins].

GENESIS 5:3

When Adam had lived one hundred and thirty years, he became the father of a son in his own likeness [*demuth* – Adam passed down the OSN to his offspring], according to his image, and named him Seth.

ROMANS 5:17

For if by the transgression [*paraptoma* (a lapse or deviation from truth; misdeed)] of the one [Adam's original sin], death [*thanatos* (physical death with the implied idea of future misery in hell) – Spiritual Death] reigned [*basileuo* (to be king)] through the one, much more those [all Believers] who receive the abundance of grace [*charis* – the grace of God] and of the gift [*dorea* (a gift without cost)] of righteousness [*dikaiosune* – God's Righteousness [+R] given to the Believer at salvation] will reign [*basileuo* (to be king)] in life through [*dia* (by means of)] the One, Jesus Christ.

- (4) **Total Depravity of Man.** The OSN explains the *total depravity of man* vis-a-vis the Perfection of the Trinity. See Job 25:4-6; 42:6; Rom. 3:10; Jer. 17:9. The OSN ensures [-r] mankind's total helplessness to enter into a relationship with Perfect [+R] God by means of religion. See @@@ TRINITY.

ROMANS 3:10

As it is written, "There is none righteous [*dikaios* – no human can acquire God's Righteousness [+R] apart from grace], not even one."

- (5) **Genius of God.** In the Plan of God all humans born into the world [except Jesus Christ] are now *condemned at birth*, making all eligible for God's free salvation by grace offer, apart from human works of righteousness [-r]. See *supra* (3).
- (6) **Jesus' Body.** In the hypostatic union, Jesus of Nazareth was *born without an OSN*. God the Holy Spirit provided 23 uncontaminated pure male chromosomes to Mary's 23 pure chromosomes. Born perfect, Adam's original sin was not imputed to Him at birth. See Matt. 1:18; Lk. 1:34-35, 37. See @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION.

LUKE 1:34-35

Mary said to the angel, "How can this be, since I am a virgin?" The angel answered and said to her [Mary], "The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow [*episkiazo* (to envelop in a shadow – the Holy Spirit provided 23 male chromosomes)] you; and for that reason the holy Child shall be called the Son of God."

- (7) **Remains in the Believer.** The OSN is *retained in the Believer's body* after salvation [1 Jn. 1:8; 2:1; 1 Cor. 3:1-2]. However, it stays with the mortal remains of the Believer at his Physical Death and is not in the resurrection body. See Phil. 3:20-21; 1 Cor. 15:53-57; 1 Jn. 3:1-3.

1 JOHN 1:8

If we [**Believers**] say that we have no sin [*hamartia* – the OSN], we are deceiving ourselves and the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in matter under consideration) – Bible Doctrine] is not in us.

1 CORINTHIANS 3:1-2

And I [**Paul**], brethren, could not speak to you as to spiritual men [*pneumatikos* (relating to the human spirit) – Believers at some level of maturity], but as to men of flesh [*sarkinos* – under the influence of the OSN the negative [-N] volition Believer acts like the unBeliever], as to infants [*nepios* (an infant) – baby Believers] in Christ. I gave you milk to drink, not solid food [**Paul could not give the Loser Believers advanced Bible Doctrine**]; for you were not yet able *to receive it*. Indeed, even now you are not yet able.

- (8) **Synonyms.** The Bible uses different terms to describe various aspects of the OSN: (1) *sarx* (flesh) refers to the location of the OSN, in the genetic makeup of the body [Gal. 5:16; Eph. 2:3; Rom. 6:6; 7:14; 8:12]; (2) *melos* (members) refers to the location in the body [Col. 3:5; Rom. 7:15]; (3) *palaaios anthropos* (old man) refers to the ancient origin from Adam [Rom. 6:6; Col. 3:9; Eph. 4:22; Gal. 2:20]; (4) *archaios* (old things) refers to the Adamic origin [2 Cor. 5:17]; (5) *sarkinos* (carnal) refers to the effect of the OSN when the Believer is out of Fellowship with God the Holy Spirit [Rom. 7:14; 8:6, 13; 1 Cor. 3:1-3]; (6) *hamartia* (sin) in the singular refers to the OSN [Rom. 5:12; 7:14; 1 Cor. 15:56; 1 Jn. 1:8]; (7) *kardia* (heart) refers to the volitional decision to choose to live under the power of the OSN [Jer. 17:9; Matt. 12:34-35; 15:19; Mk. 7:21-23; Ezk. 36:26-27]; and (8) the first *aner* (husband) is worthless, with Christ being the second perfect husband [Rom. 7:2-4].

MATTHEW 15:19

For out of the heart [*kardia* – OSN] come evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, slanders.

ROMANS 7:2-4

For the married woman is bound by law to her husband while he is living; but if her husband dies, she is released from the law concerning her husband [a second marriage is authorized if the spouse dies]. So then, if while her husband is living she is joined to another man, she shall be called an adulteress [moichalis]; but if her husband dies, she is free from the law, so that she is not an adulteress though she is joined to another man. Therefore, my brethren, you also were made to die [thanatoo (by physical death to be liberated from the bond of anything)] to the Law [the first husband was the curse of the Law and OSN, both now dead for the Believer at the point of salvation] through the body of Christ, so that you might be joined to another [heteros – the second husband is now Jesus Christ], to Him who was raised from the dead, in order that we might bear fruit [karpophoreo – a Believer “married to Christ” is expected to be faithful to Him by reaching spiritual maturity and not sneak back to the former husband to commit sin and be put under his evil influence] for God.

JEREMIAH 17:9

The heart [leb – OSN] is more deceitful than all else and is desperately sick [anash (desperately wicked)]; Who can understand it?

(9) **Essence of Old Sin Nature.**

- (a) **Area of Human Weakness.** The area of weakness tempts the Believer to engage in personal sin [Heb. 12:1]. Sins come in three arenas: (1) **Mental Attitude Sins** [Prov. 6:16-19; Matt. 9:4]; (2) **Overt Sins**, such as murder, stealing, etc. [Ex. 20:13-15]; and (3) **Sins of the Tongue** [Prov. 6:16-19; 17:28; 21:23; Eph. 4:29; Ps. 34:13; Jas. 1:26].
- (b) **Area of Human Strength.** The OSN produces “*dead works*” [Heb. 6:1] of human good in [-r] righteousness. See Rom. 3:20; 8:8; Isa. 8:8; 64:6; Phil 3:9; Tit. 3:5; Eph. 2:8-9; Gal. 2:16; 2 Tim. 1:9.
- (c) **Lusts.** The OSN has a variety of “*lusts*” [Rom. 6:12; Eph. 2:3]. The lusts include such things as approbation lust, power lust, terror lust, stimulation lust [sex, drugs, etc.], killer lust, money lust [Heb. 13:5; 1 Tim. 6:10], and cruelty lust. See @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS.

- (d) **Two Primary Trends.** The general trends of the OSN flow towards two primary lust patterns: (1) lascivious antinomianism [*immoral degeneracy*]; and (2) ascetic legalism [*moral degeneracy*]. The lust patterns can change and shift over the lifetime and the Believer must understand his particular lust pattern which varies from person to person. See Heb. 12:1; 1 Pet. 1:14-16; 4:2.

1 PETER 4:2

So as to live the rest of the time in the flesh [*sarx*] no longer for the lusts [*epithumia* – OSN] of men [*in the Cosmic Systems*], but for the will [*thelema*] of God [*reach spiritual maturity*].

1 PETER 1:14-16

As obedient children, do not be conformed to the former lusts *which were yours* in your ignorance [*in the Cosmic Systems*], but like the Holy One [*Holy Spirit*] who called you, be holy yourselves [*Rebound brings “absolute” spirituality*] also in all *your* behavior [*“relative” spirituality of the Believer*]; because it is written, “You shall be Holy [*hagios*] for I am Holy [*Trinity*].”

HEBREWS 12:1

Therefore, since we [*Church Age Believers*] have so great a cloud of witnesses [*martus* (a witness in a legal sense)] surrounding us [*Believers who reached maturity in the Old Testament*], let us also lay aside every encumbrance [*ogkos* (mass; weight; burden)] and the sin which so easily entangles [*euperistatos* (skillfully surrounding) – *Believer must identify areas of lust in their OSN*] us, and let us run with endurance the race [*agon* (the place of contest) – *time in the body*] that is set before us.

1. **Self-Righteous Legalism Equates to Moral Degeneracy.** “*Now to the one who works (deeds of human good), his wage is not credited as a favor, but as a due*” [Rom. 4:4]; Gal. 5:9; Col. 2:16-21; 2 Cor. 11:13-14; Acts 15:1, 5, 24; Gen. 4:7; Heb. 6:1.

GALATIANS 5:9

A little leaven [*zume*] leavens the whole lump *of dough*.

2. **Immoral Lasciviousness Equates to Immoral Degeneracy.**
See 1 Cor. 6:9-10; Mk. 7:21-23; Gal. 5:19-21.

MARK 7:21-23

For from within, out of the heart [*kardia* – OSN] of men, proceed the evil thoughts, fornications, thefts, murders, adulteries, deeds of coveting *and* wickedness, *as well as* deceit, sensuality, envy, slander, pride *and* foolishness. All these evil things proceed from within and defile the man.

1 CORINTHIANS 6:9-10

Or do you not know that the unrighteous [*adikos* – the unBeliever] will not inherit [*kleronomeo* (to obtain a lot)] the kingdom of God? [*salvation*] Do not be deceived [*planao* (to be led astray) – about the unBeliever's claims]; neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate [*malakos* (a catamite)], nor homosexuals [*arsenokoites* (sodomite; homosexual)], nor thieves, nor *the* covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor swindlers, will inherit the kingdom of God [*unBelievers and Believers both sin per the list herein, but the unBeliever is inherently stuck in the Cosmic Systems*].

- (10) **The War For Control.** The OSN wages “*war against the soul*” [1 Pet 2:11]. At any given moment the Believer is either controlled by the OSN or by God the Holy Spirit. This is the *absolute aspect of spirituality*. In Rom. 7:15-25 and Gal. 5:16-17, Paul describes the constant inner conflict for *control of his thinking* between his OSN and the Holy Spirit. *See @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT* at (14) for a discussion of the *two spiritual wars*.

ROMANS 7:15-25

For what I [Paul] am doing, I do not understand [Paul wants to stay in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit and not commit personal sin]; for I am not practicing what I *would* like to *do*, but I am doing [*succumbing to temptation from the OSN*] the very thing I hate. But if I do the very thing I do not want *to do*, I agree with the Law [*Mosaic Law demonstrates the impact of sins*], *confessing* that the Law is good. So now, no longer am I the one doing it, but sin which dwells in me [OSN]. For I know that nothing good dwells in me, that is, in my flesh [*sarx* – location of the OSN]; for the willing [*thelo* (to exercise free will)] is present in me, but the doing of the good *is* not. For the

good that I want, I do not do, but I practice the very evil that I do not want. But if I am doing the very thing that I do not want, I am no longer the one doing it, but sin [OSN] which dwells in me. I find then the principle that evil is present in me, the one who wants to do good [Divine Good]. For I joyfully concur with the law of God in the inner man [the conscience loaded with Bible Doctrine], but I see a different law in the members of my body, waging war [antistrateuomai (to war against as in a military expedition)] against the law of my mind and making me a prisoner of the law of sin which is in my members. Wretched man that I am! Who will set me free from the body of this death [the Believer in a state of Temporal Death when he commits sin]? Thanks be to God through Jesus Christ our LORD [God provides the grace solution for via Rebound]! So then, on the one hand I myself with my mind am serving the law of God, but on the other, with my flesh the law of sin.

GALATIANS 5:16-17

But I [Paul] say, walk [peripateo – the status of being Filled with the Holy Spirit] by the Spirit, and you will not carry out the desire of the flesh [sarx – the Old Sin Nature]. For the flesh sets its desire against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh; for these are in opposition [antikeimai] to one another, so that you may not do the things that you please.

- (11) **Volition Gatekeeper.** The OSN is the source of most temptations but the gatekeeper to the Believer's soul is his *volition which chooses* to sin or not to sin [Rom. 8:6, 12-13; Gal. 5:16]. Thus, at any given moment the Believer is either under the control of the OSN or the Holy Spirit. Prior to murdering Abel his brother, Cain is instructed by God to *mashal* (master; rule) his OSN, i.e., use his volition to thwart its evil influence. “*Then the LORD said to Cain, “Why are you angry? And why has your countenance fallen? If you do well, will not your countenance be lifted up? And if you do not do well, sin (Old Sin Nature) is crouching at the door; and its desire is for you, but you must master it”* [Gen. 4:6-7]; 1 Pet. 2:24. See @@@ ENEMY.

1 PETER 2:24

And He Himself [Jesus Christ] bore our sins in His body on the cross, so that we [Believers] might die to [apogenomenos (to be removed from)] sin [the negative influence of the OSN] and live to righteousness [dikaiousune – living inside God's Divine Dynasphere].

- (12) **Solutions.** There are two ways that the Believer can *neutralize the influence* of the OSN on his life. See @@@ HOLY SPIRIT.
- (a) **First: Rebound.** When the Believer sins, he must use Rebound to *immediately neutralize the OSN* [1 Cor. 11:31; 1 Jn. 1:9]. In fact, the Believer in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit cannot sin. “*No one who abides in Him sins*” [1 Jn. 3:5-6]. See 1 Jn. 5:18; Rom. 8:1. This means that the actual sin is always *preceded* by the negative [-N] volition that agrees to succumb to the temptation to sin which then immediately puts the Believer out of Fellowship [1 Cor. 10:13]. Thus, the wise Believer will log maximum time inside the Divine Dynasphere. “*For if you are living ... by the Spirit you are putting to death the things of the body*” [1 Cor. 15:22]. See Acts 26:18; Rom. 8:13; Gal. 5:16. See @@@ REBOUND.
- (b) **Second: Reach Maturity.** Accumulate maximum amounts of Bible Doctrine in the soul in order to reach spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1] in the Christian Way of Life. “*Therefore consider the members of your earthly body as dead to immorality, impurity, passion, evil desire, and greed, which amounts to idolatry*” [Col. 3:5]. See Ps. 51:5-6; Heb. 12:4; Gal. 5:16-17; Rom. 8:13. See @@@ MATURITY.
- (13) **In Society.** When the OSN expresses itself in crime the State must restrain it [Rom. 13:4]. Otherwise, under the doctrine of privacy, it is no one’s business to judge another’s OSN [1 Cor. 11:31]. It is all too common among Christians to see instances where the legalist judges the antinomian and the antinomian then rejects the Bible [Rom. 14:10; Matt. 7:1]. *Both are wrong.*
- (14) **Divine Good.** The OSN frustrates any opportunity to produce Divine Good. See Rom. 7:15; 8:6.

ROMANS 8:6

For the mind set on the flesh [*sarx – desires of the OSN*] is death [*thanatos – the state of Operational Death for the Loser Believer*], but the mind set [*phronema* (what one has in the mind, the thoughts and purposes)] on the [*Holy*] Spirit [*the Winner Believer staying in Fellowship by Rebound*] is life and peace [*eirene* (prosperity) – reaching maturity and rewards].

@@@ OPEN DOOR

- (1) **Definition.** The concept of the *open door* refers to an opportunity provided by God for Believers to glorify God in time.
- (2) **Of Evangelism.** The open door of evangelism to communicate the Gospel of salvation by a Believer to the unBeliever in witnessing. See Eph. 6:19; 2 Cor. 2:12; Acts 14:27.

ACTS 14:27

He [God] had opened [*anoigo*] a door [*thura – an open door opportunity*] of faith [*pistis – positive [+P] volition to be saved*] to the Gentiles [*ethnos*].

EPHESIANS 6:19

And *pray* on my [Paul] behalf, that utterance may be given to me [*an open door opportunity*] in the opening of my mouth, to make known [*gnorizo (to become known)*] with boldness [*parrhesia (freedom in speaking)*] the mystery [*musterion*] of the gospel.

2 CORINTHIANS 2:12

Now when I [Paul] came to Troas for the gospel [*euaggelion*] of Christ and when a door [*thura – an open door opportunity*] was opened [*anoigo*] for me in the LORD.

- (3) **Of Salvation and Maturity.** The open door of Jesus Christ's work on the cross – “*I am the door*” [Jn. 10:9] – to provide salvation as well as all the necessary provisions for the Believer to grow to spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1]. See @@@ SALVATION.

JOHN 10:9

I am [Jesus Christ] the door; if anyone enters [*eiserchomai (to go in or come out)*] through [*dia (by means of)*] Me [*believes in Christ for salvation*], he will be saved [*sozo – enter into the Kingdom of God*], and will go in and out [*as the normal Christian Way of Life*] and find pasture [*nome – intakes the food of Bible Doctrine into his soul and grows to spiritual maturity*].

- (4) **Of the Mystery.** The open door for *communication of Bible Doctrine* by a Pastor/Teacher and the preaching of the full mystery Church Age doctrines to Believers. Paul in Asia Minor prayed “*that God will open up for us a door for the word*” [Col. 4:2-3]. See @@@ MYSTERY.

COLOSSIANS 4:2-3

Devote yourselves [Believers in Colossae] to prayer, keeping alert in it with *an attitude of thanksgiving*; praying at the same time for us [Paul and his traveling seminary team] as well, that God will open up to us a door for the word, so that we may speak forth the mystery [*musterion*] of Christ, for which I have also been imprisoned; that I may make it clear in the way I ought to speak.

- (5) **Of Spiritual Recovery.** An open door for the spiritual recovery of *Believers in reversionism* to regain a Fellowship relationship with Jesus Christ who stands “*at the door*” [Rev. 3:20] of the Believer’s volition.

REVELATION 3:20

Behold, I [Jesus Christ] stand at the door [*thura* – to the Church in Laodicea, as well as to any Believer] and knock [*krouo* (to knock at a door) – the Suffering of Warning Divine Discipline]; if [Third Class Condition] anyone hears [*akouo* (to consider what is or has been said)] My voice and opens the door [positive [+P] volition to Bible Doctrine], I will come in to him [the Believer] and will dine [*deipneo* (to have supper) – Fellowship with Jesus Christ] with him, and he with Me.

- (6) **Of Rewards.** An “*open door*” [Rev. 3:8] of vast *God-given rewards*, which glorify God, for those faithful Believers who have advanced to maturity.

REVELATION 3:8

I [Jesus Christ] know your deeds [*ergon* – the production of Divine Good]. Behold, I have put before you an open [*anoigo*] door [*thura* – an open door opportunity for great blessings and rewards] which no one can shut [*kleio*], because you have a little [*mikros* (small; little)] power [*dunamis* – the Believers were faithful to the Word], and have kept [*tereo* (to guard)] My word [Bible Doctrine was their top priority], and have not denied My name.

- (7) **Of Service.** An open door for providing service in the Plan of God as a Christian regarding the *use of his personal spiritual gifts*. For example, Paul in Ephesus [1 Cor. 16:9]. See @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.
- (8) **Of the Rapture.** In Rev. 4:1, “*a door standing open*” begins a description as to what happens after the Rapture while the seven-year Tribulation is occurring on earth. The Royal Family of the Church is in Heaven [Rev. 4-5] as the Tribulation occurs on the earth [Rev. 6-19].

REVELATION 4:1

After these things I [John] looked, and behold, a door [*thura – an open door opportunity*] standing open [*anoigo*] in heaven [*ouranos – the Rapture*], and the first voice which I had heard, like *the sound* of a trumpet speaking with me [John], said, “Come up here, and I will show you what must take place after these things.”

- (9) **Of the 2nd Advent.** The 2nd Advent of Jesus Christ [Rev. 19:11]. At the end of the Tribulation a door opens in Heaven and the LORD Jesus Christ comes back with His angels and all the Church Age Believers in their resurrection bodies. The first thing the LORD does as He comes in judgment mode at the 2nd Advent is to make Holy war in Righteousness and Justice against unBelievers and demons. “*This One who is majestic in His apparel, ... Why is your apparel red, and your garments like the one who treads in the wine press?*” [Isa. 63:1-3]; Rev. 1:13-18; Ps. 24:8. See @@@ JUDGMENT.

REVELATION 19:11

And I [John] saw heaven opened [*anoigo*], and behold, a white horse, and He [Jesus Christ] who sat on it is called Faithful [*pistos*] and True [*ale (what is true in any matter under consideration)*], and in righteousness [*dikaiosune*] He judges and wages war [*polemeo (to carry on war)*].

PSALM 24:8

Who is the King of Glory? The LORD strong and mighty, the LORD mighty in battle.

@@@ OPERATION Z

- (1) **Definition.** Operation Z [OP Z] is the grace mechanics whereby a Believer takes and *stores Bible Doctrine* into his soul/spirit. *See infra* (5), (6), (7), (8). The mechanics of OP Z for the Church Age Believer includes:
- (a) **First: Filling of Holy Spirit.** The Believer must be “*filled with the [Holy] Spirit*” [Eph. 5:18] via Rebound. The Filling of the Holy Spirit is a unique mystery addition in the Church Age only.
 - (b) **Second: Hearing the Word.** The Believer must *hear* accurate Bible Doctrine taught by a Pastor/Teacher. *See* Job 6:30; 12:11; 34:3; Jer. 7:24. This is reception and requires positive [+P] volition decisions to expose self to accurate Bible teaching. The information heard is commonly denoted as “academic” *gnosis* (knowledge).
 - (c) **Third: Believing the Word.** After hearing the Word, the Believer must then *believe it*. *See* Jer. 15:16; Matt. 4:4; 1 Pet. 2:2; Heb. 4:2-3. There are “*hearers*” [Jas. 1:22; 2 Tim. 3:6-8] of the Word only, which is someone who hears the knowledge as academic *gnosis* but refuses to believe what they hear. Such academic *gnosis* is not efficacious because the required building material to construct an Edification Complex of the Soul is called *epignosis* (full knowledge). Only if the Believer believes the academic *gnosis* does it become “useable” *gnosis* which the Holy Spirit then immediately makes into *epignosis*, the food required for the Believer to “*grow up*” [Eph. 4:16] to “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1], and transfers it into the *kardia* (heart) of the Believer – “*the inner man*” [Eph. 3:16]. Note: belief of Bible Doctrine heard was also the case for spiritual growth in other dispensations [Jn. 15:5].

Pastor Communicates
Doctrine to Believer
in Fellowship

Usable *gnosis* in
the *nous* (mind)



Human Spirit

epignosis in the
kardia (heart)

- (2) **Human IQ vs Spiritual IQ.** Whereas human IQ is based on genetics and is essentially fixed at birth, the *Believer's spiritual IQ* is limited only by his negative [-N] volition to Bible Doctrine [1 Jn. 2:27]. Since the unBeliever is only a “*natural*” [*psuchikos* (soulish)] [Jas. 3:15] human without a human spirit, he “*does not accept the things of the Spirit of God, ... because they are spiritually appraised*” [1 Cor. 2:14-16]. On the other hand, the Believer, who has a human spirit, must nevertheless choose to commit himself to being “*filled with the [Holy] Spirit*” [Eph. 5:18], hearing Doctrine, and believing it.

1 CORINTHIANS 2:14-16

But a natural [*psuchikos* (soulish) – the unBeliever has a soul but no human spirit] man does not accept the things of the Spirit of God [the Holy Spirit is the author of Bible Doctrine], for they are foolishness [*moria*] to him; and he cannot understand them, because [*hoti* (on account of)] they are spiritually [*pneumatikos* (relating to the human spirit) – understanding Bible Doctrine requires a human spirit] appraised [*anakrino* (to examine; to investigate; to evaluate)]. But he who is spiritual [the Believer has a human spirit and in this case is in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit] appraises all things, yet he himself is appraised by no one [Law of Liberty in the Christian Way of Life]. For who has known the mind of the LORD [*kurios* – the thinking of Jesus Christ is Bible Doctrine], that he [any given person] will instruct Him [God]? But we [Paul and his traveling seminary] have [*echo* (to have and to hold)] the mind of Christ [Pastor/Teachers knew Bible Doctrine and were ready to teach it].

- (3) **Goal of Operation Z.** The goal of OP Z is to get the necessary Doctrine in order to reach maturity. Although the Bible is formed and kept by God's Directive Will [Ps. 138:2; 2 Tim. 3:16] there is *no magical automatic download of the Word* to the Believer. The prayer of having God “provide wisdom” or “a word of wisdom” is at best a prayer that He will expose that person to Bible Doctrine so that it can then be transferred to the Believer's *kardia* by the process of OP Z, which will provide that *wisdom*.
- (4) **Positive Volition.** The Believer must use his positive [+P] volition to respond to accurate teaching with the ultimate goal of getting Bible Doctrine as *epignosis* [also called *sunesis*] into his soul/spirit so that he can then build the Edification Complex of the Soul and “*come to the [full] knowledge (epignosis) of the truth*” [1 Tim. 2:4]; Heb. 10:25; Rom. 14:19; 2 Pet. 1:5; 3:17-18. See @@@ EDIFICATION COMPLEX OF THE SOUL.

2 PETER 3:17-18

You therefore, beloved [Believers], knowing this beforehand [Peter has taught this Bible Doctrine to them], be on your guard so that you are not carried away [sunapago (to lead away with or together)] by the error [plane (deception, error)] of unprincipled men [athesmos – people in Cosmic Systems who distract the Believer] and fall from [ekipto (to drift off course)] your own steadfastness [sterigmos (firm condition) – do not go into reversionism], but grow [auxano (to cause to grow) – the positive [+P] volition Believer must reach spiritual maturity] in the grace and knowledge – understanding the full realm of Bible Doctrine] of our LORD and Savior Jesus Christ. To Him be the glory [doxa], both now and to the day of eternity. Amen.

- (5) **Stage 1 in OP Z.** The Filling of the Holy Spirit via Rebound and the Believer's *submission to a prepared Pastor/Teacher* that knows "*the spirit of truth and the spirit of error*" [1 Jn. 4:6]; 2 Tim. 3:16-17. "*This you know my beloved brethren. But everyone must be quick to hear*" [Jas 1:19]. Note: many Believers [in or out of the Filling of the Holy Spirit] are exposed to accurate teaching of the Word. See @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER.

1 JOHN 4:6

We [John and other Pastor/Teacher communicators] are from God; he who knows [ginosko (to learn to know) – the positive [+P] volition Believer desiring knowledge of Bible Doctrine] God listens [akouo (to consider what is or has been said)] to us; he who is not from God does not listen to us [the negative [-N] volition Believer in the Cosmic Systems will not listen to the prepared Pastor/Teacher]. By this we know the spirit [pneuma (the disposition or influence which fills and governs the soul of anyone)] of truth [aletheia (what is true in any matter under consideration)] and the spirit [pneuma (the disposition or influence which fills and governs the soul of anyone)] of error [plane (one led astray from the right way)].

- (6) **Stage 2 in OP Z.** The Believer's human spirit is the first target of Bible Doctrine which goes there as "*academic*" *gnosis* (knowledge) – "*it is a spirit in man, and the breath of the Almighty gives them understanding*" [Job 32:8]; 1 Cor. 2:10-16. The unBeliever can also hear the words as academic *gnosis* in his soul but cannot consider them as truth "*for they are foolishness to him; and he cannot understand them*" [1 Cor. 2:14-16]. See Jn. 14:26.

JOHN 14:26

But the Helper [*parakletos*], the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My [Jesus Christ] name, He will teach you [the disciples] all things, and bring to your remembrance [all the information that Jesus had taught them was log jammed in their soul as academic knowledge] all that I said to you.

1 CORINTHIANS 2:10-13

For to us [the Believer] God revealed *them* through the Spirit [Holy Spirit]; for the Spirit searches all things, even the depths of God. For who among men knows the *thoughts* of a man except the [human] spirit [*pneuma*] of the man [the Believer] which is in him? Even so the *thoughts* of God no one knows except the Spirit of God. Now we have received, not the spirit [*pneuma* (the disposition or influence which fills and governs the soul of any one) – the general thinking of the Cosmic Systems] of the world, but the [Holy] Spirit who is from God, so that we may know the things freely given to us by God, which things we [Paul's team] also speak [Pastor/Teacher communicating Bible Doctrine], not in words taught by human wisdom [the viewpoint of human good and the evil of religion], but in those taught by the [Holy] Spirit, combining [*sugkrino* (to join together fitly)] spiritual [*pneumatikos* (relating to the human spirit)] *thoughts* with spiritual [*pneumatikos* (relating to the human spirit)] *words* [only a human spirit understands spiritual concepts].

- (7) **Stage 3 in OP Z.** The Believer is commanded to “*receive the word implanted which is able to save* (deliver the Believer to maturity) *your souls*” [Jas. 1:21]; 1 Jn. 2:27; Jn. 14:26; 16:12-16; Rom. 8:6-17. In other words, the Believer must *believe the teaching* of academic *gnosis* from Stage 2. Only then does it become *usable gnosis* in the *nous* (mind) where it stands ready to be turned into *epignosis* by the Holy Spirit at Stage 4. Tragically, there are many Believers who are “*hears*” [Jas. 1:22] only, “*always learning and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth*” [2 Tim. 3:6-8]. This is because they *don't believe* what they hear. Again, Stage 2 academic *gnosis*, has no spiritual power, it is analogous to food on the table or in the pantry. It *must be believed*, so that the Holy Spirit can metabolize it at Stage 4 [see *infra* (8)]. The operation of this non-meritorious system by simple belief or faith in a Doctrine is illustrated with various analogies to include eating, breathing, hearing, drinking, and seeing [Ps. 119:11; Jer. 3:15; 15:16; Matt. 4:4; 1 Pet. 2:2; 5:2; 1 Tim. 2:4; 4:6]. See @@@ WATER.

- (8) **Stage 4 in OP Z.** This stage involves the transformation of the usable *gnosis* into *epignosis* [*sunesis*] by God the Holy Spirit who immediately transfers it to *storage in the mind*, *kardia*, of the Believer so that the Believer is actually “*being transformed into the same image from glory to glory, just as from the LORD, the Spirit*” [2 Cor. 3:18]; 1 Cor. 13:2; 2 Tim. 2:23-26; 3:2-8; Jas. 1:19-25.
- (a) **Grace Function.** The mechanics for the process of transforming usable *gnosis* into *epignosis* is a grace function by the Holy Spirit. See Eph. 3:16-19. See @@@ HOLY SPIRIT.

EPHESIANS 3:16-19

That He would grant you [**Believer**], according to the riches of His glory, to be strengthened with power through [*dia (by means of)*] His [**Holy**] Spirit in the inner man [*eso (the internal inner man; the soul, conscience)*], so that Christ may dwell in your hearts through faith; *and* that you, being rooted and grounded in love, may be able to comprehend with all the saints what is the breadth and length and height and depth, and to know the love of Christ which surpasses knowledge, that you may be filled up to all the fullness of God [**the Believer reaching spiritual maturity**].

- (b) **No Emotion.** Human emotion has absolutely nothing to do with the functioning of OP Z. See Phil. 3:18-19; 2 Tim. 3:6-8; Jas. 1:19-25.

2 TIMOTHY 3:6-8

For among them are those who enter into households [*oikia (a house – the early Christians met in houses to learn Bible Doctrine)*] and captivate weak [*apotrepo (to turn one’s self away from)*] women [*gunaikarion (a little woman; used contemptuously) – here it applies to both males and females on negative [-N] volition to Bible Doctrine*] weighed down with sins [*under the influence of the Old Sin Nature*], led on by various impulses [*epithumia (craving; desire for what is forbidden)*], always learning and never able to come to the knowledge [*epignosis (full knowledge)*] of the truth [**Bible Doctrine**]. Just as Jannes and Jambres [*two Egyptian magicians who in the presence of Pharaoh imitated the miracles of Aaron in order to negate his influence*] opposed Moses, so these *men* also oppose the truth, men of depraved mind, rejected in regard to the faith [*pistis – the faith of Bible Doctrine*].

JAMES 1:19-25

This you [Believers] know, my beloved brethren. But everyone must be quick to hear [*akouo* – learn Bible Doctrine], slow to speak [*laleo* – respect for the teaching of the Word] and slow to anger [*orge* (anger) – emotional reaction]; for the anger of man does not achieve the righteousness [*dikaiosune* – the Christian Way of Life] of God. Therefore, putting aside [*apotithemi* (remove; put aside) – the Believer must Rebound first] all filthiness and *all* that remains of wickedness, in humility receive the word implanted [*emphutos* (implanted by others' instruction) – this is usable *gnosis*], which is able to save [*sozo* (to deliver)] your souls [*psuche* – deliver the Believer to spiritual maturity]. But prove yourselves doers [*poietai* (a doer, performer)] of the word [the Believer must get *epignosis* in the soul/spirit], and not merely hearers [*akroates* (a hearer) – these types hear, but reject the Bible Doctrine] who delude [*paralogizomai* (to cheat by false reasoning) – a Believer who cheats himself out of reaching maturity] themselves. For if anyone is a hearer of the word and not a doer, he is like a man who looks at his natural face in a mirror [*esoptron* – the mirror represents the Word of God and God's desire that Believers conform to the image of Christ in their thinking – Rom. 8:29; 2 Cor. 3:18; 4:4]; for *once* he has looked at himself and gone away, he has immediately [*eutheos* – Believers with only *gnosis* hate repetition and will leave mentally first and then leave the Bible class physically – 1 Jn. 2:19] forgotten [*epilanthanomai* (to longer care for; to neglect)] what kind of person he was. But one [Believer on positive [+P] volition] who looks intently [*parakupto* (to stoop down to look at closely) – academic concentration] at the perfect law, the law of liberty [*eleutheria* (freedom to act as desired)], and abides [*meno* (to remain)] by it, not having become a forgetful hearer [negative [-N] volition Believer with no interest in Bible Doctrine] but an effectual doer [*poietai* (performer) – the positive [+P] volition Believer that metabolizes Bible Doctrine via Operation Z], this man will be blessed in what he does [rewards].

- (9) **Results.** The storage of *epignosis* in the *kardia* of the Believer accomplishes the following:
- (a) **Categorical Construction.** A new vocabulary of *technical Biblical terminology* is formed that is “*not in words taught by human wisdom*” [1 Cor. 2:13] but in the truth of God, so that the Believer can fully understand the full range of Bible Doctrine. See Jn. 6:63; Heb. 6:1-3.

- (b) **Rebound.** Energizes the conscience so that the Believer has a fuller understanding of known sins and can better employ the Rebound technique [Rom. 9:1]. See @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT.
- (c) **Catabolism.** The *epignosis* breaks down the false thinking of the Cosmic Systems [Rom. 12:2 and 2 Tim. 2:21].
- (d) **Anabolism.** The *epignosis* builds up Divine thinking to conform to “*the mind of Christ*” [1 Cor. 2:16]; Rom. 15:20; 1 Cor. 3:11-13.
- (e) **Builds the Memory Center.** “*This I recall to my mind, Therefore I have hope*” [Lam. 3:21]; Jn. 14:26. See @@@ MEMORY.
- (f) **Creates an Instant Reaction Force [IRF].** This **IRF** of problem solving devices are always on *red alert* to respond to sudden unforeseen temptations from the Old Sin Nature or attacks from the forces of Satan. See @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES.
- (g) **Speak Doctrine.** All *epignosis* provides the ability to speak about the Word in a “*zealous*” manner so that the Believer is “*always being ready to make a defense to everyone who asks you to give an account for the hope that is in you*” [1 Pet. 3:13-15].
- (10) **Christian Way of Life.** The Believer is expected to *think and apply* Bible Doctrine to the exigencies of his life [Prov. 23:7; 2 Cor. 10:5; Ps. 19:7]. See @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE at (15).

2 CORINTHIANS 10:5

We are [Paul and his teachers] destroying speculations [logismos (a reasoning: such as is hostile to the Christian faith)] and every lofty thing [hupsoma (elevated thing)] raised up against the knowledge of God, and we are taking every thought [noema (mental perception)] captive [aichmalotizo (to lead away captive)] to the obedience [hupakoe (compliance)] of Christ.

- (11) **Wisdom.** OP Z enables the Believer to acquire Divine “*wisdom*” [Prov. 2:6]. The Greek word *sophia* (wisdom) is the application of Bible Doctrine to reality in this life. See Jas. 1:5, 22; Eph. 5:15-16.

@@@ OVERVIEW

- (1) **Mandates First.** For the Believer, God's mandates set out His authority and include *the command* to “*come to the knowledge of the truth*” [1 Tim. 2:4] and to “*keep His commandments*” [1 Jn. 5:3]. *See* Jn. 15:9-17.
- (2) **Virtue First.** Personal “*love*” [Jn. 14:15] for God and *agape impersonal love* for all mankind is based on the Believer's consistent residence within the Divine Dynasphere. *See* @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE.
- (3) **Grace First.** Because of God's “*grace*” [Eph. 2:8-9], He is free to save man based on the work of Jesus Christ on the cross. *See* Rom. 5:17.

CATEGORY	WORK	OBTAINMENT
Salvation	God	All Mankind. Via non-meritorious positive [+P] volition [Rom. 4:5].
Logistical Support	God	All Believers. Non-meritorious, no volition required [Gen. 15:6].
Escrow Rewards On Deposit	God	All Believers. Non-meritorious, no volition required [Eph. 1:3].
Escrow Rewards Released In Time	God	Winners only. Mature Believers, positive [+P] volition required [Isa. 53:12].
Escrow Rewards Released In Eternity	God	Winners only. Mature Believers, positive [+P] volition required [Matt. 25:23].

@@@ PASTOR/TEACHER

- (1) **Definition.** God's system for the positive [+P] volition Believer *to learn* Bible Doctrine is based on the accurate teaching of the full content of the Bible by a *prepared* Pastor/Teacher. *"Of this church I (Paul) was made a minister according to the stewardship from God bestowed on me for your benefit, so that I might fully carry out the preaching of the word of God"* [Col. 1:25].
- (2) **God Provides.** Under God's grace provisions He always *provides a prepared Pastor/Teacher* to teach the positive [+P] volition Believer [Jer. 3:15; 1 Tim. 2:4] and the positive [+P] volition Believer responds to the teaching of the Pastor/Teacher in order to grow to maturity [Jn. 10:27]. *See infra* (9).

JOHN 10:27

My [Jesus] sheep [Believers on positive [+P] volition] hear My voice, and I know them, and they follow [the Winner Believer on positive [+P] volition will respond to Bible Doctrine] Me.

- (3) **Sheep and Shepherd.** Very often in the Bible the individual Believer is called a "*sheep*" [Jn. 10:27] and the Pastor/Teacher, as his authority when it comes to learning the Word, is called a "*shepherd*" [Jn. 21:16]. Jesus is the supreme "*Chief Shepherd*" [1 Pet. 5:1-4; Jn. 10:1-19; Isa. 53:6].
- (4) **Sheep.** (1) Sheep are helpless to find food and water [Rev. 7:17; Jn. 6:35]; (2) sheep have no defenses [Jer. 23:4; Num. 27:16-17; Mk. 6:34]; (3) sheep are stupid with no sense of direction [Isa. 53:6]; (4) sheep stink and can't clean themselves, which speaks to salvation and Rebound [Ezk. 36:25-27]; (5) sheep are easily frightened [Jn. 10:12]; (6) the wool of the sheep belongs to the Shepherd, Christian production is to glorify God and the "*Good Shepherd*" [Jn. 19:11] Jesus Christ; and (7) sheep respond only to their Shepherd, this refers to positive [+P] volition in the soul of the **Winner** Believer to accurate Bible Doctrine [Jn. 10:3-5, 27]. *See* Ps. 100:3.

PSALM 100:3

Know that the LORD Himself is God; it is He who has made [*awah* (to fashion; to accomplish)] us, and not we ourselves; *we are* His people and the sheep [*tson*] of His pasture [*miriyth* (pasturage)].

J.L. Porter, *The Giant Cities of Bashan and Syria's Holy Places*, (1966):

The shepherds led their flocks forth from the gates of the city. They were in full view, and we watched them and listened to them with no little interest. Thousands of sheep and goats were there, grouped in dense confused masses. The shepherds stood together until all came out. Then they separated, each shepherd taking a different path, and uttering as he advanced a shrill, peculiar call. The sheep heard them. At first the masses swayed and moved as if struck by some internal convulsion; then points struck out in the direction taken by the shepherds. ... until the confused masses were resolved into long, living, streams, following after their leaders.

- (5) **Labels for the Pastor/Teacher.** The spiritual gift is called *poimen* (shepherd) *kai* (and) *didaskalos* (teacher) – **Shepherd/Teacher** or “**Pastor and Teacher**” [Eph. 4:11-12; Acts 20:28]. Other labels are also employed in the Bible in order to stress his authority and responsibilities.

EPHESIANS 4:11

And He [**Holy Spirit**] gave some *as* apostles, and some *as* prophets, and some *as* evangelists, and some *as* pastors and teachers [*poimen kai didaskalos*].

- (a) **Elder.** He is called “**elder**” *presbuteros* (the old man) [1 Tim. 5:17-19; Jas. 1:5; 5:14; 3 Jn. 1; Tit. 1:5-9; 2 Jn. 1; 1 Pet. 5:1]. This does not refer to chronological age. Timothy was a young Pastor/Teacher when he started and Paul warned him to “**let no one look down on your youthfulness**” [1 Tim. 4:12]. Thus, a 25-year-old Pastor/Teacher can be **the old man** as the term is used to stress his absolute authority.
- (b) **Overseer.** He is called “**overseer**” *episkopos* [Tit. 1:7; Phil. 1:1; 1 Tim. 3:1-9; Acts 20:28]. This reflects his supreme power in policy making and doing the job of protecting the privacy of the congregation.
- (c) **Minister.** He is called “**minister**” *diakonos* (servant) [Rom. 11:13; 1 Cor. 3:5-6; Eph. 3:7; Col. 1:7, 23; 1 Thess. 3:2; 1 Tim. 1:12]. This title stresses his service role. He serves Doctrine to the congregation and is the administrative head of a local church. Note: Phil. 1:1, speaks to a larger Church and sets out assisting “administrative deacons.”

1 CORINTHIANS 3:5-6

What then is Apollos [**a Pastor/Teacher**]? And what is Paul [**an Apostle and a Pastor/Teacher**]? Servants [*diakonos*] through whom you believed [*pisteuo*], even as the LORD gave *opportunity* to each one. I planted [**gave the Gospel of salvation**], Apollos watered [**taught them Bible Doctrine**], but God was causing the growth [*auxano* – so the positive **[+P]** volition Believer can reach spiritual maturity].

- (d) **All Three.** In Acts 20:17, 28, all three words are interchanged. In short, the sheep [congregation] don't tell the Pastor/Teacher what to do [Heb. 13:7, 17, 24; 2 Cor. 10:8; 13:10; Isa. 54:17; Rom. 9:21]. The Pastor/Teacher must fulfill his sole duty of “**preaching and teaching**” [1 Tim. 5:17] Bible Doctrine. Preaching non-Biblical information to please people is wrong and will result in his Divine Discipline. *See infra* (8). *See @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.*
- (6) **Appointed by Holy Spirit.** The spiritual gift of Pastor/Teacher is not voted on or bestowed by people but is **given by God the Holy Spirit**. “**And He (Holy Spirit) gave some ... as Pastors and Teachers**” [Eph. 4:11]; Tit. 1:5-6; Eph. 3:7; Acts 1; 1 Tim. 1:10-16; 1 Cor. 15:10. The individual Pastor/Teacher is delegated authority directly from God by this spiritual gift. As Paul noted, this person does not earn or deserve it. “**For this I was appointed a preacher ... a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and truth**” [1 Tim. 2:7]; 2 Tim. 1:11.
- (a) **Males.** The gift of Pastor/Teacher is bestowed on a few male Believers who are not to be despised or worshiped [1 Tim. 3:1-7]. While female Believers can hold children “Sunday school” classes and provide Bible Doctrine information individually under various circumstances in life [1 Pet. 3:15], the specialized gift of Pastor/Teacher is not given to females. *See* 1 Tim. 2:11-12; Eph. 2:12-13; Tit. 1:5-9.

1 TIMOTHY 2:11-12

A woman must quietly receive instruction [*manthano* (to learn) – **both males and females must listen in class to the Pastor/Teacher**] with entire submissiveness [*hupotage* (obedience)]. But I do not allow a woman to teach [*didasko* (to be a teacher) – **females do not have the gift of Pastor/Teacher**] or exercise authority over a man, but to remain quiet [*hesuchia*].

1 TIMOTHY 3:1-7

It is a trustworthy statement: if any man aspires to the office of overseer [*episkope* – the gift of Pastor/Teacher may be given to a man by the Holy Spirit, but it requires extensive study and preparation], it is a fine work he desires *to do*. An overseer, then, must be above reproach, the husband [*aner*] of one wife, temperate, prudent, respectable, hospitable, able to teach, not addicted to wine or pugnacious, but gentle, peaceable, free from the love of money. *He must be* one who manages his own household well, keeping his children under control with all dignity (but if a man does not know how to manage his own household, how will he take care of the church of God?), *and* not a new convert [*neophutos* (newly planted)], so that he will not become conceited and fall into the condemnation incurred [*krima* (the decision which one passes on the faults of others)] by the devil. And he must have a good reputation with those outside *the church*, so that he will not fall into reproach and the snare of the devil.

TITUS 1:5-9

For this reason I [Paul] left you [Titus, a Pastor/Teacher trained by Paul] in Crete, that you would set in order what remains and appoint elders [*presbuteros* – men with the spiritual gift and that know Bible Doctrine to be Pastor/Teachers] in every city as I directed you, *namely*, if any man is above reproach [*anegkletos* (unaccused)], the husband of one wife, having children who believe [*pistos* (faithful; can be relied on)], not accused of dissipation [*asotia* (an abandoned, dissolute life)] or rebellion [*anupotaktos* (that cannot be subjected to control; unruly)]. For the overseer [*episkopos* – a Pastor/Teacher] must be above reproach [*anegkletos* (cannot be called into to account)] as God's steward [*oikonomos* (the manager of a household)], not self-willed [*authades* (self-pleasing)], not quick-tempered [*orgilos* (prone to anger)], not addicted to wine, not pugnacious [*plektes* (a quarrelsome person)], not fond of sordid gain [*aischrokerdes* (greedy for money)], but hospitable [*philoxenos* (generous to guests)], loving what is good, sensible [*sophron* (of a sound mind)], just, devout [*hosios* (free from wickedness)], self-controlled, holding fast the faithful word which is in accordance with the teaching [*didache* (the act of teaching) – the Pastor/Teacher must be faithful to Bible Doctrine], so that he will be able both to exhort [*parakaleo*] in sound doctrine [*didaskalia* (teaching)] and to refute [*elegcho*] those who contradict [*antilego*].

- (b) **Slave and Soldier.** The Pastor/Teacher is a “*slave*” [Col. 4:12] and a “*soldier*” [2 Tim. 2:1-4] to God. The fact that he has the gift will become evident to him as he advances in his spiritual life and he must prepare himself by extended periods of studying Doctrine from a proper Pastor/Teacher before he begins his own ministry. For example, after being saved [circa A.D. 33] Paul did not begin his missionary journeys until A.D. 45. For over a decade, he was in Arabia and other locations learning Bible Doctrine before he set out to establish churches and train other Pastor/Teachers. Finally, the initial assignment of a prepared Pastor/Teacher to a local Church is *acknowledged and approved by a senior Pastor*, usually the one who taught him. The symbolic “*laying on of hands*” [1 Tim. 4:14; 5:22] signifies this fact. “*The things which you have heard from me (Paul to Timothy) ... entrust these to faithful men who will be able to teach others also*” [2 Tim 2:2].

2 TIMOTHY 2:1-4

You therefore, my son [Paul to Timothy], be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus. The things which you have heard from me [Paul trained him] in the presence of many witnesses, entrust these to faithful [*pistos*] men who will be able to teach others also [train other Pastor/Teachers]. Suffer hardship with me [Divine Suffering for Blessing], as a good soldier [*stratiotes* (a common soldier) – the Pastor/Teacher must be faithful to the Word] of Christ Jesus. No soldier in active service entangles himself in the affairs of everyday life [anything that distracts from the mission], so that he may please the one who enlisted him as a soldier [the Commander in Chief, Jesus Christ].

- (c) **Wages.** A Pastor/Teacher is “*worthy of his wages*” [1 Tim. 5:18]. He is entitled to proper financial support from the congregation.
- (7) **Purpose of a Pastor/Teacher.** The sole purpose of the spiritual gift of Pastor/Teacher is to *teach the full realm of systematic theology in fixed categories of Bible Doctrine* – especially the Church Age “*mystery*” doctrines [Eph. 3:3-10] – so that the positive [+P] volition Believer can grow to spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1] and have “*the mind of Christ*” [1 Cor. 2:16] thinking within him. The Pastor/Teacher must “*shepherd the flock of God among you, exercising oversight not under compulsion, but voluntarily, according to the will of God*” [1 Pet. 5:2]. See Heb. 6:1-3; 1 Thess. 5:12; Jer. 3:15; Col. 1:7; 1 Jn. 4:6; 1 Tim. 2:7; 2 Tim. 2:23-26; 2 Chron. 15:1-7.

HEBREWS 6:1-3

Therefore leaving [*aphiemi* (to send forth)] the elementary [*arche* (beginning; origin)] teaching [*logos* (what is declared) – the basic categories of Bible Doctrine] about [1] the Christ [*christos* (the anointed one) – the person and work of Jesus Christ in hypostatic union], let us press on to maturity [*teleiotes* (the state of the more intelligent) – the positive [+P] volition Believer's goal is to reach spiritual maturity], not laying again [*palin*] a foundation [*themelios*] of [2] repentance [*metanoia* (a change of mind)] from dead [*nekros*] works [*ergon* – the change of mind about the false claim of salvation by human works of religion] and [3] of faith [*pistis* – Faith/Rest] toward God, [4] of instruction about washings and laying on of hands [Rebound], and [5] the resurrection [*anastasis*] of the dead [*nekros* – the first resurrection for Believers; the second resurrection for unBelievers] and [6] eternal [*aionios* (without beginning and without end)] judgment [*krima* – the Great White Throne Judgment for the unBeliever]. And this we [the Pastor/Teacher teaching and leading the way forward] will do, if God permits [*epitrepo* (to allow to happen)].

- (a) **Get the Gold.** The Pastor/Teacher refines the “*gold*” ore of Bible Doctrine through his studies and provides the *newly minted gold coins* to the congregation through his teaching by which they can become truly “*rich*” [Rev. 3:18] in the fabulous “*treasure*” [2 Tim. 1:14] of God's thinking as they reach spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1]. See Col. 1:25-26. Accordingly, the words of God are much “*more desirable than gold*” [Ps. 19:10] for “*in keeping them there is great reward*” [Ps. 19:11] for the Believer in time and eternity.

REVELATION 3:18

I [Jesus] advise you [Church at Laodicea] to buy from Me gold [*chrusion* (gold which lies embedded in the earth) – Bible Doctrine] refined [*puroo* (to burn with fire)] by fire [Pastor/Teacher is to take the ore, refine it into gold coins, and give it to the congregation as their spiritual money] so that you may become rich [*plouteo* – Believer at spiritual maturity], and white garments so that you may clothe yourself [with eternal rewards glorify God], and *that* the shame of your nakedness will not be revealed [at the Judgment Seat of Christ the Believer will not be ashamed of his lack level of rewards]; and eye salve to anoint your eyes so that you may see [Believers see God via the Word].

COLOSSIANS 1:25-26

Of *this church* I [Paul] was made a minister according to the stewardship from God bestowed [*didomi* (to give)] on me for your benefit [so that positive [+P] volition Believers can reach spiritual maturity], so that I might fully carry out the *preaching of* the word of God, *that is*, the mystery [*musterion* – advanced Bible Doctrine for the Church Age only] which has been hidden [*apokrupto* (to keep secret)] from the *past* ages [*aion* (a period of time)] and generations [*genea* (an age occupied by each successive generation)], but has now been manifested to His saints [*hagios* (set apart ones) – all the Believers in the Church Age].

- (b) **Joint.** The Pastor/Teacher is a key “*joint*” in “*the body of Christ*” [1 Cor. 12:27] that provides the needed support for all the various parts of the body of Christ to “*grow up ... being fitted and held together by what every joint supplies*” [Eph. 4:15-16]; Col. 2:19.

EPHESIANS 4:15-16

But speaking the truth [*aletheuo* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – Bible Doctrine] in love [*agape* (to love dearly)], we are to grow up [*auxano* (to grow; to increase) – the positive [+P] volition Believer is to grow to maturity] in all *aspects* into Him who is the head, *even* Christ, from whom the whole body [*soma* – all Church Age Believers], being fitted and held together by what every joint [*haphe* – the Pastor/Teacher providing Bible Doctrine] supplies [*epichoregia*], according to the proper working of each individual part, causes the growth [*auxesis* (increase; growth)] of the body [*soma* – any positive [+P] volition Believer wishing to reach maturity] for the building up [*oikodome* – the Edification Complex of the Soul] of itself in love [*agape* (to love dearly)].

- (8) **Consistent Teaching.** The Pastor/Teacher has a solemn responsibility to his congregation to be faithful in teaching accurate Bible Doctrine on a *consistent basis*. However, not all Believers in the congregation will respond to the truth at the same time or pace [Rev. 3:15-19; Heb. 6:1-3; 1 Thess. 5:12]. Thus, he must deal wisely with his entire congregation [2 Tim. 2:24-25].
- (a) **Focus.** The Pastor/Teacher is to restrict anything in life that detracts from his study and teaching of the Bible [2 Tim. 2:14-22-25].

2 TIMOTHY 2:24-25

The LORD's bond-servant [*doulos* (slave) – the prepared Pastor/Teacher] must not be quarrelsome [*machomai* (engage in a war of words)], but be kind to all, able to teach [*didaktikos* (apt and skillful in teaching)], patient when wronged, with gentleness correcting those who are in opposition, if perhaps God may grant them [the Believers in the congregation that are on negative [-N] volition to Bible Doctrine] repentance [*metanoia* (a change of mind)] leading to the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge)] of the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – understanding the complete realm of Bible Doctrine].

2 TIMOTHY 2:15-18

Be diligent [*spoudazo* (to hasten) – the positive [+P] volition Believer studies Bible Doctrine as his number one priority] to present [*paristemi* (to present, to show)] yourself approved [*dokimos* (acceptable)] to God as a workman [*ergates* (a laborer)] who does not need to be ashamed [*anepaischuntos* (having no cause to be ashamed) – at the Judgment Seat of Christ only those Believers who reach some level of spiritual maturity will receive rewards], accurately handling [*orthotomeo* (to cut straight)] the word of truth [*aletheia* – the positive [+P] volition Believer applying Bible Doctrine to problems in life]. But avoid worldly [*bebelos* (profane)] and empty chatter [*kenophonia* (empty discussion)], for it will lead to further ungodliness, and their talk will spread like gangrene. Among them are Hymenaeus and Philetus [false Pastor/Teachers], men who have gone astray [*astocheo* (to miss the mark)] from the truth [*aletheia*] saying that the resurrection has already taken place [they taught that the Rapture had already occurred], and they upset [*anatrepo* (to overturn)] the faith of some.

- (b) **Love.** A Pastor/Teacher shows his love for the congregation by studying and teaching Bible Doctrine to feed the sheep, not by service activities for members of the congregation [Sunday dinners, visiting, sponsoring concerts, etc.]. His job is to teach spiritual information and not to engage in human viewpoints of good works [1 Tim. 1:6-7; Col. 1:23-29; Eph. 3:2-13; 2 Tim. 2:24-25]. “*But speaking the truth in love we are to grow up*” [Eph. 4:16]. In short, he either accommodates the so-called desires of his congregation or he accurately communicates and does his job as “*unto the LORD*” [Col. 3:23-24]. See *infra* (f).

1 TIMOTHY 1:6-7

For some men, straying from these things [**Bible Doctrine**], have turned aside to fruitless discussion [*mataiologia* (empty talk)], wanting to be teachers of the Law [**the Loser Believer who seeks to be a Pastor/Teacher**], even though they do not understand [*noieo* (to perceive with the mind)] either what they are saying or the matters about which they make confident assertions [*diabebaumai* (to assert confidently)].

- (c) **Public Teaching.** All teaching [*didasko*] by a Pastor/Teacher is to be in a **public setting in a monologue format**, with at least “**two or three**” [Matt. 18:20] in the congregation. This format protects the privacy of the hearer as it is no one’s business if the Believer listens and believes the words or not [Acts 20:20-21; 1 Jn. 1:4; Heb. 13:7; Rom. 10:17]. UnBelievers can sit in on Bible classes [Jn. 3:1-2; 4:7-8, 27].

ACTS 20:20-21

How I [**Paul**] did not shrink [*hupostello* (to draw back; to be timid)] from declaring [*anaggello* (to announce; make known)] to you [**Believers in Ephesus**] anything that was profitable [*sumphero* (to help; to be profitable) – so that the positive [+P] volition Believer could reach spiritual maturity by means of learning Bible Doctrine], and teaching [*didasko*] you publicly [*demosios* (publicly; in public places)] and from house [*oikos* (an inhabited house) – the early Church met in the private homes of selected Believers] to house, solemnly testifying [*diamarturomai* (to attest; to testify)] to both Jews and Gentiles of repentance [*metanoia* (to change the mind) – reject religion’s method for salvation] toward God and faith [*pistis* – faith in Christ] in our LORD Jesus Christ.

MATTHEW 18:20

For where two or three have gathered together in My name, I [**Jesus Christ**] am there in their midst [*mesos* (in the middle)].

- (d) **Other Forms.** Some degree of non-face-to-face teaching is authorized as seen in the letters of Paul and John to non-resident Believers [Heb. 13:22; 2 Jn. 12]. Today, a Believer can reach maturity by means of the electronic communications put out by a proper Pastor/Teacher.

2 JOHN 12

Though I [John] have many things to write to you, I do not want to *do so* with paper and ink; but I hope to come to you and speak face to face, so that your joy may be made full [pleroo (to fill up)].

- (e) **Types of Sheep.** Since the congregation consists of different types of Believers some will advance to spiritual maturity, and some will not. There are three types of sheep [Believers] that the Pastor/Teacher will face as seen in Jesus Christ's dialogue with Peter [Jn. 21:15-17].

JOHN 21:15-17

So when they had finished breakfast, Jesus said to Simon Peter, "Simon, *son* of John, do you love [agapao – impersonal love] Me more than these?" He said to Him, "Yes, LORD; You know that I love [phileo (personal love)] You." He said to him, "Tend [bosko (feed and care for)] My lambs [arnion (young sheep) – (1) these are new Believers]." He said to him again a second time, "Simon, *son* of John, do you love [agapao – impersonal love] Me?" He said to him, "Yes, LORD; You know that I love [phileo (personal love)] You." He said to him, "Shepherd [poimaino (to tend to a flock)] My sheep [probaton (adult sheep) – (2) hardheaded Believers due to the use of poimaino, see 2 Cor. 10:8; 13:10]." He said to him the third time, "Simon, *son* of John, do you love [phileo (personal love) – this time Jesus uses personal love] Me?" Peter was grieved because He said to him the third time, "Do you love [phileo] Me?" And he said to Him, "LORD, You know all things; You know that I love [phileo (personal love)] You." Jesus said to him, "Tend [bosko] My sheep [probaton – (3) positive [+P] volition adult Believers]."

- (f) **Admonish.** The Pastor/Teacher must "*exhort and reprove*" [Tit. 2:15] the congregation, warning by application. This means he gets personal in an impersonal manner [Col. 3:16; Tit. 1:9; 2 Tim. 2:23-26; 4:2-5].

TITUS 2:15

These things speak [laleo – the full realm of Bible Doctrine] and exhort [parakeleo (entreaty)] and reprove [elegcho (to refute; correct)] with all authority [epitage (command authority)]. Let no one disregard you [Titus as a Pastor/Teacher].

2 TIMOTHY 4:2-5

Preach [*kerusso* (to teach with gravity)] the word [Paul to Timothy]; be ready in season *and* out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort, with great patience and instruction. For the time will come when they [congregations] will not endure sound doctrine; but *wanting* to have their ears tickled, they will accumulate for themselves teachers in accordance to their own desires [*epithumia* (lust) – messages versed in human good], and will turn away their ears from the truth and will turn aside to myths. But you, be sober in all things, endure hardship, do the work of an evangelist, fulfill your ministry [a good Pastor/Teacher].

- (g) **Plugger.** Pastor/Teacher Epaphras is named as a successful *plugger* who was not impressed with his achievements nor hindered by his failures [Col. 1:7; 4:12-13]. Epaphras was motivated by love for the Word [1 Pet. 5:2; Phm. 1:23]. Timothy, also trained by Paul, was weak at first but reached spiritual maturity later. In each and every case, faithfulness [*pistos*] is the key ingredient for anyone that is to be used by God. For instance, God appointed Paul as the senior Apostle to the Church because he was “*faithful*” [1 Tim. 1:12-16] to the Word.
- (h) **Double – Double.** The Pastor/Teacher must “*discipline*” himself “*so that, after I have preached to others, I myself will not be disqualified (for his rewards)*” [Phil. 9:27]. Indeed, he gets double Divine Blessing, “*double honor*” [1 Tim. 5:17], or double Divine Discipline. “*I will spread refuse on your (apostate Priests) faces*” [Mal. 2:2-3]. “*I will bring punishment upon that man (all apostate Prophets) and his household*” [Jer. 23:34]. See Eph. 3:7; 1 Cor. 15:10; Heb. 6:10; 1 Pet. 5:1-4; 2 Pet. 2:1; Jas. 3:1; 2 Cor. 2:17. See *infra* (12).

JAMES 3:1

Let not many *of you* become teachers [Pastor/Teacher], my brethren, knowing that as such we [James and other Pastor/Teachers] will incur a stricter judgment [Divine Discipline if they do not fulfill their mandated mission].

2 CORINTHIANS 2:17

For we [Pastor/Teachers] are not like many, peddling the word of God, but as from sincerity, but as from God, we speak in Christ in the sight of God.

1 PETER 5:1-4

Therefore, I [**Peter**] exhort the elders [**Pastor/Teachers**] among you, as *your* fellow elder and witness of the sufferings of Christ, and a partaker also of the glory that is to be revealed [**at the Rapture**], shepherd [*poimaino (tend to the flock)*] the flock of God among you, exercising oversight not under compulsion, but voluntarily, according to *the will of* God; and not for sordid gain, but with eagerness; nor yet as lording it over those allotted to your charge [*kleros (inscribed with their names)*], but proving to be examples to the flock. And when the Chief Shepherd appears [**Jesus Christ at the Rapture**], you will receive the unfading crown of glory [**rewards to the faithful Pastor/Teacher**].

2 PETER 2:1

But false prophets also arose among the people, just as there will also be false teachers among you, who will secretly introduce destructive heresies, even denying the Master who bought them [**they still have eternal security**], bringing swift destruction upon themselves [**the sin unto death**].

- (9) **The Congregation.** There are certain critical things that the Believer must consider when joining or participating as a member of a local Church.
- (a) **Right One.** God will provide a **right Pastor/Teacher** for each positive [+P] volition Believer. “*For if you were to have countless tutors in Christ, yet you would not have many fathers, for in Christ Jesus I became your father through the gospel*” [1 Cor. 4:15]. Since no given Pastor/Teacher is the right one for all Believers, each must determine for himself if his Pastor/Teacher is grace oriented and academically prepared to impart accurate Bible Doctrine. If so, the Believer is to then “*be imitators of*” [1 Cor. 4:16] the Pastor/Teacher’s “*example for those who believe*” [1 Tim. 4:12] – stay dedicated to Doctrine. See Heb. 13:7.

HEBREWS 13:7

Remember those who led [**the Pastor/Teacher**] you, who spoke the word of God to you; and considering the result of their conduct, imitate their faith.

- (b) **Submit.** Each member of the congregation must of their own free will “*submit*” [Heb. 13:17] to the Pastor/Teacher’s authority [2 Pet. 3:18].

HEBREWS 13:17

Obey [*peitho* (to be persuaded)] your leaders [*hegeomai* (to rule) – the Pastor/Teacher] and submit [*hupeiko* (to resist no longer)] *to them*, for they keep watch [*agrupneo* (to keep awake)] over your souls [*psuche* – the spiritual growth of the positive [+P] volition Believer] as those who will give an account [about the members of the congregation]. Let them do this with joy [*chara* – the Believer with positive [+P] volition is a joy to teach] and not with grief [*stenazo* (to sigh; to groan) – the Believer with negative [-N] volition is not teachable], for this would be unprofitable [*alusiteles*] for you [loss of rewards to the Loser Believer on negative [-N] volition].

- (c) **No Talking.** There is to be no talking in Bible class and no gossip from the congregation [1 Cor. 14:34; Heb. 13:7]. This applies to male and female members of the congregation. Note: accusations of misconduct in the Church are based on “*two or three witnesses*” [1 Tim. 5:19].

1 CORINTHIANS 14:34

The women [*gune*] are to keep silent [*sigao* (to keep silence)] in the churches [*ekklesia* – this applies to men as well]; for they are not permitted to speak [*laleo* (to use words in order to declare one’s mind)], but are to subject [*hupotasso*] themselves, just as the Law also says.

- (d) **Pray.** Appreciate and pray for your Pastor/Teacher. *See* 1 Thess. 5:12; Heb. 13:18-19; 2 Thess. 3:1; Col. 4:2-3; 1 Cor. 16:9; Eph. 6:19.

1 THESSALONIANS 5:12

But we [Paul and his team] request of you, brethren, that you appreciate those who diligently labor [*kopiaio* (to grow weary) – the Pastor/Teacher is to study and teach] among you, and have charge over [*proistemi* (to preside over)] you in the LORD and give you instruction [*noutheteo* (admonish)].

2 THESSALONIANS 3:1

Finally, brethren [*adelphos* (brothers)], pray for us [Paul and the other Pastor/Teachers] that the word of the LORD will spread rapidly and be glorified [*doxazo*], just as *it did* also with you.

- (10) **Size of the Church.** *God provides the hearers.* “*And the LORD was adding to their number day by day*” [Acts 2:47]. The size of the congregation is irrelevant and is never indicative of success or failure on the part of the Pastor/Teacher. In that time and place in history, God provides accurate truth for all Believers who are on positive [+P] volition. Negative [-N] volition will not respond regardless of Church size or makeup [1 Jn. 4:6].
- (11) **Satan’s Target.** A grace-oriented Pastor/Teacher is a prime target for Satan to entrap in “*the snare of the devil*” [1 Tim. 3:6-7]; Rev. 2:13; 2 Tim. 1:3. Satan also promotes false Pastor/Teachers to deceive. “*No wonder, for even Satan disguises himself as an angel of light. Therefore it is not surprising if his servants (false teachers) also disguise themselves as servants of righteousness*” [2 Cor. 11:14-15]. In addition, those in the Cosmic Systems “*hate him*” [Amos 5:10], as Jesus warned in Jn. 15:18-19. “*They hate him who reproves in the gate (Bible classes held), and they abhor him who speaks with integrity*” [Amos 5:10]. See @@@ RELIGION.

REVELATION 2:13

I [Jesus Christ] know where you [Pergamum Church] dwell, where Satan’s throne [*thronos – Satan established a major HQ there*] is; and you hold fast My name, and did not deny My faith [*pistis – Bible Doctrine*] even in the days of Antipas, My witness, My faithful one [*this former Pastor/Teacher was executed by the Romans*], who was killed among you, where Satan dwells.

- (12) **Judgment Seat of Christ.** The Pastor/Teacher will be present at the Judgment Seat of Christ with his congregation [Col. 1:28; Heb. 13:17]. “*For who is our (Pastor/Teachers) hope or joy or crown of exultation? Is it not even you, in the presence of our LORD Jesus at His coming?*” [1 Thess. 2:19-20]. “*The unfading crown of glory*” [1 Pet. 5:1-4] is awarded to the Winner Pastor/Teacher for the faithful teaching of Doctrine – “*my joy and crown*” [Phil. 4:1]. See @@@ REWARDS.

COLOSSIANS 1:28

We [Paul and his team] proclaim Him, admonishing every man and teaching every man with all wisdom, so that we may present [Judgment Seat of Christ] every man complete [Winner Believers receive eternal rewards] in Christ.

@@@ PIVOT & CLIENT NATION

- (1) **Definition.** The term “pivot” is a technical term which refers to the positive impact that an accumulation of “*mature*” [Eph. 4:13; Heb. 5:14] **Winner** Believers living in a specific geographical location can have on that civil society. In such an instance there exists a *pivot* that may or may not then constitute a full blown “Client Nation” under the LORD. For example, the British Empire of the 19th Century served as a pivot Client Nation to God. Not only did England greatly prosper as a country, but it witnessed the export of thousands of missionaries who presented the Gospel to millions of unBelievers and also established Churches across the globe. *See* Ps. 33:12.

PSALM 33:12

Blessed is the nation whose God is the LORD, the people whom He has chosen [*bachar (to elect)*] for His own inheritance.

- (2) **Divine Discipline.** If the pivot is too small, it can lead to the *total destruction* of the Client Nation. However, if the pivot is large, the nation is blessed and preserved. *See infra* (3).
 - (a) **Size.** God knows the size of the pivot in any given generation. “*I will leave 7,000 in Israel, all the knees that have not bowed to Baal*” [1 Kngs. 19:18]; Ezk. 22:30; 1 Kngs. 19:14.

1 KINGS 19:14

Then he [*Elijah in the Northern Kingdom of Israel*] said, “I have been very zealous for the LORD, the God of hosts; for the sons of Israel have forsaken Your covenant, torn down Your altars and killed Your prophets with the sword. And I alone am left [*Elijah is wrong in his assessment, per 1 Kngs. 19:18, God reveals there were 7,000 Winner Believers in the Pivot of the nation of Israel at that time*]; and they seek my life, to take it away.”

- (b) **Cycles of Discipline.** When the pivot is diminished in size then the cycles of Divine Discipline will begin and *can increase in severity*. *See* Deut. 28:15-68; Isa. 6:13; Matt. 5:13; Ezk. 14:12-23; Hos. 4:1-8. The book of *Leviticus* sets out 5 distinct stages or “cycles” of Divine Discipline that progressively increase in severity [Lev. 26:14-33].

LEVITICUS 26:14-33

But if you [the Jews as a Client Nation to God] do not obey Me [God] and do not carry out all these commandments, if, instead, you reject My statutes, and if your soul abhors My ordinances [negative [-N] volition towards Bible Doctrine] so as not to carry out all My commandments, *and* so break My covenant, I, in turn, will do this to you: [1] I will appoint over you a sudden terror, consumption and fever that will waste away the eyes and cause the soul to pine away; also, you will sow your seed uselessly, for your enemies will eat it up. [2] I will set My face against you so that you will be struck down before your enemies; and those who hate you will rule over you, and you will flee when no one is pursuing you. [3] If also after these things you do not obey Me, then I will punish you seven times more for your sins. I will also break down your pride of power; I will also make your sky like iron and your earth like bronze. Your strength will be spent uselessly, for your land will not yield its produce and the trees of the land will not yield their fruit. [4] If then, you act with hostility against Me and are unwilling to obey Me, I will increase the plague on you seven times according to your sins. I will let loose among you the beasts of the field, which will bereave you of your children and destroy your cattle and reduce your number so that your roads lie deserted. And if by these things you are not turned to Me, but act with hostility against Me, then I will act with hostility against you; and I, even I, will strike you seven times for your sins. I will also bring upon you a sword which will execute vengeance for the covenant; and when you gather together into your cities, I will send pestilence among you, so that you shall be delivered into enemy hands. When I break your staff of bread, ten women will bake your bread in one oven, and they will bring back your bread in rationed amounts, so that you will eat and not be satisfied. [5] Yet if in spite of this you do not obey Me, but act with hostility against Me, then I will act with wrathful hostility against you, and I, even I, will punish you seven times for your sins. Further, you will eat the flesh of your sons and the flesh of your daughters you will eat. I then will destroy your high places, and cut down your incense altars, and heap your remains on the remains of your idols, for My soul shall abhor you. I will lay waste your cities as well and will make your sanctuaries desolate, and I will not smell your soothing aromas. I will make the land desolate so that your enemies who settle in it will be appalled over it. You, however, I will scatter among the nations and will draw out a sword after you, as your land becomes desolate and your cities become waste [the 5th and final cycle of Divine Discipline sees the Client Nation destroyed].

MATTHEW 5:13

You [**Believers**] are the salt of the earth [**all Believers have the potential to serve in the pivot by reaching spiritual maturity**]; but if the salt has become tasteless [**the negative [-N] volition Believer in reversionism**], how can it be made salty *again*? It is no longer good for anything, except to be thrown out and trampled under foot by men [**the sin unto death**].

- (3) **Divine Blessing.** A **large pivot provides Divine Blessing**. See Isa. 6:13 [10 percent of the Jews were positive to Isaiah's message]; Deut. 28:1-14. The book of *Leviticus* sets out the Divine Blessing clause [Lev. 26:3-13]. See @@@ GRACE.

LEVITICUS 26:3-13

If you walk in My statutes and keep My commandments so as to carry them out, then I shall give you rains in their season, so that the land will yield its produce and the trees of the field will bear their fruit. Indeed, your threshing will last for you until grape gathering, and grape gathering will last until sowing time. You will thus eat your food to the full and live securely in your land. I shall also grant peace in the land, so that you may lie down with no one making *you* tremble. I shall also eliminate harmful beasts from the land, and no sword will pass through your land. But you will chase your enemies and they will fall before you by the sword; five of you will chase a hundred, and a hundred of you will chase ten thousand, and your enemies will fall before you by the sword. So I will turn toward you and make you fruitful and multiply you, and I will confirm My covenant with you. You will eat the old supply and clear out the old because of the new. Moreover, I will make My dwelling among you, and My soul will not reject you. I will also walk among you and be your God, and you shall be My people. I am the LORD your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt so that *you* would not be their slaves, and I broke the bars of your yoke and made you walk erect.

ISAIAH 6:13

“Yet there will be a tenth portion in it [**positive [+P] volition Believers in Judah**], and it will again be *subject* to burning [**prophecy of the 586 B.C. destruction of Jerusalem**], like a terebinth or an oak whose stump remains when it is felled. The holy seed [**positive [+P] volition Believer**] is its stump.”

- (4) **Jewish Client Nations.** Only Jewish Client Nations existed in the Old Testament [and in the future Millennium]. “*Thus, you are to be holy to Me, for I the LORD am holy; and I have set you apart from the peoples to be Mine*” [Lev. 20:26]; Ps. 147:12-20; 148:14; Isa. 2:1-11; 60:1-22; 62:1-12. The Northern Kingdom was destroyed in 721 B.C. The Southern Kingdom of Judah was destroyed in 586 B.C., but returned as Judea after 70 years of Divine Discipline [Jer. 12:15-17; 25:11; 29:10] to dedicate the rebuilt 2nd Temple in 516 B.C. However, Judea was destroyed in A.D. 70 by Rome.

JEREMIAH 12:15-17

And it will come about that after I [God] have uprooted them [the Southern Kingdom was destroyed by the Chaldeans in 586 B.C. and captives carried to Babylon], I will again have compassion on them; and I will bring them back, each one to his inheritance and each one to his land [the Persians destroyed the Chaldeans in 536 B.C. and subsequent Persian rulers allowed Jews to return and rebuild so that the new Temple in Jerusalem was dedicated in 516 B.C.]. Then if they [the priests and the prophets] will really learn [Bible Doctrine] the ways of My people, to swear by My name, “As the LORD lives,” even as they taught My people to swear by Baal [one of the reasons the Client Nation of Judah was destroyed was that the priests and prophets taught false information], they will be built up in the midst of My people [Judea prospered for many years]. “But if they will not listen [*shama* – negative [-N] volition], then I will uproot that nation, uproot and destroy it [by the time Jesus was born, apostate Judea was in the last cycle of Divine Discipline culminating with the Roman destruction of the Temple in A.D. 70],” declares the LORD.

- (5) **Gentile Client Nations.** Only *Gentile nations* can be Client Nations to God in the Church Age, “*until the fullness of the Gentiles has come in*” [Rom. 11:25]; Lk. 21:24; Eph. 1:10.

LUKE 21:24

And they [the Jews] will fall by the edge of the sword, and will be led captive into all the nations [Rome scattered the Jews across the known world]; and Jerusalem will be trampled under foot [*pateo* (to crush with the feet)] by the Gentiles [*ethnos*] until the times [*kairos* (a fixed and definite measure of time)] of the Gentiles are fulfilled [until the start of the Millennium there will never be another Jewish Client Nation to God].

- (6) **Influence is Invisible.** The true influence in the prosperity of the national entity is in the spiritual realm. While the Believer's responsibility to the State to be a loyal and model citizen is defined under the laws of the Divine Institutions, the *pivot alone* delivers the Client Nation from ruin [Matt. 5:14-16; Mk. 9:50; Gen. 18:23-26; Ezk. 22:30]. In fact, even the influence of a single **Winner** Believer might temporarily preserve a given area from destruction. "*I searched for a man among them who would build up the wall and stand in the gap before Me*" [Ezk. 22:30]; Eccl. 9:13-18. This blessing by association indicates that the mature Believer is a one-man pivot of blessing to his family, friends, and community. Thus, if there are enough mature Believers then the nation can survive poor leadership and general rot in a decadent culture. Thus, the best manifestation of patriotism and nationalism is for the Believer to reach spiritual maturity.

ECCLESIASTES 9:13-18

Also this I [Solomon] came to see as wisdom under the sun, and it impressed me. There was a small city with few men [*the military was small*] in it and a great king came to it, surrounded it and constructed large siegeworks against it. But there was found in it a poor wise man [*an impoverished mature Believer*] and he delivered the city by his wisdom [*chokmah – this Believer was at maturity, a one-person pivot*]. Yet no one remembered that poor man. So I said, "Wisdom is better than strength." But the wisdom of the poor man is despised and his words are not heeded [*the Cosmic Systems hate the truth*]. The words of the wise heard in quietness are *better* than the shouting of a ruler among fools. Wisdom is better than weapons of war, but one sinner destroys much good.

GENESIS 18: 23-26

Abraham came near and said, "Will You [*God administering Divine Discipline*] indeed sweep away the righteous [*Believers*] with the wicked [*the unBelievers*]? Suppose there are fifty righteous within the city [*Sodom*]; will You indeed sweep *it* away and not spare the place for the sake of the fifty righteous who are in it? Far be it from You to do such a thing, to slay the righteous with the wicked, so that the righteous and the wicked are *treated* alike. Far be it from You! Shall not the Judge of all the earth deal justly?" So the LORD said, "If I find in Sodom fifty righteous within the city, then I will spare the whole place on their account."

EZEKIEL 22:30

I [God] searched for a man [mature Believers] among them [Judah 586 B.C.] who would build up the wall and stand in the gap [God requires a fixed number of mature Believers to “stand in the gap” to sustain a pivot] before Me for the land, so that I would not destroy it; but I found no one.

(7) The Four Generation Curse.

- (a) **Why?** The concept of the Four Generation Curse is set out in Deut. 5:8-10; 24:16; Ex. 20:5; Prov. 30:11-17, and refers to the fact that God will allow negative [-N] volition to run in a Client Nation for up to four generations *before He intervenes* to destroy that nation so that history is kept within certain parameters [Ex. 34:6-7; Num. 14:1]. A generation is 20-30 years in length. See @@@ PLAN OF GOD.

EXODUS 34:6-7

Then the LORD passed by in front of him [Moses] and proclaimed, “The LORD, the LORD God, compassionate and gracious, slow to anger, and abounding in lovingkindness and truth; who keeps lovingkindness for thousands, who forgives iniquity, transgression and sin; yet He will by no means leave *the guilty* unpunished, visiting the iniquity of fathers on the children and on the grandchildren to the third and fourth generations [Four Generation Curse].”

- (b) **Individuals.** The Four Generation Curse is a collective fact, but *each person is judged according to his own choices* [Deut. 24:16; 30:19; Jer. 31:29-30; Gen. 2:16-17; Eccl. 7:20; Jos. 24:15; Ezk. 18:1-32].

DEUTERONOMY 24:16

Fathers shall not be put to death for *their* sons, nor shall sons be put to death for *their* fathers; everyone shall be put to death for his own sin [*chet*].

JEREMIAH 31:29-30

In those days they will not say again, “The fathers have eaten sour grapes, and the children’s teeth are set on edge.” But everyone will die for his own iniquity; each man who eats the sour grapes, his teeth will be set on edge.

- (c) **God's Sovereign Will.** God always wants to *change cursing into blessing* [Deut. 6:6-12; 7:9-11; Ps. 100:5]. Thus, the “curse” of the Four Generation Curse can be broken at any point by the responses of enough positive [+P] volition Believers to choose for Bible Doctrine.

DEUTERONOMY 7:9-11

Know therefore that the LORD [*yehovah – singular*] your God [*elohiym (God) – plural intensive for the Trinity*], He is God, the faithful God, who keeps His covenant and his lovingkindness [*chesed (mercy) – grace in action*] to a thousandth generation with those who love Him and keep His commandments; but repays those who hate Him to their faces, to destroy them; He will not delay with him who hates Him, He will repay him to his face. Therefore, you shall keep the commandment and the statutes and the judgments which I am commanding you today, to do them.

PSALM 100:5

For the LORD is good; His lovingkindness [*chesed (mercy)*] is everlasting and His faithfulness [*emunah*] to all generations.

- (d) **Bible Doctrine Blesses.** Where Bible Doctrine is taught and responded to, God's blessings are rightly proclaimed to increase “*a thousand-fold more*” [Deut. 1:11]. See Ezk. 18:30-32.

DEUTERONOMY 1:11

May the LORD, the God of your fathers, increase you a thousand-fold more than you are and bless you, just as He has promised [*dabar (to declare a promise)*] you!

EZEKIEL 18:30

“Therefore I [*God*] will judge you, O house of Israel, each according to his conduct [*the positive [+P] or negative [-N] volition decisions from the soul of each person*],” declares the LORD God. “Repent [*shub (to turn back) – change your mind from negative to positive*] and turn away from all your transgressions, so that iniquity may not become a stumbling block to you.”

@@@ PLAN OF GOD & DIVINE DECREES

– THE PLAN OF GOD –

- (1) **Definition.** The Plan of God refers to the sum total of God’s Sovereign plan [roadmap] for the human race, to include *three categories of fixed truths* [Eph. 1:4-6; 1 Tim. 4:16; 2 Tim. 3:16-17; Jer. 15:16]. *See infra* (3). With these dogmatic truths the “*things that are impossible with people are possible with God*” [Lk. 18:27]. *See @@@ TIME.*
- (a) **Truth One: The Divine Institutions.** God’s Directive Will to provide freedom and stability to all mankind via the Divine Institutions.
 - (b) **Truth Two: Salvation.** God’s Directive Will to provide salvation to all unBelievers via the Gospel [Ezk. 18:4; 33:11].
 - (c) **Truth Three: Maturity.** God’s Directive Will to provide spiritual growth to all Believers via learning and applying Bible Doctrine [Ps. 139:16; Jer. 29:11] so they reach “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1] and rewards.
- (2) **Why Man Created.** God created mankind for two reasons.
- (a) **Resolve the Angelic Conflict.** Create a life form that has free will, like angels, in order to demonstrate His grace and resolve Satan’s false appeal in the Angelic Conflict. *See @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT.*
 - (b) **Share God’s Happiness.** To bring “*many sons (Believers) to glory*” [Heb. 2:10] – into an eternal relationship with God. “*And whom I have created for My glory*” [Isa. 43:7]. In short, God wanted to share His Happiness with Believers and made perfect provisions to do so “*before the foundation of the world*” [Eph. 1:3-6]. *See @@@ TRINITY.*

HEBREWS 2:10

For it was fitting for Him [**God**], for whom are all things, and through whom are all things, in bringing many sons to glory [*doxa – all Believers*], to perfect [*teleioo (to make perfect)*] the author [*archegos (the chief leader) – Jesus Christ*] of their salvation [*soteria (deliverance) – into the Kingdom of Heaven*] through sufferings [*pathema – the sufferings of Christ*].

- (3) **Two Sovereign Directive Wills.** God always desires the *highest and the best*. Consistent with human positive [+P] volition, the Plan of God provides all that is necessary to accomplish His two primary Sovereign Directive Wills.
- (a) **First Directive Will: Salvation For All Mankind.** God desires that all humans be saved. “*This is His commandment, that we believe in the name of His Son Jesus Christ*” [1 Jn. 3:23]; Jn. 1:7; 6:40; 2 Pet. 3:8-9; Gal. 1:4; Isa. 30:18; Rom. 6:23; Ezk. 18:23; Matt. 18:14.

JOHN 6:40

For this is the will of My [Jesus speaking] Father [God], that everyone who beholds the Son [considers the Gospel] and believes in Him will have eternal life, and I Myself will raise him up on the last day.

2 PETER 3:8-9

But do not let this one *fact* escape your notice, beloved, that with the LORD one day is like a thousand years, and a thousand years like one day. The LORD is not slow about His promise, as some count slowness, but is patient toward you, not wishing for any to perish [apollumi] but for all [unBelievers] to come to repentance [metanoia (to change the mind) – about Christ].

EZEKIEL 18:23

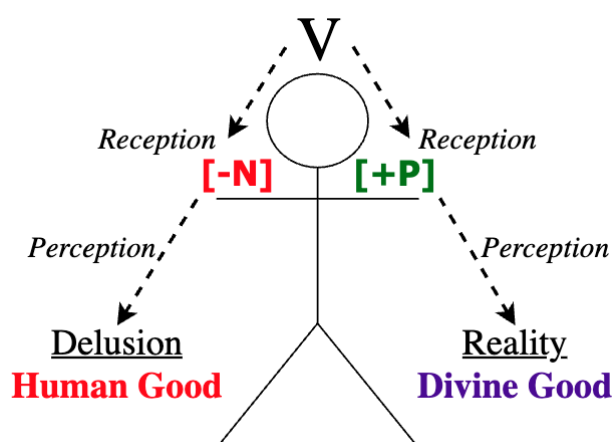
“Do I [the Directive Will of God is that all people should receive salvation] have any pleasure in the death of the wicked,” declares the LORD God, “rather than that he should turn from his ways and live?”

- (b) **Second Directive Will: Maturity For All Believers.** God desires that all those that are saved should reach spiritual adulthood **Winner** status and receive rewards – “*grow in the grace and knowledge of our LORD and Savior Jesus Christ*” [2 Pet. 3:18]; 1 Tim. 2:3-4; 4:16; 1 Jn. 3:23.

1 TIMOTHY 2:3-4

This is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Savior [soter], who desires all men to be saved [the unBeliever saved] and to come to the knowledge [epignosis (full knowledge)] of the truth [the Believer reaching maturity].

- (4) **Functioning His Plan.** The Plan of God is static, but He has chosen to do some things: (1) directly; (2) through agencies; or (3) through certain individuals. In turn, the Plan of God captures perfectly all the free choices of human volition – negative or positive – so that the operation of the Will of God functions in three cooperative manners [see Balaam, Num. 22-24]:
- (a) **Directive Will of God.** From God to Believers and unBelievers.
 - (b) **Permissive Will of God.** God permits human free will to operate for both unBelievers and Believers and *allows the consequences* of that volitional free will to play out in time.
 - (c) **Overruling Will of God.** Without violating individual human volition God steps into history from time to time to prohibit certain things from happening. See @@@ ANGELS; @@@ HISTORY.
- (5) **Bending History.** Human positive [+P] volition is the most powerful force on earth in terms of the flow of history as God in eternity past *bent human history around* all positive [+P] volitional choices without violating the general workings of human free will. “*God thunders with His voice wondrously, doing great things which we cannot comprehend*” [Job 37:5]; Ps. 147:5; 1 Jn. 3:19-20; Rom. 8:28; 12:2. This bending occurs: (1) for the unBeliever on positive [+P] volition who signals a desire for the Gospel of salvation; and (2) for the **Winner** Believer on positive [+P] volition who signals a desire to reach spiritual maturity. See @@@ HEATHENISM.



– The Operation of Human Volition –

- (6) **For the Believer.** The Plan of God for the Believer is divided into three phases.

PHASE I – Salvation. Phase I is the entrance point of the Believer *into the Family of God*. In eternity past God the Father developed the grace Plan to save mankind, God the Son executed the Plan by going to the cross, and God the Holy Spirit spreads the Plan to all those on positive [+P] volition. See Jn. 4:34; 5:17; 16:8-11; Acts 2:23; 1 Pet. 2:24; Rev. 20:10; Rom. 5:8, 12, 18; Heb. 10:7. See @@@ SALVATION.

JOHN 4:34

Jesus said to them, “My food is to do the will of Him [God the Father] who sent Me and to accomplish [*teleioo* (to complete)] His work [*ergon* – in the Plan of God, Christ would go to the cross].”

ACTS 2:23

This *Man* [Jesus Christ], delivered over [*ekdotos* (given over to enemies)] by the predetermined [*horizo* (to mark out the boundaries)] plan [*boule* (to purpose)] and foreknowledge [*prognosis*] of God [the Plan of God was for Jesus to bear the sins of the world], you [the religious Jewish leadership desired to murder Christ] nailed to a cross by the hands of godless men [*anomos* (unlawful wicked) – the unBeliever Romans] and put *Him* to death [*anairo* (death by murder)].

1 PETER 2:24

And He Himself [Jesus Christ] bore [*anaphero* (to carry; to lift up one's self)] our sins [*hamartia*] in His body [*soma* – sin bearing took place in the humanity of Jesus] on the cross [*xulon* (that which is made of wood) – Christ suffered Spiritual Death while on the cross], so that we [all Believers] might die to [*apogenomenos* (to be removed from)] sin [*hamartia* – the influence of the Old Sin Nature is broken] and live to righteousness [*dikaio* – the positive [+P] volition Believer living inside the Divine Dynasphere]; for by His wounds [*molops* (wound that trickles with blood) – the substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus Christ which occurred while He was still alive on the cross] you were healed [*iaomai* (to cure; to bring about salvation) – salvation was provided].

PHASE II – Time on Earth. Phase II of the Plan of God covers the *lifetime of the Believer on the earth* in his mortal body from the point of salvation to his Physical Death. The mission of the Holy Spirit is to get Bible Doctrine, “*the mind of Christ*” [1 Cor. 2:16], to every Believer on positive [+P] volition so that they can reach spiritual maturity **Winner** status, receive rewards in time and eternity, and be entered as a subject matter expert witness exhibit in the Angelic Conflict. “*For the eyes of the LORD move to and fro throughout the earth that He may strongly support those whose heart is completely His*” [2 Chron. 16:9]. The Winner Believer knows this fact about God. “*For to me, to live is Christ and to die is gain*” [Phil. 1:21]; Neh. 9:30; 1 Cor. 2:16.

PHILIPPIANS 1:21

For to me [Paul], to live [*zao – in this physical body on earth*] is Christ and to die [Physical Death] is gain [*kerdos (advantage) – the rewards Paul will receive at the Judgment Seat of Christ along with his resurrection body*].

PHASE III – Eternity. Phase III of the Plan of God covers the Believer in Heaven in a resurrection body where he “*will in the house of the LORD forever*” [Ps. 23:6]. Phase III is executed by the Father. See 1 Cor. 2:9; 2 Tim. 4:18; 1 Thess. 4:17; 1 Pet. 1:4; Rev. 21:4; Jn. 14:1-3.

1 CORINTHIANS 2:9

But just as it is written, “Things which eye has not seen and ear has not heard, and *which* have not entered the heart of man, all that God has prepared [*hetoimazo (to make ready beforehand) – the fantastic rewards placed in an Escrow Account in eternity past are beyond human comprehension*] for those who love [*agapao (to love dearly) – only the positive [+P] volition Believer at spiritual maturity can love God*] Him.”

PSALM 23:5-6

You [God] prepare a table before me [King David] in the presence of my enemies; You have anointed my head with oil; my cup [*kos*] overflows [*with rewards in time and in eternity*]. Surely goodness and lovingkindness [*chesed (mercy) – grace in action*] will follow [*radaph (to pursue; to run after)*] me all the days of my life, and I will dwell in the house [*bayith (home; house containing a family)*] of the LORD forever [*eternal security forever in Heaven*].

– GOD’S DIVINE DECREES –

- (1) **Definition.** Designed and ordained in eternity past, God’s Divine Decrees refer to the unfolding of His total “Plan of God” for mankind where every person’s thoughts, motives, actions, and decisions were read by God but not altered. R.B. Thieme, Jr.: God’s “*Decrees are all comprehensive, interwoven, eternal, perfect, unchangeable, and certain; comprehending simultaneously all things that ever were or will be in their causes, conditions, successions, and relations.*” God is not gaining in knowledge [Deut. 33:27]. Therefore, because He is Perfect and Immutable [Mal. 3:6] His essence ensures that all things are unchangeable and certain [Num. 23:19].
- (2) **Omniscience of God.** The Plan of God starts at His Omniscience since God knows all possibilities and never gains in knowledge [Heb. 13:8]. His Divine Decrees then allow for what is certain to come into existence while simultaneously factoring in Predestination and Election actions for all those positive [+P] volition humans who desire salvation and those few Believers who desire to press on to reach spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1]. *See supra* (5). *See @@@ SALVATION; @@@ MATURITY.*
- (3) **Free Will.** Destroying human negative [-N] volition would also destroy human positive [+P] volition. Thus, God’s Divine Decrees do not forcefully direct human free will one way or the other. As human free will chooses, so God decrees to exist, “*having determined their appointed times and boundaries of their habitation, that they should seek God*” [Acts 17:26-27]. “*Says the LORD, who makes these things known from long ago*” [Acts 15:18; cf. Isa. 45:21]. “*And there is no creature hidden from His sight, but all things are open and laid bare to the eyes of Him with whom we have to do*” [Heb. 4:13]. Again, God knew in eternity past all who would believe in Christ – “*those who have been chosen by God*” [Col. 3:12] – and made provisions to save them. “*He chose us in Him before the foundation of the world*” [Eph. 1:4]. “*You did not choose Me but I chose you*” [Jn. 15:16]; Heb. 4:13; Matt. 6:8; Isa. 46:9-10; 1 Pet. 1:1-2; 1 Cor. 1:2; Ps. 139:1-4, 16; Ezk. 18:4.

PSALM 139:16

Your eyes have seen my unformed substance [*golem (embryo; fetus)*]; and in Your book [*Divine Decrees in the Plan of God*] were all written the days that were ordained *for me*, when as yet there was not one of them.

EZEKIEL 18:4

Behold, all souls [*nephesh* (the human soul)] are Mine [God]; the soul of the father as well as the soul of the son is Mine. The soul who sins will die [*muth*].

- (4) **Causes and Permits.** It is necessary to distinguish between what God causes, e.g., the “*cross*” – where Jesus was “*delivered over by the predetermined plan and foreknowledge of God*” [Acts. 2:23] – and what God permits, e.g., sin. Man has free will with its [+P] and [-N] choices which is a “shadow” [*tselem*] “*image*” [Gen. 1:26] of God’s Sovereignty. Thus, since humans are sovereign creatures who possess free will, the choice for negative [-N] volition as a real option of determination must exist. For instance, “*the Pharisees and the lawyers rejected God’s purpose for themselves*” [Lk. 7:30]. Accordingly, since God always knew in eternity past what would happen if humans were created, as well as what *could happen*, God Decreed that only what *would happen* would come into reality, and that what could happen would not come into reality. *See infra* (5). God Decreed the following for mankind:
- (a) **Freedom.** The agent [man] shall be a free agent. All acts shall be perfectly free and spontaneous on the part of the person.
 - (b) **Choices.** All antecedents shall be what they shall be.
 - (c) **Reality.** All present conditions of the act by each person shall be.
 - (d) **Occur.** All acts shall be certainly future and come into existence.
 - (e) **Divine Will Coexists.** *See* Jn. 7:17; Mk. 6:6; Eph. 2:10; 2 Thess. 2:13.

MARK 6:6

And He [Jesus] wondered [*thaumazo* (to be astonished; to wonder)] at their unbelief. And He was going around the villages teaching.

EPHESIANS 2:10

For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus for good works, which God prepared beforehand [*proetoimazo* (to prepare before) – God’s provisions to bless Believers with rewards] so that we would walk in them.

- (5) **Computer Analogy.** God's Divine Decrees refer to the Plan of God in action for the Believer. *"I know that everything God does will remain forever; there is nothing to add to it and there is nothing to take from it, ... that which is has been already and that which will be has already been, for God seeks what has passed by"* [Eccl. 3:14-15]; 2 Thess. 2:13. The computer analogy:
- (a) **ROM.** A ROM chip is programmed by the Sovereignty of God and is unchangeable data. This is proof that God desires the best for all Believers – Foreknowledge, Election, Predestination, and Escrow.
 - (b) **PROM.** A PROM chip is programmed by the Omniscience of God who knew every thought, motive, and action that each Believer would do. God only acknowledges what is certain and allows such to occur.

2 THESSALONIANS 2:13

But we should always give thanks to God for you, brethren beloved by the LORD, because God has chosen you from the beginning for salvation through sanctification by the [Holy] Spirit and faith [*pistis – saving faith*] in the truth.

- (6) **Three Major Elections.** Under His Perfect timing, God's Sovereign Will made three major elections that would take place in history: (1) the creation of Israel; (2) Jesus Christ; and (3) the Church. See @@@ MYSTERY.
- (a) **Israel.** Israel was set as a Client Nation [Rom. 4:5; Ps. 117] and given *"covenants ... and the temple service and the promises ... from whom is the Christ according to the flesh"* [Rom. 9:1-10]. Israel was set as the repository for the growing Bible, the line of the Messiah, and to perform evangelism to the world.
 - (b) **Jesus Christ.** The Messiah Jesus Christ would come into the world precisely *"at the proper time"* [1 Tim. 2:6]. *"Behold, I have come"* [Heb. 10:5-7]; Isa. 42:1; Acts 2:23; 1 Pet. 2:4, 6; Jn. 15:16.

ACTS 2:23

This *Man*, delivered over by the predetermined plan and foreknowledge of God, you [Jewish religious leaders] nailed to a cross by the hands of godless men and put *Him* to death [*anaireo (to lift up from the ground; to slay a man)*].

- (c) **The Church.** The “*mystery*” [Eph. 3:1-6] doctrines of the Church Age. See Rom. 16:25-26 ; Col. 1:25-27. See @@@ MYSTERY.
- (7) **Election and Predestination.** Since God’s Directive Will is for “*all men to be saved*” [1 Tim. 2:4] and for every Believer to reach spiritual maturity and receive his “*reward*” [2 Jn. 8], God provided the following things under Predestination and Election – *equal opportunity* – for: (1) every human that desires salvation; and (2) every Believer that desires “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1].
- (a) **Salvation.** Election is fulfilled at salvation but is a past, present, and future fact. The *election in* Jesus Christ that all those humans on positive [+P] volition would be “*chosen of God*” [Tit. 1:1] – saved – and then the salvation action of *predestination* for the Holy Spirit to get each and every one of them the Gospel. See Eph. 1:5, 11; 1 Tim. 4:10; Col. 1:23; 3:12; Jn. 15:16; 2 Tim. 1:9; 2:10; 1 Cor. 1:9; 2 Pet. 1:3; Rev. 13:8; 17:8; 1 Thess. 1:4; 2 Thess. 2:13. See @@@ HOLY SPIRIT.

COLOSSIANS 3:12

So, as those [humans who desired salvation] who have been chosen [*eklektos* (picked out)] of God, holy [*hagios* (set apart for blessing)] and beloved, put on a heart [i.e., now these Believers should seek after the goal of reaching maturity] of compassion, kindness, humility, gentleness and patience.

- (b) **Maturity.** Through *foreknowledge* and *predestination*, God provides equal privilege for all Believers to reach spiritual maturity. Thus, for the Winner Believer, “*God causes all things to work together for good to those that love God, ... For those He foreknew, He also predestined to become conformed to the image of His Son*” [Rom. 8:28-30]. See Matt. 6:23, 28-33; 7:7-8; Ps. 139:1-16; Gal. 3:28; 2 Cor. 6:11-12; Lam. 3:21-25; Prov. 8:17; Heb. 11:6; Job 5:19-21; Eph. 1:4. See *infra* (9).

MATTHEW 6:28-30

And why are you worried about clothing? Observe how the lilies of the field grow; they do not toil nor do they spin, yet I say to you that not even Solomon in all his glory clothed himself like one of these. But if God so clothes the grass of the field, which is *alive* today and tomorrow is thrown into the furnace, will He not much more *clothe* you? You of little faith [Faith/Rest]!

MATTHEW 7:7-8

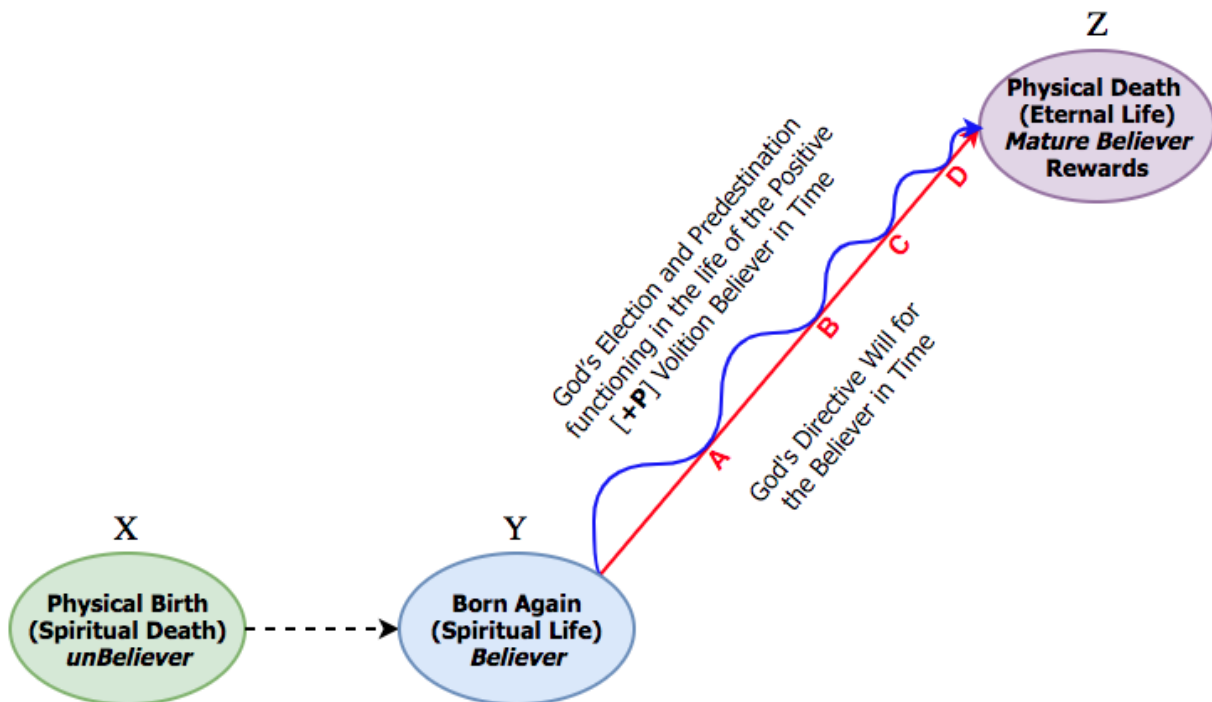
Ask, and it will be given to you; seek, and you will find; knock, and it will be opened to you. For everyone who asks receives, and he who seeks finds, and to him who knocks it will be opened [God in grace provides the opportunity for salvation to all humans and the opportunity to reach spiritual maturity to all Believers].

- (c) **Rejection.** The truth of God's Election and Predestination are rejected by those on negative [-N] volition who object to the idea that they are dependent on God – they want to think that they are unrelated to God. When people reject Election, Predestination, or the Providence of God they are also rejecting the very attributes of God [God created free will]. They blindly fail to comprehend the simple fact that *because God knows* what they will do in the future *does not mean that He makes them do* those subsequent actions.
- (8) **Lapsarianism.** Lapsarianism refers to the various theological viewpoints regarding the major components of God's Divine Decrees.
 - (a) **Supralapsarianism or Calvinism [false]:** (1) Decree to create man; (2) Decree to permit the Fall; (3) Decree to elect some to be saved; (4) Decree to provide limited atonement for the elect only [the Believer but not the unBeliever]. Points (3) and (4) are false.
 - (b) **Armenianism [false]:** (1) Decree to create man; (2) Decree to permit the Fall; (3) Decree to provide unlimited atonement; and (4) Decree to provide salvation by human good works. Point (4) is false.
 - (c) **Infralapsarianism [true]:** (1) Decree to create mankind, man had to be created as a perfect volitional being and then permitted to use his free will which inevitably resulted in the Fall when Adam and Eve committed sin, [Jn. 15:19; Rom. 11:5-7; Eph. 1:4]; (2) Decree to permit the Fall; (3) Decree to provide unlimited atonement; (4) Decree for Election and Predestination of Believers; and (5) Decree to save the elect [Believers] through faith in Christ.
 - (d) **Thieme Lapsarianism** [expanded Infralapsarianism] [true]: See *Thieme's Bible Doctrine Dictionary* (2022):

1. Decree to create mankind as a free agent in order to resolve the Angelic Conflict and to share God's happiness, "*in bringing many sons to glory*" [Heb. 2:10].
 2. Decree "to permit man to fall through the function of his own self-determination, a fall that resulted in Spiritual Death and condemnation from God."
 3. Decree "to provide the means of eternal salvation for the fallen" – all mankind – through Christ. Unlimited Atonement.
 4. Decree "to leave the reprobate (those who reject Christ and remain in Spiritual Death) in their just condemnation."
 5. Decree to provide Election and Predestination for Believers and deposit Escrow Account Blessings for all Believers [Eph. 1:3; 1 Pet. 1:3-4; Rom. 8:28-30], but to grant full "*rewards*" [1 Cor. 3:14] for those Believers who reach "*maturity*" [Heb. 6:1].
 6. Decree to save the elect [Believers] by faith in Christ.
- (9) **For Mature Believers Only.** The oft cited promise in Rom. 8:28, "*that God causes all things to work together for good to those who love God,*" *does not apply to most Believers*. The complete context for the proposition in Rom. 8:28, makes it abundantly clear that the verse refers only to the "*mature man*" [Eph. 4:13]. Only the mature Believer is *capable of loving God* which is the key element of the promise in the passage [Jas. 2:5; Ps. 37:23].
- (a) **Loser Believer.** Although God provided equal opportunity for all Believers to take advantage of His grace to get them to maturity, the **Loser** Believer stays in the Cosmic Systems and reaps only Divine Discipline. All things do not work together for his "*good*."
 - (b) **Winner Believer.** Only the positive [+P] volition **Winner** Believer who consistently stays in the Divine Dynasphere and takes in Bible Doctrine will benefit from God's Predestination input to cause "*all things to work together for good*" [Rom. 8:28-30], i.e., God made provisions in eternity past to ensure that this Believer gets to spiritual maturity regardless of adversities or failures along the way.

ROMANS 8:28-30

And we [Paul and all mature Believers] know that God causes all things to work together for good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] to those who love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] God [only the positive [+P] volition Believer at maturity can love God], to those who are called [*kletos* (called; invited to a banquet)] according to His purpose [*prothesis* (a predetermined plan)]. For those whom He foreknew [*proginosko* (to have knowledge beforehand) – the humans that would believe in Christ], He also predestined [*proorizo* (to decide beforehand) – God made provisions in time to get the Winner Believer to maturity] to become conformed [*summorphos* (having the same form as another)] to the image of His Son, so that He would be the firstborn [in resurrection] among many brethren [*adelphos* (brothers)]; and these whom He predestined [*proorizo*], He also called [*kaleo* (to call aloud; to invite)]; and these whom He called, He also justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – by receiving God's Righteousness [+R]]; and these whom He justified, He also glorified [*doxazo* (to honor) – by the giving of rewards].



– Tracking The Positive [+P] Volition **Winner** Believer –

@@@ POVERTY

- (1) **Definition.** The state of either *financial* or *spiritual* poverty, both of which exist in the human race and will always exist. “*For you always have the poor with you*” [Matt. 26:11]. See @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS.
- (2) **Gospel Trumps Poverty.** What those in a state of spiritual or financial poverty need most is the Gospel of salvation. The term “*poor in spirit*” [Matt. 5:3] refers to *the spiritually dead unBeliever* born without a human spirit and God’s Righteousness [+R]. Thus, “*the poor (in spirit) have the gospel preached to them*” [Matt. 11:5] so that their faith in Christ for salvation makes them “*rich*” [Rev. 3:18]; 2 Cor. 8:9; Jas. 2:5. In many cases the financially impoverished often see more clearly the need for salvation and respond to the Gospel with great relief and joy. See Ps. 72:12-14.

MATTHEW 5:3

Blessed [*makarios* (happiness’s)] are the poor [*ptochos* (destitute of)] in spirit [*pneuma* – the unBeliever has no human spirit and is in a state of total spiritual poverty in terms of salvation], for theirs [because of spiritually dead mankind Jesus Christ died to provide unlimited atonement] is the kingdom of heaven.

JAMES 2:5

Listen, my beloved brethren [*adelphos* (brother)]: did not God choose the poor [*ptochos* – the spiritually poor are the unBelievers] of this world to be rich [*plousios* (abounding rich) – the status of the Believer] in faith [*pistis* – by means of faith in Jesus Christ] and heirs of the kingdom [fantastic rewards] which He promised to those who love [*agapao* (to dearly love) – the Believer who reaches spiritual maturity] Him?

- (3) **Financial Poverty Exists.** Until the 2nd Advent of Jesus Christ and the Millennium *there will always be financial poverty* in the human race. See Matt. 26:11; Jn. 12:8.

MATTHEW 26:11

For you always have the poor [*ptochos*] with you; but you do not always have Me [Christ].

- (4) **Abusing the Poor.** There is a special curse for those who take advantage of the poor. See Jn. 12:5-6 [Judas Iscariot pretended to care for the poor but only sought to steal money]; Prov. 21:13; 22:16, 22; 28:3.

PROVERBS 21:13

He who shuts his ear to the cry of the poor [*dal (helpless; poor)*] will also cry himself and not be answered [*Divine Discipline Suffering*].

- (5) **Helping the Poor.** God can raise the poor out of financial poverty [Ps. 113:7; 1 Sam. 2:8; Prov. 10:22]. There is a special joy and reward for those who help the impoverished [Ps. 41:1-2; Prov. 22:9; 29:14; Matt. 6:2-4]. “*One who is gracious to a poor man lends to the LORD, and He will repay him for his good deed*” Prov. 19:17].
- (6) **No Welfare State.** The extensive Hebrew tax system took an additional 10% tax from the people’s wealth “*at the end of every third year*” [Deut. 14:28] in order to help the impoverished in the nation. It was not a yearly welfare program as the expectation was that humans should work for a living and not live off the State or others that do work for a living. “*The leech has two daughters, ‘Give,’ ‘Give’*” [Prov. 30:15]; Prov. 20:4.

PROVERBS 20:4

The sluggard does not plow after the autumn, so he begs during the harvest and has nothing.

- (7) **Charity.** Charity is commanded for the Believer [Prov. 14:30-31; 19:17; 31:20; Matt. 6:2-4]. Socialism is not commanded for the Believer [Gal. 2:10; 2 Thess. 3:10-12]. Believers are to *get a job* and not sponge off others!
- (8) **Logistical Grace.** God provides financial means for the Believer. “*I (King David) have been young and now I am old, yet I have not seen the righteous forsaken or his descendants begging bread*” [Prov 37:25]; Phil 4:11-13.
- (9) **Negative Volition.** In many cases poverty is a disease of negative [-N] volition towards systems of authority and inevitably increases when the Divine Institutions are ignored [Prov. 20:4; 30:15].
-

@@@ PRAYER

- (1) **Definition.** Prayer is the *privilege and responsibility* of all Believer/Priests [Ps. 116:1-2; 1 Thess. 5:17; Matt. 6:5-9]. When used properly it is a powerful *calming* weapon, but it is not one of the problem-solving devices.
- (2) **Approach to Prayer.** Prayer is a tool for Believers only [Jn. 15:7; Matt. 21:22; Mk. 11:24], except for the “*call*” of the unBeliever for his salvation: “*Whoever will call on the name of the LORD will be saved*” [Rom. 10:13]. Approach to the Believer’s proper prayer requires the following.
 - (a) **Addressed to God the Father.** “*Pray, then, in this way: ‘Our Father who is in heaven’*” [Matt. 6:9]; Eph. 1:17; 3:14; 1 Pet. 1:17. God the Father is the author of the Plan of God. Dead humans can’t hear you.

EPHESIANS 3:14

For this reason I [Paul] bow my knees before the Father [pater].

- (b) **Made in the Name of the Son.** See Jn. 14:13-14; Eph. 2:13; Col. 3:17; Rom. 5:2. The Believer is accepted because of the work of the “*LORD Jesus Christ*” [Eph. 5:20] on the cross.

EPHESIANS 5:20

Always giving thanks [*eucharisteo (to be grateful)*] for all things in the name [*onoma*] of our LORD Jesus Christ to God, even the Father [pater].

- (c) **Filled With the Holy Spirit.** See Eph. 6:18; Jude 20; Rom. 8:16, 26. Pray when in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit. See @@@ REBOUND.

EPHESIANS 6:18

With all prayer [*proseuche (prayer addressed to God)*] and petition pray at all times in [Fellowship of] the [Holy] Spirit, and with this in view, be on the alert with all perseverance and petition for all the saints [*hagios – Believers*].

- (d) **Public Prayer is Short.** See Matt. 6:6-8. *KISS* [keep it simple stupid]. On the other hand, private prayer can be as long as the Believer desires.

MATTHEW 6:6-8

But you [**Believer**], when you pray, go into your inner room, close your door and pray to your Father [**God the Father**] who is in secret, and your Father who sees *what is done* in secret will reward you. And when you are praying, do not use meaningless repetition [*battologeo (to repeat the same things over and over)*] as the Gentiles do [*ethnikos – a key component of religion*], for they suppose that they will be heard for their many words. So do not be like them; for your Father knows what you need before you ask Him.

- (3) **Three Sources.** God the Father receives prayer from three sources.
- (a) **Jesus' Intercession.** The LORD Jesus Christ makes “*intercession for*” [Heb. 7:25] Believers.

HEBREWS 7:25

Therefore He [**Jesus Christ**] is able also to save [*sozo (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven*] forever those who draw near [*proserchomai (to come to)*] to God through Him, since He always lives to make intercession [*entugchano – by prayer*] for them [**Believers**].

- (b) **Believers.** “*The righteous cry, and the LORD hears And delivers them out of all their troubles*” [Ps. 34:17]; Matt. 6:9; Ps. 116:1-2.

MATTHEW 6:9

Pray [*proseuchomai*], then, in this way: Our Father [*pater – all prayer is addressed to God the Father*] who is in heaven [*ouranos*], hallowed [*hagiazo (to separate from profane things)*] be Your name.

PSALM 116:1-2

I [**the Believer**] love [*ahab*] the LORD, because He hears my voice *and* my supplications [*tachanun (earnest prayer)*]. Because He has inclined His ear to me, therefore I shall call *upon Him* as long as I live.

- (c) **Holy Spirit's Intercession.** God the Holy Spirit “*intercedes for us*” [Rom. 8:26-27] – Believers.

ROMANS 8:26-27

In the same way the [Holy] Spirit also helps our weakness [*astheneia* (want of strength)]; for we do not know how to pray as we should, but the [Holy] Spirit Himself intercedes for *us* with groanings too deep for words; and He who searches the hearts [*kardia*] knows what the mind of the [Holy] Spirit is, because He intercedes for the saints according to *the will of God*.

(4) Categories of Prayer.

- (a) **Thanksgiving.** This comes from the Believer's *grace orientation* to life and grows with his advance to "*maturity*" [Heb. 6:1] so that "*in everything*" he gives thanks to God [1 Thess. 5:18], "*rejoicing in hope, persevering in tribulation* (*Suffering testing for Blessing*), *devoted to prayer*" [Rom. 12:12]. See Eph. 5:20; Rom. 8:28; Ps. 150:1-6.

1 THESSALONIANS 5:18

In everything give thanks [*eucharisteo* (to be grateful) – to include Divine Suffering for Blessing]; for this is God's will [*thelema*] for you in Christ Jesus [*reach maturity and receive rewards*].

- (b) **Intercession Prayer.** "*The effective prayer of a righteous man can accomplish much*" [Jas. 5:16-18]; Eph. 6:18; Rom. 10:1. For example, when Peter was in jail, "*prayer for him was being made*" [Acts 12:5].
- (c) **Petition for Personal Needs.** The longer the Believer's list of requests for self indicates a lack of spiritual maturity. See Heb. 4:16.

HEBREWS 4:16

Therefore let us [Believer] draw near with confidence [*parrhesia* (frankness)] to the throne of grace, so that we may receive mercy [*eleos* – grace in action] and find grace to help in time of need.

(5) Why Prayer Not Answered.

- (a) **Unconfessed Sin.** Believers must "*pray at all times in the Spirit*" [Eph. 6:18] via Rebound. See Prov. 6:18; Ps. 66:18-20; Job 35:12-13.

JOB 35:12-13

There they cry out, but He does not answer because of the pride of evil men. Surely God will not listen to an empty *cry*, nor will the Almighty regard it.

- (b) **Believe.** The Believer must use Faith/Rest to “*believe*” [Mk. 11:24] in *God’s promises* to answer petitions. “*Wait for the LORD; Be strong and let your heart take courage*” [Ps. 27:14]. Further, there should be no lack of Bible Doctrine so the Believer can orient to proper topics [Matt. 21:22; 1 Jn. 3:22; 5:13-15; Mk. 11:24; Jn. 15:16-17], e.g., the Believer should not pray for *wisdom* as an immediate result – *God provides wisdom to the Believer via the intake of Bible Doctrine.*

MATTHEW 21:22

And all things you ask in prayer [*proseuche*], believing, you will receive.

- (c) **Self-Gratification.** “*You ask and do not receive, because you ask with wrong motives, so that you may spend it on your pleasures*” [Jas. 4:3]; Prov. 21:13. In contrast, for the grace oriented Believer: “*I have learned to be content in whatever circumstances I am*” [Phil 4:11-13].
- (d) **Lack of Domestic Tranquility.** See 1 Pet. 3:7.

1 PETER 3:7

You husbands in the same way, live with *your wives* in an understanding way, as with someone weaker, since she is a woman [*women are wired to be responders to their husbands*]; and show her honor as a fellow heir of the grace of life, so that your prayers will not be hindered [*egkopto (impede)*].

- (e) **Otherwise Distracted in Prayer.** The Believer is to “*be anxious for nothing*” [Phil. 4:6]; Matt. 7:7-8; 18:19; Jer. 33:3; Isa. 65:24.
- (6) **Special Prayers.**
- (a) **Food.** In public or private settings, food is “*sanctified by means of the word of God and prayer*” [1 Tim. 4:4-5]. Jesus, “*when He had given thanks, He broke it and said*” [1 Cor. 11:24]. See also 1 Cor. 10:31.

1 TIMOTHY 4:4-5

For everything [*pas* – food to eat] created by God is good [*kalos* (useful; suitable)], and nothing is to be rejected [*apobletos* (thrown away; rejected)] if it [*food to be eaten*] is received with gratitude; for it is sanctified [*hagiazō* (to be separated from profane things)] by means of the word of God and prayer [*enteuxis* (a petition) – prayer over food].

- (b) **For Mankind and People in Authority.** For example, one can pray for God to *challenge* various people in authority positions to become aware of the importance of following the Divine Institutions, the Gospel, and Bible Doctrine. See 1 Tim. 2:1-2.

1 TIMOTHY 2:1-2

First of all, then, I [*Paul*] urge [*parakaleō* (by exhortation)] that entreaties [*deesis*] and prayers [*proseuche*], petitions [*enteuxis* (that for which an interview is held)] and thanksgivings, be made on behalf of all men [*the Gospel presented*], for kings and all who are in authority [*huperochē*], so that we [*the Believer*] may lead a tranquil [*eremos*] and quiet life [*living under the Divine Institutions*] in all godliness and dignity.

- (c) **Widows Commanded to Pray.** See 1 Tim. 5:5.

1 TIMOTHY 5:5

Now she who is a widow indeed and who has been left alone, has fixed her hope [*elpizō* (hopefully to trust in)] on God and continues in entreaties and prayers [*proseuche*] night and day.

- (d) **Pray for Pastor/Teacher.** For example, “*that God will open up to us a door for the word, so that we may speak forth the mystery of Christ*” [Col. 4:2-3]. See 1 Thess. 5:25; 2 Thess. 3:1; Heb. 13:18; 1 Cor. 16:9.

1 THESSALONIANS 5:25

Brethren, pray [*proseuchomai*] for us [*Paul and his traveling seminary team*].

- (e) **Pray for Your Enemies.** See Matt. 5:44. See @@@ LOVE.

MATTHEW 5:44

But I [**Jesus**] say to you, love [*agapao – impersonal love*] your enemies [*echthros (a man that is hostile)*] and pray for those who persecute you.

- (f) **Pray for the Sick.** To “*restore the one who is sick*” [Jas. 5:15].
- (g) **Pray for UnBelievers to Receive the Gospel.** See Rom. 10:1-4.

ROMANS 10:1

Brethren, my [**Paul**] heart’s desire and my prayer to God for them [**the unBeliever**] is for *their* salvation [*soteria (deliverance)*].

- (h) **Maturity.** Pray for Believers, including yourself, to reach spiritual adulthood by being *challenged* to press forward with the study and application of Bible Doctrine. See Phil. 1:9; Eph. 1:15-23; 3:14-21; Col. 1:9; Prov. 3:1-2. See @@@ **MATURITY**.

PHILIPPIANS 1:9

And this I [**Paul**] pray, that your love [*agape – impersonal love*] may abound still more and more in real knowledge [*epignosis – the Believer reaching spiritual maturity*] and all discernment [*use the problem solving devices*].

- (7) **Prayer and Free Will.** Prayer is *not a system for controlling the lives of others*. The Believer cannot pray to violate someone else’s free will decisions. Still, the Believer can pray that God will provide for an open door for a variety of matters from Gospel hearing to exposure to true Bible teaching. See @@@ **OPEN DOOR**.
- (8) **Pray Without Ceasing.** The command to pray “*without ceasing*” [1 Thess. 5:17]; Eph. 6:18, simply means to be “*devoted to prayer*” [Rom. 12:12] in a habitual fashion, which is tantamount to consistently staying in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit through Rebound and therefore ready to pray!

1 THESSALONIANS 5:17

Pray without ceasing [*adialeiptos (incessantly)*].

- (9) **Prayer – Petitions and Desires.** Some Biblical examples comparing the petition with the desire:

PETITION	DESIRE	
Answered	Not Ans.	1 Sam. 8:5-20 [for a King]; Ps. 106:13-16 [for food].
Not Ans.	Answered	Gen. 17:18 [Abraham's prayer for Ishmael to be his heir]; Gen. 18:23-33 [to save the city of Sodom]; 2 Cor. 12:8 [remove Paul's thorn in the flesh].
Answered	Answered	1 Kngs. 18:36-37 [prayer for fire]; Jdg. 16:28 [Samson]; Lk. 23:42-43 [the thief on the cross for salvation]; Jn. 11:45 [Lazarus reanimated from the dead].
Not Ans.	Not Ans.	Lam. 3:44 [for God to remove the 5th Cycle of Discipline from Judah].

- (10) **Prayer of Jesus Christ.** On the night He was betrayed, Jesus' prayer to not go to the cross, "*remove this cup from Me*" [Lk. 22:42], was the prayer that could not be answered. "*My God, my God, why have You forsaken me?*" [Mk. 15:34; Matt. 27:46]. God the Father could not deliver Jesus because the Holiness of God – "*Yet You are holy*" [Ps. 22:1-3] – can only condemn sin.

PSALM 22:1-2

My God [**God the Father**], my God [**God the Father**], why have You forsaken [*azab* (to leave; to forsake)] me [**Jesus**]? Far from my deliverance are the words of my groaning. O my God, I cry by day [*yomam* (in the daytime)], but You do not answer; and by night [*layil* (protective shadow) – **Jesus Christ was covered in darkness during the last three hours on the cross**], but I have no rest [*dumiyah* (stillness) – **Jesus would bear all human sin**].

- (11) **Prayer Always Answered.** Prayers *offered according to the Will of God are always answered* [1 Jn. 5:14-15]. Thus, Suffering for Blessing is for His glory and God's timing is always perfect. Jesus passed the test in the "garden" of Gethsemane [Adam failed in Eden's Garden]. See Lk. 22:42; Jn. 12:27-28.

LUKE 22:42

Saying, "Father, if You are willing, remove this cup [*the sins of all mankind*] from Me; yet not My will, but Yours be done [*to provide salvation*]."

1 JOHN 5:14-15

This is the confidence which we have before Him [*God*], that, if we ask anything according to His will [*thelema – Plan of God*], He hears [*akouo*] us. And if we know that He hears us *in* whatever we ask, we know that we have the requests [*aitema (petition)*] which we have asked from Him.

- (12) **Answered in Eternity.** God has already answered all prayer in eternity past. *The Winner Believer does not know what the future will hold, but he knows who holds the future!* Thus, the effectiveness of prayer is with the Believer who understands the Plan of God and offers proper prayers therein. See Heb. 4:16; Jn. 15:7; 1 Jn. 3:22. See Isa. 65:24; Jer. 29:11-13. God always gives the Believer what he needs, not necessarily what he wants. "*Now, will not God bring about justice for His elect who cry to Him day and night, and will He delay long over them?*" [Lk. 18:7].

ISAIAH 65:24

It will also come to pass that before they [*the positive [+P] volition Believer*] call, I [*God*] will answer; and while they are still speaking, I will hear.

JEREMIAH 29:11-13

"For I know the plans that I have for you [*Believers*]," declares the LORD, "plans for welfare [*advance the Believer to maturity*] and not for calamity to give you a future and a hope [*regarding the resurrection and rewards*]. Then you will call upon Me and come and pray to Me, and I will listen to you. You will seek Me and find Me when you search for Me with all your heart."

@@@ PRIVACY & JUDGING

- (1) **Definition.** Because every Believer in the Church Age is a member of the royal, “*holy priesthood*” [1 Pet. 2:5, 9; cf. Col. 3:17] and represents himself before the LORD he is *accountable to the LORD only* [Rom. 2:1; 14:4] and entitled to his personal privacy per the Law of Liberty in the Christian Way of Life. Accordingly, he must also respect the privacy of others – “*what is that to you?*” [Jn. 21:21-22] – so that he does not *sit in judgment* of anyone.

ROMANS 14:4

Who are you [*a fellow Believer*] to judge [*krino* (to be of opinion; to decide mentally or judicially) – to sit in judgment over] the servant [*oiketes* (a domestic servant)] of another? To his own master [*God is the master*] he stands or falls; and he will stand, for the LORD is able to make him stand [*God does not need anyone’s help to discipline or bless any given Believer*].

- (2) **Sitting in Judgment.** Violation of another’s privacy leads to the *sin of sitting in judgment*. “*For who regards you as superior? What do you have that you did not receive* (from God)?” [1 Cor. 4:7]; Matt. 7:1-3; Rom. 14:10-11; 2 Cor. 5:10. Note: *making observations or assessments* about things and people in life is normal and legitimate, *see infra* (9). However, sitting in judgment to condemn or bad mouth another person is not legitimate.

ROMANS 14:10-11

But you [*a fellow Believer*], why do you judge [*krino*] your brother? Or you again, why do you regard your brother with contempt [*exoutheneo* (to despise)]? For we [*all Believers*] will all stand before the judgment seat of God [*theos*]. For it is written, “As I live, says the LORD [*kurios*], every knee shall bow to Me, and every tongue [*all Believers*] shall give praise to God.”

- (3) **Divine Institutions.** Privacy is an integral part of the proper operation of the Divine Institutions. *See @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS.*
- (4) **Live and Let Live.** *Live and let live* is the mental attitude of the “*mature*” [Eph. 4:13] Believer; not being a “*malicious gossip*” [2 Tim. 3:3], which is a sin. *See* 2 Thess. 3:11-13. For example, even if you hear gossip which is true, it is none of your ____ business. Do not pass it on [1 Tim. 5:13; 1 Pet. 4:5].

2 THESSALONIANS 3:11

For we [Paul and his team] hear that some among you [Believers] are leading an undisciplined [*ataktos* (disorderly; out of the ranks)] life, doing no work at all, but acting like busybodies [*periergazomai* (to bustle about uselessly)].

1 TIMOTHY 5:13

At the same time they [judgmental Believers] also learn *to be* idle [*argos* (lazy; shunning the labor which one ought to perform)], as they go around from house [*oikia* – the first Churches were in private homes] to house; and not merely idle, but also gossips [*phluaros*] and busybodies [*periergos* (busy about other people's affairs)], talking about things not proper *to mention*.

- (5) **Personal Views.** “*Let no unwholesome word proceed from your mouth, but only such a word as is good for edification according to the need of the moment, so that it will give grace to those that hear*” [Eph. 4:29]. Again, *live and let live* is the general attitude of the mature Believer in dealing with others. He remembers that at some time in life he too did untoward things [or worse] and should never be “shocked” or condemning of others [Eccl. 7:20-22]. Further, the Believer must not impose [unless asked for advice] his personal standards or “good advice” on others per dress, eating, drinking, social relationships, family matters, medical treatments, raising children, etc. [Rom. 14:4-10]. Even if the advice is excellent, it is none of his business.

ECCLESIASTES 7:20-22

Indeed, there is not a righteous man on earth who *continually* does [Divine] good and who never sins. Also, do not take seriously all words which are spoken [the Believer must have a relaxed mental attitude grace orientation to life], so that you will not hear your servant cursing [*qalal* (to be lightly esteemed; to make despicable)] you [the grace oriented Believer will disregard their loose talk]. For you also have realized that you likewise have many times cursed others.

- (6) **Guaranteed Suffering.** A Believer who sits in judgment on another human is in for *multiplied* Divine Discipline Suffering from the LORD. “*God is not mocked; for whatever a man sows, this he will also reap*” [Gal. 6:7]; Matt. 7:1-3; Prov. 6:11-19; 12:13.

MATTHEW 7:1-3

Do not judge [*krino*] so that you will not be judged [*krino* – God provides Divine Discipline Suffering for unconfessed sin]. For in the way you judge, you will be judged; and by your standard of measure [*metreo* (to measure out)], it will be measured to you [the Believer gets a double portion of Divine Discipline]. Why do you look at the speck [*karphos* (a twig)] that is in your brother's eye, but do not notice the log [*dokos* (a beam of timber)] that is in your own eye?

- (7) **Manifestation of Lust.** Sitting in judgment to condemn manifests itself in gossip and bullying and those who do such things seek to satisfy a deep approbation lust to *control others and to place special emphasis on their own emotion or experience*. Indeed, the person who sits in judgment is simply advertising the misery in their own soul [Prov. 14:21; Eccl. 7:20-22; Matt. 18:21-35]. Further, the legalist who claims his so-called opinions are “Biblical” and must be followed actually hates grace [Gal. 4:29; Col. 2:16; Rom. 14:2-4]. In short, Believers must control their “*tongue*” [Jas. 3:5-6].

COLOSSIANS 2:16

Therefore no one is to act as your [the Believer's] judge [*krino* (to approve) – the Law of Liberty] in regard to food or drink or in respect to a festival or a new moon or a Sabbath day.

JAMES 3:5-6

So also the tongue is a small part of the body, and yet it boasts [*megalaucheo* – this sin comes from the Old Sin Nature] of great things. See how great a forest is set aflame [*anapto* (to light up a fire)] by such a small fire [the impact of sins of the tongue]! And the tongue is a fire, the very world of iniquity; the tongue is set among our members [the Old Sin Nature] as that which defiles the entire body, and sets on fire the course [*trochos* (course)] of our life, and is set on fire by hell.

- (8) **Separate.** Believers are commanded to *separate themselves* from those who regularly sit in judgment of others, because both unBelievers and Believers that reject the privacy of others are troublemakers. In fact, such “friends” will invariably turn on you as well [1 Cor. 5:11-13]. See @@@ SEPARATION.

1 CORINTHIANS 5:11-13

But actually, I [**Paul**] wrote [*grapho*] to you not to associate [*sunanamignumi* (to keep company with)] with any so-called [*onomazo* (to name)] brother [*adelphos* – a **Loser Believer**] if he is an immoral person [*pornos* (a man who prostitutes his body to another's lust for hire)], or covetous [*pleonektes* (one eager to have what belongs to another)], or an idolater [*eidololatres* (a worshipper of false gods)], or a reviler [*loidoros* (one who causes mischief)], or a drunkard, or a swindler [*harpax* (an extortioner; a robber)]—not even to eat with such a one. For what have I to do with judging [*krino*] outsiders? Do you not judge those who are within *the church*? But those who are outside, God judges [*krino*]. Remove the wicked man from among yourselves.

(9) **Exceptions to Judging.**

- (a) **Protect the Congregation.** The Pastor/Teacher can act to protect the privacy of his congregation. See @@@ **PASTOR/TEACHER**.
- (b) **The State.** Under Divine Institutions #4, the State can make various legal judgments to enforce criminal or civil law. See @@@ **DIVINE INSTITUTIONS**.
- (c) **Bible Doctrine.** Making judgments concerning dogmatic aspects of Scripture, under circumstances that impact the Believer directly.
- (d) **Parent to Child.** As long as the child resides in the home he is under the authority of the parents [Eph. 6:1-4].
- (e) **Letters.** Making specific recommendations of support when asked.

(10) **Curing Violations.** The Believer who sits in judgment of another must:

- (a) **Rebound.** See 1 Jn. 1:9; 1 Cor. 11:13. See @@@ **REBOUND**.
- (b) **Concentrate on the Word.** Endeavor to *mind his own business* in the future [2 Pet. 3:18; Prov. 6:11-19]. Recall that although he may be better than another human in terms of morality, all humans are worthless relative to Perfect God. Indeed, if any human got what he deserved he would be incinerated immediately [Lam. 3:20-23]!

LAMENTATIONS 3:20-23 (KJV)

My soul hath *them* still in remembrance, and is humbled within me. This I recall to mind [**Doctrine**], therefore I have hope. *It is of* the LORD's mercies that we are not consumed [*tamam (to completely consume to come to an end) – without God's grace we would be consumed for just cause*], because His compassions fail not. *They are* new every morning: great is thy faithfulness.

- (c) **Avoid Chain Sinning.** The Believer must resist the pattern of **chain sinning** – adding sin upon sin – which always revolves around increased levels of gossip and *uber* judging. “*If anyone thinks himself to be religious [threskos – fearing God], and yet does not bridle his tongue but deceives his own heart, this man's religion is worthless*” [Jas. 1:26]; 1 Tim. 5:13; Heb. 12:15.

HEBREWS 12:15

See to it that no one comes short [*hustereo (to be left behind in the race)*] of the grace of God; that no root of bitterness springing up [**from the OSN**] causes trouble, and by it many be defiled [*miaino (to pollute) – others engage in sin*].

- (d) **Relax.** Each Believer has enough to occupy his own life, and it really doesn't matter what others do/think. In other words, live “**every man under his (own) vine and fig tree**” [1 Kngs. 4:25]; Rom. 4:14. **Mind your own business and be content with your circumstances.**
- (11) **Repayment.** When the Believer is the object of judging he should “**pray for those who mistreat you**” [Lk. 6:28] and give the matter to the LORD. Let the LORD repay the wrongs and “**never take your own revenge**” [Rom. 12:19]; 1 Pet. 5:7; Ps. 55:22; Deut. 32:35. “**Therefore do not go on passing judgment before the time, but wait until the Lord comes who will both bring to light the things hidden in the darkness and disclose the motives of men's hearts; and then each man's praise will come to him from God**” [1 Cor. 4:5].

PSALM 55:22

Cast your burden upon the LORD and He will sustain you; He will never allow the righteous [**the Believer**] to be shaken [*mot (to waver; to be cast out)*].

@@@ PROBLEMS

- (1) **Definition.** Problems arise from the difficulties of life and can emanate from a variety of sources to include self, others, and various environmental circumstances. Problems are a source of both suffering, but also of testing designed by God to move the [+P] volition **Winner** Believer to spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1]. See @@@ SUFFERING.
- (2) **Self.**
 - (a) **The Greatest.** The Believer’s worst problem in life is *himself*, in terms of controlling his negative [-N] volition. Suffering flows directly from violating the laws of the Divine Institutions, personal sinning, living in the Cosmic Systems, and refusing to respond to Bible Doctrine. The solution is always the same. “*Therefore be imitators of God, as beloved children*” [Eph. 5:1]. See @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS.
 - (b) **Arrogance/Pride.** The mental attitude sin of arrogance is the gateway to “self” problems. With a hypersensitive preoccupation with self the arrogant person has unrealistic expectations from others. “*Do you see a man wise in his own eyes? There is more hope for a fool than for him*” [Prov. 26:12]. “*When pride comes, then comes dishonor, But with the humble is wisdom*” [Prov. 11:2]. “*Pride goes before destruction*” [Prov. 16:18]; Jas. 3:14-16; 4:6; 1 Pet. 5:5-6; Rom. 12:3.
- (3) **Fear.** Fear is a sin of emotion and equates to a lack of thinking under pressure. It includes worry and anxiety with the result that *the more things you fear in life, the more things you will fear!* Knowing and applying Bible Doctrine overcomes fear. “*Do not let your heart envy sinners, But live in the fear (the respect) of the LORD always*” [Prov. 23:17]. See @@@ FEAR.
- (4) **Rejection.** There are many categories of “rejection” in life that flow in both directions, *some for legitimate reasons and some not*. However, God will never reject the Believer [Heb. 13:5; Matt. 28:20], having rejected Jesus on the cross so that humans on positive [+P] volition could be saved [Ps. 22:1; 27:9; 1 Pet. 2:7, 20-24; Isa. 53:3; Ps. 118:22; Matt. 21:23-27].
 - (a) **Rejection of the Living Word of Salvation.** The unBeliever’s doom and wasted life in the Cosmic Systems.

- (b) **Rejection of Bible Doctrine.** The **Loser** Believer who turns against the Plan of God for his life. See @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.
- (c) **People/Social Rejection.** Other humans reject the Believer.
- (d) **Gauge.** The Believer's *reaction to rejection by people or society* is a direct gauge of their spiritual growth towards maturity. The **Winner** Believer who faces rejection will “*rejoice*” [Phil. 4:4] and acknowledge God for the “*testings*” [Jas. 1:2-4] he receives. He will not engage in self-pity, revenge, anger, hatred, worry, or go into the Cosmic Systems.

JAMES 1:2-3

Consider it all joy, my brethren, when you encounter various trials [*peirasmos* (testing) – undeserved Divine Suffering for Blessing testing so that the Believer can reach spiritual maturity], knowing that the testing [*dokimion* (to prove)] of your faith [*pistis* – the accumulated Bible Doctrine in the human soul/spirit] produces endurance [*hupomone* (constancy)].

PHILIPPIANS 4:4

Rejoice [*chairo*] in the LORD always; again I will say, rejoice [*realize that God has a detailed plan to get the individual Believer to maturity*]!

- (5) **Death.** All Believers *glorify God in their death*. In His Perfect grace, God picks the exact time of death for each Believer. See @@@ DEATH.
- (6) **Timing.** For each Believer, God has a specific plan and purpose for their life as part of the Angelic Conflict to glorify the Plan of God. Thus, *His timing is always absolutely perfect* while the Believer's timing is not [Eccl. 3:1; 7:17; 1 Pet. 4:2; 5:6-7]. See @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT; @@@ TIME.

1 PETER 5:6-7

Therefore humble yourselves under the mighty hand of God, that He may exalt [*hupsoo* (to promote to the very summit of opulence and prosperity)] you at the proper time [*kairos* (due measure of time) – Faith/Rest to wait on the LORD], casting all your anxiety [*merimna* (worries)] on Him, because He cares for you.

- (a) **Bad Timing.** Living in the Cosmic Systems.
- (b) **Luck.** There is no such thing as “luck” for the Believer. God promotes the Believer in His Perfect timing [Heb. 6:10; 1 Pet. 5:5-7]. The wise Believer keeps the big picture in mind and relies on God [Jas. 4:13-14].

JAMES 4:13-14

Come now, you [**Believer**] who say, “Today or tomorrow we will go to such and such a city, and spend a year there and engage in business and make a profit.” Yet you do not know what your life will be like tomorrow. You are *just* a vapor that appears for a little while [*oligos (almost briefly)*] and then vanishes away [*aphanizo (to snatch out of sight) – given the shortness of life the wise Believer must advance to spiritual maturity with alacrity*].*

* However, this verse does not apply to the **Winner** Believer on positive [+P] volition – he has fantastic “*rewards*” [1 Cor. 3:14] and impact as part of the pivot in the Angelic Conflict.

- (c) **Buy Back.** The key to lining up with God’s timing is found in complying with the command to “*buy*” [Rev. 3:18] the “*time*” [Eph. 5:15-18] back that God has given to you by learning Bible Doctrine. See Isa. 28:10; Heb. 5:12; 2 Tim. 3:7. See @@@ TIME.
- (d) **Wait on the LORD.** The principle of God’s Perfect timing is found with Joseph in prison [Gen. 40:14, 23; 41:1]. Joseph, wrongfully jailed, later seized on a human solution to get free instead of continuing with his Faith/Rest. “*Wait for the LORD; Be strong and let your heart take courage; Yes, wait for the LORD*” [Ps. 27:14]. Thus, he had two extra years added to his term. The **Winner** Believer will *saw the wood in front of him* – do his duty – and wait on the LORD. See Jer. 17:5. See @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES.

JEREMIAH 17:5

Thus says the LORD, “Cursed is the man who trusts [*batach (to have confidence in)*] in mankind [*to solve his problems*] and makes flesh [*human solutions washed in human good*] his strength, and whose heart turns away from the LORD [*negative [-N] volition to God*].”

- (7) **Wealth.** Wealth is necessary for life, but without capacity in the soul to enjoy wealth the Believer is inviting misery into his life. God provides logistical support for all Believers. *See* Ps. 37:25; Phil. 4:9; 2 Pet. 1:3; Prov. 10:22. *See* @@@ MONEY.

PSALM 37:25

I [King David] have been young and now I am old, yet I have not seen the righteous [Believers] forsaken or his descendants begging bread [God provides logistical grace support].

- (8) **Fragmentation of Priorities.**

- (a) **Cosmic Systems.** To avoid fragmentation of the life in terms of proper priorities and goals the Believer must avoid reversionism and stay out of the traps of the Cosmic Systems. *See* @@@ REVERSIONISM.
- (b) **Old Sin Nature.** The Believer *must recognize the structure* of his Old Sin Nature and understand legalism with its trend towards self-righteousness and/or antinomianism with its trend towards licentiousness, i.e., “partying.” In many instances, the legalist “sits in judgment” of the antinomian and the antinomian rejects Bible Doctrine in response when he sees any hypocrisy in the legalist [Jas. 3:14-16]. Both are illogical in their reasoning and wrong. In either case, the issue is not what people may do or not do but learning the truth of the Word of God. *See* @@@ OLD SIN NATURE.

JAMES 3:14-16

But if you [Believer] have bitter jealousy and selfish ambition in your heart, do not be arrogant [*katakauchaomai* (to boast against)] and so lie [*pseudomai* (to speak deliberate falsehoods)] against the truth [Bible Doctrine]. This wisdom [*sophia* – thinking in terms of human viewpoint] is not that which comes down from above, but is earthly [*epigeios* (existing upon the earth)], natural [*psuchikos* (soulish) – the Believer is thinking like an unBeliever in the Cosmic Systems], demonic [*daimoniodes*]. For where jealousy and selfish ambition exist, there is disorder [*akatastasia* (confusion; instability)] and every evil [*phaulos* (wicked)] thing.

@@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES

Definition. The provision by God to the Believer of a number of specific Bible Doctrines designed to overcome any of the various testings, problems, and adversities that are encountered in life and to spur the positive [+P] Believer on to “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1]. The ten problem solving devices:

- (1) **One: Rebound.** Rebound is an essential problem solving device as it immediately *puts the Believer in a Fellowship status with God the Holy Spirit* [see *supra* (2)] in God’s Divine Dynaspere and out of the control of the Old Sin Nature and Satan’s Cosmic Systems. . See @@@ REBOUND.
- (2) **Two: Filling of the Holy Spirit.** The Filling of the Holy Spirit is *the key power source*, enabling the Believer to learn Doctrine – “*the power of God*” [2 Tim. 1:8] – and reach maturity. See @@@ DIVINE DYNASPERE.
- (3) **Three: Faith/Rest Technique.** The Faith/Rest solution sees the Believer *claim a promise* of Scripture and then “*rest*” [Matt. 11:28] or relax, believing the promise as solid fact [1 Pet. 5:7]. For example, if he is wronged the Believer should “*pray for those who mistreat you*” [Lk. 6:28] and put the matter in the LORD’s hands. “*Cast your burden upon the LORD and He will sustain you; He will never allow the righteous to be shaken*” [Ps. 55:22]; Deut. 32:35; Rom. 12:19. Wonderfully put, *let it go, learn to grow* is the moto of the mature Believer. See @@@ FAITH.

1 PETER 5:7

Casting all your anxiety on Him [*God*], because He cares for you.

DEUTERONOMY 32:35

Vengeance is Mine, and retribution, in due time their foot will slip; for the day of their calamity is near, and the impending things are hastening upon them.

- (a) **New Testament.** The effects of the Faith/Rest technique are far greater for the Church Age Believer than for the Old Testament Believer due to the power source of the Filling of the Holy Spirit and the availability of the mystery doctrines provided only in the Church Age. See @@@ MYSTERY; @@@ OPERATION Z.

- (b) **Old Testament.** Faith/Rest was the *primary path to spiritual maturity* for all Old Testament Believers. See Ps. 37:4-5; 56:3; Prov. 3:5-6; 28:25; 29:25; Heb. 11:6; 13:5; Lk. 12:22-32; Jer. 17:5. “*Yet those who wait for the LORD will gain new strength; they will mount up with wings like eagles, they will run and not get tired, they will walk and not become weary*” [Isa. 40:31].

HEBREWS 11:6

And without faith [Doctrines with emphasis on Faith/Rest] it is impossible to please Him, for he who comes to God must believe [*pisteuo (to place confidence in)*] that He is and *that* He is a rewarder of those who seek Him.

- (4) **Four: Grace Orientation to Life.** The Believer orients his daily interactions with others – people he knows and people he does not know – through the prism of “*grace*” [Eph. 2:8-9]. Employing a *relaxed mental attitude* he forgives others when wronged, “*just as God in Christ also has forgiven you*” [Eph. 4:32]; Matt. 18:21-35. In other words, having now “*realized*” [Eccl. 7:20-22] all that God has done for him he knows that in every circumstance *you are to treat others as God treats you!* “*Do nothing from selfishness or empty conceit, but with humility of mind regard one another as more important than yourselves; do not merely look out for your own personal interests, but also for the interests of others. Have this attitude in yourselves which was also in Christ Jesus*” [Phil. 2:3-5]. See @@@ GRACE.

ECCLESIASTES 7:20-22

Indeed, there is not a righteous man on earth who *continually* does [Divine] good and who never sins. Also, do not take seriously all words which are spoken, so that you will not hear your servant cursing [*qalal (to make despicable)*] you [the grace oriented Believer will disregard their loose talk]. For you also have realized that you likewise have many times cursed others.

- (5) **Five: Hope.** Having *absolute confidence* in the Plan of God.
- (a) **Meaning of Hope.** The Greek word *elpis* means (absolute confidence) but is often translated into the English as “*hope*.” The parallel Hebrew words are *batach* and *mibtach* – both words also mean absolute confidence. See Ps. 71:5; Jer. 17:7; Lam. 3:21-24; Job 4:6.

JEREMIAH 17:7

Blessed is the man who trusts [*batach* (to trust in with confidence)] in the LORD and whose trust is the LORD.

- (b) **Confidence in Thinking is Based on Information.** The Believer's knowledge of Bible Doctrine equates directly to progressive levels of stronger based Hope [absolute confidence] solutions. "*For whatever was written in earlier times was written for our instruction, so that through perseverance and the encouragement of Scriptures we might have hope*" [Rom. 15:4, 13]. "*The steadfast of mind You will keep in perfect peace, Because he trusts in You*" [Isa. 26:3]; 1 Pet. 3:15; Heb. 11:1; 12:1; 1 Thess. 4:13; 2 Cor. 19:15; 1 Cor. 13:13.

1 PETER 3:15

But sanctify Christ as LORD in your hearts, always *being* ready to make a defense [*apologia* (verbal defense)] to everyone who asks you to give an account for the hope [*elpis* (confident expectation) – the particular Bible Doctrine resident in the Believer's soul/spirit] that is in you, yet with gentleness [*prautes* (mildness of disposition)] and reverence.

- (c) **Advance in Hope.** Divine Suffering for Blessing "*testing*" [Jas. 1:2-4] advances the levels of Hope in the Believer. See Rom. 5:3-5; 12:12.

ROMANS 5:3-5

And not only this, but we [Paul and his team] also exult in our tribulations [*thlipsis* (pressure) – Divine Suffering for Blessing], knowing that tribulation [*testing*] brings about perseverance [*hupomone* (enduring patience)]; and perseverance, proven character; and proven character, hope [*elpis* – reaching maturity and receiving rewards]; and hope does not disappoint, because the love of God has been poured out within our hearts through [*dia* (by means of)] the Holy Spirit [the teaching ministry of the Holy Spirit] who was given to us.

- (d) **Three Stages of Hope.** There are three distinct and progressive stages of Hope. Each stage becomes energized and serves as a powerful problem solving device when the Believer accumulates the necessary amount of Bible Doctrine to activate and utilize them.

1. **Hope I – Salvation.** The point in the level of spiritual growth where the Believer has absolute confidence that he has *eternal security* so that he can “*take hold of the hope set before us*” [Heb. 6:18], knowing that “*in hope we have been saved*” [Rom. 8:24]. See Tit. 1:2; 3:7; Heb. 7:19; 1 Jn. 5:13. See @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY; @@@ SALVATION.

TITUS 1:2

In the hope [*elpis (confidence)*] of eternal [*aionios (without ending)*] life, which God, who cannot lie, promised long ages ago.

1 JOHN 5:13

These things I [*John*] have written to you who believe [*pisteuo – all Believers*] in the name of the Son of God, so that you may know [*heneka (on account of) – Hope I of the problem solving devices*] that you have eternal [*aionios (without ending)*] life [*zoe*].

2. **Hope II – Maturity.** The point where the **Winner** Believer has absolute confidence that he has a significant role to play as a *subject matter expert witness exhibit* in the ongoing Angelic Conflict. Such a Believer is said to be: “*My witness, My faithful one*” [Rev. 2:13] and part of the “*so great a cloud of witnesses*” [Heb. 12:1]; Acts 1:8; Eph. 1:18-19; 2 Cor. 10:15; Col. 1:5-6; Gal. 5:5; Tit. 2:13; Rom. 12:12; Matt. 6:33; Lam. 3:21-24; Acts 23:6; 24:15; 26:6. See *infra* (6). See @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT; @@@ MATURITY.

EPHESIANS 1:18-19

I [*Paul*] pray that the eyes of your heart may be enlightened [*photizo (to give light) – by learning Bible Doctrine*], so that you will know what is the hope [*elpis (confident expectation) – Hope II*] of His calling, what are the riches of the glory of His inheritance [*kleronomia (property received by inheritance) – rewards*] in the saints, and what is the surpassing greatness of His power toward us who believe [*seeing the Plan of God*]. *These are* in accordance with the working of the strength of His might [*ischus (ability) – reaching spiritual maturity as a subject matter expert witness exhibit in the Angelic Conflict*].

3. **Hope III – Rewards.** The point where the **Winner** Believer has absolute confidence that eternal *Escrow Account Blessings* and “*rewards*” [2 Jn. 8] of various levels will be bestowed upon him at the Judgment Seat of Christ [above and beyond his indestructible resurrection body]. This is “*the hope of glory*” [Col. 1:27]; Tit. 2:13; Heb. 6:18-19; 1 Pet. 1:3-4, 13, 21; Acts 23:6; Rom. 5:4; Phil. 1:20-21. See @@@ REWARDS.

1 PETER 1:13

Therefore, prepare your [**the Believer**] minds [*dianoia* (the mind as a faculty of understanding)] for action, keep sober *in spirit*, fix your hope [*elpizo* (confident expectation) – **Hope III of the problem solving devices**] completely on the grace [*charis* – the grace provision of a resurrection body and rewards] to be brought to you at the revelation [*apokalupsis* – the Rapture of the Church followed by the Judgment Seat of Christ] of Jesus Christ.

PHILIPPIANS 1:20

According to my [**Paul**] earnest expectation and hope [*elpis* (confidence) – **Hope III of the problem solving devices**], that I will not be put to shame [*aischunomai* (to dishonor)] in anything, but *that* with all boldness [*parrhesia* (freedom of speaking)], Christ will even now, as always, be exalted [*megaluno* (to make great)] in my body, whether by life or by death [**Paul will receive his eternal rewards at the Judgment Seat of Christ**].

- (6) **Six: Personal Sense of Destiny.** The **Winner** Believer understands that he is in fact a key participant in the Angelic Conflict and that *every circumstance in his life has a purpose* so that “*the peace of God, which surpasses all comprehension will guard your hearts and minds in Christ Jesus*” [Phil. 4:7]. This *weltanschauung* dominates the Believer’s life and guides him along. See Rom. 9:23; Eph. 1:18; 3:8; 3:16; 6:10-17; Col. 2:2; Phil. 4:19.

ROMANS 9:23

And *He did so* to make known the riches of His [**God**] glory upon vessels of mercy [*eleos* – **grace in action to the Believer**], which He prepared beforehand [*proetoimazo*] for glory [*doxa* – God is glorified when the Believer reaches spiritual maturity in the Angelic Conflict and receives his rewards].

- (7) **Seven: Personal Love for God.** Absolute personal *philos* love for God insulates the **Winner** Believer from arrogance. Love for God *concentrates on the character and essence of the Giver* [God] and is a direct result of reaching spiritual maturity. “*We love, because He first loved us*” [1 Jn. 4:16-21]; “*Blessed is the man who trusts in the LORD*” [Jer. 17:6-8]; Isa. 12:2.

ISAIAH 12:2

“Behold, God is my salvation [*yeshuah* (to deliver) – delivering the Believer into the Kingdom of Heaven], I will trust [*batach*] and not be afraid [*pachad*]; for the LORD God is my strength and song, and He has become my salvation [*yeshuah* (to deliver) – delivering the Believer from problems and testings in order to reach spiritual maturity].”

- (8) **Eight: Impersonal Love For All.** The technical use of *agape impersonal love* is one of the supreme problem solving device for interacting in the Devil’s world. The Believer treats others on *the basis of grace*, never on what they deserve. See 1 Cor. 13:13; 1 Jn. 4:20; 1 Pet. 4:8. See @@@ GRACE.

I [the subject] **love** [transitive verb, *agapao*] you [the object].

– Impersonal Love –

1 CORINTHIANS 13:13

But now faith [*pistis* – Faith/Rest], hope [*elpis* (confident expectation)], love [*agape* – impersonal love], abide [*meno* (remain)] these three [of the problem solving devices]; but the greatest of these is love [*agape* – impersonal love is the greatest of the three].

1 PETER 4:8

Above all, keep fervent [*ektenes* (intent)] in your love [*agape* – impersonal love] for one another, because love [*agape* – impersonal love is the most powerful tool] covers [*kalupto*] a multitude of sins.

1 JOHN 4:20

If someone [a Believer] says, “I love [agapao (to love dearly)] God,” and hates his brother [this Believer fails to use agape impersonal love towards his fellow Believer], he is a liar; for the one who does not love [agapao – maintains an agape impersonal love] his brother whom he has seen, cannot love [agapao (to love dearly)] God whom he has not seen [only the mature Believer can perform both categories of love – personal and impersonal].

- (9) **Nine: Sharing the Happiness of God.** Sharing the actual happiness of God as a *mental attitude* is activated for the **Winner** Believer at spiritual maturity, “the fruit of the [Holy] Spirit ... joy” [Gal. 5:22]. See @@@ HAPPINESS.
- (10) **Ten: Occupation with Christ.** Holding a constant *mindset on Jesus Christ* – “fixing our eyes on Jesus, the author and perfecter of faith” [Heb. 12:2].
 - (a) **In Thinking.** This is a command and a motivator allowing the Believer to observe the things in this life from the Divine viewpoint. He does this by *understanding the decision making process* that Jesus used to solve His tests and trials. “Have this attitude in yourselves which was also in Christ Jesus” [Phi. 2:1-6]. The Believer adopts this mindset and thinks the very thoughts of God! See Heb. 12:2-3; 1 Pet. 3:15; 2 Cor. 5:14-17.
 - (b) **Christ Centered.** Learning Bible Doctrine = Occupation with Christ. The Believer cannot “love” [Jn. 14:15] Jesus Christ without knowing the full realm of Bible Doctrine which reveals Him [Rom. 8:6; Col. 3:16; Jn. 17:3; 1 Pet. 1:7-8; 1 Cor. 2:16].

1 CORINTHIANS 2:16

For who has known the mind of the LORD [the thinking of Jesus Christ is Bible Doctrine], that he [any given person] will instruct Him [God]? But we [Paul and his seminary] have [echo (to have and to hold)] the mind of Christ [these Pastor/Teachers knew Bible Doctrine and were ready to teach it].

- (c) **Teaching Tool.** An R. B. Thieme, Jr., “development stages” teaching tool sets out the Believer’s increasing *occupation with Christ* in his thinking at progressive levels of his growth to maturity.

1. **Spiritual Self Esteem** [SSE] at Gal. 4:19 results in 2 Cor. 5:14. The “*love of Christ*” motivating and encouraging the Believer to continue forward in his Christian Way of Life.
2. **Spiritual Autonomy** [SA] at Eph. 3:17 results in 1 Pet. 3:15. The Believer can now “*sanctify Christ as LORD*” in his heart.
3. **Spiritual Maturity** [SM] at Phil. 1:20 results in Phil. 1:21. For the mature Believer, “*to live is Christ and to die is gain.*”
4. **Super Spiritual Maturity** [SSM] at 2 Tim. 4:7-8.

2 TIMOTHY 4:7-8

I [Paul] have fought [*agonizomai* (to enter a contest in the games)] the good [*kalos* (beautiful to look at)] fight [*agon* (the place of contest) – in the Angelic Conflict], I have finished the course [*dromos* (the course of life) – Paul had reached the high ground of spiritual maturity], I have kept [*tereo* (to attend to carefully)] the faith [*pistis* – Bible Doctrine]; in the future there is laid up for me the crown [*stephanos* (a wreath of garland given as a prize to victors in public games)] of righteousness [*dikaiosune*], which the LORD, the righteous Judge, will award to me on that day [Paul’s rewards at the Judgment Seat of Christ]; and not only to me, but also to all who have loved [*agapao* (to love dearly)] His appearing [all Believers who reach spiritual maturity].

- (d) **Laser Beam.** At undeserved Divine Suffering for Blessing the **Winner** Believer centers his life around Christ and not around himself. He equates living with dying [Phil. 1:21]. Because his number one priority of Bible Doctrine demands his maximum concentration on Jesus [Matt. 6:33; Ps. 119:105, 127-128; 2 Tim. 2:1], he will organize his life around that priority [Ps. 119:15-16] which results in his consistent occupation with Jesus Christ [Ps. 119:33-40]. In any situation the question is: *What would Jesus do in terms of the decision making process?*

PHILIPPIANS 1:21

For to me [Paul], to live [*zao* – in this physical body on the earth] is Christ and to die [*apothnesko* (natural death of a man) – Physical Death] is gain [*kerdos* (advantage) – rewards Paul receives along with his resurrection body].

- (11) **Humanity of Christ.** Jesus used the problem solving devices during His incarnation. The Scripture lists three used by Christ on the cross.
- (a) **Faith/Rest** – “*He uttered no threats, but kept entrusting Himself to Him who judges righteously*” [1 Pet. 2:23].
 - (b) **Filling of the Holy Spirit** – “*through the eternal Spirit offered Himself without blemish to God*” [Heb. 9:12-16].
 - (c) **Sharing the Happiness of God** – “*who for the joy set before Him endured the cross*” [Heb. 12:2].
- (12) **A Study in Failure.** The failure of the disciples to use problem solving devices during a storm on the Sea of Galilee, as Jesus slept [Matt. 8:18-27].
- (a) After Jesus Christ had performed many miracles the “disciples” [more than just the 12] were greatly impressed with His unprecedented supernatural acts, but not with His Bible Doctrine teaching.
 - (b) Some disciples got in the boat on the Sea of Galilee to follow Him, others did not.
 - (c) When the “testing” of the raging storm came on the Sea of Galilee, there was no leader in the boat to remind them of the pertinent problem solving devices and no relaxed mental attitude in the group. Instead of enjoying the fantastic spectacle of nature all eyes were fixed on the problem of drowning and not the solution – Jesus of Nazareth is God! Tragically, no one on the boat could think under the pressure because of emotional fear and all flunked the opportunity to apply Faith/Rest to the test and thereby grow towards spiritual maturity.
 - (d) Jesus literally shouted at them – “*you men of little faith*” [Matt. 8:26], because they had failed to apply any of the problem solving devices.

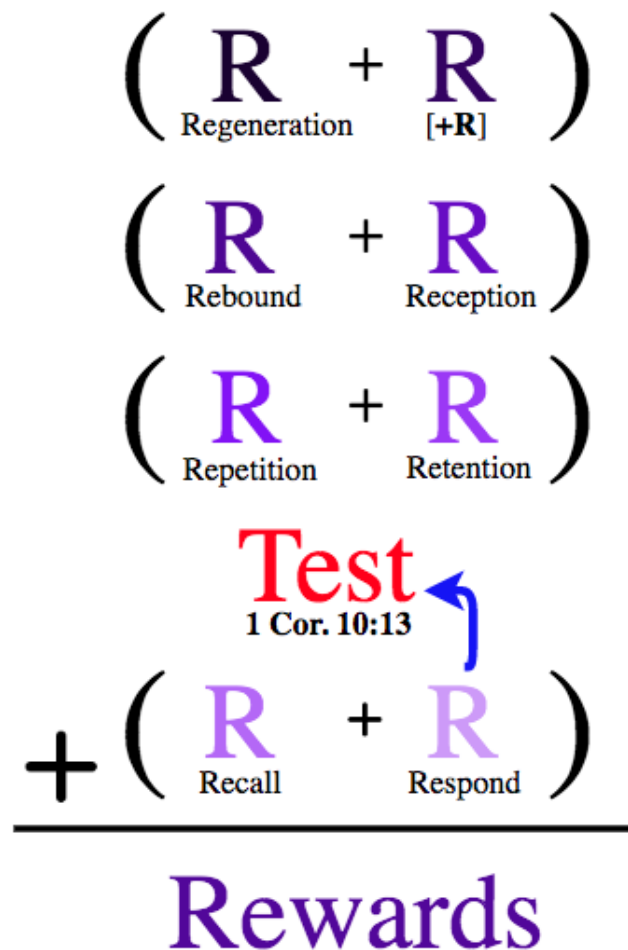
MATTHEW 8:26

Why are you afraid, you men [*anthropos* – Jesus does not call them His disciples for they were acting like unBelievers] of little faith [*pistis* – no Bible Doctrine and no Faith/Rest]?

- (13) **Testing.** When testing by means of *Divine Suffering for Blessing* comes to the positive [+P] volition Believer, he must apply the problem solving devices to pass the test(s) and advance forward in his spiritual life, “*knowing that the testing of your faith produces endurance*” [Jas. 1:2-3]; 1 Cor. 10:13.

1 CORINTHIANS 10:13

No temptation has overtaken you [Believer] but such as is common to man; and God is faithful, who will not allow you to be tempted [*peirazo* (tested; a trial)] beyond what you are able, but with the temptation [*peirasmós* (a putting to proof by trial)] will provide the way of escape also [the use of the problem solving devices], so that you will be able to endure it [*hupophero* (to bear patiently) – pass the test, grow in spiritual maturity, and receive rewards].



– The Eight R’s of the Christian Way of Life –

@@@ RAPTURE & SECOND ADVENT

– THE RAPTURE –

- (1) **Definition.** The “*Rapture*” is a technical theological designation to describe the *future removal* by God the Father of all Church Age Believers then living on the earth and their immediate joining with the deceased Church Age Believers [starting from Pentecost until that given time] to then all receive “*resurrection*” [Phil. 3:11] bodies and “*meet the LORD in the air*” [the upper atmosphere] as part of Operation Footstool [1 Thess. 4:13-18]. This event *precedes the immediate start of the seven-year Tribulation*. The term *raptum* is a Latin word and means to (seize; snatch; to be carried away). The exact Greek equivalent to *raptum* is *harpazo* (to snatch out or away) as used in 1 Thess. 4:17. Biblical scholars chose to name the doctrine of the Rapture after the Latin *raptum* instead of its Greek designation *harpazo*.

1 THESSALONIANS 4:13-17

But we [Paul and his traveling seminary team] do not want you [Believers] to be uninformed [*agnoeo* (to be ignorant)], brethren, about those who are asleep [*koimao* – Church Age Believers that have died], so that you will not grieve [*lupeo*] as do the rest who have no hope [*elpis* (confident expectation) – unBelievers]. For if we believe that Jesus died [*apothnesko* (to be subject to eternal misery in hell)] and rose [*anistemi* (to rise up) – resurrection] again, even so God will bring with Him those who have fallen asleep in Jesus [the dead Church Age Believers in their resurrection bodies]. For this we say to you by the word of the LORD, that we who are alive and remain [living Church Age Believers] until the coming [*parousia* (arrival; advent)] of the LORD [at the Rapture of the Church], will not precede those who have fallen asleep. For the LORD [Christ] Himself will descend [*katabaino* (to go down)] from heaven with a shout [*keleuma* (an order)], with the voice of the archangel [*archaggelos* (a chief angel)] and with the trumpet of God, and the dead [*nekros* (physical death)] in Christ will rise [*anistemi* – in a resurrection body] first. Then we who are alive [*zao*] and remain will be caught up [*harpaxo* (to snatch out or away) – in resurrection bodies] together with them [dead Church Age Believers] in the clouds [*nephele* (a cloud)] to meet [*apantesis*] the LORD [Jesus Christ] in the air [*aer* (the atmospheric region) – place of the Rapture], and so we shall always [*pantote* (at all times; forever)] be with the LORD [in Heaven].

- (2) **Body of Christ.** The entire “*body*” [Eph. 1:22-23] of Christ which consists of *all Church Age Believers* is being formed now during the Church Age. See Eph. 2:16; 4:4-5; 5:23; Col. 1:18, 24; 2:19. There is no eschatological sign or prophecy as to when the Church Age will be terminated. All unfulfilled Biblical prophecies refer only to the Tribulation, Millennium, or Eternity.

EPHESIANS 1:22-23

And He [God the Father] put all things in subjection [*hupotasso* – authority] under His [Jesus Christ] feet, and gave Him as head over all things to the church, which is His body [*soma*], the fullness of Him who fills all in all.

- (3) **Body to Bride.** When the Body of Christ is completely filled as to the *predetermined number of Believers* in the Plan of God, it becomes the “*bride*” [Rev. 21:1] of Christ at the Rapture [Rev. 19:7-8; Phil. 3:20-21; 1 Cor. 3:20-21; 15:51-57; 1 Jn. 3:1-2; 1 Thess. 4:13-18; Col. 3:3-4]. The LORD Jesus Christ promises that each of the living and dead Believers in the Church Age will meet Him in the air in a resurrection body [Jn. 14:1-3; Acts 1:11].

1 CORINTHIANS 15:51-54

Behold, I [Paul] tell you a mystery; we [all Church Age Believers] will not all sleep [*koimao* – the Physical Death of the Believer is referred to as being asleep], but we will all be changed [*allasso* (to exchange one thing for another)], in a moment [*atomos* (a moment of time)], in the twinkling [*rhipe*] of an eye, at the last trumpet [*salpigx* – this trumpet closes out the Church Age at the Rapture]; for the trumpet will sound, and the dead [*nekros* (physical death) – Church Age Believers who have physically died] will be raised [*egeiro*] imperishable [*aphthartos* (immortal) – they will get resurrection bodies], and we [Believers that are then living at the time of the Rapture] will be changed [*allasso* – all living Believers will exchange their mortal bodies for resurrection bodies]. For this perishable [*phthartos* – the human body] must put on the imperishable [*aphthartos* – the immortal resurrection body], and this mortal [*thnetos* (liable to death)] must put on [*enduo* (to put on clothes)] immortality [*athanasia* (everlasting immortality)]. But when this perishable will have put on the imperishable, and this mortal will have put on immortality, then [at the Rapture] will come about the saying that is written, “Death [*thanatos* (with the implied idea of future misery in hell)] is swallowed up [*katapino* (to drink down)] in victory [*nikos* (to utterly vanquish)].”

JOHN 14:1-3

Do not let your heart be troubled; believe in God, believe also in Me [**Jesus Christ**]. In My Father's house [*oikia* (an inhabited dwelling)] are many dwelling places; if it were not so, I would have told you; for I go to prepare [*hetoimazo* (to make ready)] a place for you. If [**First Class Condition – and I do**] I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you to Myself [**at the Rapture**], that where I am, *there* you may be also [**eternal security in Heaven**].

PHILIPPIANS 3:20-21

For our [**the Believer**] citizenship [*politeuma* (the commonwealth of citizens)] is in heaven, from which also we eagerly wait [**the Rapture**] for a Savior [*soter* (deliverer)], the LORD Jesus Christ; who will transform [*metaschematizo* (to change the figure of)] the body of our humble state [*tapeinosis* (low estate) – **mortal human body**] into conformity [*summorphos* (having the same form as another)] with the body of His glory [*doxa* – **Church Age Believers will get a resurrection body like Jesus Christ's**], by the exertion [*energeia* (working efficiency)] of the power [*dunamai* (to have inherent power)] that He has even to subject all things to Himself.

- (4) **Eminency of the Rapture.** Given that there is no Biblical prophecy that must be fulfilled prior to the Rapture, it is *eminent* which means that the Rapture *can occur at any time in the Church Age*. For instance, both Paul and Peter expected that it could occur in their day. Again, the “end times” signs and prophecies in the Bible are post-Rapture, most of them restricted to the 2nd Advent of the LORD Jesus Christ. “*However, when the Son of Man comes, will He find faith on the earth?*” [Lk. 18:8]. See Matt. 24-25; Phil. 2:9-11; 3:11; 1 Tim. 6:14-15; 2 Tim. 2:17-18. See @@@ **DISPENSATIONS**.

2 TIMOTHY 2:17-18

And their [**false teachers**] talk will spread like gangrene. Among them are Hymenaeus and Philetus, *men* who have gone astray from the truth [*aletheia* – **the two false teachers were in reversionism**] saying that the resurrection [*anastasis* (rising from the dead) – **falsely claimed that the Rapture had already happened**] has already taken place, and they upset [*anatrepo* (to overturn)] the faith [*pistis* – **the body of correct Bible Doctrine**] of some.

1 TIMOTHY 6:14-15

That you keep the commandment without stain or reproach until the appearing of our LORD Jesus Christ, which He [**God**] will bring about [*deiknuo* (to show, expose to the eyes)] at the proper time [*kairos* (a fixed and definite time) – the Rapture of the Church].

- (5) **Provides Stability.** Knowing and applying the doctrine of the Rapture gives stability in thinking and an *added confidence of comfort* at the Physical Death of loved ones that are Believers [1 Thess. 4:13-15, 18; 1 Cor. 15:58]. Hope III is another technical designation of the Rapture [1 Pet. 1:3, 13; Tit. 2:13; 1 Jn. 3:3]. See @@@ **PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES**.

1 PETER 1:13

Therefore, prepare your [**Believer**] minds [*dianoia* (the mind as a faculty of understanding)] for action, keep sober *in spirit*, fix your hope [*elpizo* (confident expectation) – Hope III of the problem solving devices] completely on the grace [*charis* – the grace provision of a resurrection body and rewards] to be brought to you at the revelation [*apokalupsis* – the Rapture followed by the Judgment Seat of Christ] of Jesus Christ.

- (6) **Resurrection of Christ.** Absolute confidence in the Rapture and the Believer receiving his *resurrection body* is based on the “*resurrection*” of Jesus Christ [1 Thess. 4:14, 18; 1 Cor. 15:20-23]. See @@@ **RESURECTION**.

1 CORINTHIANS 15:20-22

But now Christ has been raised [*egeiro* (to cause to rise)] from the dead [*nekros* (physical death) – in a resurrection body], the first fruits [*aparche*] of those who are asleep [*koimao* – all Church Age Believers who have already died will also get a resurrection body]. For since by a man [**Adam**] *came* death [*thanatos* (death with the implied idea of future misery in hell) – Spiritual Death], by a man [**Jesus of Nazareth the Christ**] also *came* resurrection [*anastasis* (rising up)] of the dead [*nekros*]. For as in Adam all die [*apothnesko* (of eternal death; to be subject to eternal misery in hell) – Spiritual Death], so also in Christ all [the opportunity for salvation per the doctrine of unlimited atonement is open to all humans] will be made alive [*zoopoieo* (to produce alive)].

- (7) **Interim Period.** After the Rapture of the Church, the “*bride*” [Rev. 19:7-8; 22:12] of Christ is *prepared in Heaven* for the forthcoming 2nd Advent of Jesus Christ, and the subsequent “*marriage of the Lamb*” of God. Thus, to purify the bride for the “wedding” ceremony all Church Age Believers are evaluated at the Judgment Seat of Christ and all their human good is destroyed so that they are presented as a spotless bride. See @@@ JUDGMENT.

REVELATION 19:7-8

Let us rejoice and be glad and give the glory to Him [God], for [*hoti (because)*] the marriage of the Lamb [*arnion – Jesus Christ*] has come and His bride [Church Age Believers] has made herself ready [*hetoimazo (to make the necessary preparations) – at the Judgment Seat of Christ*]. It was given to her to clothe herself in fine linen, bright and clean; for the fine linen is the righteous acts of the saints [*hagios – all Believers have some “white” rewards as they all have the Righteousness [+R] of God, see Matt. 17:2*].

REVELATION 22:12

Behold, I [Jesus Christ] am coming quickly [Rapture of the Church], and My reward [*misthos (dues paid for work) – Jesus Christ will bestow rewards at the Judgment Seat of Christ*] is with Me [Jesus Christ is the Escrow Account Officer], to render [*apodidomi (to deliver)*] to every man [the Believer] according [*kata (according to a norm or standard)*] to what he has done [from the moment of salvation to the Physical Death of the Believer].

- (8) **Coronation of the Groom.** Coronation of the groom, the LORD Jesus Christ, occurs in Heaven prior to the 2nd Advent [Phil. 2:9-11; Rev. 19:6].

PHILIPPIANS 2:9-11

For this reason also, God highly exalted Him [Jesus Christ], and bestowed on Him the name [*onoma (a rank)*] which is above every name, so that at the name of Jesus every knee will bow, of those who are in heaven [*epouranios – Church Age Believers who physically died and went to Heaven*] and on earth [*epigeios – the Believers taken off the earth at the Rapture of the Church*] and under the earth [*katachthonios (those that exist in the world below) – Old Testament Believers who were once in Paradise*], and that every tongue will confess that Jesus Christ is LORD, to the glory of God the Father.

– THE SECOND ADVENT –

- (1) **Definition.** The entire bride, consisting of Church Believers, *returns with the LORD* Jesus Christ to the earth at the 2nd Advent [1 Thess. 3:13; 2 Thess. 2:1-2; Col. 3:4], along with His angels. Unlike the Rapture, which occurred in the atmosphere, Jesus' foot touches the same spot where He left at His ascension – the Mount of Olives. *“Men of Galilee, why do you stand looking into the sky? This Jesus, who has been taken up from you into heaven, will come in just the same way as you have watched Him go into heaven”* [Acts 1:11]. *“In that day His feet will stand on the Mount of Olives, which is in front of Jerusalem on the east; and the Mount of Olives will be split in its middle from east to west by a very large valley, so that half of the mountain will move toward the north and the other half toward the south”* [Zech. 14:4].

1 THESSALONIANS 3:13

So that He [Holy Spirit] may establish your hearts without blame in holiness before our God and Father at the coming of our LORD Jesus with all His saints [Believers in resurrection bodies accompanying the LORD at the 2nd Advent].

- (2) **Earth Cleansed at 2nd Advent.** The Devil and his demons are “*disarmed*” [Col. 2:5] and cast into Hell's Abyss for 1,000 years. *“Then I saw an angel coming down from heaven, ... And he laid hold of the dragon, the serpent of old, who is the devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years; and he threw him into the abyss, ... until the thousand years were completed; after these things he must be released for a short time”* [Rev. 20:1-3]. All unBelievers are also killed and taken off the earth [Matt. 24:36-41]. Old Testament prophecies: *“Then the LORD will go forth and fight against those nations, as when He fights on a day of battle”* [Zech. 14:3]. *“This one who is majestic in His apparel, ... I trod down the peoples in My anger And made them drunk in My wrath, And I poured out their lifeblood on the earth”* [Isa. 63:1-6]; Zech. 13:2. New Testament: *“His eyes were like a flame of fire”* [Rev. 1:14-16]. *“And I saw heaven opened and behold, a white horse, and He who sat on it is called Faithful and True, and in righteousness He judges and wages war. His eyes are a flame of fire, and ... He is clothed with a robe dipped in blood, and His name is called The Word of God. And the armies which are in heaven, clothed in fine linen, white and clean, were following Him on white horses. From His mouth comes a sharp sword, so that with it He may strike down the nations”* [Rev. 19:11-15].

- (3) **Wedding Supper of the Lamb.** Following the expulsion of demons and unBelievers from the earth, the Millennium rule of Jesus Christ is kicked off with a glorious “*wedding feast*” [Matt. 25:1-13; Rev. 19:7-9] for the groom, Jesus Christ, and His bride. The Wedding Supper is made up of the following:
- (a) Those Believers who serve as the groom’s “*friends*” [Jn. 3:29] are all the Old Testament Believers and the dead Tribulation Believers. They received their resurrection bodies, evaluation, and rewards just prior to the 2nd Advent [Dan. 12:2; Rev. 20:4].
 - (b) The bride’s friends are the living Tribulational Believers that go into the Millennium at the time of the 2nd Advent [Matt. 25:1-13].
 - (c) The bride consists of all Church Age Believers now in their resurrection bodies, starting at Pentecost in Acts 2, and going all the way to the Rapture. *See* 1 Thess. 4:17; 1 Cor. 15:51-52; Rev. 21:2; 2 Cor. 11:2.

2 CORINTHIANS 11:2

For I [Paul] am jealous for you [Church Age Believers] with a godly jealousy; for I betrothed [*harmozo (to give in marriage) – Paul gave them the Gospel*] you to one husband [Jesus Christ], so that to Christ I might present you *as a pure virgin* [*all human good is destroyed at the Judgment Seat of Christ*].

*RAPTURE	SECOND ADVENT
1. A Private Affair [Acts 1:11]	1. A Public Affair [Rev. 1:7]
2. In the Air [1 Thess. 4:17]	2. On the Earth [Zech. 14:4]
3. Church Goes to Heaven [Jn. 14:3]	3. Christ Returns to Earth [1 Thess. 3:13]
4. Removal of Holy Spirit [2 Thess. 2:6]	4. Removal of Satan to the Abyss [Rev. 20:1-2]

– Rapture vs. 2nd Advent –

* (1) At the Rapture, Jesus Christ picks up the bride, all Church Age Believers in resurrection bodies, in the atmosphere of the earth and takes her to Heaven. (2) Once in Heaven, the bride is prepared for the Wedding Supper by the complete cleansing of human good works and the bestowing [for some] of eternal rewards. (3) Jesus Christ then returns with His angels and all Believers to the earth at the 2nd Advent to cleanse the earth of all unBelievers and demons for the subsequent Wedding Supper. [Old Testament and Tribulation Believers that died receive their resurrection bodies and rewards just prior to the 2nd Advent per Rev. 19:14; 20:4]. Gentiles are separated out per Matt. 25:31-46 and Jews are separated out per Ezk. 20:32-38. See Rev. 19:6-9; Matt. 13:24-30 [wheat represents the Believers going into the Millennium], 47-50; 25:1-13. (4) Then begins the Millennium rule of Christ for 1,000 years. (5) Only living mortal Believers from the Tribulation period enter the Millennium and only decorated **Winner** Believers will “*reign with Him*” [2 Tim. 2:12], i.e., participate in ruling humans on the earth for the 1,000 years under the LORD Jesus Christ. See 1 Cor. 4:8; Rev. 3:21; 20:4-6; Rom. 5:17; 1 Thess. 3:13; Jude 1:14.

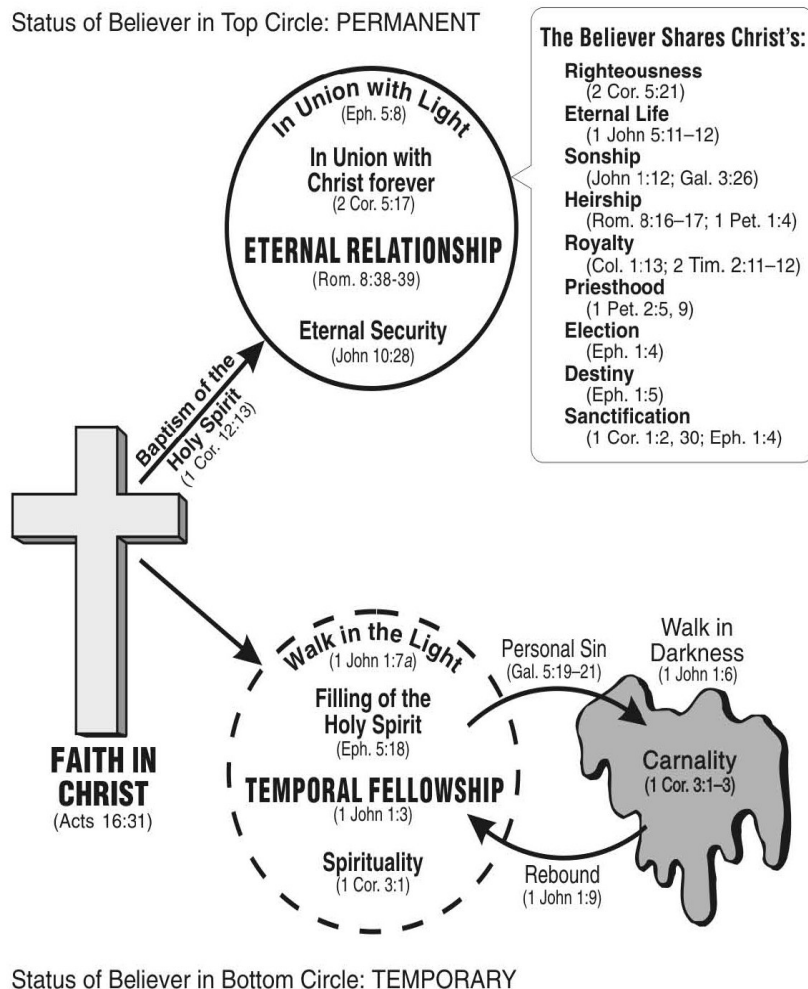
REVELATION 19:6-9

Then I [John] heard *something* like the voice of a great multitude [*ochlos* (a multitude of people) – Church Age Believers] and like the sound of many waters [Old Testament and Tribulation Believers, the Groom’s friends see Jn. 3:29] and like the sound of mighty peals of thunder [living Tribulation Believers, the Bride’s friends], saying, “Hallelujah! For the LORD our God, the Almighty, reigns [*basileuo* (to be king and to exercise kingly power)]. Let us rejoice and be glad and give the glory [*doxa*] to Him, for [*hoti* (because)] the marriage of the Lamb [*arnion* – Jesus Christ] has come and His bride has made [*hetoimazo* (to make the necessary preparations) – at the Judgment Seat of Christ] herself ready.” It was given to her to clothe [*periballo* (fully dressed)] herself in fine linen [*bussinos* (fine white linen) – this is the best cloth available and refers to the resurrection body], bright and clean [*katharos* (unsoiled) – no human good is ever allowed]; for the fine linen is the righteous [*dikaion* (justification)] acts of the saints [all Believers have some “white” rewards as they have the Righteousness [+R] of God, see Matt. 17:2]. Then he [the angel] said to me, “Write, ‘Blessed [*makarios* (happiness)] are those who are invited to the marriage supper of the Lamb [the friends of the Groom and Bride].’” And he said to me, “These are the true words of God.”

@@@ REBOUND

- (1) **Definition.** The term “*Rebound*” is a technical theological term coined by R. B. Thieme, Jr., to describe the grace mechanism which enables the Church Age Believer to be placed in a state of Temporal Fellowship [*absolute spirituality*] with God the Holy Spirit in time. Better known as being “*filled with the [Holy] Spirit*” [Eph. 5:18], it is part of the Church Age mystery.

TOP AND BOTTOM CIRCLES



- (2) **Ongoing Christian Sin.** Every Christian is a sinner with an Old Sin Nature and commits personal “*sin*” [1 Jn. 1:7-10] *throughout his life*, before and after salvation. See 1 Jn. 2:1; Jer. 7:20; Eccl. 7:20; Rom. 3:23; Ps. 39:5; 119:29. As a practical matter the Believer will sin often, for “*there is no man who does not sin*” [1 Kngs. 8:46]. Furthermore, when he commits a sin, the Believer is automatically sucked into carnality, “*fleshly*” [1 Cor. 3:1-3], and into Satan’s Cosmic Systems where he remains until he employs the Rebound technique to exit and return to spirituality – “*as to spiritual men.*”

ECCLESIASTES 7:20

Indeed, there is not a righteous [*tsaddiyq* – human works of righteousness [-r]] man on earth who *continually* does [*Divine*] good and who never sins.

1 JOHN 1:8

If we [*Church Age Believers*] say that we have no sin [*hamartia* – the Old Sin Nature], we are deceiving ourselves and the truth [*aletheia* – Bible Doctrine] is not in us.

1 JOHN 1:10

If we [*Church Age Believers*] say that we have not sinned [*hamartano* – Believers still commit personal sins], we make Him a liar and His word [*logos* – Bible Doctrine] is not in us.

ROMANS 3:23

For all [*mankind*] have sinned [*hamartano* – personal sin and the Old Sin Nature] and fall short [*hustereo* (to be left behind in the race) – human works of righteousness [-r]] of the glory [*doxa* – the absolutely pure Divine essence of the Holy Trinity to include His Perfect Righteousness [+R]] of God.

- (3) **Against God Only.** Other people may be involved in the sins that a Believer commits, but all sin, in all categories, is *against Holy God*. “*Behold, you have sinned against the LORD, and be sure your sin will find you out*” [Num. 32:23]. “*Your word I have treasured in my heart, that I may not sin against You*” [Ps. 119:11]. “*I will bear the indignation of the LORD Because I have sinned against Him*” [Mic. 7:9]. “*Father, I have sinned against heaven and in your sight*” [Lk. 15:21]. See 2 Sam. 12:13; Acts 5:4; Ps. 51:4.

PSALM 51:4

Against You [**God**], You only, I [**David**] have sinned [*chata*] and done what is evil [*ra*] in Your sight, so that You are justified [*tsadaq (to be righteous)*] when You speak and blameless when You judge.

2 SAMUEL 12:13

Then David said to Nathan [**the Prophet**], “I have sinned [*chata*] against the LORD.” And Nathan said to David, “The LORD also has taken away [*abar (to pass over)*] your sin; you shall not die [*muth – the sin unto death*].”

ACTS 5:4

While it remained *unsold*, did it not remain your own? And after it was sold, was it not under your control? Why is it that you [**Ananias lied**] have conceived this deed in your heart? You have not lied to men but to God.

- (4) **Mechanics of Rebound.** Rebound is the solution to the Believer’s sin. When any Believer commits a sin – known or unknown – he is placed out of Fellowship with the Holy Spirit [*see supra* (1), the bottom circle]. If the Believer *confesses*, *homologeo* (to declare oneself guilty; to name or cite as in a court case), to God the Father a *known* sin then God immediately puts him back into Fellowship and the Believer is then once again “*filled with the [Holy] Spirit*” [Eph. 5:18]; 1 Jn. 1:9; 1 Cor. 11:31; Heb. 12:1, 12; Eph. 5:14; Prov. 1:23; 28:13; Ps. 51:3-4. The same mechanics operated for Old Testament Believers for a fellowship relationship with God, although there was no Filling of the Spirit: “*I acknowledged my sin to You, and my iniquity I did not hide; I said, ‘I will confess my transgressions to the LORD’; and You forgave the guilt of my sin. Selah*” [Ps. 32:5]. See (14).

1 JOHN 1:9

If [**Third Class Condition – maybe the Believer will or maybe he won’t**] we [**Believers**] confess [*homologeo* (to declare oneself guilty; to name or cite as in a court case)] our sins [*hamartia – the known sin*], He [**God the Father**] is faithful [*pistos – God does the same thing every time*] and righteous [*dikaios – on the basis of the Believer having the Righteousness [+R] of God*] to forgive us our sins and to cleanse [*katharizo*] us from all unrighteousness [*adikia – unknown sin as well as decontamination from human good*].

- (5) **Confess the Sin.** The Greek word for “*confess*” [1 Jn. 1:9] is *homologeō* (to declare oneself guilty; to name or cite as in a court case). It does not mean to feel sorry. In addition, the Believer *does not ask God to forgive* the sin as Jesus Christ has already died on the cross for that sin. Confess means to dispassionately cite the sin directly to God, as every Believer is a member of the royal “*priesthood*” [1 Pet. 2:5] and represents himself to God. The issue for the *carnal* Believer [in Temporal Death] is getting back into Fellowship with the Holy Spirit. Since the Believer already has the Righteousness [+R] of God, there is no compromise to God’s [+R] to put him back into a Fellowship relationship with the Holy Spirit [2 Cor. 5:21]. Thus, God not only cleans the slate for *known sin(s)*, but also for *unknown sin(s)* and then decontaminates the Believer of the human good accumulated from his time in the Cosmic Systems. Again, there is no human merit or effort in recovering from sin by using the Rebound technique – *it is entirely a grace function!*

2 CORINTHIANS 5:21

He [God the Father] made Him [Jesus Christ] who knew no sin [*hamartia* – Jesus never committed a sin and had no Old Sin Nature] to be sin [*hamartia* – He took the judgment for all sin while on the cross] on our behalf [*huper* (as a substitute for)], so that we might become the righteousness [*dikaioσύνη* – God’s Perfect Righteousness [+R] is imputed to the Believer making him acceptable for salvation] of God in Him.

- (6) **Fellowship is Absolute.** At any given moment in moment, a Believer is either “*carnal*” *sarkikos* (carnal) [1 Cor. 3:1-3, KJV], in the Cosmic Systems of Satan, or “*spiritual*” *pneumatikos* [Jas. 1:13-15; 3:11-12; Rev. 3:16], in the Divine Dynasphere of God, “*filled with the [Holy] Spirit*” [Eph. 5:18]. This status is an *absolute* status; it is either one or the other and not to be confused with the *relative* side of the Believer’s spiritual growth.

JAMES 3:11-12

Does a fountain [*pege* (well; spring)] send out from the same opening *both* fresh [*glukus* (sweet)] and bitter [*pikros*] water? Can a fig tree, my brethren, produce olives, or a vine produce figs? Nor *can* salt water produce fresh.

- (a) **Absolute Spirituality.** The *spiritual Believer* is one in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit, residing inside the Divine Dynasphere [starting at Gate 1]. He can be at any stage of his *relative spiritual* growth.

- (b) **Temporal Death.** The carnal, *sarkikos*, Believer is one out of Fellowship with God the Holy Spirit and thus resides in the evil of the Cosmic Systems. This carnal Believer is in Temporal Death and remains in that status until Rebound. If left unchecked the carnal Believer can move from Temporal Death into Operational Death. Note: the Greek word *prasso* (to operate under) often refers to the unBeliever as in Gal. 5:21, while *poieo* (to do; to produce) refers to the carnal Believer out of Fellowship, see 1 Cor. 3:1-3. See also 1 Jn. 3:4-10.

1 CORINTHIANS 3:3

For you [**Believers in Corinth**] are still fleshly [*sarkikos* (carnal) – the negative [-N] volition carnal Believer under the control of the OSN]. For since there is jealousy and strife [*eris* (wrangling; contention)] among you, are you not fleshly [*sarkikos* (carnal) – following the OSN], and are you not walking [lifestyle] like mere men [*anthropos* (mankind) – imitating unBelievers]?

- (c) **Relative Spirituality.** The *relative* side of Christian *spiritually* always refers to the Believer's level of "*maturity*" [Heb. 6:1] in the Christian Way of Life. Again, distinguish this from *absolute spirituality*, when the Believer is "*filled with the [Holy] Spirit*" [Eph. 5:18].
- (7) **Restores to Fellowship.** The Believer is restored to a Fellowship relationship upon Rebound. See parable of the "Prodigal Son" [Lk. 15:11-32]: After Rebound, the son was entitled to the (1) "*best robe*" – full experiential Righteousness [+R]; (2) entitled to the signet "*ring*" – complete access to God's unlimited Divine Assets; (3) entitled to "*sandals*" – for conducting Christian service [Eph. 6:15]; (4) entitled to the "*fatted calf*" – learning Bible Doctrine; and (5) called a "*son*" by his father – assurance of the permanent status of eternal security. Note: as a consequence of being in reversionism the prodigal son had forgotten the truth of eternal security and erroneously blurted out: "*I am no longer worthy to be called your son,*"
- (8) **No Confession of Human Good.** The Believer is never commanded to confess his deeds of human good when he is in the Cosmic Systems, or his particular lust pattern in his Old Sin Nature [Heb. 6:1]. In fact, all the Believer's human good works during his life – "*wood, hay, straw*" – [1 Cor. 3:12-15], which are accumulated when out of Fellowship with the Holy Spirit, are all destroyed by "*fire*" at the Judgment Seat of Christ [the Old Sin Nature is left behind with the human body at the Physical Death of the Believer].

(9) **Underlining Elements of Rebound.**

- (a) **Unlimited Atonement.** Jesus Christ on the cross died for all human sins – past, present, and future. This is the *minus factor* which deletes the barrier of sin. But salvation requires the *plus factor* of receiving Holy God’s own Righteousness [**+R**] which occurs only at the point of belief in the Gospel [Gen. 15:6; Heb. 5:9; Jas. 2:22-23]. Rebound simply deals with the reality that while all the Believer’s personal sins were judged in Jesus Christ already, the Believer will still commit those sins in his lifetime. So, while the Believer is never in danger of losing his eternal salvation status, when the Believer commits a known or unknown sin he is out of Fellowship with the Holy Spirit.
- (b) **Eternal Security.** Believers are eternally saved at the moment of faith alone in Christ alone. Rebound has nothing to do with salvation. Again, it is entirely a grace mechanism to make the Believer *pneumatikos* “*spiritual*” [1 Cor. 3:1], i.e., Filled with the Holy Spirit.
- (10) **Command to Rebound.** By Rebound the Believer fulfills the Church Age command by God to be in the state of *absolute spirituality* by means of being “*filled with the [Holy] Spirit*” [Eph. 5:15-18] in order to be able to “*worship in spirit and truth*” [Jn. 4:23-24] as commanded. See Col. 3:16.

JOHN 4:23-24

But an hour is coming [**Church Age**], and now is, when the true worshipers will worship the Father in spirit [*pneuma* – **Filled with the Holy Spirit**] and truth [**Bible Doctrine**]; for such people the Father seeks to be His worshipers. God is spirit, and those who worship Him must worship in spirit [**the Filling of the Holy Spirit**] and truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – **learn and apply Bible Doctrine**].

EPHESIANS 5:15-18

Therefore be careful how you walk, not as unwise men but as wise [**use Rebound**], making the most of your time, because the days are evil [*poneros* – **Angelic Conflict**]. So then do not be foolish [*aphron* (without reason)], but understand what the will of the LORD is [**reach maturity**]. And do not get drunk with wine, for that is dissipation [*asotia* (a dissolute life)], but be filled [*pleroo* (to make full)] with the Spirit [**in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit**].

- (11) **No License to Sin.** “*Are we to continue in sin so that grace may increase?*” [Rom. 6:1]. The answer is an absolute no! Rebound is not a license to sin but a license to serve God and is an integral part of the Christian Way of Life [Gal. 5:16; Rom. 8:6-8]. Those who abuse Rebound will not advance in the *relative* side of their *spiritual life* towards “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1]. Furthermore, *infra* (19), Rebound does not impart Bible Doctrine to the Believer. For example, King Saul used Rebound often over his many attempts to kill David but never followed up with a firm dedication to the Word of God to grow in his spiritual life [1 Sam. 19-31]. King Saul died the “*sin unto death*” [1 Jn. 5:16, KJV].

GALATIANS 5:16

But I [Paul] say, walk [*peripateo (to make one's way)*] by the Spirit, and you will not carry out [*teleo (to perform)*] the desire of the flesh [*sarx – the Old Sin Nature*]. For the flesh sets its desire against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh; for these are in opposition to one another, so that you may not do the things that you please.

ROMANS 8:6-8

For the mind set on the flesh [*sarx – the desires of the Old Sin Nature*] is death [*thanatos – Operational Death for the negative [-N] Believer who rejects Bible Doctrine*], but the mind set on the [Holy] Spirit [*the positive [+P] Believer staying in Fellowship by Rebound*] is life and peace [*eirene (prosperity) – reaching maturity and receiving rewards in time and eternity*], because the mind set on the flesh is hostile toward God; for it does not subject itself to the law of God [*the negative [-N] Believer rejects Doctrine*], for it is not even able *to do so* [*no use of Rebound*], and those who are in the flesh [*sarx – Temporal and Operational Death*] cannot please [*aresko (to strive to please)*] God.

- (12) **Price Tag of Sin.** “*Grievous punishment is for him who forsakes the way*” [Prov. 15:10]. “*God is not mocked; for whatever a man sows, this he will also reap*” [Gal. 6:7]. Every sin the Believer commits has an allotted amount of Divine Discipline Suffering tied to it, a Divine “*price tag*.” Therefore, the Believer must constantly evaluate himself and use Rebound quickly in order to avoid God’s discipline. “*But if we judged ourselves rightly, we would not be judged*” [1 Cor. 11:31-32]. In this way the price tag of punishment is limited. King David learned this fact. When he refused to Rebound, he was put under increased Divine Discipline: “*Why are you in despair, O my soul? And why have you become disturbed within me?*” [Ps. 42:11]. See *infra* (15).

1 CORINTHIANS 11:31-32

But if [Third Class Condition of supposition] we [Believers] judged [*diakrino* (make a distinction; judge)] ourselves rightly [the Believer evaluating his own personal known sins and naming them to God], we would not be judged [*krino* – avoid Divine Discipline Suffering by quickly using Rebound]. But when we are judged [*krino*], we are disciplined [*paideuo* (of a father punishing his son)] by the LORD so that we will not be condemned [*katakrino* (to judge worthy of punishment; to give judgment against)] along with the world [*kosmos* – God uses Divine Discipline Suffering not to punish but to correct and motivate the Believer].

- (13) **Sinless Believer.** The Believer in Fellowship [see supra (1) the bottom circle Rebound graph] with God the Holy Spirit *cannot* sin. “*No one who abides in Him sins*” [1 Jn. 3:6-9]. In other words, when the Believer is Filled by the God the Holy Spirit he is absolutely “perfect.” Thus, although a *subsequent temptation to sin cannot alter this status* of being “sinless” [at that particular moment], the Believer’s bad decision to *give into the temptation* to commit a new sin immediately casts him into the Cosmic Systems.

1 JOHN 3:6-9

No one who abides [*meno* (to remain)] in Him [the Believer in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit] sins [*hamartano*]; no one who [consistently] sins [*hamartano* – the Believer who refuses to employ Rebound to get back into Fellowship with the Holy Spirit] has seen Him [via Bible Doctrine] or knows [*ginosko* (to learn to know) – the Loser Believer has no understanding of Bible Doctrine] Him. Little children [Believers], make sure no one deceives [*planao* (to cause to stray)] you; the one who practices [*poieo* (to be the author of a thing)] righteousness [*dikaioisune* – Rebound and learning Bible Doctrine] is righteous [*dikaios*], just as He is righteous; the one who practices [*poieo* (to be the author of a thing)] sin [*hamartia*] is of the devil [*diabolos* (slanderer) – Satan]; for the devil has sinned from the beginning. The Son of God appeared for this purpose, to destroy [*luo* (to lose any person or thing tied or fastened)] the works [*ergon*] of the devil [Spiritual Death and the Cosmic Systems]. No one who is born [*gennao*] of God practices [*poieo* (to be the author of a thing) – the Loser Believer] sin, because His seed [the Indwelling of the Holy Spirit] abides [*meno* (remains)] in him; and he cannot sin [when Filled with the Holy Spirit the Believer can be tempted but cannot sin], because he is born [*gennao*] of God.

- TIME 1** – The temptation to the Believer, Filled with the Holy Spirit, to commit a new personal sin. It is not a sin to be tempted.
- TIME 2** – The Believer will then either use his volition to: (1) give in to the temptation; or (2) resist the temptation.
- TIME 3** – If the Believer gives in to [chooses] the temptation in his mind by means of his own negative [-N] volition he is automatically placed out of Fellowship with the Holy Spirit and he will then commit the personal sin. See 1 Jn. 3:6-9; Acts 5:4.

– Timeline on Rebound –

- (a) **Bottom Line Up Front.** Per the chart above, the Believer absolutely cannot sin when in Fellowship and Filled with God the Holy Spirit [TIME 1]. However, when tempted to sin *and* the Believer succumbs to the temptation in his mind to commit the sin [TIME 2], he is at that very moment placed out of Fellowship with God the Holy Spirit and put into the Cosmic Systems. The actual sin that he succumbed to in his soul will quickly follow [TIME 3], e.g., a sin of the tongue, a mental attitude sin, or an overt sin. The *volition is the controller*: “*Therefore do not let sin reign in your mortal body so that you obey its lusts*” [Rom. 6:12]; Jas. 1:13-15.

JAMES 1:13-15

Let no one say when he is tempted, “I am being tempted by God”; for God cannot be tempted by evil, and He Himself does not tempt anyone [the Trinity cannot tempt]. But each one is tempted when he is carried away [exelko (to draw out)] and enticed by his own lust [epithumia (to long for that which is forbidden) – from the Old Sin Nature]. Then when lust has conceived [sullambano – the Believer uses his own negative [-N] volition to give in to the temptation to commit the sin], it gives birth [tikto (to bring forth)] to sin [the personal sin is then committed]; and when sin is accomplished, it brings forth death [thanatos – Temporal Death for the Believer].

- (b) **Unknown Sin.** Unknown sin also causes immediate loss of Fellowship with the Holy Spirit as well, but a known sin will soon follow for the Believer who is out of Fellowship with the Holy Spirit.
- (14) **Old Testament.** Rebound was operational in the Old Testament as well, but with important differences. *“Though I fall I will rise”* [Mic. 7:8]. While all Believers were required to use Rebound confession of sin to God, in the Old Testament period the Believer was not Indwelt or *“filled with the [Holy] Spirit”* [Eph. 5:18]. Thus, when he confessed his known sin, he was restored to a Fellowship relationship with God that was based on the exercise of Faith/Rest in God’s promises. Further, those Believers that fell under the provisions of the Mosaic Law were also required to do certain Levitical Rebound offerings and rituals for both known and unknown sins [Lev. 4–5]. For example, in Lev. 4:4-12, a bullock was offered for Rebound. The rituals were primarily a teaching tool of thanksgiving to God, as the Believer under the Mosaic Law would have already proclaimed his sin. *“I prayed to the LORD my God and confessed ... we have sinned, committed iniquity, acted wickedly and rebelled”* [Dan. 9:4-5]; Ps. 32:5.

PSALM 32:5

I [David] acknowledged my sin [*chattaah – personal sin*] to You [God], and my iniquity I did not hide; I said, “I will confess [*yadah (to confess sin)*] my transgressions to the LORD”; and You forgave [*nawa (to take away)*] the guilt [*avon (the consequence of punishment)*] of my sin. Selah [*a musical pause*].

- (15) **Divine Discipline.** God wants the Believer to Rebound and will use Divine Discipline Suffering *to encourage him to make positive decisions* to do so. *“He who conceals his transgressions will not prosper, but he who confesses and forsakes them will find compassion”* [Prov. 28:13]. *“Those whom I love, I reprove and discipline”* [Rev. 3:19-20]. Thus, the Believer is commanded to evaluate self and keep short accounts by use of the Rebound technique in order to avoid Divine Discipline Suffering and the “price tag” effect [see *supra* (12)]. *“But if we judged ourselves rightly, we would not be judged”* [1 Cor. 11:30-31]; Ps. 7:12-16. In short, the Believer either regulates himself by Rebound, or God will regulate him by *increased levels* of Divine Discipline Suffering. See Isa. 44:22; 2 Cor. 13:5; Jas. 4:8; Rev. 3:15-29. Example: David’s sins re Bathsheba [2 Sam. 11; 12:23; Ps. 32:3-5; 38:18; 42:1-11; 51:1-4]. Tragically, the Divine Discipline Suffering can in some cases culminate in the *“sin unto death”* [1 Jn. 5:16, KJV]; Heb. 12:6; Jas. 5:9.

1 CORINTHIANS 11:30-31

For this reason [*dia* (on account of)] many among you [**Believers**] are [**1**] weak [*asthenes* (weak; infirm; feeble) – physical weakness is the warning stage of Divine Discipline Suffering] and [**2**] sick [*arrhostos* (without strength; sick) – physical illness under added Divine Discipline Suffering is the intensive stage], and [**3**] a number sleep [*koimao* (to die; to sleep) – the sin unto death where the Believer dies]. But if we judged [*diakrino* (to try) – via Rebound] ourselves rightly, we would not be judged [*krino* – by God's Divine Discipline Suffering].

HEBREWS 12:6

For those whom the LORD loves [*agapao* (to love dearly) – all Believers fall under this love because they possess His Righteousness [+R]] He disciplines [*paideuo* (of a father punishing a son) – Divine Discipline Suffering administered by God], and He scourges [*mastigoo* (to flog with a whip)] every son whom He receives [*paradechomai* (to acknowledge as one's own) – all Believers are in the family of God].

PSALM 32:3-4

When I [**David**] kept silent [*charash* – no Rebound] about my sin, my body wasted away through my groaning [*sheagah* (roaring of a lion)] all day long [Divine Discipline Suffering]. For day and night Your [**God's**] hand was heavy upon me; my vitality [*leshad* (juicy bit)] was drained away as with the fever heat of summer. Selah.

PSALM 7:12-16

If a man does not repent [*shub* (to turn back) – the negative [-N] volition Believer refuses to Rebound], He [**God**] will sharpen His sword; He has bent His bow and made it ready [administration of Divine Discipline]. He has also prepared for Himself deadly weapons; He makes His arrows fiery shafts. Behold, he [**Believer in reversionism**] travails [*chabal* (to give a pledge)] with wickedness [*aven*], and he conceives mischief and brings forth falsehood [of human good]. He has dug a pit and hollowed it out, and has fallen into the hole which he made [the sin unto death awaits]. His mischief will return upon his own head, and his violence will descend upon his own pate [*godqod* (crown of the head)].

- (16) **Chain Sinning.** The Church Age Believer must avoid *chain sinning* at all costs – lighting one sin on top of another sin, as in clusters. Those that consistently get entrapped in chain sinning can neutralize it by consistent Rebound. Other particular traps to avoid for the Believer employing Rebound include: (1) bitterness or hatred which motivates revenge; (2) guilt over past sin is a sin, but remorse is not a sin [Phil. 3:13; Heb. 8:12; 10:17]; (3) public confession to others of sin is wrong and causes gossip and resentment; (4) self-pity; (5) blaming others for sin and problems; (6) worry; and (7) discussing one's sin with others to get them on their side or to justify their actions [Heb. 12:15; Prov. 28:13].

PROVERBS 28:13

He who conceals [*kasah* (to cover; conceal)] his transgressions [*pesha* (guilt of transgression)] will not prosper, but he who confesses [*yada*] and forsakes [*azab* (to depart) – stops chain sinning] them will find compassion.

HEBREWS 12:15

See to it that no one [Believer] comes short [*hustereo* (to be left behind in the race)] of the grace of God [in Rebound]; that no root [*rhiza* (that which springs up)] of bitterness [*pikria* (bitter hatred)] springing up [*phuo* (to swell up) – from the Believer's Old Sin Nature] causes trouble, and by it many be defiled [*miaino* (to pollute) – others are also tempted to engage in various sin].

(17) Four Critical Points in Rebound – Rebound and Keep Moving!

- (a) **CONFESS** the Known Sin – “*For a righteous man falls seven times, and rises again*” [Prov. 24:16]; 1 Jn. 1:9; Ps. 32:5; Dan. 9:20.
- (b) **FORGET** the Known Sin – Phil. 3:13-15.

PHILIPPIANS 3:13

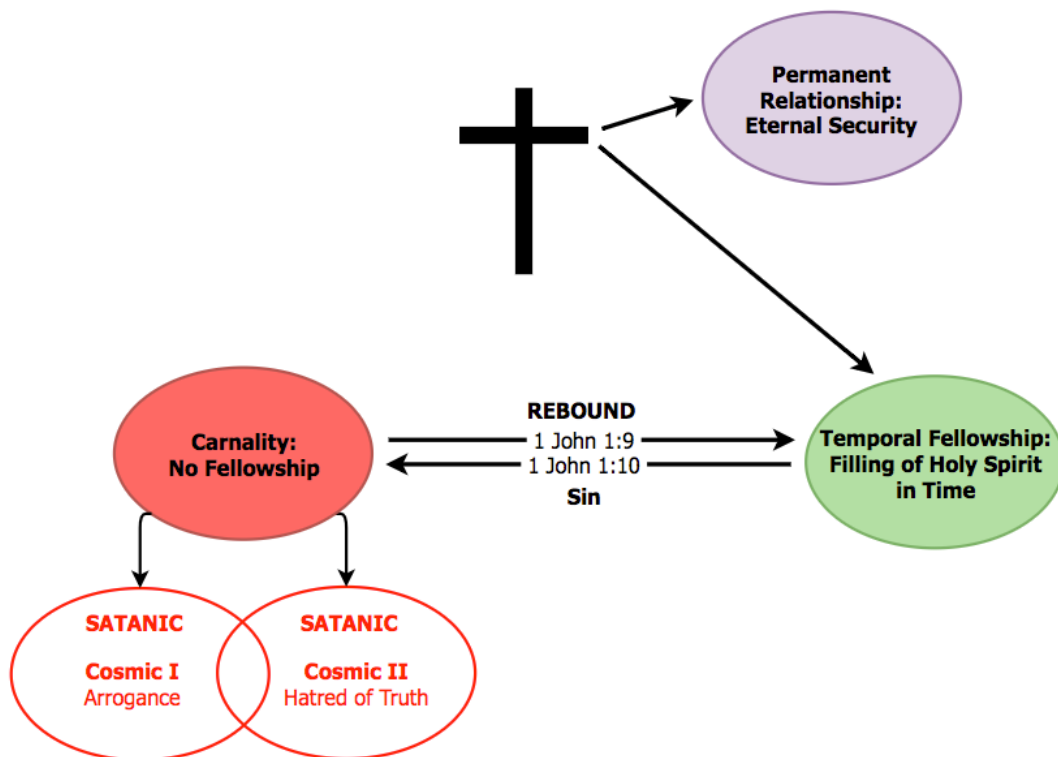
Brethren, I [Paul] do not regard myself as having laid hold of it yet [the highest level of spiritual maturity]; but one thing *I do*: forgetting [*epilanthanomai* (forgetting; no longer caring for; given over to oblivion)] what lies behind [Paul's past failures were dealt with by Rebound] and reaching forward to [*epekteinomai* (to stretch out to or towards)] what lies ahead [*emprosthen* (in the sight of) – vast eternal rewards and a resurrection body].

- (c) **ISOLATE** the Known Sin – “*I kept myself from my iniquity*” [2 Sam. 22:24]. The Believer must understand his Old Sin Nature’s lust pattern in order to “*lay aside every encumbrance and the sin which so easily entangles*” him [Heb. 12:1].
- (d) **MOVE ON** – “*forgetting what lies behind and reaching forward to what lies ahead*” [Phil. 3:13]. The only goal for the Believer is to reach maturity. God forgets the sin and the Believer must move forward.
- (18) **Biblical Synonyms for Rebound.** Includes: (1) “*confess ... sins*” [1 Jn. 1:9; Ps. 32:5; 38:18; Prov. 28:13; Dan. 9:20]; (2) “*be subject to the Father*” [Heb. 12:9]; (3) “*be filled with the Spirit*” [Eph. 5:18]; (4) “*judged ourselves rightly*” [1 Cor. 11:31]; (5) “*repent*” [Job 42:6; Rev. 2:5; 16, 22; 3:15-19; 2 Cor. 12:21; 2 Tim. 2:24-25]; (6) “*present yourselves*” [Rom. 6:13; 12:1]; (7) “*acknowledged my sin to You*” [Ps. 32:5]; (8) “*arise from the dead*” [Eph. 5:14]; (9) “*lay aside every encumbrance*” [Heb. 12:1]; (10) “*do not grieve the Holy Spirit*” [Eph. 4:30]; (11) “*strengthen the hands that are weak*” [Heb. 12:12]; (12) “*make straight paths*” [Matt. 3:3; Heb. 12:13]; (13) “*lay aside the old self*” [Eph. 4:22-23]; (14) “*turned ... face*” [Isa. 38:2]; (15) “*acknowledge your iniquity*” [Jer. 3:13; Ps. 32:5]; (16) “*putting aside all filthiness*” [Jas. 1:21]; (17) “*walk by the Spirit*” [Gal. 5:16]; (18) “*walk in the Light*” [1 Jn. 1:7]; (19) “*do not quench the Spirit*” [1 Thess. 5:19]; (20) “*rises again*” [Prov. 24:16]; (21) “*blot out*” [Ps. 51:1-4]; (22) “*cleanse your hands*” [Jas. 4:8]; (23) “*wash ... feet*” [Jn. 13:10]; (24) “*looked again*” [Eccl. 4:7]; and (25) “*I have sinned*” [2 Sam. 12:13; Ps. 51:4; Lk. 15:18].
- (19) **Spiritual Growth.** As an integral component of the Christian Way of Life, Rebound only restores the Believer to Fellowship with the Holy Spirit and handles the sin issue in time. *It does not provide Bible Doctrine.* In addition, although Rebound also decontaminates the Believer from human good the **Winner** Believer only overcomes the Cosmic Systems by the accumulation of maximum Bible Doctrine [Num. 14:36-45].
- (20) **Eyes on Christ.** The **Winner** Believer uses Rebound as a key element of the problem solving devices and keeps his eyes off self and on the LORD Jesus Christ via learning and applying Bible Doctrine [Eph. 1:18; Heb. 12:2].
- (21) **Helping Believers.** Helping other Believers use the Rebound technique requires extreme grace orientation to life. *See* Gal. 6:1; Col. 3:13; Matt. 18:23-25; Jas. 5:19-20. This role is absolutely not for baby Believers.

GALATIANS 6:1

Brethren [*adelphos*], even if anyone is caught [*prolambano* (to take before)] in any trespass [*paraptoma* (a sin)], you who are spiritual [*pneumatikos* – the Believer who has reached maturity], restore [*katartizo* (to fit out)] such a one in a spirit [*pneuma* (the disposition or influence which fills and governs the soul of anyone)] of gentleness [*prautes* (mildness of disposition)]; *each one* looking to yourself, so that you too will not be tempted [*peirazo* – don't violate their privacy].

- (22) **Fellowship with God.** Rebound allows for the **Winner** Believer to function in the Christian Way of Life. His periods of walking with God without sin are increased in tandem with his growth to spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1]. See @@@ WALKING.
- (23) **Believer in Carnality.** The Believer in carnality lives in the Cosmic Systems and can only return to the Divine Dynasphere by the use of Rebound [1 Cor. 3:3]. The **Loser** Believer cannot lose his salvation.



@@@ RELIGION

- (1) **Definition.** Religion, or more precisely, *works-Religion* is: Man by man's own efforts seeking to gain the approbation of God. Sponsored by Satan, who “*disguises himself as an angel of light*” [2 Cor. 11:14], it is expressed in two false counterfeit concepts, one for the unBeliever and one for the Believer.
- (a) **For the UnBeliever.** Religion falsely promises salvation “*on the basis of [human good] works*” [Rom. 11:6]. This is a rejection of God's Perfect character as well as His “*grace*”-centric Plan of God to save mankind. *See* Tit. 3:5; 2 Tim. 1:9; Eph. 2:8-9; Rom. 11:6.

ROMANS 11:6

But if it [salvation] is by grace, it is no longer on the basis of [human] works [ergon – the lie of religion is that human good works will provide salvation], otherwise grace is no longer grace.

- (b) **For the Believer.** Religion falsely promises spirituality and/or spiritual growth by means of promoting *equality* and other *do good, feel good activities*. This is a rejection of both Rebound and of living the Christian Way of Life [Matt. 20:1-16]. *See infra* (3).
- (2) **Devil's Ace Card.** Religion is filled with all categories of “*lies*” [Jn. 8:44-45] and is the *Devil's strongest tool* in the Cosmic Systems. Religion cannot provide salvation [Gal. 5:7-12; 1 Jn. 5:10]. It steals time! Most humans are sucked into its vortex: Jesus said that the “*gate*” of rejection of salvation is wide and the “*way is broad that leads to destruction (Hell), and there are many who enter through it*” [Matt. 7:13]. “*Her prophets have smeared whitewash for them, seeing false visions and divining lies*” [Ezk. 22:28].

JOHN 8:44-45

You [Jesus to the unBeliever religious leaders] are of *your* father [pater] the devil, and you want to do the desires [epithumia (to crave)] of your father. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth [aletheia – Bible Doctrine] because there is no truth in him. Whenever he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own *nature*, for he is a liar and the father of lies [of human good and religion]. But because I speak the truth, you do not believe Me.

1 JOHN 5:10

The one who believes [*pisteuo*] in the Son of God has the testimony in himself; the one who does not believe God has made Him a liar, because he has not believed in the testimony that God has given concerning His Son.

- (3) **Human Works.** Religion rejects God's grace and is a *key lie in the multifaceted evil of human good*: "*If we are right with each other, then we are right or acceptable to God*" [Gen. 4:3-7; cf. Isa. 64:6]. The religious person wants God to accept his personal good works of human righteousness [-r], termed *self-righteousness*. In turn, religious people superimpose their own subjective ideas about what *they feel* God's characteristics should be instead of seeking God as revealed in the Bible. "*There is a way which seems right to a man, but its end is the way of death*" [Prov. 14:12]. The wise Believer knows, it is never what *you* think, it is always what God thinks. "*The testimony of the LORD is sure, making wise the simple*" [Ps. 19:7].
- (4) **Paul and Religion.** Because he was the most self-righteous person of his day as an unBeliever, Paul noted that he was the "*chief of sinners*" [1 Tim. 1:15].
- (5) **Religion Restrained.** Unless restrained by the Holy Spirit the followers of religion will murder all those who disagree with them, particularly Believers – "*for everyone who kills you to think that he is offering service to God*" [Jn. 16:2]; 8:44; 2 Thess. 2:6-7. Thus, religion must be separated from the State per the Divine Institutions. "*Then render to Caesar the things that are Caesar's; and to God the things that are God's*" [Matt. 22:21].
- (6) **Heavy Burden.** "*They tie up heavy burdens and lay them on men's shoulders*" [Matt. 23:4] forcing human works and rituals with false promises to gain the approbation of God. Biblical Christianity gives the Believer "*rest*" from all the man-made nonsense. "*Come to Me, all who are weary and heavy-laden, and I will give you rest*" [Matt. 11:28]; Phil. 5:9; Matt. 23:13.
- (7) **How to Spot Religion.** Only a Believer with Bible Doctrine can detect the nefarious and entangling webs of religion. It is pure evil.
 - (a) **Phony Front.** Religion is phony: "*by their smooth and flattering speech they deceive the hearts of the unsuspecting*" [Rom. 16:18]; Matt. 7:15-16. See @@@ GOOD.

MATTHEW 7:15-16

Beware of the false prophets, who come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly are ravenous wolves. You will know them by their fruits [*karpos*]. Grapes are not gathered from thorn *bushes* nor figs from thistles, are they?

- (b) **Appeals to Arrogance.** Religion *appeals to all forms of human arrogance* and emotion [2 Cor. 10:12; 1 Tim. 1:6-7; Rom. 16:17-18].

1 TIMOTHY 1:6-7

For some men [*Believers*], straying from these things [*the teaching of Bible Doctrine*], have turned aside to fruitless discussion, wanting to be teachers of the Law, even though they do not understand either what they are saying or the matters about which they make confident assertions.

ROMANS 16:17-18

Now I [*Paul*] urge you, brethren, keep your eye on those who cause dissensions and hindrances contrary to the teaching which you learned, and turn away from them [*Believers in reversionism*]. For such men are slaves, not of our LORD Christ but of their own appetites [*the Old Sin Nature*]; and by their smooth and flattering speech they deceive the hearts of the unsuspecting.

- (c) **Gimmicks.** Religion uses props, outward beauty, and *various PR gimmicks* to “*outwardly appear righteous to men*” and impress the foolish [Matt. 23:27-28]; 2 Tim. 3:5-7; Gal. 4:17-18.

MATTHEW 23:27-28

Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you are like whitewashed tombs which on the outside appear beautiful, but inside they are full of dead men's bones and all uncleanness. So you, too, outwardly appear righteous to men, but inwardly you are full of hypocrisy and lawlessness.

2 TIMOTHY 3:5

Holding to a form of godliness [*religion*], although they have denied its power [*rejection of Bible Doctrine*]; avoid such men as these.

- (d) **Traditions.** Religion emphasizes legalistic *man-made traditions* – “teaching as [*Bible*] *doctrines the precepts of men*” [Matt. 15:9]; Col. 3:8; 2 Tim. 4:2-4; Mk. 7:1-9; Col. 2:8; Jn. 12:5-6.

MARK 7:1-9

The Pharisees and some of the scribes gathered around Him when they [*Jesus*] had come from Jerusalem, and had seen that some of His disciples were eating their bread with impure hands, that is, unwashed. (For the Pharisees and all the Jews do not eat unless they carefully wash their hands, *thus* observing the traditions [*paradosis (a tradition by instruction)*] of the elders [*the Sanhedrin*]; and *when they come* from the market place, they do not eat unless they cleanse themselves; and there are many other things which they have received in order to observe, such as the washing of cups and pitchers and copper pots.) The Pharisees and scribes asked Him, “Why do Your disciples not walk according to the traditions of the elders, but eat their bread with impure hands?” And He said to them, “Rightly did Isaiah prophesy of you hypocrites, as it is written: ‘This people honors Me with their lips, but their heart is far away from Me. But in vain do they worship Me, teaching as doctrines the precepts of men.’ Neglecting the commandment of God, you hold to the tradition of men.” He was also saying to them, “You are experts at setting aside the commandment of God in order to keep your tradition.”

COLOSSIANS 2:8

See to it that no one takes you captive through philosophy and empty deception, according to the tradition of men, according to the elementary principles of the world [*kosmos*], rather than according to Christ.

- (e) **Rituals.** Religion’s rituals are related to “*demons*” [1 Cor. 10:20-21]. “*What profit is the idol when its maker has carved it?*” [Hab. 2:18].

1 CORINTHIANS 10:20-21

No, but I [*Paul*] say that the things which the Gentiles [*unBelievers*] sacrifice, they sacrifice to demons and not to God; and I do not want you [*Believers*] to become sharers in demons. You cannot drink the cup of the LORD [*Bible Doctrine*] and the cup of demons [*religion*]; you cannot partake of the table of the LORD and the table of demons.

- (f) **False Experts.** Religion has *counterfeit teachers passing themselves off as experts* and “*teachers of*” God’s word “*even though they do not understand either what they are saying or the matters about which they make confident assertions*” [1 Tim. 1:7]; 2 Cor. 11:13-15; Isa. 9:15-16; 2 Pet. 2:1; Jer. 14:14; 23:25-27; Jude 4.

JUDE 4

For certain persons have crept in unnoticed, those who were long beforehand marked out for this condemnation, ungodly persons who turn the grace of our God into licentiousness and deny our only Master and LORD, Jesus Christ.

2 CORINTHIANS 11:13-15

For such men are false apostles, deceitful workers, disguising themselves as apostles of Christ. No wonder, for even Satan disguises himself as an angel of light. Therefore it is not surprising if his servants also disguise themselves as servants of righteousness, whose end will be according to their deeds.

2 PETER 2:1-3

But false prophets also arose among the people, just as there will also be false teachers among you, who will secretly introduce destructive heresies, even denying the Master who bought them [*they still have eternal security*], bringing swift destruction upon themselves [*sin unto death*]. Many will follow their sensuality, and because of them the way of the truth will be maligned; and in *their* greed they will exploit you with false words.

- (g) **False Righteousness.** Religion has a counterfeit “*righteousness*” [Matt. 5:20] based on the celebration of human good *deeds of personal worthiness and righteousness to improve themselves and/or the lot of humanity*. See Matt. 5:20; 19:16-18; Rom. 10:3; Gal. 3:2-3.

MATTHEW 5:20

For I say to you that unless your righteousness [*dikaioisune – human [-r] righteousness can’t compare to Perfect God’s [+R] Righteousness*] surpasses *that* of the scribes and Pharisees [*God rejects even the most extreme adherents of religion*], you will not enter the kingdom of heaven.

ROMANS 10:3

For not knowing about God's righteousness and seeking to establish their own [salvation by human [-r] righteousness], they did not subject themselves to the righteousness of God [the Plan of God for salvation].

- (h) **Lust Stokers.** “*But they do their deeds to be noticed by men*” [Matt. 23:5]. Religion always panders to human approbation lust from the OSN's human good output. Thus, religion is: (1) overt [Matt. 6:1]; (2) hypocritical [Matt. 6:16]; and (3) legalistic [Phil. 3:9; 2 Tim. 4:2-4].

MATTHEW 6:16

Whenever you [Believer] fast, do not put on a gloomy face as the hypocrites [*hupokrites* – religious leaders] do, for they neglect their appearance so that they will be noticed by men when they are fasting. Truly I [Jesus] say to you, they have their reward [*misthos* – man's meaningless approbation] in full.

2 TIMOTHY 4:2-4

Preach the word [Pastor/Teacher]; be ready in season *and* out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort, with great patience and instruction. For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but *wanting* to have their ears tickled [*knetho* (to itch)], they will accumulate for themselves teachers in accordance to their own desires [*epithumia* (lust) – messages versed in human good], and will turn away their ears from the truth and will turn aside to myths.

- (i) **Show Me the Money.** Religion and its counterfeit system of operation always takes advantage of people in order to *get to their money*, with false teachers “*who suppose that godliness is a means of [financial] gain*” eager to pitch in [1 Tim. 6:5]; 2 Cor. 12:14-18. Pastor/Teachers must do their job for the LORD, “*not for sordid gain*” [1 Pet. 5:2].

2 CORINTHIANS 12:14

Here for this third time I [Paul] am ready to come to you, and I will not be a burden to you; for I do not seek what is yours [Paul never pressed for money], but you; for children are not responsible to save up [*thesaurizo* (to accumulate riches)] for *their* parents, but parents for *their* children.

- (j) **Filthy Rags.** Religion's counterfeit gospel of human righteousness [-r] is a lie. In truth, "*all our righteous deeds are like a filthy garment*" [Isa. 64:6] relative to God's Perfect Righteousness [+R]. See 2 Cor. 11:3-4; Gal. 1:6-9; 2 Tim. 2:8; Matt. 23:13; Jn. 10:8-9.

MATTHEW 23:13

Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites [*hupokrites*], because you shut off the kingdom of heaven [*the religious leaders do not teach the Gospel of salvation so that people might be saved*] from people; for you do not enter in yourselves [*they reject the Gospel and remain as religious unBelievers*], nor do you allow those who are entering to go in.

JOHN 10:8-9

All who came before Me [*Jesus*] are thieves and robbers [*the lies of religion*], but the sheep [*those humans on positive [+P] volition*] did not hear them. I am the door [*to salvation*]; if anyone enters through [*dia (by means of)*] Me, he will be saved, and go in and out and find pasture [*those positive [+P] volition Believers that feed off the Bible to reach spiritual maturity*].

GALATIANS 1:6-9

I [*Paul*] am amazed that you [*the Believers in Galatia that Paul taught*] are so quickly deserting Him [*the ministry of the Holy Spirit*] who called you by the grace of Christ, for a different gospel; which is *really* not another; only there are some who are disturbing you and want to distort [*metastrepho (to turn around; distort) – false teachers of religion*] the gospel of Christ [*by salvation by grace*]. But even if we [*Paul and his traveling seminary team*], or an angel from heaven, should preach to you a gospel contrary to what we have preached to you, he is to be accursed [*anathema (a person or thing doomed to destruction) – with the sin unto death if he is a Believer and with Hell if he is an unBeliever*]! As we have said before, so I say again now, if any man is preaching to you a gospel contrary to what you received, he is to be accursed!

- (k) **False Signs.** Religion employs a variety of false "*signs*" and "*powers*" [2 Thess. 2:8-10] to *deceive and distort God's truth*. These activities will accelerate greatly under Satan in the future seven-year Tribulation. See Rev. 13:13-14; 2 Tim. 3:5. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS.

REVELATION 13:13-14

He [**Jewish False Prophet in the Tribulation**] performs great signs, so that he even makes fire come down out of heaven to the earth in the presence of men. And he deceives those who dwell on the earth because of the signs which it was given him to perform in the presence of the beast [**Revived Roman Dictator**], telling those who dwell on the earth to make an image of the beast who had the wound of the sword and has come to life.

- (1) **Religion Hates the Truth.** Because the Perfect “**Light**” of grace in the person of Christ exposes the self-centeredness, inadequacy, and pure evil of human good [-r], *religious people hate God and His followers – “because of this the world hates you”* [Jn. 15:19]; Jn. 3:19-20.

JOHN 3:19-20

This is the judgment, that the Light [*phos* – **Jesus Christ the God/man**] has come into the world, and men [**unBelievers**] loved the darkness rather than the Light, for their deeds were evil [**unBeliever with his own righteousness [-r] is attracted only to the evil of human good**]. For everyone who does evil hates [*miseo* (to detest)] the Light [**unBelievers hate grace**], and does not come to the Light for fear that his deeds will be exposed [*elegcho* – **the human works of the unBeliever are not acceptable to God**].

- (8) **Stay Away From Religion.** *Christianity is not a religion!* It is a *relationship* with God appropriated by faith in Jesus Christ. For the unBeliever there is no relationship whatsoever. “***But if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to Him***” [Rom. 8:9]; Gal. 3:26. Again, no founder of any of the world’s religions claimed to be a Savior, all were human sinners who simply advocated the evil of human good for salvation in one form or the other. Accordingly, Christians must stay out of religion. “***Let them (religious Pharisees) alone; they are blind guides of the blind. And if a blind man guides a blind man, both will fall into a pit***” [Matt. 15:14]. See 2 Cor. 6:17. See @@@ SEPARATION.

2 CORINTHIANS 6:17

“Therefore, come out from their midst and be separate,” says the LORD.

@@@ REPENT

- (1) **Definition.** In the Bible the word “*repent*” [Lk. 13:3] is most often used as a transitive verb, *nacham* (change the mind) [Hebrew], and *metanoeo* (change the mind) [Greek]. Both words have *absolutely nothing to do with emotion*. For example, a person may put on a blue shirt and then instead repent, *metanoeo* (change the mind), and put on a red shirt. No emotion is required.
- (2) **Regret.** The Greek word *metamellomai* (change the mind with emotional regret) – “*but afterword he regretted it and went*” [Matt. 21:29] – is correctly translated into the English as “*remorse*” [Matt. 27:3] or regret, although the KJV inaccurately translates this word as “*repent*.” For instance, Judas Iscariot did regret [*metamellomai*] his betrayal of Jesus and was so sincere that he returned the money and killed himself. However, Judas never used *metanoeo* in reference to believing in the LORD Jesus Christ [Jn. 13:27]. *See infra* (3).

MATTHEW 27:3

Then when Judas, who had betrayed Him [*Jesus*], saw that He had been condemned [*katakrino* (to give judgment against)], he felt remorse [*metamellomai* (change the mind with emotional regret)] and returned the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders.

- (3) **Repent in Salvation.** Repent in the context of eternal salvation in the Bible is always *metanoeo* (change the mind) – the unBeliever exhaling faith is the subject and the object is Jesus Christ. *See* Lk. 15:10; Mk. 1:4, 14-15; Lk. 13:3, 5; 15:7, 10; 16:30-31; *John* [everywhere]; Acts 17:30; 20:21; 26:20; Heb. 12:17; 2 Pet. 3:9. As the Herald of the Messiah [Lk. 7:27-28], John the Baptist preached “*repent*” [Mk. 1:15], i.e., “*change your mind*” about how to be saved for unBelievers, but also “*repent*” for Believers to use Rebound – “*and they were being baptized by him in the Jordan River, as they confessed their sins*” [Matt. 3:3-6]. *See @@@ REBOUND. See infra* (4).

MARK 1:14-15

Now after John [*John the Baptist*] had been taken into custody, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of God, and saying, “The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand; repent [*metanoeo* (change the mind)] and believe in the gospel [*euangelion* – salvation by faith alone in Christ alone].”

HEBREWS 12:17

For you know that even afterwards, when he [Esau] desired to inherit the blessing, he was rejected, for he found no place for repentance [*metanoia (a change of mind)*], though he sought for it with tears [*emotion is meaningless for salvation and Esau remained an unBeliever*].

- (4) **Repent in Rebound.** Repent is also employed in the Bible when used in the context of warning the Believer to Rebound – “*repent*” [Rev. 3:15-19] – so that understanding the “*instruction about washing*” [Heb. 6:2] he can get out of the Cosmic Systems, regain the Filling of the Holy Spirit, and then continue on towards spiritual maturity. “*Therefore leaving the elementary teaching about the Christ, let us press on to maturity*” [Heb. 6:1]; Rev. 2:5; 16, 22; 2 Cor. 12:21; 2 Tim. 2:24-25. As with the parable of the prodigal son who “*came to his senses*” and returned to his father’s house and said, “*Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in your sight*” [Lk. 15:17-20].

REVELATION 3:15-19

I [Jesus Christ] know your [Believers in Laodicea] deeds, that you are neither cold [*psuchros – an unBeliever*] nor hot [*zestos (boiling hot) – one with positive [+P] volition to the Word*]; I wish that you were cold [*the unBeliever can be given the Gospel*] or hot [*a positive Believer can be given Doctrine*]. So because you are lukewarm [*Believer in reversionism*], and neither hot nor cold, I will spit [*emeo, (vomit)*] you out of My mouth [*Divine Discipline Suffering*]. Because you say, “I am rich, and have become wealthy, and have need of nothing,” and you do not know that you are wretched and miserable and poor and blind [*tuphlos (mentally blind)*] and naked, I advise you to buy from Me gold [*chrusion (gold which lies embedded in the earth) – Bible Doctrine*] refined by fire [*pur – the Pastor/Teacher takes the ore, refines it into gold coins, and gives it to the congregation as their spiritual money*] so that you may become rich [*the Believer at maturity*], and white garments so that you may clothe yourself [*rewards*], and *that* the shame of your nakedness will not be revealed [*Judgment Seat of Christ*]; and eye salve to anoint your eyes so that you may see [*the Believer sees God through the Bible*]. Those whom I love [*phileo (personal love) – all Believers*], I reprove [*elegcho (to correct)*] and discipline [*paideuo (to train children) – Divine Discipline*]; therefore be zealous [*zeloo (to be heated or to boil) – positive [+P] volition to Doctrine*] and repent [*metanoeo (change the mind) – Rebound and advance to maturity*].

REVELATION 2:5

Therefore remember from where you have fallen [*pipto* (to descend from a higher place to a lower place) – these Believers are now on negative [-N] volition to Bible Doctrine], and repent [*metanoeo* (change the mind) – Rebound] and do the deeds you did at first [positive [+P] volition and faithful to the Word]; or else I [God] am coming to you and will remove [*kineo* – Divine Discipline Suffering] your lampstand out of its place [Church in Ephesus]—unless you repent [*metanoeo*].

2 TIMOTHY 2:25

With gentleness [the Pastor/Teacher] correcting those who are in opposition [*antidiatithemai*], if perhaps God may grant them [the Believers that are on negative [-N] volition to learning Bible Doctrine and in opposition to the Pastor/Teacher] repentance [*metanoia* (a change of mind)] leading to the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge)] of the truth [*aletheia* – the complete realm of Bible Doctrine].

- (5) **Anthropomorphism.** God is absolute Righteousness [+R] and Immutability so He cannot sin, have regret, or repent. However, sometimes “repent” is used as an *anthropomorphism* [ascribing to God a human characteristic to explain to mankind His policy or action] with God as the subject. See Gen. 6:6; Ex. 32:14; Jdg. 2:18; 1 Sam. 15:35; Jer. 15:6; Amos 7:3, 6; Heb. 7:21. The classic anthropomorphism, “*God hates*” “*God loves*,” is found in the case of the twins Jacob and Esau [Mal. 1:1-3; Rom. 9:13]. Even though Jacob was far inferior to his brother Esau in terms of human decency, Jacob was a Believer and Esau was not. Accordingly, God expresses His Divine attitude in language of accommodation as loving only Jacob, because Jacob had God’s Perfect Righteousness [+R]. See Gen. 15:6; Jas. 2:22-23]. Esau had only his own human [-r] righteousness to offer, which is unacceptable to God.

ROMANS 9:13

Just as it is written, “Jacob I loved [*agapao* (to love dearly) – Jacob was a Believer in the family of God who possessed God’s [+R] Righteousness], but Esau I hated [*miseo* (to hate; detest) – Esau refused salvation by grace and only had his own human [-r] to show; he was not in the family of God].”

@@@ RESURRECTION

- (1) **Definition.** The term “*resurrection*” [Jn. 5:29; Phil. 3:11] refers to the time when the Believer acquires a *new, indestructible, supernatural body* that will be the ultimate and eternal home for his soul/spirit in Heaven. This body will be exactly in the pattern of the resurrection body of the LORD Jesus Christ. The Believer’s old physical body disintegrates into the elements.
- (2) **General Resurrection Passages.** Scriptures that speak to resurrection in general include: Dan. 12:13; Ps. 16:10; Rev. 20:6, 13; Jn. 5:28-29; 11:25-27; Rom. 8:11; Heb. 6:1-3, 13; Phil. 3:11, 20-21; 1 Cor. 15:20-26.

JOHN 5:25-29

Truly, truly, I [Jesus] say to you, an hour is coming and now is [idiom for the reality of resurrection], when the dead [*nekros*] will hear the voice of the Son of God, and those who hear will live. For just as the Father has life in Himself, even so He gave to the Son [humanity of Christ] also to have life in Himself [Jesus Christ will receive a resurrection body]; and He [God the Father] gave to Him [Jesus Christ] authority [*exousia* (power of choice)] to execute judgment [*krisis*], because He is *the* Son of Man [Jesus Christ is the Son of Man per Dan. 7:13-14]. Do not marvel at this; for an hour is coming, in which all who are in the tombs [*mnemeion* – all dead humans] will hear His voice, and will come forth; those who did the good deeds [*agathos* – the Divine Good of belief in Christ for salvation] to a resurrection [*anastasis*] of life [*zoe* – the Believer in Heaven], those who committed [*prasso* (to practice)] the evil deeds [*phaulos* (worthless) – unBelievers that rejected the Gospel] to a resurrection of judgment [*krisis* – all unBelievers to the Great White Throne Judgment and then to the Lake of Fire].

DANIEL 12:13

But as for you [Daniel], go *your way* to the end; then you will enter into rest [*nuach* (to repose) – Daniel will experience Physical Death] and rise *again* [*amad* (to stand; to present oneself) – in the future Daniel will rise from the dead and stand in a resurrection body] for your allotted portion [*goral* (recompense) – Daniel’s rewards] at the end of the age [the Jewish Age, which consists of the missing seven years of Daniel’s “70th week” prophecy, ends at the 2nd Advent of Christ].

HEBREWS 6:1-3

Therefore leaving [*aphiemi* (to send forth)] the elementary [*arche* (beginning; origin)] teaching [*logos* (what is declared) – the basic categories of Bible Doctrine] about [1] the Christ [*christos* (the anointed one) – the person and work of Jesus Christ in hypostatic union], let us press on to maturity [*teleiotes* (the state of the more intelligent) – the positive [+P] volition Believer's goal is to reach spiritual maturity], not laying again [*palin*] a foundation [*themelios*] of [2] repentance [*metanoia* (a change of mind)] from dead [*nekros*] works [*ergon* – the change of mind about the false claim of salvation by human works of religion] and [3] of faith [*pistis* – Faith/Rest] toward God, [4] of instruction about washings and laying on of hands [Rebound], and [5] the resurrection [*anastasis*] of the dead [*nekros* – the first resurrection for Believers; the second resurrection for unBelievers] and [6] eternal [*aionios* (without beginning and without end)] judgment [*krima* – Great White Throne Judgment for the unBeliever]. And this we will do, if God permits.

ROMANS 8:11

But if the Spirit [God the Holy Spirit] of Him who raised [*egeiro* (to cause to rise)] Jesus from the dead [*nekros* (physical death)] dwells [*oikeo*] in you [the Believer], He [God the Holy Spirit] who raised Christ Jesus from the dead will also give life [*zoopoieo* (to produce alive)] to your mortal [*thnetos* (liable to death)] bodies [*soma* – the Holy Spirit will provide to the Believer his own resurrection body] through His Spirit [the Holy Spirit is the member of the Trinity that performs the task] who dwells in [*oikeo* (to dwell in) – the indwelling of the Holy Spirit is a guarantee that He will do it] you.

JOHN 11:25-27

Jesus said to her [Martha], “I am the resurrection [*anastasis* (to raise up from the dead in a new body) – resurrection body] and the life [*zoe*]; he who believes [*pisteuo*] in Me will live [*zao* – eternal life with God in Heaven] even if he dies [*apothnesko* – Physical Death], and everyone who lives and believes in Me will never die [*apothnesko* (to be subject to the eternal misery of hell) – the Believer is delivered out of Spiritual Death and Hell]. Do you believe this?” She said to Him, “Yes, LORD [*kurios* (God)]; I have believed [*pisteuo*] that You are the Christ [*Christos*], the Son of God, even He who comes into the world [*kosmos*].”

PHILIPPIANS 3:20-21

For our citizenship is in heaven, from which also we eagerly wait for a Savior [*soter* (deliverer)], the LORD Jesus Christ; who will transform [*metaschematizo* (to change the figure of)] the body of our humble state [*the mortal human body of the Believer*] into conformity [*summorphos* (having the same form as another)] with the body of His glory [*doxa – a resurrection body like Jesus Christ's*], by the exertion of the power that He has even to subject [*hupotasso*] all things to Himself.

PHILIPPIANS 3:11

In order that I may attain to the resurrection [*exanastasis* (rising from the dead) – *Paul anticipated his resurrection body*] from the dead.

- (3) **Resurrection Order.** Believers in the various dispensations will be resurrected *in their own specific order* at separate phases, called *tagma* (order), starting with all Church Age Believers at the Rapture [1 Cor. 15:20-26] and ending with the Millennium Believers. For Believers only, this entire process is called the “*first resurrection*” [Rev. 20:6].

1 CORINTHIANS 15:20-26

But now Christ has been raised from the dead, the first fruits of those who are asleep [*koimao – all Believers who have died will get a resurrection body like Jesus Christ's*]. For since by a man [*Adam*] came death [*thanatos* (death with the implied idea of future misery in hell) – *Spiritual Death*], by a man [*Jesus*] also came resurrection [*anastasis* (rising up)] of the dead [*nekros*]. For as in Adam all die [*apothnesko* (of eternal death; to be subject to eternal misery in hell) – *Spiritual Death*], so also in Christ all [*unlimited atonement*] will be made alive. But each in his own order [*tagma* (organized as in a body of soldiers)]: Christ the first fruits, after that those who are Christ's at His coming [*parousia* (arrival; advent) – *the Rapture of the Church*], then comes the end [*telos*], when He hands over the kingdom to the God and Father, when He has abolished all rule [*arche – demon officers*] and all authority [*exousia – demon senior officers*] and power [*the world at the 2nd Advent*]. For He [*Jesus Christ*] must reign [*basileuo* (to be and exercise kingly authority)] until He has put all His enemies under His feet [*Operation Footstool*]. The last enemy that will be abolished is death [*thanatos*].

- (a) **A Company – Jesus Christ.** To date, only the LORD Jesus Christ has a “*resurrection*” body, and He is currently *seated at the right hand of God the Father in Heaven* per Operation Footstool – “*the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead*” [1 Pet. 1:3]. See 1 Cor. 15:3-8, 20, 23; Rom. 1:14; 1 Thess. 1:10; 2 Tim. 2:8; Mk. 16:9-14; Lk. 24:1-48; Acts 2:30-34; Jn. 21–22; Matt. 28. See @@@ FOOTSOOL.

ACTS 2:30-32

And so, because he [David] was a prophet and knew that God had sworn to him with an oath to seat *one* of his descendants on his throne, he looked ahead and spoke of the resurrection of the Christ, that He was neither abandoned [*egkataleipo* (to desert)] to Hades, nor did His flesh [*sarx*] suffer decay [*diaphthora* (decay of the body after death)]. This Jesus God raised up again, to which we are all witnesses [*martus* (witness in a legal sense)].

1 CORINTHIANS 15:3-8

For I [Paul] delivered [*paradidomi* (to deliver into the hands something to keep)] to you [the Believers in Corinth] as of first importance what I also received, that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures, and that He was buried, and that He was raised on the third day according to the Scriptures, and that He appeared [*horao* (to see with the eyes)] to Cephas [Aramaic for Peter], then to the twelve [the technical use of the term for the disciples minus Judas]. After that He appeared to more than five hundred brethren at one time, most of whom remain until now, but some have fallen asleep [*koimao* – the term sleep describes the Physical Death of a Believer]; then He appeared to James, then to all the apostles; and last of all, as to one untimely born, He appeared to me also.

- (b) **B Company – The Church.** All Church Age Believers, living and deceased, will get a “*resurrection*” [Phil. 3:11] body at the time of the *Rapture of the Church*. See 1 Thess. 4:13-18; 1 Cor. 15:51-55, 57; Phil. 3:20-21; 1 Jn. 3:1-2; Jn. 14:1-3. All Church Age Believers are no longer classified as Jews or Gentiles but members of “*Christ’s body*” [1 Cor. 12:27]; Rom. 6:5. Believers must anticipate that the Rapture could occur at any time [Gal. 5:5]. Paul noted in his day that the Rapture could occur then [Phil. 3:10-11; 2 Cor. 5:2-3]. Peter also expected it to occur at any time [2 Pet. 3:14-15].

1 THESSALONIANS 4:13-17

But we [Paul and his traveling seminary team] do not want you [Believers] to be uninformed [agnoeo (to be ignorant)], brethren, about those who are asleep [koimao – deceased Church Age Believers], so that you will not grieve as do the rest who have no hope [elpis (confident expectation) – unBelievers]. For if we believe that Jesus died [apothnesko] and rose [anistemi (to rise up) – in His resurrection body] again, even so God will bring with Him those who have fallen asleep in Jesus [the dead Church Age Believers in their resurrection bodies]. For this we say to you by the word of the LORD, that we who are alive and remain [living Church Age Believers] until the coming [parousia (arrival; advent)] of the LORD [at the Rapture of the Church], will not precede those who have fallen asleep. For the LORD Himself will descend [katabaino (to go down)] from heaven with a shout [keleuma (an order)], with the voice of the archangel [archaggelos (a chief angel)] and with the trumpet of God, and the dead [nekros (physical death)] in Christ will rise [anistemi – in a resurrection body] first. Then we who are alive [zao] and remain will be caught up [harpaxo (to snatch out or away) – in resurrection bodies] together with them in the clouds [nephele (a cloud)] to meet [apantesis (to meet one)] the LORD [Jesus Christ] in the air [aer (the atmospheric region) – the place of the Rapture], and so we shall always [pantote (at all times; forever)] be with the LORD [in Heaven].

2 CORINTHIANS 5:2-3

For indeed in this house [the mortal bodies] we [Believers in the Church Age] groan [stenazo (to sigh)], longing [epipotheo (to long for; desire)] to be clothed [ependuomai (to put on over)] with our dwelling from heaven, inasmuch as we, having put it on [the resurrection body], will not be found [heurisko (to come upon)] naked [gumnos (unclad)].

PHILIPPIANS 3:13

Brethren, I [Paul] do not regard [logizomai (to calculate)] myself as having laid hold of it yet [the highest level of maturity]; but one thing I do: forgetting [epilanthanomai (forgetting; given over to oblivion)] what lies behind [Paul's use of Rebound] and reaching forward to [epekteinomai (to stretch out to or towards)] what lies ahead [emprosthen (in the sight of) – rewards and a resurrection body].

ROMANS 6:5

For if we have become united [*sumphutos* (born together with)] with *Him* [in union with Jesus Christ] in the likeness of His [Jesus Christ] death [*thanatos*], certainly we shall also be *in the likeness* of His resurrection [*anastasis* – the Believer receives a resurrection body].

- (c) **C Company – Old Testament Believers + Tribulation Believers.** These Believers will get a resurrection body just prior to the 2nd Advent of the LORD Jesus Christ along with their own turn at the Judgment Seat of Christ for their evaluation of the time they spent as Believers and the bestowing of eternal rewards. Mature Believers in Company C will also reign “*with Christ for a thousand years*” [Rev. 20:4]; Dan. 12:2, 13; Isa. 26:19-20; 63:1-3; Matt. 24:31; Rev. 19:11-16; Job 19:25-26.

REVELATION 19:11-16

And I [John] saw heaven opened, and behold, a white [*leukos* (brilliant whiteness)] horse, and He [Jesus Christ at the 2nd Advent in His resurrection body] who sat on it is called Faithful [*pistos*] and True [*alethinos* (that which has not only the name and resemblance, but the real nature corresponding to the name)], and in righteousness [*dikaiosune* (the doctrine concerning the way in which man may attain a state of approval by Perfect God) – what the Righteousness [+R] of God demands, the Justice of God will execute] He judges [*krino*] and wages war. His eyes are a flame of fire, and on His head are many diadems [*diadema* (the kingly ornament for the head)]; and He has a name written on *Him* which no one knows except Himself. *He is* clothed with a robe [*himation* (the upper garment)] dipped in blood, and His name is called The Word of God [the Bible is the mind of Christ]. And the armies [*strateuma*] which are in heaven, clothed in fine linen, white and clean, were following Him on white horses [these are Believers in resurrection bodies and countless numbers of angels]. From His mouth comes a sharp sword [*rhomphaia* (a large sword)], so that with it He may strike down the nations [*ethnos* – all those humans that are then attacking the Jews in Jerusalem at the end of the Tribulation under Satan’s direction and extending out to all unBelievers], and He will rule them with a rod of iron [His authority in the Millennium]; and He treads the wine press of the fierce wrath of God, the Almighty. And on His robe and on His thigh He has a name written, “King of Kings, and LORD of LORDS.”

DANIEL 12:2

Many [*rab* (abounding in numbers)] of those who sleep in the dust of the ground [*adamah* – Physical Death] will awake [*quts* – Believers are said to be in a state of sleep waiting for their resurrection bodies], these to everlasting [*olam* (without end)] life [*chay* – the Believer receives a resurrection body and lives with God forever], but the others to disgrace *and* everlasting contempt [*deraon* (abhorrence) – the unBeliever in the Lake of Fire].

JOB 19:25-26

As for me [*Job*], I know [*yada* (to learn to know)] that my Redeemer [*gaal* – the Savior who would come and pay the price for salvation] lives, and at the last [*acharyon* (later; subsequent time)] He will take His stand [*qum* (to arise)] on the earth [*aphar* (dry earth) – the First Advent of Jesus Christ]. Even after my skin is destroyed [Physical Death], yet from my flesh [*bawar* (of the body) – Job will have a resurrection body] I shall see [*chazah* (to behold)] God [Jesus Christ at the 2nd Advent].

ISAIAH 63:1-3

Who is this who comes from Edom [Jesus Christ in a resurrection body at the 2nd Advent], with garments of glowing colors from Bozrah, this One who is majestic in His apparel, marching in the greatness of His strength [Christ accompanied by Believers in resurrection bodies]? “It is I [Christ] who speak in righteousness, mighty to save [*yasha* (to deliver)].” Why is Your apparel red, and Your garments like the one who treads in the wine press? I [Jesus Christ] have trodden the wine trough alone, and from the peoples there was no man with Me [only Jesus Christ died on the cross]. I also trod them [unBelievers at the 2nd Advent] in My anger and trampled them in My wrath; and their lifeblood [*netsach* (blood; gore)] is sprinkled on My garments, and I stained all My raiment [*malbush* (clothing)].

1. **David.** Peter states in A.D. 30, that David, an Old Testament Believer, is not yet resurrected. “*I may confidently say to you regarding the patriarch David that he both died and was buried, and his tomb is with us today*” [Acts 2:29]. Note: when Rome razed Jerusalem in A.D. 70, the old tombs of heroes past that everyone knew about and visited are now unidentifiable.

2. **Moses and Elijah.** The two Old Testament prophets in Rev. 11:3-13 could not die physically in the Tribulation if they had resurrection bodies. They will be *reanimated in mortal human bodies* for this special “end times” mission as the Herald of Jesus’ 2nd Advent [Mal. 4:5].
3. **Dead Believers.** In Matt. 27:51-52, some recently deceased Believers were brought back from the dead in A.D. 30. They were simply reanimated and subsequently died again thereafter.
4. **Seven Years Left.** Per Daniel’s 70th week prophecy, the set time allotted for Israel is not quite over yet [Dan. 9:26-27]. God *owes 7 years to the Jews*, which will occur in the Tribulation. Each day of Daniel’s 70th week prophecy represents a year [Num. 14:34]. The Messiah was “*cut off*” and died physically in circa A.D. 30, which made the eschatological clock stop with 7 years remaining. At this point the Church Age began. The clock restarts at the Rapture with the removal of the Church and terminates at the 2nd Advent of Christ, 7 years later. *See @@@ DISPENSATIONS.*
5. **Old Testament Covenants.** The eternal covenants to Israel demand a “*resurrection*” [Phil. 3:11] body for Believers.
6. **PCS.** The permanent change of station [PCS] transfer in A.D. 30, led by Jesus Christ, of all Old Testament saints out from Paradise in Hell to the Third Heaven involved their soul/spirit only. *See 2 Cor. 5:1-3; Eph. 4:8-10; Lk. 16:19-31; 23:43. See supra (3). See @@@ HELL.*

EPHESIANS 4:8-10

Therefore it says, “When He [*Jesus Christ in His resurrection body*] ascended on high [*hypsos (of a place, heaven)*], He led captive a host of captives [*the soul/spirit of all Old Testament Believers in Paradise*], and He gave gifts to men.” (Now this *expression*, “He ascended,” what does it mean except that He also had descended into the lower parts of the earth [*ge – into Paradise*]? He who descended is Himself also He who ascended far above all the heavens [*the Third Heaven*], so that He might fill [*Operation Footstool*] all things).

LUKE 23:43

And He [Jesus] said to him, “Truly I say to you [the thief], today [semeron (this very day)] you shall be with Me in Paradise [a separate compartment in Hell which was the temporary abode of the Old Testament Believers].”

- (d) **D Company – Millennial Believers.** All those Believers who die during, or who are alive at the conclusion of, the Millennium will get their resurrection bodies and rewards at the end of the Millennium.
- (4) **UnBeliever’s Resurrection and Second Death.** “Behold, all souls are Mine; ... The soul who sins (rejects the Gospel) will die (Spiritual Death)” [Ezk. 18:4]. Only the unBeliever faces the *second* “resurrection of the dead and eternal judgment” [Heb. 6:2] where he will suffer the “second death (Spiritual Death)” [Rev. 20:6, 14-15; 21:8] and be thrown into the “lake of fire.” This event occurs at the Great White Throne Judgment, just after the end of the Millennium. “The rest of the dead did not come to life (all unBelievers in their resurrection bodies) until the thousand years were completed” [Rev. 20:5]; Heb. 6:2; 9:27; 1 Pet. 4:5; Rev. 20:11-15; Matt. 25:41; Jn. 5:29; Dan. 12:2; 2 Pet. 3:9. Note: Jesus Christ died twice on the cross so that Believers need only die once – only a Physical Death [Isa. 53:9].

REVELATION 20:14-15

Then death [*thanatos* (death with the implied idea of future misery in hell) – Spiritual Death] and Hades were thrown [*ballo*] into the lake [*limne* (a lake)] of fire [*pur* (burning)]. This is the second death [*thanatos*], the lake of fire [eternal separation from God]. And if anyone’s name was not found written in the book of life [*zoe* – the unBeliever has been blotted out of the Book of Life], he was thrown into the lake of fire.

- (5) **Resurrection Confirms Justification.** The physical resurrection of the LORD Jesus Christ indicates the absolute completeness of justification in the Plan of God. In other words, His supernatural resurrection from the dead is an *unbreakable guarantee* of the Believer’s own ultimate sanctification [1 Cor. 15; Gal. 5:5; Jn. 13:31-32]. Again, the Davidic covenant demands that Jesus’ human soul in hypostatic union remains alive forever in an indestructible body [2 Sam. 7:8-16; Ps. 89:20-37; Ezk. 37:24; Jer. 33:14-26]. This prophecy was fulfilled in Jesus Christ and will extend to all Believers in all dispensations.

EZEKIEL 37:24

My servant David [**King David has been dead for over 500**] will be king over them [**at the 2nd Advent the LORD Jesus Christ, the direct descendant of King David, will rule over the Jews forever**], and they will all have one shepherd; and they will walk in My ordinances and keep My statutes and observe them.

- (6) **Description of the Believer's Resurrection Body.** The Bible provides some limited descriptions of the resurrection body of Jesus Christ.
- (a) **Jesus' Scars.** The unique scars in Jesus' resurrection body are retained as an *eternal memorial to His work* on the cross and grace [Ps. 22:16; Zech. 12:10; Jn. 20:19-29]. All other "*resurrection*" [Phil. 3:11] bodies will have no scars, deformities, or blemishes of any sort.

ZECHARIAH 12:10

I [**God**] will pour out on the house of David and on the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the Spirit of grace and of supplication, so that they will look on Me [**Jesus Christ**] whom they have pierced [*daqar*]; and they will mourn for Him, as one mourns for an only son, and they will weep bitterly over Him like the bitter weeping over a firstborn.

JOHN 20:24-25

But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came. So the other disciples were saying to him, "We have seen the LORD!" But he said to them, "Unless I see in His hands the imprint of the nails, and put my finger into the place of the nails, and put my hand into His side, I will not believe [**that Jesus Christ had risen from the dead**]."

- (b) **Jesus' Resurrection Body.** (1) Jesus was recognized by those that knew Him [Jn. 20:20]; (2) Jesus could eat and drink but didn't have to [Lk. 24:42-43]; (3) Jesus had physical substance [Matt. 28:9; Lk. 24:39; Jn. 20:17]; (4) Jesus could breathe air, but it was not necessary [Jn. 20:22]; (5) Jesus had a special type of indestructible "*flesh and bones*" [Lk. 24:39-40; Jn. 2:19]; (6) Jesus could go through solid objects [Lk. 24:36; Jn. 20:19]; (7) Jesus could appear and disappear [Lk. 24:15, 31]; and (8) Jesus could move in any direction [Matt. 28:10; Acts 1:9-10].

- (7) **Raising Jesus Up.** After Jesus' Perfect human soul remained in Paradise for three days and nights, God the Father and God the Holy Spirit, the other two members of the Trinity, had a part in the resurrection of Jesus from the dead. God the Father put Jesus' human spirit, which was in Heaven, into the resurrection body [Acts 2:24; Eph. 1:20; 1 Thess. 1:10; Rom. 6:4; Col. 2:12; 1 Pet. 1:21] and the Holy Spirit put Jesus' human soul into the resurrection body [Rom. 1:4; 8:11; 1 Pet. 3:18]. There was no trace of the mortal body in the tomb, only neatly folded grave clothes "*lying there*" [Jn. 20:5-6].
- (8) **Belief in Resurrection.** Believers that do not believe in the doctrine of the resurrection or in the "*resurrection*" [Phil. 3:11] body, such as many in the Corinthian Church of Paul's day, only demonstrate their stupidity in rejecting this key Bible Doctrine [1 Cor. 15:12-19; 2 Tim. 2:17-18].

1 CORINTHIANS 15:12-19.

Now if Christ is preached [*kerusso (to proclaim)*], that He has been raised [*egeiro*] from the dead [*nekros (physical death)*], how do some among you say that there is no resurrection [*anastasis*] of the dead? But if there is no resurrection of the dead, not even Christ has been raised; and if Christ has not been raised, then our preaching is vain [*kenos (empty)*], your faith also is vain. Moreover we are even found *to be* false witnesses of God, because we testified against God that He raised Christ, whom He did not raise, if in fact the dead are not raised. For if the dead are not raised, not even Christ has been raised; and if Christ has not been raised, your faith is worthless; you are still in your sins. Then those also who have fallen asleep [*dead Believers*] in Christ have perished. If we have hoped in Christ in this life only, we are of all men most to be pitied.

2 TIMOTHY 2:17-18

And their [*false teachers*] talk will spread like gangrene [*gaggraina*]. Among them are Hymenaeus and Philetus, *men* who have gone astray from the truth [*aletheia – the two false teachers were in reversionism and the Cosmic Systems*] saying that the resurrection [*anastasis (rising from the dead) – falsely claimed that the Rapture had already happened*] has already taken place, and they upset [*anatrepo (to overturn)*] the faith [*pistis – the body of correct Bible Doctrine*] of some.

@@@ REVERSIONISM

- (1) **Definition.** The term *reversionism* is used to describe a Believer who has reverted from his former practice of learning Bible Doctrine and advancing in the Christian Way of Life to now operating in the Cosmic Systems of Satan. The reversionist is no longer “*walking*” [Eph. 5:15-18] properly in the Plan of God and being “*transformed by the renewing of his mind*” [Rom. 12:2] to reflect Jesus Christ. Instead, he is in Operational Death [Matt. 5:13]. “*And that slave who knew his master’s will and did not get ready or act in accord with his will, will receive many lashes, but the one who did not know it, and committed deeds worthy of a flogging will receive but few*” [Lk. 12:47-48].
 - (a) **COSMIC I** – Satan’s policy before man’s creation. The focus is always on self and self-sufficiency. Any Believer operating in this system of sin is said to “*grieve the Holy Spirit*” [Eph. 4:30].
 - (b) **COSMIC II** – Satan’s additional policy is focused on opposing all three categories of Divine Truth [Divine Institutions; the Gospel; Bible Doctrine] so that the Believer becomes “*conformed to this world*” [Rom. 12:2] and is said to “*quench the [Holy] Spirit*” [1 Thess. 5:19].

ROMANS 12:2

And do not be conformed [*suschematizo*] to this world [*reject Satan’s Cosmic Systems*], but be transformed [*metamorphoo* – *the Believer is expected to transform himself to the status of spiritual maturity*] by the renewing [*anakainosis* (a renewal; complete change for the better)] of your mind [*nous* – *transformation of the Believer’s thinking requires maximum Doctrine in the soul/spirit*], so that you may prove [*dokimazo* (to test; to prove)] what the will of God is [*the Believer is commanded to reach maturity*], that which is good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – *Divine Good*] and acceptable [*euairestos* (well pleasing)] and perfect [*teleios* (to make complete)].

- (2) **Life in the Cosmic Systems.** **Loser** Believers in the status of reversionism are living in the Cosmic Systems and although they cannot lose their salvation and will be in Heaven, they are *designated by many derogatory labels*. In short, they cannot be distinguished from “*the unBelievers*” [Lk. 12:46].
 - (a) “*Enemies of the Cross*” – Phil. 3:18-19.

PHILIPPIANS 3:18-19

For many walk [*peripateo* (a lifestyle) – the Loser negative [-N] volition Believer in reversionism], of whom I [Paul] often told you, and now tell you even weeping, *that they are* enemies [*echthros* (hated; odious; opposing God in the mind)] of the cross of Christ, whose end is destruction [*apoleia* – they will die the sin unto death], whose god is *their* appetite [*koilia* – their emotion rules them], and *whose* glory [*doxa* – the Loser Believer glories in human good] is in their shame [*aischune* (sense of shame)], who set their minds [*phroneo* (to feel; to think)] on earthly things [they are firmly in the clutch of the Cosmic Systems].

(b) “*Enemy of God*” – Jas. 4:4; Rom. 8:7.

JAMES 4:4

You adulteresses [*moichalis* – negative [-N] volition Believers in reversionism], do you not know [*heneka* (on account of)] that friendship [*philia*] with the world [*kosmos* – Satan is the ruler of the world and has set up his Cosmic Systems] is hostility [*echthra*] toward God? Therefore whoever wishes to be a friend of the world makes himself an enemy [*echthros* (opposing God in the mind)] of God.

(c) “*Hates Me; Hates My Father*” – Jn. 15:23.

JOHN 15:23

He who hates [*miseo*] Me [Jesus Christ] hates My Father also.

(d) “*Double-Minded*” – Jas. 4:8.

JAMES 4:8

Draw near to God and He will draw near to you. Cleanse your hands, you sinners [use Rebound]; and purify [*hagnizo*] your hearts, you double-minded [*dipsuchos* – the Believer in the Cosmic Systems seeks to reconcile the thinking of the world with his own false ideas about God].

(e) “*Fleshly*” – *sarkikos* (carnal). See 1 Cor. 3:3.

1 CORINTHIANS 3:3

For you [**Believers in Corinth**] are still fleshly [*sarkikos* (carnal) – the negative [-N] volition Believer controlled by his Old Sin Nature]. For since there is jealousy and strife among you, are you not fleshly [*sarkikos*], and are you not walking [*peripateo* – as a lifestyle] like mere men [*imitating the unBeliever*]?

(f) “*Infants*” – 1 Cor. 3:1-2; Heb. 5:13.

(g) “*Severed From Christ*” and “*Fallen From Grace*” – Gal. 5:4.

GALATIANS 5:4

You [**Believer in reversionism**] have been severed [*katargeo* (to render idle; unemployed) – **Operational Death**] from Christ, you who are seeking to be justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous)] by law [**these Believers rejected the Christian Way of Life and followed the Mosaic Law**]; you have fallen [*ekpipto* (to fall out)] from grace [*charis* – **these Believers are still saved under eternal security but grace cannot operate in their lives**].

- (h) “*Antichrist*” – 1 Jn. 2:18, 22; 4:3; 2 Jn. 7. This is apart from Satan’s chief person who arises in the Tribulation, denominated the “*antichrist who is coming*” [1 Jn. 2:18]; the “*beast*” [Rev. 13:1-10]; “*the prince who is to come*” [Dan. 9:26]; and the “*small horn*” [Dan. 8:9].
- (3) **Other Synonyms.** Various synonyms for the status of being in reversionism include: (1) “*driven and tossed*” [Jas. 1:6]; (2) “*uncircumcised of heart*” [Jer. 9:25-26]; (3) “*falling from grace*” [Heb. 12:15]; (4) “*tortured soul*” [2 Pet. 2:7-8]; (5) “*unstable soul*” [2 Pet. 2:14]; (6) “*fallen*” [Rev. 2:5]; (7) “*left your first love*” [Rev. 2:4]; (8) “*lukewarm*” [Rev. 3:15-16]; (9) “*shipwrecked*” [1 Tim. 1:19] and even (10) “*denying the Master who bought them*” [2 Pet. 2:1].
- (4) **Collapse of the Pivot.** Reversionistic Believers residing in a Client Nation contribute to the collapse of the pivot due to their negative [-N] volition to Bible Doctrine [Jer. 9:24; 29:19; Hos. 4:1-8; 1 Pet. 2:9]. “*Yet the LORD warned Israel and Judah through all His prophets and every seer, saying ‘Turn from your evil ways and keep My commandments’*” [2 Kgs. 17:13]. Only positive [+P] volition **Winner** Believers who reach spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1] can deliver a nation from adversity [Eccl. 9:13-15].

JEREMIAH 29:19

“Because they [Client Nation of Judah] have not listened to My words,” declares the LORD, “which I sent to them again and again by My servants the prophets; but you did not listen [negative [-N] volition],” declares the LORD.

- (5) **Operational Death.** The positive [+P] volition Believer out of Fellowship with the Holy Spirit will soon Rebound from his status of *Temporal Death*, whereas the negative [-N] volition Believer in reversionism is in *Operational Death* and will most likely not use Rebound. Jesus said: “*No one, after putting hands to the plow (advancing to maturity) and looking back (Doctrine is no longer a priority), is fit for the kingdom of God*” [Lk. 9:62]. See @@@ DEATH. Illustrations include:

- (a) **Demas.** In circa A.D. 61, Demas is recognized by Paul as a Believer on his team that is on positive [+P] volition to Bible Doctrine [Col. 4:14]. However, in circa A.D. 67, Paul indicates that Demas is now in reversionism [2 Tim. 4:10]. Then, at some point later, John writes that Demas had since recovered from reversionism and grown to spiritual maturity [3 Jn. 12].

COLOSSIANS 4:14

Luke, the beloved physician [*iatros (a physician)* – *Luke is a mature Believer and close companion of Paul*], sends you his greetings, and *also* Demas [*Demas is a mature Believer*].

2 TIMOTHY 4:10

For Demas, having loved [*agapao*] this present world [*Demas is in reversionism*], has deserted [*egkataleipo (to leave in straits)*] me [Paul] and gone to Thessalonica; Crescens *has gone* to Galatia, Titus to Dalmatia.

3 JOHN 12

Demetrius [Demas] has received a *good* testimony [*martureo (to be a witness)*] from everyone, and from the truth itself; and we [*the Apostle John and his traveling seminary in Ephesus*] add our testimony [*Demas recovered from his reversionism*], and you know that our testimony is true.

- (b) **Paul.** When Paul went to Jerusalem in A.D. 58 and performed acts of legalism in the Jewish Temple, *he went into full blown reversionism* [Acts 21]. This was beyond normal sin, as when Paul acted in legalism in Acts 15:37-39, regarding [John] Mark on the second missionary journey. Note: in A.D. 62, Paul welcomed John Mark [Col. 4:10].
- (c) **David.** “*Operation Bathsheba*” covered in 2 Sam. 11-12, was King David’s longest period out of Fellowship – almost a year. David was in reversionism and under severe Divine Discipline Suffering during this terrible period of refusing to Rebound. *See* Ps. 30; 32; 38; 42; 51.
- (d) **Solomon.** Initially a positive Believer, Solomon turned away from Doctrine shortly after he became King of Israel and in Eccl. 1-12, he described his Divine Discipline Suffering. In short, calling everything in life “*vanity*” Solomon *lost the capacity to enjoy his many temporal blessings* to include marriage which is the subject of *Song of Solomon* – “*a man to whom God has given riches and wealth ... yet God has not empowered him to eat from them*” [Eccl. 6:2]. Only in his old age did Solomon consistently Rebound and take in Bible Doctrine on a regular basis so that he reached spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1].

ECCLESIASTES 1–12

1:13-14

Academic knowledge. Vanity is scar tissue on the soul.

2:1-17

Comedy, booze, construction projects, human good works [:16]. Solomon still hated life [:17]. The reversionist cannot enjoy his prosperity.

2:21-26

“*For there is a man whose labor is wisdom* (this was a mature Believer) ... *this one* (Solomon) *is* (by contrast) *vanity* (the LORD permitted Solomon to encounter a mature Believer who put Solomon to shame).”

4:1-7

“*So I returned*” – Solomon uses Rebound. But at verse :2, it is clear that Solomon still has heavy scar tissue on the soul, as he stupidly praises the dead; but at verse :7, he uses Rebound again.

5:15

Solomon still reflects scar tissue on the soul. Even though all his material “things” do not please him, he wants to take them with him!

12:1-6

Solomon fears aging – hands tremble, legs weak, “*grinding ones* (teeth),” “*sound of the bird* (insomnia),” “*almond tree* (white hair),” “*silver cord*” (spine),” “*golden bowl* (head).”

12:7-10

The human spirit with Bible Doctrine goes back to God. In his old age Solomon used Rebound consistently, studied Scripture, and reached maturity. Realizing the primacy of the Word of God, Solomon then called himself “*the Preacher*” [Eccl. 12:9] instead of the King of Israel.

- (6) **Negative Volition.** The reversionist **Loser** Believer is always in a negative [-N] volitional attitude towards Bible Doctrine in his: “*heart*” [Jn. 12:40]; “*neck*” [Neh. 9:16-17]; and “*face*” [Prov. 21:29-31]. *Building up like plaque*, the reversionist forms large areas of “*scar tissue*” on his soul contributing greatly to an inability to escape the Cosmic Systems. See Eph. 4:17-18; Rom. 11:7-11; Deut. 9:29; Isa. 6:9-10.

- (7) **Stages of Reversionism.** The stages of reversionism:

- (a) **Reaction and Distraction.** This includes wrong priorities in life: (1) rejection of Bible Doctrine; (2) rejection of proper authority to include the parent, the employer, the husband, and the State; (3) personality conflicts with others predominate the life; (4) a lack of objectivity when reprimanded; (5) emotional reaction to unjust treatment; (6) subjective arrogance; and (7) a total preoccupation with self. See Rom. 12:2-3.
- (b) **Frantic Search for Happiness.** Forgetting or rejecting the truth that only Bible Doctrine can bring happiness, reversionists vainly seek happiness in the details of life [Heb. 13:5; Phil. 4:11; Ps. 144:15] to include: (1) gossip and maligning others [Col. 2:16-18; Heb. 5:11–6:16]; (2) sexual impropriety, drugs/alcohol [Isa. 28:1, 7-9]; and (3) a lust for money. “*For the love of money is a root of all sorts of evil, and some by longing for it have wandered away from the faith and pierced themselves with many griefs*” [1 Tim. 6:10].

- (c) **Operation Boomerang.** Reversionistic Believers make bad decisions that end in disaster and self-induced misery. *See* Ps. 32:1-5 [David].
- (d) **Blackout of the Soul.** This is the final stage of reversionism and can lead to the “*sin unto death*” [1 Jn. 5:16, KJV]. *See infra* (11).
- (8) **Wallowing in the Mire.** The reversionist Believer will accept as valuable the ideas of the Cosmic Systems that *he once had wisely rejected* as worthless. This includes not only rejecting the truths of the Divine Institutions, but now actively working to oppose all Bible Doctrine [2 Pet. 2:20-22].

2 PETER 2:20-22

For if, after they [a Believer] have escaped the defilements [*miasma* (moral foulness)] of the world [*kosmos* – the Believer rejects the evil of the Cosmic Systems] by the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge) – escaping via learning Bible Doctrine] of the LORD and Savior Jesus Christ, they are again entangled in them and are overcome [the Believer is now on negative [-N] volition and in reversionism which puts him back into the Cosmic Systems], the last state has become worse for them than the first [the negative [-N] volition Believer is now under Divine Discipline Suffering instead of Divine Suffering for Blessing]. For it would be better for them not to have known [*epiginosko*] the way [*hodos* (a traveled way)] of righteousness [*dikaiosisune* – the Christian Way of Life], than having known [*epiginosko*] it, to turn away [*hupostrepho* (to turn back)] from the holy commandment handed on to them [God wants spiritual maturity not the imposition of the sin unto death]. It has happened to them according to the true proverb, “A dog returns to its own vomit [the vomit is the Cosmic Systems that the positive [+P] volition Believer initially rejected but now as a negative [-N] volition Believer he laps it up],” and “A sow, after washing, returns to wallowing in the mire.”

- (9) **Recovery.** When altered by Divine Discipline Suffering the reversionist Believer may elect to *use Rebound and return to Bible Doctrine*, as with King David and King Solomon. Such recovery requires the consistent use of Rebound and then a maximum amount of time strictly devoted to learning [relearning] Bible Doctrine “*so that the proof of your faith, being more precious than gold which is perishable, even though tested by fire, may be found to result in praise and glory and honor at the revelation of Jesus Christ*” [1 Pet. 1:7]; Rev. 3:15-19. *See @@@ RUNNING.*

REVELATION 3:15-19

I [Jesus Christ] know your [Believers in Laodicea] deeds, that you are neither cold [*psuchros* – an unBeliever] nor hot [*zestos* (boiling hot) – a Believer on positive [+P] volition to the Word]; I wish that you were cold [the unBeliever can be given the Gospel] or hot [a positive [+P] volition Believer can be given Bible Doctrine]. So because you are lukewarm [*chliaros* (tepid condition) – a negative [-N] volition Believer in reversionism], and neither hot nor cold, I will spit [*emeo*, (vomit)] you out of My mouth [Divine Discipline Suffering leading to the sin unto death]. Because you say, “I am rich, and have become wealthy, and have need of nothing,” and you do not know that you are wretched and miserable [*eleeinos* (to be pitied)] and poor [*ptochos* (reduced to beggary)] and blind [*tuphlos* (mentally blind)] and naked, I advise [*sumbouleuo* (to give counsel)] you to buy from Me gold [*chrusion* (gold which lies embedded in the earth) – Bible Doctrine is gold in the earth] refined [*puroo* (to burn with fire)] by fire [*pur* – the job of the Pastor/Teacher is to take the ore, refine it into gold coins, and give it to the congregation as their spiritual money] so that you may become rich [*plouteo* (to be affluent in resources) – the Believer can now reach spiritual maturity], and white garments so that you may clothe yourself [in fantastic eternal rewards], and that the shame of your nakedness will not be revealed [at the Judgment Seat of Christ]; and eye salve to anoint your eyes so that you may see [the Believer sees God through the Bible]. Those whom I love [*phileo* (personal love) – all Believers], I reprove [*elegcho* (to correct)] and discipline [*paideuo* (to train children) – Divine Discipline]; therefore be zealous [*zeloo* (to be heated or to boil) – be on positive [+P] volition to Bible Doctrine] and repent [*metanoeo* (change the mind) – Rebound and advance to spiritual maturity].

- (10) **Special Curse.** There is a special Biblical “curse,” *anathema maranatha* (cursed until Christ comes), to the Believer in reversionism. See 1 Cor. 16:22; Gal. 1:6-9.

1 CORINTHIANS 16:22

If anyone does not love [*phileo* (personal love)] the LORD [*kurios* – the Loser Believer cannot love what he does not know], he is to be accursed [*anathemah* (a person or thing doomed to destruction)]. Maranatha [(our LORD will come) – the curse on the Believer in reversionism is in effect until the Rapture of the Church].

GALATIANS 1:8-9

But even if we [**Paul and his team**], or an angel [*aggelos*] from heaven, should preach [*euaggelizo*] to you a gospel [*euaggelion* (good news)] contrary to what we have preached to you [**salvation by grace**], he [**false teachers of religion and human good**] is to be accursed [*anathema* (a person or thing doomed to destruction) – **with the sin unto death if he is a Believer and with Hell if he is an unBeliever**]! As we have said before, so I say again now, if any man is preaching to you a gospel contrary to what you received, he is to be accursed [*anathema*]!

- (11) **Sin Unto Death.** Unchecked, reversionism inevitably leads the **Loser** Believer to the ultimate Divine Discipline Suffering of the “***sin unto death***” [1 Jn. 5:16, KJV]; Ps. 7:12-16; 2 Pet. 2:1]. However, all Believers have eternal security regardless of the loss of their “***rewards***” [2 Jn. 8]. In addition, at the Judgment Seat of Christ the reversionist Believer will be rewarded at the highest level of spiritual growth that he did achieve. See @@@ **REWARDS**.

PSALM 7:12-16

If a man does not repent [*shub* (to turn back) – the negative [-N] volition **Believer refuses to Rebound**], He [**God**] will sharpen His sword; He has bent His bow and made it ready [**administration of Divine Discipline Suffering**]. He has also prepared for Himself deadly weapons; He makes His arrows fiery shafts. Behold, he [**Believer in reversionism**] travails [*chabal* (to give a pledge)] with wickedness [*aven*], and he conceives mischief and brings forth falsehood [**of human good**]. He has dug a pit and hollowed it out, and has fallen into the hole which he made [**sin unto death**]. His mischief will return upon his own head, and his violence will descend upon his own pate [*godgod* (crown of the head)].

2 PETER 2:1

But false prophets also arose among the people, just as there will also be false teachers among you, who will secretly introduce destructive heresies [**religion and human good**], even denying [*arneomai*] the Master who bought them [**this evil teacher who denies the efficacious work of Jesus Christ still has his eternal security**], bringing swift destruction upon themselves [**sin unto death**].

@@@ REVOLUTION

- (1) **Definition.** The act of revolution concerns those who seek to overthrow and then take control of a government or nation. Revolution is totally against the Divine Institutions and reflects a gross lack of knowledge of Bible Doctrine. See Jer. 5:23; Num. 16; Rom. 13:1-7; 1 Pet. 2:13-14; Isa. 1:3-5; 31:6; 59:13.

1 PETER 2:13-14

Submit [*hupotasso*] yourselves [*Believers*] for the LORD's sake to every human institution [*the Divine Institutions*], whether to a king [*basileus (leader of the people)*] as the one in authority [*huperecho (to be superior in rank)*], or to governors [*hegemon (a leader of any kind)*] as sent by him [*the one in authority*] for the punishment [*ekdikesis (criminal justice)*] of evildoers [*kakopoios – to include capital punishment*] and the praise of those who do right.

- (2) **Destroys Freedom.** Revolution reflects approbation and power lust implemented by mental attitude sins. Revolution destroys the freedom, rights, privacy, and property of individuals. It always involves the use of mobs [Isa. 1:3-5; 59:13; Jer. 5:23]. *Jealousy is the primary motivator* for those who instigate revolution [Isa. 11:13; cf. 1 Kngs. 12:9, 27; 2 Cor. 10:10-12, 19; Matt. 27:18]. See @@@ JEALOUSY.

ISAIAH 59:13

Transgressing and denying [*kachash (to deny falsely)*] the LORD, and turning away from our God, speaking oppression and revolt, conceiving *in* and uttering from the heart [*leb – mental attitude*] lying [*sheqer (to lie)*] words.

- (3) **Anti-God.** Revolution is a Satanic device employed in the Angelic Conflict [Isa. 31:6]. Satan will lead the final Gog and Magog Revolt at the end of the Millennium [Isa. 11:1-16; Rev. 20:8]. See @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT.
- (4) **Secession.** Under the valid construction of the “*consent of the governed*” geographic separation from a corrupt national entity and fighting for freedom in order to form a new national entity is not revolution. The United States of America was born out of this concept following the War of Independence.
-

@@@ REWARDS

- (1) **Definition.** All Believers have the *potential* for: (1) temporal “*rewards*” [Matt. 6:33] in this life; and (2) eternal “*rewards*” [1 Cor. 3:14] in eternity. As Jesus Christ stated: “*My reward is with Me to render to every man according to what he has done*” [Rev. 22:12]. In fact, eternal “*rewards*” are given at the “*judgment seat of Christ*” [2 Cor. 5:10] for “*He is a rewarder of those who seek Him*” [Heb. 11:6]; Rev. 3:11; 1 Cor. 2:9; 9:24-25; Rom. 14:10-14; Jn. 12:26; 2 Tim. 2:12; 4:8; 1 Pet. 1:7-8; 5:4; Jas. 1:12; 1 Thess. 2:19. Accordingly, the eternal state is a place of vast inequality with a few **Winner** Believers receiving “*many times as much*” [Matt. 19:29].

REVELATION 22:12

Behold, I [Jesus Christ] am coming quickly [Rapture], and My reward [He bestows rewards at the Judgment Seat of Christ] is with Me [Jesus Christ is the Escrow Account Officer], to render to every man [Believer] according to what he has done [from the moment of salvation to his Physical Death].

- (2) **Eternal Rewards.** The Believer’s *evaluation* for eternal “*rewards*” [1 Cor. 3:11-15] at the Judgment Seat of Christ deals with two separate categories: (1) Divine Good [*rewardable*]; or (2) human good [*not rewardable*] [2 Cor. 5:10]. All in the context the Believer’s role as a subject matter expert witness in the Angelic Conflict.

2 CORINTHIANS 5:10

For we must all appear [Believers] before the judgment seat [*bema* – immediately after the Rapture] of Christ, so that each one may be recompensed for his deeds in the body, according to what he has done, whether good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good produced] or bad [*phaulos* (worthless) – human good produced].

- (a) **First Category – Divine Good** [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value)] produced by the Believer has great eternal rewards [Matt. 6:19-21].
- (b) **Second Category – Human Good** [*phaulos* (worthless)] produced by the Believer is completely rejected by God and destroyed by “*fire*” [1 Cor. 3:13] at the Judgment Seat of Christ. See Rom. 14:10-11.

ROMANS 14:10-11

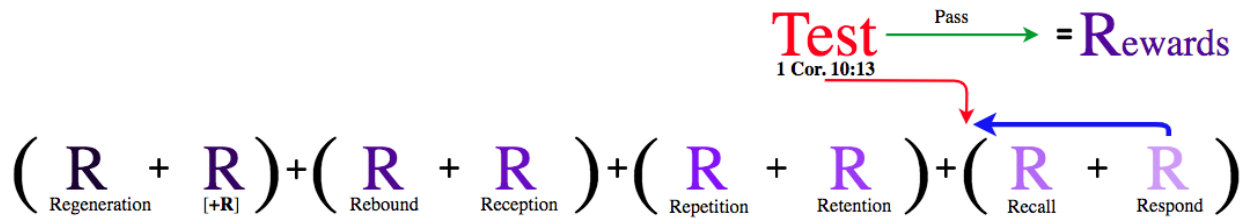
But you [a fellow Believer], why do you judge your brother? Or you again, why do you regard your brother with contempt [*exoutheneo* (to despise)]? For we [all Believers] will all stand before the judgment seat [*bema*] of God. For it is written, “As I live, says the LORD, every knee shall bow to Me, and every tongue [all Believers] shall give praise to God.”

- (3) **Two Types of Divine Good.** Since God can only recognize and reward His own Perfection, there are two types of Divine Good that the Believer can “*abide in*” [Jn. 15:1-11] during his life: (1) the amount of time the Believer spent in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit; and (2) learning and applying Bible Doctrine. Successfully executing these two arenas of Divine Good determines the *quantity and quality of rewards* for the Believer [1 Jn. 1:9; 2:28].
- (4) **No Human Good in Heaven.** No human good will be allowed into Heaven. All the Believer’s human good [Loser Believers produce large amounts of it when out of Fellowship with God the Holy Spirit] will be *completely burned up at the Judgment Seat of Christ* as “*wood, hay, straw*” [1 Cor. 3:11-15]. In addition, with the creation of the new universe all other “works” which infected the old universe will be totally obliterated [2 Pet. 3:10].

1 CORINTHIANS 3:12-13

Now if any man [Winner Believer] builds on the foundation [Jesus Christ as the Savior] with gold, silver, precious stones [Divine Good produced during the Believer’s life], [or] wood, hay, straw [human good produced by the Believer], each man’s work will become evident [*phaneros* (apparent; manifest)]; for the day will show it [the Judgment Seat of Christ] because it is *to be* revealed with fire, and the fire itself will test [*dokimazo* (to test; to examine) – combustible items destroyed] the quality of each man’s work.

- (5) **Faithfulness is Key.** The key to all rewards is the Believer’s *faithfulness* [*pistos*] to Bible Doctrine, so much so that the Winner Believer can say: “*my mind instructs me in the night*” [Ps. 16:7]. For example, “*So Jotham became mighty because he ordered his ways before the LORD his God*” [2 Chron. 27:6]. Antipas was called: “*My witness, My faithful one*” [Rev. 2:13]. See Acts 1:8; Matt. 25:21-23; 1 Tim. 1:12; Eph. 1:1, 11-18; 2:7-8; 3:16; Col. 2:3-4; Heb. 10:35-36; 11:6; Rom. 5:2-5; 11:33-36; Jos. 1:8-9; 2 Pet. 3:17-18.



– The Eight R's of the Christian Way of Life –

JOSHUA 1:8-9

This book of the law [the Bible as it then existed in writing] shall not depart from your mouth, but you shall meditate on it day and night [study Bible Doctrine constantly], so that you may be careful [*shamar* (to keep watch)] to do according to all that is written in it; for then you will make your way prosperous [*tsalach* – rewards as a result of reaching spiritual maturity], and then you will have success. Have I not commanded you? Be strong and courageous! Do not tremble or be dismayed, for the LORD your God is with you wherever you go.

HEBREWS 11:6

And without faith [*pistis* – Bible Doctrine with emphasis on the Faith/Rest technique] it is impossible [*adunatos* (unable to be done)] to please Him, for he who comes to God must believe [*pisteuo* (to place confidence in)] that He is and that He is a rewarder [*misthapodotes* (one who pays wages) – rewards to the Believer who reaches spiritual maturity] of those who seek Him [the Believer on positive [+P] volition to God in his soul].

1 TIMOTHY 1:12

I [Paul] thank Christ Jesus our LORD, who has strengthened [*endunamoo* (to receive strength)] me, because He considered [*hegeomai* (to deem; to consider)] me faithful [*pistos* (faithful; consistent) – faithful to the Plan of God], putting me into service [*diakonia* (those who proclaim and promote information about God) – as the chief of the Apostles and writer of parts of the Bible].

- (6) **Rewards in Escrow.** God the Father desires that all Believers reach spiritual maturity so that He can provide them with fantastic rewards. “*To endow those who love me (positive [+P] Believers) with wealth, that I may fill their treasuries*” [Prov. 8:21]. As proof of His grace provisions, “*before the foundation of the world*” [Eph. 1:3-6; 3:20], God the Father *deposited* “*unfailing treasure in heaven*” [Lk. 12:33], i.e., *specific tailored rewards for each individual Believer* in a Divine Escrow Account set up “*in the heavenly places*”—a *rewards “book of life”* [Phil. 4:3] or “*book of remembrance*” [Mal. 3:16] for the Believer who “*overcomes*” [*nikao (to carry off the victory)*] the Cosmic Systems and reaches maturity. “*You prepare a table before me in the presence of my enemies*” [Ps. 23:5]. For the **Winner** Believer, God “*will not erase his name from the (rewards) book of life*” [Rev. 3:5]; 1 Cor. 3:11-15; Ps. 56:8; Eph. 1:3-6; Rom. 8:28-30; Ps. 139:16. Indeed, God provides equal opportunity for each Believer to fully receive their heavenly deposited rewards as the Believer step-by-step successfully fulfills the set conditions of release from his Escrow Account – he advances to spiritual maturity with the ultimate goal of becoming a subject matter expert witness exhibit in the Angelic Conflict. Tragically, most Believers fail to do so and their rewards remain on deposit for all eternity as a memorial to God’s grace. For the **Loser** Believer, his rewards are erased. See 1 Cor. 2:9; Prov. 8:17-23; Ps. 84:1; Heb. 10:35-36; 1 Pet. 1:4, 8-9; Col. 1:5; 2 Cor. 4:4-11; Rom. 8:28-30; Gen. 15:1.

EPHESIANS 1:3-6

Blessed *be* the God and Father of our LORD Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with every spiritual blessing [*eulogeo – rewards*] in the heavenly *places* [*epouranios (existing in heaven)*] in Christ [*tailored rewards placed on deposit with Christ as the Escrow Officer*], just as He chose us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we would be holy [*hagios (separated ones) – God desires rewards*] and blameless before Him. In love He predestined [*proorizo (a predetermined plan)*] us to adoption as sons through Jesus Christ to Himself, according to the kind intention of His will, to the praise of the glory of His grace, which He freely bestowed on us in the Beloved.

GENESIS 15:1

After these things the word of the LORD came to Abram in a vision, saying, “Do not fear, Abram, I am a shield to you; Your reward [*Abraham’s rewards in time and eternity*] shall be very great.”

1 CORINTHIANS 2:9

But just as it is written, “Things which eye has not seen and ear has not heard, and *which* have not entered the heart [*kardia*] of man, all that God has prepared [*hetoimazo* (to make ready beforehand) – the fantastic rewards placed in an Escrow Account in eternity past are beyond human comprehension] for those who love [*agapao* (to love dearly) – only the positive [+P] volition Believer at spiritual maturity can love God] Him.”

- (7) **Three Parties in Escrow Account.** There are three distinct parties involved in the Escrow Account Blessings placed in Heaven, “*before the foundation of the world*” [Eph. 1:4].
- (a) **GRANTOR:** God the Father placed the fantastic, tailored rewards for both time and eternity in an individual Escrow Account inscribed with each Believer’s name on it. These “*rewards*” [2 Jn. 8] are “*on deposit*.” See Jn. 12:26; 1 Cor. 3:11-15.
 - (b) **GRANTEE:** The Believer can receive the rewards placed on deposit from the Escrow Account – both in his life on the earth and in eternity.
 - (c) **ESCROW OFFICER:** Jesus Christ is the Escrow Officer assigned to release the rewards from the Escrow Account to the Believer in this life and also for the eternal state at the Judgment Seat of Christ. Jesus Christ releases the rewards on deposit to all positive [+P] volition Believers who fulfill the conditions of the Escrow Account by learning “*the mind of Christ*” [1 Cor. 2:16]. In Isa. 53:12, Jesus Christ shares the “*booty*” rewards with **Winner** Believers only. See Matt. 20:22-23.

MATTHEW 20:22-23

But Jesus answered, “You [*James and John*] do not know what you are asking. Are you able [*dunamai* (to have the power)] to drink the cup [*poterion* (drinking vessel)] that I am about to drink [*the cup containing the sins of all humanity*]?” They said to Him, “We are able.” He said to them, “My cup [*poterion* – the cup of Union with Christ] you shall drink; but to sit on My right and on My left [*the places of highest honor*], this is not Mine to give, but it is for those for whom it has been prepared by My Father [*God delegates this to Christ*].”

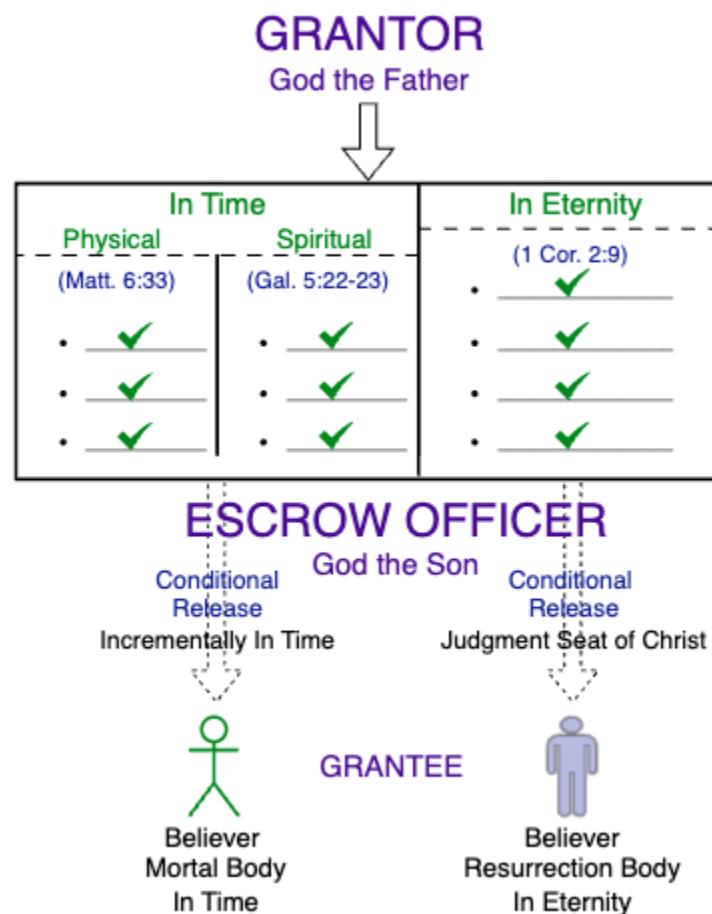
- (8) **Incremental Release of Rewards in Time.** There are two types of temporal rewards held on deposit in God's Escrow Account: (1) the temporal rewards of *spiritual blessings* [which provide the actual *capacity* to enjoy the physical blessings]; and (2) the temporal rewards of *physical blessings* such as wealth, job success, wonderful spouse, true friends, health, etc. Obviously, labeled as the "*fruit of the [Holy] Spirit*" [Gal. 5:22-23], the spiritual rewards in time are by far the greater in value and are released in increments, step-by-step, as the Believer grows in his spiritual life. *See* Phil. 4:11; Jn. 15:4-5, 8.
- (9) **Logistical Support Rewards.** Since all Believers possess the Righteousness [+R] of God given at salvation [Job 21:7-15], some level of logistical grace support rewards are also given to **Loser** Believers who never learn Bible Doctrine and therefore never grow. However, because of his lack of temporal *spiritual blessings*, the carnal Believer has limited capacity to enjoy any of the temporal blessings he may receive [Eccl. 5:19; 6:2]. *See supra* (8).
- (10) **Confidence of Rewards.** The **Winner** Believer fulfills the command of God to "*grow in the grace and knowledge of our LORD and Savior Jesus Christ*" [2 Pet. 3:18] and *has confidence that he will receive some level of rewards*. "*The LORD has rewarded me according to my righteousness*" [2 Sam. 22:21]. "*I have kept the faith; in the future there is laid up for me the crown of righteousness*" [2 Tim. 4:7-8]. "*I press on toward the goal for the prize*" [Phil. 3:13-14]. *See* Heb. 10:35-36; 1 Jn. 2:28; 3:21; Rom. 5:5; Matt. 19:29; 2 Tim. 2:15. For "*bodily discipline is only of little profit, but godliness (maturity) is profitable for all things, since it holds promise for the present life (temporal rewards) and also for the life to come (eternal rewards)*" [1 Tim. 4:8]. Indeed, having experienced the step-by-step release of fantastic spiritual and temporal rewards in time he believes God's word that Jesus Christ gives additional eternal rewards to those who remain faithful to the Word [Tit. 1:1-2; Prov. 10:16; 11:18]. "*According to my earnest expectation and hope, that I will not be put to shame in anything, but that with all boldness, Christ will even now, as always, be exalted in my body, whether by life or by death (eternal rewards)*" [Phil. 1:20]. "*Blessed are you when people insult you and persecute you, and falsely say all kinds of evil against you because of Me. Rejoice and be glad, for your reward in heaven is great*" [Matt. 5:11-12]. "*By this (reaching maturity), love is perfected in us, so that we may have confidence in the day of judgment (Judgment Seat of Christ)*" [1 Jn. 4:17]. In fact, **Winner** Believers will hear this pronouncement by Jesus Christ at the judgment: "*Well done, good and faithful slave*" [Matt. 25:23].

MATTHEW 25:23

His master said to him, “Well done, good and faithful [*pistos* – to the Plan of God] slave. You were faithful with a few things [Christian Way of Life], I will put you in charge of many things [fantastic eternal rewards]; enter into the joy of your master [God is glorified by the mature Winner Believer].”

HEBREWS 10:35-36

Therefore, do not throw away [*apoballo* (to cast away as worthless)] your confidence [the treasure of Doctrine], which has a great reward. For you have need of endurance [Suffering for Blessing], so that when you have done the will of God, you may receive what was promised [Judgment Seat of Christ].



– Escrow Account Rewards in Time and Eternity –

- (11) **Ashamed Loser.** The **Loser** Believer refuses the Christian Way of Life and never advances in his spiritual life. He will temporarily be “*ashamed*” [2 Tim. 2:15] at the Judgment Seat of Christ when he has to give an account for what he did with the time on earth that God gave him [Phil. 1:20; 3:18-19; Rev. 3:18]. Their *wasted lives* were under the Aramaic curse *anathema maranatha* (devoted to destruction until Christ returns) [some will have died the sin unto death]. See 1 Cor. 16:22; Heb. 10:35-36, 39. Nevertheless, the shame for the **Loser** Believer is short lived and will not extend into eternity where all will rejoice in God’s grace [Rev. 21:4]. In contrast, the **Winner** Believer will “*have confidence and not shrink away from Him in shame at His coming*” [1 Jn. 2:28]. The bottom line: “*Watch yourselves, that you do not lose what we have accomplished (John and the other Pastor/Teachers providing Bible Doctrine), but that you may receive a full reward*” [2 Jn. 8].

2 TIMOTHY 2:15

Be diligent [*study Bible Doctrine*] to present yourself approved to God as a workman who does not need to be ashamed [*the Loser Believer at the Judgment Seat of Christ*], accurately handling the word of truth [*aletheia – reach spiritual maturity and apply Bible Doctrine to all the problems in life*].

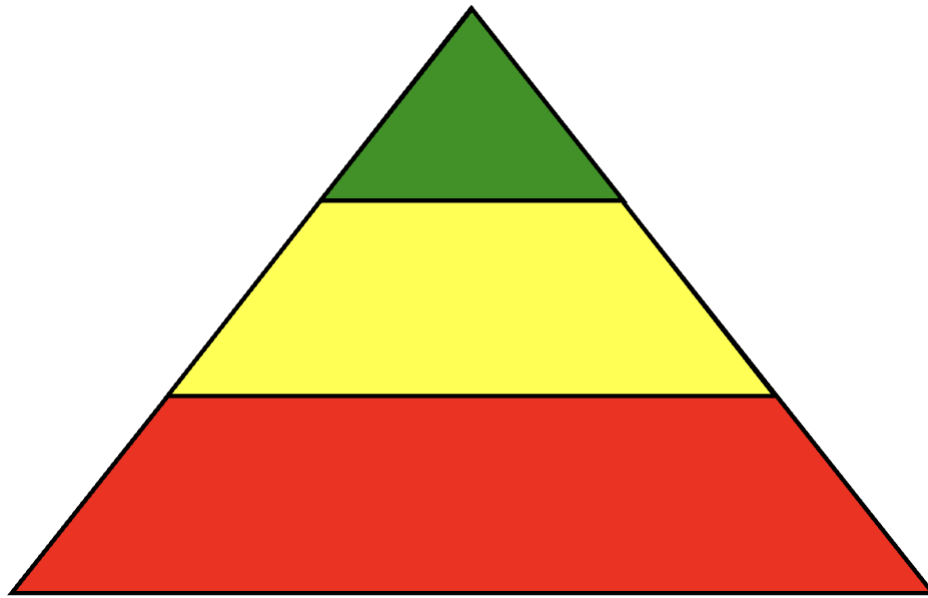
HEBREWS 10:39

But we [*positive [+P] volition Believers*] are not of those who shrink back to destruction [*reversionism can lead to the sin unto death for the Believer*], but of those who have faith [*pistos – Bible Doctrine*] to the preserving [*peripoiesis* (possession, one’s own property) – *obtaining your rewards*] of the soul.

- (12) **Variations.** Like a very flat pyramid, Heaven is a place of *vast inequality* – some Believers will have many rewards and others none at all. The parable of the “Minas” [Lk. 19:12-27] and the parable of the “Sower and Soils” [Mk. 4:1-25] exhibit the variations – there are **Winners** and **Losers** at various levels. However, every individual Believer has equal opportunity to become a subject matter expert witness exhibit in the Angelic Conflict and receive his “*rewards*” [2 Jn. 8]. In short, God is glorified when He *sees* the “*mind of Christ*” [1 Cor. 2:16] in the soul of any given Believer and the production of Divine Good. “*And those are the ones on whom seed (the Gospel) was sown on the good soil; and they hear the word and accept it and bear fruit (rewards bestowed), thirty, sixty, and a hundredfold*” [Mk. 4:20].

LUKE 19:26

I tell you that to everyone who has [Bible Doctrine], more shall be given [eternal rewards], but from the one who does not have, even what he does have [temporal logistical grace in time] shall be taken away [sin unto death].



– Hierarchy in Heaven –

- (13) **Eternal Rewards.** The New Testament uses the analogy of crowns [the word *stephanos* (a wreath awarded as a prize at the games) is translated “*crown*” in the English] to describe various types of eternal rewards given out by Jesus Christ to **Winner** Believers at the Judgment Seat of Christ. In the Greek and Roman era there were degrees of achievement reflected in the particular types of wreaths awarded to athletes in the public games, or to victorious soldiers on the battlefield. See 1 Cor. 9:24-27. “*In the future there is laid up for me the crown of righteousness, which the LORD, the righteous Judge, will award to me on that day (Judgment Seat of Christ); and not only to me, but also to all who have loved His appearing*” [2 Tim. 4:8].
- (a) **Crown of Righteousness.** “*The crown of righteousness*” [2 Tim. 4:8] is awarded to the **Winner** Believer for reaching spiritual maturity. The advancing Believer must stay focused on Bible Doctrine – “*hold fast what you have, so that no one will take your crown*” [Rev. 3:11-12].

- (b) **Crown of Life.** “*Once he has been approved*” [Jas. 1:12] as a subject matter expert witness in the Angelic Conflict, “*the crown of life*” [Jas. 1:12] is awarded to that **Winner** Believer for passing the resulting cross examination of Divine Suffering for Blessing evidence testing. “*Do not fear what you are about to suffer. Behold, the devil is about to cast some of you into prison, so that you might be tested Be faithful until death, and I will give you the crown of life*” [Rev. 2:10].

JAMES 1:12

Blessed is the man [**Winner Believer**] who perseveres under trial [*peirasmos* – **Divine Suffering for Blessing**]; for once he has been approved [*dokimos* (acceptable; pleasing) – **by God**], he will receive the crown [*stephanos*] of life which *the LORD* has promised to those who love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] Him [**the subject matter expert witness Believer who reaches spiritual maturity loves the LORD**].

- (c) **Crown of Glory.** “*The unfading crown of glory*” [1 Pet. 5:1-4] is awarded to the **Winner** Pastor/Teacher for the faithful teaching of Bible Doctrine to his congregation – “*my joy and crown*” [Phil. 4:1]. “*For who is our (the Pastor/Teachers) hope or joy or crown of exultation? Is it not even you, in the presence of our LORD Jesus at His coming?*” [1 Thess. 2:19-20]. The Pastor/Teacher must “*discipline*” himself “*so that, after I have preached to others, I myself will not be disqualified (for his rewards)*” [Phil. 9:27]. See @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER.

1 PETER 5:1-4

Therefore, I exhort the elders [*presbuteros* (the old man) – **Pastor/Teachers**] among you, as *your* fellow elder and witness of the sufferings of Christ, and a partaker also of the glory that is to be revealed [**Rapture of the Church**], shepherd the flock of God among you, exercising oversight not under compulsion, but voluntarily, according to *the will* of God; and not for sordid gain, but with eagerness; nor yet as lording it over those allotted to your charge [*kleros* (inscribed with their names)], but proving to be examples to the flock. And when the Chief Shepherd appears [*phaneroo* (to make manifest or visible) – **Jesus Christ at the Judgment Seat of Christ**], you will receive the unfading crown [*stephanos* (a wreath given as a prize)] of glory [*doxa* – **a special reward given to the faithful Pastor/Teacher**].

- (14) **Old Testament Rewards.** In the Old Testament the analogy for eternal rewards was often set out in terms of such things as a “*city*” [Heb. 11:9-10, 13-16, 23]; Rev. 21:2, 10-11; Acts 7:20. Some **Winner** Old Testament Believers were also designated as a “*friend of God*” [Jas. 2:23] or one who “*walked with God*” [Gen. 5:24].

HEBREWS 11:9-10

By faith [*pistis* – Faith/Rest] he [Abraham] lived as an alien in the land of promise, as in a foreign *land*, dwelling in tents with Isaac and Jacob, fellow heirs of the same promise; for he was looking for the city [Abraham’s eternal rewards] which has foundations, whose architect and builder is God.

JAMES 2:23

And the Scripture was fulfilled which says, “And Abraham believed [*pisteuo*] God, and it was reckoned [*logizomai* (to pass over to one’s account; to credit)] to him as righteousness [*dikaiosisune* – Abram received God’s Righteousness [+R]],” and he was called the friend of God [*philostheou* (lover of God) – when Abraham reached spiritual maturity in life].

- (15) **Other Eternal Rewards.** Other expressions of eternal rewards include:

- (a) **Ruler.** The **Winner** Believer in his “*resurrection*” [Phil 3:11] body will be a ruler in the Millennium, i.e., “*reign with Him*” [2 Tim. 2:12; 1 Cor. 4:8; Rev. 3:21; Rom. 5:17; 1 Thess. 3:13; Jude 1:14].

2 TIMOTHY 2:12

If we endure [Believers getting to maturity], we will also reign with Him [in the Millennium]; if we deny Him [the Believer in reversionism], He also will deny us [rewards at the Judgment Seat of Christ].

- (b) **The Order of the Morning Star.** The Order of the Morning Star is a sub-award of the primary award “*the bright morning star*” [Rev. 22:16] given by God to Jesus Christ. See Num. 24:17; Matt. 2:2; 2 Pet. 1:19. The **Winner** Believer is decorated by Jesus Christ. “*I will give him the morning star*” [Rev. 2:26-28]. Satan, a created being, threw away his original title “*star of the morning*” [Isa. 14:12] through sin.

REVELATION 2:26-28

He who overcomes [*nikao* (to carry off the victory) – the positive [+P] volition Believer who reaches spiritual maturity in the Angelic Conflict], and he who keeps My [Jesus Christ] deeds [*ergon* – the production of Divine Good] until the end, to him I will give authority [*exousia* (power of choice)] over the nations [*ethnos*]; and he shall rule [*poimaino* (to tend a flock)] them with a rod of iron, as the vessels of the potter are broken to pieces, as I also have received *authority* from My Father; and I will give him the morning [*proinos* (pertaining to the morning)] star [*aster* (a star)].

- (c) **Pillars.** The **Winner** Believer is provided an eternal “*pillar in the temple of My God*” for his impact on history [Rev. 3:12]. See Gal. 2:9. See @@@ HISTORY.

REVELATION 3:12

He who overcomes [*nikao* (to carry off the victory) – by reaching spiritual maturity in the Angelic Conflict], I [Jesus Christ] will make him a pillar in the temple of My God, and he will not go out from it anymore; and I will write on him the name of My God, and the name of the city of My God, the new Jerusalem, which comes down out of heaven [*ouranos*] from My God, and My new name.

- (d) **Knighthood.** As an invisible hero in time, the **Winner** Believer will now be given a visible Knighthood and a special title with a formal presentation at the Court of Heaven. “*I will confess his name before My Father and before his angels*” [Rev. 3:5].
- (e) **Uniform of Glory.** The **Winner** Believer will be given a spectacular Uniform of Glory that fits over his resurrection body as part of his rewards dished out *from the rewards* “*book of life*” [Rev. 3:4-5].

REVELATION 3:5

He who overcomes [*nikao* (to carry off the victory) – reaches maturity] will thus be clothed in white garments; and I [Jesus Christ] will not erase his name from the book of life [*the rewards book of life*], and I will confess [*homologeio* (to declare; to site)] his name before My Father and before His angels.

- (f) **Honor Role.** The **Winner** Believer will be listed on an eternal honor roll – “*and I will write on him the name of my God*” [Rev. 3:12].
- (g) **Access to Gazebo.** The **Winner** Believer will be allowed into a special *gazebo* called the “*Paradise of God*” and allowed to eat from a unique tree called “*the tree of life*” which is located there [Rev. 2:7]. **Winner** Believers “*have the right to the tree of life*” [Rev. 22:14-15], but the Loser Believer will have his part taken “*away*” [Rev. 22:19].

REVELATION 2:7

He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit [*the Holy Spirit*] says to the churches. To him who overcomes [*nikao (to carry off the victory) – the positive [+P] volition Believer who reaches maturity in the Angelic Conflict*], I will grant to eat of the tree of life which is in the Paradise of God.

- (h) **Hidden Manna.** The **Winner** Believer will be given a “*white stone, and a new name written on the stone*” and obtain special advanced Bible Doctrine knowledge called the “*hidden manna*” [Rev. 2:17].

REVELATION 2:17

He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To him who overcomes [*nikao (to carry off the victory) – this is the Winner Believer*], to him I [*Jesus Christ*] will give *some* of the hidden manna [*granted special access advanced Bible Doctrine*], and I will give him a white stone, and a new name written on the stone which no one knows but he who receives it.

- (16) **Rewards Glorify God.** *God is glorified by giving* the Believer his Escrow Account “*rewards*” [1 Cor. 3:14]. “*My Father is glorified by this, that you bear much fruit, and so prove to be My disciples*” [Jn. 15:1-8]. The **Winner** Believer learns Doctrine as ordered. *See* Jer. 9:24; 1 Cor. 1:31; 2 Cor. 4:16-17; 10:5; Prov. 23:7; Phil. 2:5, 16; Isa. 55:7-9; Ps. 16:11.

2 CORINTHIANS 10:5

We [*positive [+P] volition Believers*] *are* destroying speculations and every lofty thing raised up against the knowledge of God, and *we are* taking every thought captive to the obedience [*hupakoe (submission)*] of Christ.

PHILIPPIANS 2:16

Holding fast the word of life, so that in the day of Christ [the Rapture] I [Paul] will have reason to glory [doxa – rewards glorify God] because I did not run in vain [kenos (devoid of truth)] nor toil in vain.

2 CORINTHIANS 4:16-17

Therefore we do not lose heart, but though our outer man [mortality] is decaying, yet our inner man [spiritual growth to maturity] is being renewed day by day. For momentary, light [elaphros (light in weight)] affliction [thlipsis – Divine Suffering for Blessing] is producing for us an eternal weight [baros (heaviness)] of glory [rewards] far beyond all comparison.

- (17) **Pastor/Teacher Present.** The Pastor/Teacher will be present at the Judgment Seat of Christ to view the awarding of “rewards” [1 Cor. 3:14; 2 Jn. 8] and decorations for members of his congregation. See Heb. 13:17; Col. 1:28. Accordingly, the words of God are much “more desirable than gold” [Ps. 19:10] for “in keeping them there is great reward” [Ps. 19:11] for the Believer in time and eternity. See @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER.

COLOSSIANS 1:28

We [Paul and his team] proclaim Him, admonishing every man and teaching every man with all wisdom [sophia – Bible Doctrine], so that we may present [paristemi (to place beside or near) – at the Judgment Seat of Christ] every man complete [Winner Believers receive rewards] in Christ.

HEBREWS 13:17

Obey your leaders [hegeomai (to rule) – the Pastor/Teacher] and submit to them, for they keep watch [agrupneo (to keep awake)] over your souls [psuche – the spiritual growth of the Believer] as those who will give an account [about the members of the congregation]. Let them do this with joy [chara – the Believer with positive [+P] volition is a joy to teach] and not with grief [stenazo (to sigh; to groan) – the Believer with negative [-N] volition is not teachable], for this would be unprofitable for you [loss of rewards to the Loser Believer on negative [-N] volition].

@@@ RUNNING

- (1) **Definition.** While walking is said to be the normal lifestyle for Christians in the day-to-day activities of the Christian Way of Life, “*running*” [Gal. 5:7] is a special *call to rapid action* for the Believer to use his remaining time on earth to quickly reach spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1] in the Plan of God. The related concept is found in Heb. 12:1. See @@@ WALKING.

HEBREWS 12:1

Therefore, since we [Believers in the Church Age] have so great a cloud of witnesses [*martus* (a witness in a legal sense)] surrounding us [the many Believers who reached spiritual maturity in the Old Testament], let us also lay aside [*apotithemi*] every encumbrance [*ogkos* (mass; weight; burden)] and the sin [*hamartia*] which so easily entangles [*euperistatos* (skillfully surrounding)] – the Believer must identify their own areas of lust in their Old Sin Nature] us, and let us run [*trecho* – running fast to get maturity] with endurance [*hupomone* (steadfastness)] the race [*agon* (the place of contest)] – the Believer’s time in the body] that is set before [*prokeimai*] us [in the Angelic Conflict to reach maturity].

- (2) **Running to Rewards.** The Winner Believer on positive [+P] volition “*runs in such a way*” [1 Cor. 9:24-27] – an increased commitment to studying and applying Bible Doctrine – that he reaches spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1] and “*receives the prize*” of “*rewards*” [2 Jn. 8]. See @@@ REWARDS.

1 CORINTHIANS 9:24

Do you [the Believer] not know [*heneka* (on account of)] that those who run [*trecho*] in a race [*stadion* (a race course)] – the Believer in time has a mission to reach maturity before he dies] all run, but *only* one receives [*lambano* (to take)] the prize [*brabeion* (the award to the victor of the games)]? Run in such a way [execute the Christian Way of Life properly] that you may win [*katalambano* (to lay hold of)] – win the rewards given at the Judgment Seat of Christ].

- (3) **Stop Running.** The Believer who stops running, due to negative [-N] volition towards Bible Doctrine, to reach spiritual maturity is related to a loss of “*rewards*” [1 Cor. 3:14]. See Gal. 5:7-8. See @@@ REWARDS.

GALATIANS 5:7-8

You [**Believers in Galatia**] were running [*trecho* (of those who run in a race course)] well [they were on positive [+P] volition to learn Bible Doctrine from their Pastor/Teacher and advancing in the Christian Way of Life]; who hindered [*egkopto* (to impede one's course by cutting off his way)] you from obeying [*peitho* (to persuade)] the truth [by implication these Believers hindered themselves by negative [-N] volition, getting into the Cosmic Systems, and listening to false teachers of religion]? This persuasion [*peismone* (treacherous or deceptive persuasion)] *did not come* from Him who calls you.

- (4) **Running From Reversionism.** Running is required for the Believer who goes back on positive [+P] volition *when recovering from reversionism*. Such a Believer must first Rebound and then go on a crash course in running to learn or relearn Bible Doctrine [Phil. 2:16; 3:12-14]. This was the case for Paul, King Solomon, and King David. King Saul used Rebound occasionally but never “ran” towards Bible Doctrine. See @@@ REBOUND.

PHILIPPIANS 2:16

Holding fast the word of life [**Bible Doctrine**], so that in the day of Christ [**the Rapture followed by the Judgment Seat of Christ evaluation**] I [**Paul**] will have reason to glory because I did not run [*trecho*] in vain nor toil [*kopiao*] in vain.

- (5) **Related to Teaching.** Running is related to teaching accurate and correct Bible Doctrine by the prepared Pastor/Teacher [Gal. 2:1-2; Heb. 10:25]. For example, the Jerusalem leaders and teachers in the early Church Age had very little understanding of the problem solving device of grace orientation to life.

GALATIANS 2:1-2

Then after an interval of fourteen years I [**Paul**] went up again to Jerusalem with Barnabas, taking Titus along also. It was because of a revelation [*apokalupsis* (a disclosure of truth)] that I went up; and I submitted to them the gospel which I preach among the Gentiles, but *I did so* in private to those who were of reputation [**James, Peter, and John**], for fear that I might be running [*trecho*], or had run, in vain [*kenos* (empty handed)].

@@@ SABBATH

- (1) **Definition.** The Sabbath designation of a particular day of the week under the Mosaic Law was designed by God to *teach the principle of grace* – the fact that God does all the work to provide for the Believer’s salvation and life [Gen. 2:2-3]. Sabbath is derived from *shabbath (to rest)* and was first set out as the seventh day following the six days of the restoration of life on the earth. God “*rested*” [Gen. 1:31] because there was nothing else He needed to do.

GENESIS 2:3

Then God blessed the seventh day and sanctified [*qadash (to set apart)*] it, because in it He rested [*shabbath*] from all His work which God had created [*bara (to build)*] and made [*awah (to fashion; to accomplish)*].

- (2) **Mosaic Law Sabbath.** Instituted as the fourth commandment [Lev. 23:3] in the Mosaic Law it was *given as a memorial and reminder of God’s grace* [Isa. 58:11-14]. The Jews were to do no “*work*” [Ex. 20:8-11] on the seventh day. *See infra* (5) for the correct application. *See @@@ SALVATION.*

EXODUS 20:8-10

Remember the sabbath [*shabbath*] day, to keep it holy [*qadash (to set apart)*]. Six days you shall labor and do all your work, but the seventh day is a sabbath of the LORD your God; *in it* you shall not do any work [*melakah (occupation; business) – regular working job*], you or your son or your daughter, your male or your female servant or your cattle or your sojourner who stays with you.

- (3) **Sabbatical Year.** A Sabbatical year was commanded for every “*seventh year*” [Lev. 25:3-4] and was a generational test of Faith/Rest. Only the mature Believer would not work the farm for a whole year and rely on God [Ex. 23:10-11; Lev. 26:33-36]. Most Jews rejected this Sabbatical year.
- (4) **Sabbatical Year of Jubilee.** This was once every “*fiftieth year*” [Lev. 25:8-10] and in some cases required the returning of realty to the original owner. It was never followed.
- (5) **Profaning the Sabbath.** The Jews profaned the Sabbath, often with idolatry and apostasy [Num. 15:32-35]. *See @@@ DEMONISM.*

NUMBERS 15:32-35

Now while the sons of Israel were in the wilderness, they found a man gathering wood [**this was his regular job to make a living, not for survival**] on the sabbath day. Those who found him gathering wood brought him to Moses and Aaron and to all the congregation [*edah* (gathering; assembly)]; and they put him in custody because it had not been declared what should be done to him. Then the LORD said to Moses, “The man shall surely be put to death [*muth*]; all the congregation shall stone him with stones outside the camp.”

- (6) **Man-Made Traditions.** The Jews perverted the Sabbath into a function of religion by adding numerous man-made restrictions on behavior which are not found in the Bible. “***You are experts at setting aside the commandment of God in order to keep your traditions***” [Mk. 7:9]; Mk. 2:23-28; Jn. 5:16-17.

JOHN 5:16-17

For this reason the Jews were persecuting Jesus, because He was doing these things [**healing the sick**] on the Sabbath. But He answered them, “My Father is working until now [**the Plan of God**], and I Myself am working [*ergazomai* – **Jesus Christ holds the universe together every second**].”

MARK 2:23-24, 27-28

And it happened that He [**Jesus**] was passing through the grainfields on the Sabbath, and His disciples began to make their way along while picking the heads of grain. The Pharisees were saying to Him, “Look, why are they doing what is not lawful on the Sabbath?” Jesus said to them, “The Sabbath was made for man [**it was designed to teach grace**], and not man for the Sabbath [**the man-made mandates and taboos of religion**]. So the Son of Man [**Jesus Christ**] is LORD [*kurios* (God)] even of the Sabbath.”

- (7) **Church Age.** The Church Age ***no longer observes*** the Jewish Sabbath or any other “***day above another***” [Rom. 14:5-6]; Gal. 4:10; Col. 2:16-17. However, because the Church Age began on a Sunday, the day of Pentecost, and Jesus Christ rose from the dead on a Sunday, many choose to observe Sunday as a day of worship [1 Cor. 16:2; Jn. 20:1-2]. In the early Church period Believers would often meet on Sunday in various homes for a weekly Bible class, which lasted many hours per session [Acts 20:7-9]. See @@@ MYSTERY.

COLOSSIANS 2:16

Therefore no one is to act as your [the Believer's] judge [*krino* (to approve) – the Law of Liberty allows privacy] in regard to food or drink or in respect to a festival or a new moon or a Sabbath day.

ACTS 20:7-9

On the first day of the week, when we [Paul and his traveling seminary team in Troy] were gathered together to break bread, Paul *began* talking to them [a large Bible class], intending to leave the next day, and he prolonged his message [*logos*] until midnight. There were many lamps in the upper room where we were gathered together. And there was a young man named Eutychus sitting in the window sill, sinking into a deep sleep; and as Paul kept on talking, he was overcome by sleep and fell down from the third floor and was picked up dead.

- (8) **Faith/Rest.** Using the Faith/Rest technique as one of the Believer's problem solving devices is akin to a *temporal Sabbath*. Believers are expected to rely on the promises of Bible Doctrine and then let God handle the issues and problems in life. Tragically, many Believers refuse to rest in the LORD and fail to benefit from His Providence [Heb. 3:11]. See @@@ FAITH.

HEBREWS 3:11

As I [God] swore in My wrath, "They shall not enter My rest [*katapausis* (a resting place)]."

- (9) **The Eternal Sabbath.** The eternal Sabbath or "*rest*" [Matt. 11:28] spoken about by Jesus Christ is a recognition of the positive consequences of grace. See Jn. 20:31; Heb. 3:18-19; 4:1-11. See @@@ GRACE.

MATTHEW 11:28

Come [*deute* (come here)] to Me [Jesus Christ], all who are weary [*kopiao* (exhausted)] and heavy-laden [*phortizo* (to load one down with a burden) – religion produces heavy requirements of legalism], and I will give you rest [*anapauo* (to give rest; to refresh) – salvation by grace].

@@@ SALT

- (1) **Definition.** The word for salt in the Greek is *halas* – NaCl [sodium chloride]. Salt is used in the Bible to represent many concepts.
- (2) **Seasoner/Preserver.** Salt is employed as an analogy to describe the **Winner** Believer that reaches spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1] in the Angelic Conflict. *See* Job 6:6-7; Col. 4:6; Jas. 3:10-12; Matt. 5:13; Mk. 9:50.

MARK 9:50

Salt [*halas*] is good; but if the salt becomes unsalty, with what will you make it salty *again*? Have salt [**Bible Doctrine**] in yourselves [**the Believer**], and be at peace [*eireneuo* (harmony)] with one another.

COLOSSIANS 4:6

Let your [**the Believer**] speech always be with grace [*charis*], *as though* seasoned [*artuo* (to prepare)] with salt [*halas* – **the Believer uses the problem solving devices**], so that you will know how you should respond [*apokrimomai* (to give an answer to a question)] to each person.

- (3) **Food Offering.** Salt was used in the food offerings of the Old Testament to represent eternal life. *See* Lev. 2:13; Ezra 6:9; Ezk. 43:24.

LEVITICUS 2:13

Every grain offering of yours, moreover, you shall season with salt [*melach*], so that the salt of the covenant [*beriyth*] of your God shall not be lacking from your grain offering; with all your offerings you shall offer salt.

- (4) **In Judgment.** Salt is used in three categories of judgment.
 - (a) **Personal Judgment.** For individual Believers, e.g., Gen. 19:26.

GENESIS 19:26

But his [**Lot's**] wife, from behind him, looked *back* [**God instructed them not to look back at Sodom's destruction**], and she became a pillar of salt [*melach*].

- (b) **Collective Judgment.** *See* Deut. 29:23; Jdg. 9:45.

DEUTERONOMY 29:23

All its land is brimstone and salt, a burning waste, unsown and unproductive, and no grass grows in it, like the overthrow of Sodom and Gomorrah, Admah and Zeboiim, which the LORD overthrew in His anger and in His wrath.

- (c) **Eternal Judgment.** The unBeliever residing in the “*lake of fire*” [Rev. 20:10]; Mk. 9:47-49. *See* @@@ JUDGMENT.

MARK 9:48-49

Where their [the unBeliever] worm [in the Lake of Fire] does not die, and the fire [*pur*] is not quenched. For everyone will be salted [*halizo*] with fire.

- (5) **Blessing.** Salt is used to represent the Believer as a blessing to the country, family, and community. *See* Matt. 5:13; Mk. 9:50; Eccl. 9:14-18.

MATTHEW 5:13

You [Believers] are the salt of the earth [the potential to serve in the pivot by reaching spiritual maturity]; but if the salt has become tasteless [the negative [-N] volition Believer in reversionism], how can it be made salty *again*? It is no longer good for anything, except to be thrown out and trampled under foot by men [sin unto death].

- (6) **Bad Salt.** Salt that is not “*salty*” describes the **Loser** Believer who rejects Bible Doctrine. *See* Lk. 14:34-35; Mk. 9:50.

LUKE 14:34-35

“Therefore, salt is good; but if even salt has become tasteless [*moraino*], with what will it be seasoned? It is useless either for the soil or for the manure pile; it is thrown out [*ballo*]. He who has ears to hear, let him hear.”

- (7) **Salt for Contracts.** In the ancient world both parties to an agreement, contract, or promise, would eat salt to bind a guarantee [Num. 18:19].
-

@@@ SALVATION

- (1) **Definition.** Salvation refers to the *grace mechanics* set out in the Plan of God to redeem *all those humans who desire* an eternal relationship with their Creator. Humans instinctively know that they “*sin*” [1 Kngs. 8:46]. On the other hand, the supernatural power of “*grace*” [Eph. 2:8-9] is not instinctive and must be delineated. Therefore, Jesus Christ said: “*I am the way, and the truth, and the life; no one comes to the Father but through Me*” [Jn. 14:6]. See Gal. 3:22; Rom. 1:18-19; Heb. 10:10. “*Jesus answered and said to him ‘Truly, truly, I say to you unless one is born again he cannot see the kingdom of God’*” [Jn. 3:3]. “*But he Pharisees and the lawyers rejected God’s purpose for themselves*” [Lk. 7:30]. See *infra* (22).

HEBREWS 10:10

By this will [Plan of God] we [Believers] have been sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all [the opportunity for salvation].

- (2) **Enemy of God.** All men are born into Satan’s world are *under the curse of spiritual death and sin*. Thus, without God’s Perfect Righteousness [+R], the unBeliever’s own righteousness [-r] makes him the “*enemy*” [Eccl. 7:20; Rom. 5:10; Col. 1:21; Eph. 2:11-15] of God at birth and a “*bastard*” [Heb. 12:8]. Indeed, unBelievers are “*by nature children of wrath*” [Eph. 2:3] and under the “*wrath of God*” [Jn. 3:36], “*accursed ones*” destined for “*the eternal fire ... prepared for the devil and his angels*” [Matt. 25:41]; Rom. 1:18; 2:5; 5:8-10; 9:1, 22; 1 Thess. 5:9; Eph. 2:3; 5:6; Rev. 6:16-17; 19:15.

ROMANS 5:10

For if while we were enemies we were reconciled to God through the death of His Son [Jesus Christ was judged on the cross for all sin], much more, having been reconciled [the Believer receives God’s Righteousness [+R]], we shall be saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – deliver to the status of maturity] by His life.

EPHESIANS 2:3

Among them we too all formerly lived in the lusts of our flesh, indulging the desires of the flesh and of the mind, and were by nature children of wrath [*orge*], even as the rest [the Believer prior to salvation].

- (3) **God's Righteousness.** A Perfect and Holy God cannot allow imperfect man with his imperfect righteousness [-r] to have any relationship with Him; *the result is always death* – “*for who would dare to risk his life to approach Me?*” [Jer. 30:21]. This impossibility is because “*all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God*” [Rom. 3:23]. Although religion denies the fact of the *Holiness* of God and propagates the lie that God accepts imperfect man through systems of human good works and rituals, the righteousness of unsaved man is always [-r], while God's Righteousness is always [+R]. Jesus said: “*For I say to you that unless your righteousness surpasses that of the scribes and Pharisees, you will not enter the kingdom of heaven*” [Matt. 5:20]; Isa. 43:3; Ps. 39:5; Matt. 5:48. “*Behold, all souls are Mine ... The soul who sins (rejects the Gospel) will die (Spiritual Death)*” [Ezk. 18:4].

PSALM 39:5

Behold, You [God] have made my days [*yom (lifetime)*] as handbreadths, and my lifetime as nothing in Your sight; surely every man at his best [*human righteousness is [-r]*] is a mere breath [*hebel (vapor; breath; vanity)*]. Selah.

JEREMIAH 30:21

“Their leader [*addiyr (great one; majestic one)*] shall be one of them, and their ruler [*the Messiah will rule over the Jews forever*] shall come forth from their midst; and I [God the Father] will bring him near and he shall approach Me [*since the fall of Adam, only the Perfect human Jesus Christ in His resurrection body could approach Perfect God*]; for who would dare to risk his life to approach Me [*except for Jesus all humans are born with an Old Sin Nature and possess [-r]*]?” declares the LORD.

ROMANS 3:23

For all have sinned [*personal sin and the OSN*] and fall short [*hustereo (to be left behind in the race) – human works of righteousness [-r]*] of the glory [*doxa – the absolutely pure and unalterable Divine essence of the Trinity to include His Perfect Righteousness [+R]*] of God.

ISAIAH 43:3

For I am the LORD your God, The Holy One of Israel, your Savior [*yasha*].

MATTHEW 5:48

Therefore you [all humans] are to be perfect [*teleios* – by receiving God's Perfect Righteousness [+R]], as your heavenly Father is perfect [*teleios*].

MATTHEW 5:20

For I say to you that unless your righteousness [human [-r]] surpasses *that* of the scribes and Pharisees [God rejects the [-r] of even the most dedicated adherents to human good/religion], you will not enter the kingdom of heaven.

UnBeliever's [-r] + God's [+R] = [No]

– Unacceptable to God –

- (4) **Grace Finds the Way.** The Plan of *God found a way* to provide imperfect [-r] man with God's own Perfect Righteousness [+R] so that Perfect God can now allow a human being to have an eternal relationship with Him without compromising His Perfect Holiness – “*not having a righteousness of my own ... but that which is through faith in Christ, the righteousness which comes from God on the basis of faith*” [Phil. 3:9]. “*He [God the Father] made Him [Jesus Christ] who knew no sin to be sin on our behalf, so that we might become the righteousness of God in Him*” [2 Cor. 5:21]. See Jn. 14:6; Gen. 15:6; Rom. 8:10; Isa. 43:3; 1 Tim. 1:15. Thus, at the second of faith alone in Christ alone, *God imputes* His Perfect [+R] to that “*born again*” [1 Pet. 1:23] Believer and the impossible “cosmic math problem” of how Perfect [+R] God can accept imperfect [-r] man is solved. “*Things that are impossible with people are possible with God*” [Lk. 18:27].

Believer's [+R] + God's [+R] = [YES]

– Acceptable to God –

1 TIMOTHY 1:15

It is a trustworthy statement, deserving full acceptance, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners [all humans], among whom I [Paul was the most religious and self-righteous [-r] person of his day] am foremost of all.

JOHN 14:6

Jesus said to him, “I am the way, and the truth, and the life; no one comes [erchomai (to come from one place to another) – salvation is only by belief in Jesus Christ] to the Father but through me.”

ROMANS 8:10

If Christ is in you [Believer], though the body is dead [nekros] because of sin [hamartia – Spiritual Death and the Old Sin Nature infect the body], yet the [human] spirit [pneuma] is alive because of righteousness [dikaiousune – the Believer has the Righteousness [+R] of God].

PHILIPPIANS 3:7-9

But whatever things were gain [kerdos (advantages in life)] to me [Paul], those things I have counted as loss for the sake of Christ. More than that, I count all things to be loss in view of the surpassing value of knowing [via Bible Doctrine] Christ Jesus my LORD, for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and count them but rubbish [skubalon (the excrement of animals and humans) – human good deeds and celebrityship] so that I may gain Christ [the mind of Christ], and may be found in Him, not having a righteousness of my own derived from the Law [religion], but that which is through faith in Christ, the righteousness which comes from God on the basis of faith [God's [+R]].

- (5) **Barriers and Six Imputations.** Under Soteriology there are numerous barriers between Righteous [+R] God and imperfect [-r] man that have to be removed, sin being at the heart of the matter. “*When they sin against You (for there is no man who does not sin)*” [1 Kngs. 8:46]. In the following chart, a *real imputation* designation means that *there is an affinity* [attraction] between the imputation and the target object. In contrast, a *judicial imputation* means that *there is no affinity* target to attract, and the matter must be forced upon the object. See @@@ SOTERIOLOGY.

PROBLEM	SOLUTION
(1) Spiritual Death from Adam's Original Sin. Real Imputation to the Old Sin Nature at Birth.	(1) Christ's Substitutionary Spiritual Death. Judicial Imputation of Sin to Jesus Christ. All Humans.
(2) Personal Sins in Time.	(2) Unlimited Atonement. Judicial Imputation of Sin to Jesus Christ. All Humans.
(3) Curse of Mosaic Law.	(3) Removal. Judicial Imputation of Curse to Christ. All humans.
(4) Human Physical Life.	(4) Regeneration. Real Imputation of a Human Spirit. Believers Only.
(5) Human [-r] [Isa. 64:6].	(5) God's [+R] + 39 Things. Real Imputation. Believers Only.
(6) No Rewards.	(6) Rewards. Real Imputation to Winner Believers Only.

– Six Divine Imputations –

- (6) **Love of God.** The *agape impersonal “love”* [Jn. 3:16] of God motivated Him to provide the salvation opportunity for all. It is critical to understand that this *love* from God is His *impersonal love*, not His *personal love*. Nevertheless, it is the “*joy*” [Heb. 12:2] of redemption that causes the angels to rejoice “*over one sinner who repents*” [Lk. 15:10; Matt. 18:13-14]. Again, *agape impersonal love* places all the integrity in the subject – *Perfect God* – not the object, sinful [-r] mankind. In short, there is absolutely nothing about sinful mankind that attracts God's Perfect personal love. Only when a person believes in Jesus Christ and receives the Forty Things at salvation does God have a personal love for the object [Believer]. See Jn. 3:16. See *supra* (2).

JOHN 3:16

For God so loved [*agapao* – impersonal love] the world [*kosmos* – unsaved mankind], that He gave His only begotten [*monogenes* (single of its kind; uniquely born)] Son [*Jesus Christ*], that whoever believes [*pisteuo* – faith in Christ for salvation] in Him shall not perish [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely; to utterly destroy) – judgment and separation from God], but have eternal [*aionios* (without beginning and end)] life [*zoe*].

- (7) **Lamb of God.** Jesus Christ was prophetically spoken of as “*the Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world*” [Jn. 1:29; 35]. This was His purpose for coming into the world under the Plan of God. *He would be sacrificed for the sins of all mankind* – past, present, and future – “*knowing that you were not redeemed with perishable things like silver or gold ... but with precious blood, as a lamb unblemished and spotless, the blood of Christ*” [1 Pet. 1:18-19]. See Isa. 53:7; Acts 8:32-33; Jn. 1:29-30; Rev. 5:6; 6:16; 7:14, 17; 13:8; 14:1; 17:14; 19:7; Heb. 9:11-14. All animal sacrifices in the Old Testament pointed to the person and work of Jesus Christ on the cross with an emphasis on either salvation [for the unBeliever] or Rebound [for the Believer]. See Lev. 1:1-11; 17:11. Jesus Christ is also called the “*Chief Shepherd*” [1 Pet. 5:1-4] and the “*great Shepherd*” [Heb. 13:20]. See Isa. 40:11; Jn. 10:11, 14; 1 Pet. 2:5; Ps. 23:1-6; 80:1; Ezk. 34:23; Jer. 31:10.

JOHN 1:29

The next day he [*John the Baptist who was then baptizing Believers in the Jordan River*] saw Jesus coming to him and said, “Behold, the Lamb of God who takes away [*airo* (to move from its place)] the sin [*hamartia* – Spiritual Death and sin] of the world [*kosmos* – Christ provided unlimited atonement for all humans to give everyone equal opportunity for salvation]!”

HEBREWS 13:20

Now the God of peace [*eirene* (reconciliation) – reconciliation between man and God], who brought up from the dead [*nekros* – the resurrection of Jesus Christ] the great Shepherd of the sheep [*probaton* – all Believers] through [*dia* (by means of)] the blood [*aima* – the substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ on the cross provided salvation] of the eternal [*aionios* (without beginning or end)] covenant, even Jesus our LORD.

- (8) **Two Acts of Volition.** There are two acts of *non-meritorious volition* in salvation: (1) the individual must give the Gospel a “*hearing*” [Rom. 10:17]; and (2) the individual must then “*believe*” [Acts 16:31] the Gospel by faith. See 2 Tim. 2:8; 1 Thess. 4:14; Heb. 4:2-3; Eph. 1:13; 4:3.

HEBREWS 4:2

For indeed we [Believers] have had good news preached [*euaggelizo* – the Gospel of salvation] to us, just as they [unBelievers] also; but the word [*logos* – the Gospel] they heard [*akoe*] did not profit [*opheleo* (to be advantageous; to benefit)] them, because it was not united [*sugkerannumi* (to mix together)] by faith [*pistis* – the unBeliever hearer of the Gospel did not believe it via faith] in those who heard.

EPHESIANS 1:13

In Him [Jesus Christ], you [the Believer] also, after listening [*akouo* (to consider what is or has been said)] to the message of truth, the gospel [*euaggelion* (good news)] of your salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven]—having also believed [*pisteuo* – salvation by faith in Jesus Christ], you were sealed [*sphragizo* (to set a seal upon)] in Him with the Holy Spirit of promise [*epaggelia* (a promised good) – the ministry of the Holy Spirit in salvation].

ROMANS 10:17

So faith [*pistis* – faith in Jesus Christ] comes from hearing [*akoe* (the sense of hearing) – the Gospel], and hearing by the word [*rhema* (that which is or has been uttered by the living voice)] of Christ.

- (9) **Salvation Mechanics.** *Salvation is through non-meritorious faith alone in Jesus Christ alone!* [Rom. 4:5]. Man can never earn or deserve salvation by his merit, “*according to our works*” [2 Tim. 1:9]. Therefore, faith as a means of perception is not something that one does but is the channel whereby one appropriates what God has already done under unlimited atonement. See Gen. 15:6; Matt. 21:22; Jn. 1:12-13; 1 Pet. 1:5; Heb. 4:3; 10:39; Rom. 3:20-28; Gal. 3:8. Finally, the “*peace*” [*eirene*] in Eph. 1:2; 6:15 and Rom. 10:15, stands for reconciliation between Perfect God and sinful man [now made Perfect through salvation] not the absence of physical warfare.

2 TIMOTHY 1:9

Who has saved us [**Believer**] and called us with a holy calling [**Holy Spirit's ministry**], not according to our works [**ergon – human acts of righteousness [-r]**], but according to His own purpose and grace which was granted us in Christ Jesus from all eternity [**God knew who would respond to grace**].

- (10) **Required Level of Faith.** Salvation faith consists of a simple exhale of **belief** [Jn. 3:16, 36; 9:38; 20:31; Gal. 2:16; Tit. 3:5; Jon. 3:5; 1 Jn. 3:23; 5:10] by the unBeliever in the Gospel. Only a **speck of faith in Jesus Christ** is required for salvation – any amount more than no faith at all [**the size of an electron orbiting an atom**]. Biblical illustrations: (1) the size of a “**mustard seed**” [Matt. 17:20; Lk. 13:19]; (2) a spot of “**leaven**” [Lk. 13:21]; (3) simply “**receive**” [Jn. 1:12]; (4) to “**eat**,” or “**drink**” [Isa. 45:22; 55:1; 1 Cor. 11:26]; (5) to “**come**” [Matt. 11:28]; (6) “**laying a stone**” [Isa. 28:16]; and (7) simply “**call upon**” [Rom. 10:12-13; Acts 2:21; 4:11-12; 1 Cor. 1:2]. Indeed, the Trinity always knew exactly who would accept the free gift of salvation and their name is inscribed permanently in the “**book of life**” and never “**blotted out**” [Rev. 3:5, KJV]. The Believer's salvation is set “**from the foundation of the world in the book of life of the Lamb who has been slain**” [Rev. 13:8]. On the other hand, because the unBeliever refuses grace he is not “**recorded with the righteous**,” but is “**blotted out of the book of life**” [Ps. 69:28].

LUKE 13:19

It [**amount of faith for salvation**] is like a mustard seed, which a man took and threw into his own garden [**each is responsible for his own volition**]; and it grew and became a tree [**results**], and the birds of the air nested in its branches.

JONAH 3:5

Then the people of Nineveh [**Nineveh was the capital city of Assyria**] believed [**aman**] in God [**Jesus Christ as revealed to these Gentiles for salvation**]; and they called a fast and put on sackcloth from the greatest to the least of them.

JOHN 9:38

And he [**the formerly blind man**] said, “LORD, I believe [**pisteuo**].” And he worshiped [**proskuneo (to kiss the hand in token of reverence)**] Him [**Jesus**].

JOHN 20:31

But these have been written [John's gospel] so that you may believe [*pisteuo*] that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing [faith in the Jesus Christ] you may have life in His name.

ROMANS 10:13

For “Whoever [*pas* (everyone)] will call [exercise positive [+P] volition] on the name [*epikaleomai* (to put a name upon)] of the LORD [*kurios*] will be saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven].”

ISAIAH 45:22

Turn to [*panah* (to turn toward) – exercise positive [+P] volition] Me and be saved [*yasha* (to be liberated)], all the ends of the earth [equal opportunity for all to be saved]; for I am God, and there is no other.

ISAIAH 28:16

Therefore thus says the LORD God, “Behold, I am laying in Zion [Jerusalem] a stone [Jesus Christ], a tested stone [Christ would pass every temptation], a costly cornerstone [*pinnah* – the cost to Christ at sin bearing] for the foundation, firmly placed. He who believes [*aman* – by faith in Christ] in it will not be disturbed [he has eternal security].”

- (11) **Holy Spirit's Grace Work.** The Holy Spirit takes the amount of faith exhaled by the unBeliever and makes it *efficacious for salvation* [Eph. 1:13; 2:8-9; Acts 18:27]. This total grace process excludes any human input. For example, if a person had 100% positive [+P] volition faith output upon hearing the Gospel *he would still not be saved* without the ministry of the Holy Spirit who takes that faith output [some amount more than zero] and makes it efficacious for salvation [Tit. 3:5]. See @@@ HOLY SPIRIT.

ACTS 18:27

And when he [Paul] wanted to go across to Achaia, the brethren encouraged him and wrote to the disciples to welcome him; and when he had arrived, he greatly helped those who had believed [*pisteuo*] through grace [*charis*].

EPHESIANS 2:8-9

For by grace [*charis* – grace is the total Plan of God] you have been saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven and guaranteed eternal security] through faith [*pistis* – the mechanics of salvation is by faith]; and that [the speck of human faith exhaled plus the entire package of what God does in grace] not of yourselves, *it is* the gift [*doron* (a gift)] of God; not as a result of [human] works [*ergon*], so that no one may boast [*kauchaomai* (to boast on account of a thing) – because God the Holy Spirit takes the individual's faith output and makes it efficacious for salvation, no one can boast about their so-called “superior” amount of faith exhaled upon hearing the Gospel].

TITUS 3:5

He [God] saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven] us [Believers], not on the basis of [our] deeds [*chrestotes* (moral goodness) – human good] which we have done in righteousness [*dikaiousune* – human righteousness [-r]], but according [*kata* (according to a norm or standard)] to His mercy [*eleos* – grace in action], by the washing [*loutron* (a bath)] of regeneration [*paliggenesia* (a new birth)] and renewing [*anakainosis* (a complete change for the better)] by the Holy Spirit [the ministry of the Holy Spirit in salvation].

- (12) **Work and Credit to God.** The Trinity does *all the work* for the salvation of the Believer and therefore gets *all the credit*. All human work is excluded to include the “faith output” issue [*supra* (10), (11)]. God the Father made the Plan of God to save and bless the Believer. God the Son executed the plan by, in hypostatic union, taking on true humanity and going to the cross. God the Holy Spirit spreads the plan to all who exhibit positive [+P] volition in their soul towards their Creator. While the spotlight focus is on Jesus Christ dying for the sins of all mankind per 1 Pet. 2:24, faith in Jesus Christ is the means that the unBeliever employs to take advantage of the work of Christ and receive eternal salvation [Isa. 28:16]. This non-meritorious faith system of perception by the hearer operates in tandem with repent, *metanoeo* (to change the mind), which simply means that the unBeliever “changes his mind” about the false claim of human good works and religion as a vehicle for salvation – “*to the one who works, his wage is not credited as a favor, but as what is due*” [Rom. 4:4] – and accepts God’s true grace opportunity.

- (13) **Always the Same.** The *means of salvation is the same* in all dispensations – nonmeritorious faith in the work of the Messiah. “*I am the way, and the truth, and the life; no one comes to the Father but through Me*” [Jn. 14:6]; Gen. 15:6; Isa. 44:22; 45:15, 21; 55:1; 1 Pet. 1:10-12; Gal. 3:8; Rom. 3:24-25 [mercy seat]; 4:1-6, 11; 9:30-33. Old Testament Believers looked forward to the Messiah’s work on the cross, New Testament Believers look back. “*And there is salvation in no one else; for there is no other name under heaven that has been given among men by which we must be saved*” [Acts 4:12].

GENESIS 15:6

Then he [Abram] believed [aman – faith] in the LORD [yehovah (the self-existing one) – Jesus Christ]; and He [God] reckoned [chashab (to credit; to impute)] it to him as righteousness [tsedaqah (righteousness as vindicated) – Abraham received God’s Righteousness [+R] and was saved].

ROMANS 4:1-6

What then shall we say that Abraham, our forefather according to the flesh, has found? For if Abraham was justified [dikaioo (to render righteous) – in the eyes of the Trinity] by works [ergon – human good deeds], he has something to boast about, but not before God. For what does the Scripture say? “Abraham believed [pisteuo] God, and it was credited [logizomai (to reckon; to credit)] to him as righteousness [dikaiosune – God’s Righteousness [+R] is imputed and Abraham is accepted into Heaven].” Now to the one who works, his wage [misthos (dues paid for work)] is not credited as a favor [charis (of merciful kindness by God) – no imputation of God’s [+R]], but as what is due [opheilema (that which is justly or legally due) – the unBeliever must have God’s [+R], which human works cannot provide]. But to the one who does not work, but believes in Him who justifies the ungodly, his faith is credited as righteousness, just as David also speaks of the blessing on the man to whom God credits righteousness apart from works.

- (14) **Unlimited Atonement.** Jesus Christ bore the sins of every member of the human race. See @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT.
- (15) **Heathenism.** All humans have an *equal opportunity* to be saved. But each must take advantage of the offer by a positive [+P] volitional choice. See Jn. 3:36; Acts 4:11-12; 1 Tim. 4:10; 1 Jn. 3:23; 5:10.

JOHN 3:36

He who believes [*pisteuo*] in the Son [*Jesus Christ*] has eternal life; but he who does not obey [*apeitheo* (to refuse or withhold belief; not to allow one's self to be persuaded)] the Son will not see life [*zoe* – no eternal life], but the wrath [*orge*] of God abides [*meno* (to remain)] on him [eternal separation in the Lake of Fire].

ACTS 4:11-12

He [*Jesus Christ*] is the stone [*lithos* (a building stone)] which was rejected by you [*Jewish religious leaders*], the builders, *but* which became the chief [*kephale* (the head)] corner stone [*gonia* (an external angle)]. And there is salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – salvation and union with Jesus Christ forever] in no one else; for there is no other name [*onoma* – Jesus Christ] under heaven that has been given [*didomi*] among men [*anthropos* (mankind)] by which we must be saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven].

1 JOHN 5:10

The one who believes [*pisteuo*] in the Son of God has the testimony [*marturia* (what one testifies before a judge)] in himself; the one who does not believe God has made Him a liar [*unBelievers falsely say that salvation is not by grace but by religion*], because he has not believed in the testimony that God has given concerning His Son.

1 JOHN 3:23

This is His [*God the Father*] commandment [*entole* (an order)], that we believe [*pisteuo*] in the name of His Son Jesus Christ, and love [*agape* – impersonal love] one another [*allelon* (one another of the same kind) – other Believers under the Law of Love], just as He [*Jesus*] commanded us.

- (16) **Rejecting Grace.** Most humans across history reject the free gift of salvation by grace. “*For many are called, but few chosen*” [Matt. 22:14]. Jesus said that the “*gate*” of rejection of God’s salvation is wide and the “*way is broad that leads to destruction (Hell), and there are many who enter through it*” [Matt. 7:13]. Apart from the fact of the unBeliever’s own negative [-N] volition to their Creator, the following also applies:

- (a) **Pride of Personal Works.** Mankind in the main hates the grace of God because grace totally excludes all human good works, merit, sincerity, emotion, and morality. All *unBelievers have a personal love for the “darkness”* [Jn. 3:19-21] *of their own good “deeds”* [Rev. 20:12; Rom. 1:32; Matt. 19:16-26] which serves as the basis for their condemnation at the Great White Throne Judgment. The false pattern of approbation of God by good deeds was set by Cain in Gen. 4:1-9. God rejected Cain’s works [his grown produce] and accepted Abel’s animal offering which anticipated the future work of Jesus Christ. See Matt. 7:21-22.

JOHN 3:19-21

This is the judgment [*krisis* (at a trial)], that the Light [*phos* – Jesus Christ] has come into the world [*kosmos*], and men [*anthropos* (mankind)] loved the darkness [*skotos* (of night darkness)] rather than the Light, for their deeds [*ergon* – human good works] were evil [*poneros* – the unBeliever with his own righteousness [-r] is in the Cosmic Systems and is attracted only to human good]. For everyone who does [*prasso* (to practice)] evil [*phaulos* (worthlessness; wickedness)] hates the Light [the unBeliever loves religion and hates grace], and does not come to the Light for fear that his deeds will be exposed [*elegcho* (to refute, generally with shame) – the human works of the unBeliever are not acceptable to God]. But he [the Believer saved by faith and possessing the Righteousness [+R] of God] who practices [*poieo* (to produce)] the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – the Believer on positive [+P] volition to learning Bible Doctrine] comes to the Light, so that his deeds [*ergon* – Divine Good production] may be manifested [*phaneroo* (to make visible)] as having been wrought in God.

MATTHEW 7:21-23

“Not everyone who says to Me [Jesus Christ], ‘LORD, LORD,’ will enter the kingdom of heaven [no salvation], but he who does the will [*thelema* – you must believe in Jesus Christ] of My Father who is in heaven will enter. Many will say to Me on that day [unBeliever at the Great White Throne Judgment], ‘LORD, LORD, did we not prophesy in Your name, and in Your name cast out demons, and in Your name perform many miracles [Judas the unBeliever did such]? And then I will declare to them, “I never knew you]; DEPART FROM ME, YOU WHO PRACTICE LAWLESSNESS [*anomia* (contempt and violation of law) – the unBeliever rejected God’s grace].”

- (b) **Negative Volition.** Negative [-N] volition will not respond to the grace offer of God regardless of any condition [2 Cor. 4:3-6; Jn. 5:39-40].
- (c) **Hate God.** An irrational hatred of the living God [Prov. 8:36; Ps. 14:1].
- (17) **False Claims – Salvation by Works.** The antithesis of grace, many false “Christian teachers” hinder and even blot out the truth of the Gospel by false dogma which embraces religion and human good works – *ergon* [Eph. 2:9; Gal. 5:7-9]. *“I do not nullify the grace of God, for if righteousness comes through the Law, then Christ died needlessly”* [Gal. 2:21]. Falsehoods:
- (a) **Self-Esteem Gospel.** Salvation is achieved by becoming “*your best self*,” i.e., changing one’s behavior pattern to live a better life under a philosophy of self-sufficiency and so-called “*positive thinking*.” The rich young ruler illustrates this matter of arrogance: “*Teacher, what good thing shall I do that I may obtain eternal life?*” [Matt. 19:16].
- (b) **Corporate Works Gospel.** The adherent must *join a Church* and/or engage in a variety of Church works and functions to include a regular “tithing” of money.
- (c) **Lordship Gospel.** Also known as “*invite Christ into the heart*,” proponents insist that the Believer must “*submit*” to Jesus as Lord of their life as a part of Gospel hearing and thereafter. The self-righteous *concern* of these legalists is that a person may profess faith in Christ but then continue to live an immoral life. In tandem, they grossly distort Matt. 25:34-46 [a passage that has nothing to do with salvation], insisting on good works as required evidence of salvation. Of course, there is no set gauge in the “Lordship” crowd on how much a person must refrain from sin and engage in good works to make Jesus “Lord” [Heb. 12:17; Jer. 17:9]. In reality, per Union with Christ, *Jesus is their LORD whether the Believer ever realizes it or not*.
- (d) **Ritual Works Gospel.** Requiring the adherent to *perform rituals in addition to the Gospel*, such as water baptism or circumcision. This is the subject of *Galatians*. Disgusted with this nonsense, Paul told the already saved Galatians in sarcasm to not just get circumcised to be “saved,” but to imitate their former heathen priests and “*cut off*” their entire testicles to “really” get saved [Gal. 5:12 KJV]!

- (e) **Social Justice Gospel.** The emphasis for salvation is on *changing the world into a better place* by eradicating injustice, ending poverty, promoting “equality,” ending war, saving the planet, etc. Some adherents also claim that such activities will hasten the 2nd Advent of Jesus Christ and the Millennium rule. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS.
 - (f) **Religious Works Gospel.** The adherent is saved by keeping the Mosaic Law, being moral, engaging in asceticism, or following *man-made taboos*. “*But in vain do they worship Me, teaching as doctrines the precepts of men*” [Matt. 15:9]; Rom. 3:20, 28; Gal. 2:16.
 - (g) **Psychological Works Gospel.** The adherent must come forward in a *public affirmation feeling sorry for sin and making public confession of sin*. None of these things are required for salvation.
- (18) **What Think Ye of Christ?** The only issue in salvation is set out in Matt. 22:42; 26:66. “*What do you think about the Christ?*” Are Jesus’ claims to be the promised Messiah who would die for the sins of the world true or not true [Rom. 10:17; Acts 16:31]? To view Jesus as merely a “good” person that should be emulated is not a logical option. He is either the Son of God and Savior as claimed or a great deceiver. The unBeliever Jews of His day rejected Him: “*For a good work we do not stone You, but for blasphemy; and because You, being a man, make Yourself out to be God*” [Jn. 10:33].

ACTS 16:31

They [Paul and Silas] said, “Believe [*pisteuo*] in the LORD Jesus, and you will be saved [*sozo* (delivered) – into the Kingdom of Heaven], you and your household [*they should all do the same if they desire salvation*].”

- (19) **Romans 10:6-13.** Understanding Paul’s salvation dissertation in *Romans*.

ROMANS 10:9-10

That if you confess with your mouth [*stoma* – the verbal utterance of thoughts] Jesus as LORD, and believe in your heart that God raised Him from the dead, you will be saved [*sozo* – salvation]; for with the heart a person believes, resulting in righteousness [*dikaiosisune* – God’s Righteousness [+R] is imputed to the Believer], and with the mouth he confesses, resulting in salvation.*

- * The Apostle Paul is speaking about the issue of the Jews' salvation picking up from his earlier dissertation in Rom. 9:30. Rom. 10:6, quotes Deut. 30:12. Then, Rom. 10:7, quotes Amos 9:2 [Paul didn't continue with Deut. 30:13 because only in Moses' day was the overseas unreachable]. Rom. 10:8, quotes Deut. 30:14. Rom. 10:9, refers to Jews who rely on Deut. 6:4; 30:10, for salvation by performing ritual without reality. Rom. 10:10-13 shows metaphors of positive [+P] volition from the unBeliever and the subsequent ministry of the Holy Spirit to save him. Bottom line: Confession of belief is to God, not to people. At best it is a result! The "*confess with your mouth*" is simply a metaphor for belief via the positive [+P] volition in the soul towards the Gospel. Note: *The mute are also saved!* See Rom. 3:27-30.
- (20) **Gospel is Free.** The Gospel is free and *not for sale*. See 2 Cor. 11:7-8; Mic. 3:11; Prov. 23:23; Eph. 1:13; Col. 1:5; Jas. 1:18.
- (21) **Eternal Security.** A Believer *cannot get unsaved* under any circumstances, regardless of his lifestyle. There is only the potential for loss of his "*rewards*" [1 Cor. 3:14; 2 Jn. 8] held in escrow. See @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY.
- (22) **Eternal Separation.** Rejection of Jesus Christ's work on the cross is the basis for *God's judgment on the unBeliever* [Jn. 3:18; Gal. 1:8]. Rejection of the Gospel, "*concerning sin, because they do not believe in Me*" [Jn. 16:9], is the only unpardonable sin, which constitutes "*blasphemy*" [Matt. 12:31-32] against the Holy Spirit's ministry of making the Gospel efficacious for salvation. "*Therefore I said to you that you will die in your sins; for unless you believe that I am He, you will die in your sins*" [Jn. 8:24].

MATTHEW 12:31-32

Therefore I [Jesus] say to you, any sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven people [unBelievers], but blasphemy against the [Holy] Spirit shall not be forgiven. Whoever speaks a word against the Son of Man, it shall be forgiven him; but whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him [the unpardonable sin is rejection of the Holy Spirit's ministry of salvation], either in this age or in the age to come.

- (23) **Forty Things at Salvation.** God does at least Forty Things for the Believer at the second of salvation. See @@@ FORTY THINGS.

@@@ SEPARATION

- (1) **Definition.** For born again Believers their “*citizenship is in Heaven*” [Phil. 3:20], even though *they live in the world* and must interact with unBelievers in day-to-day social and work-related contacts to include witnessing to them [1 Cor. 5:9-10]. Therefore, the Biblical concept of “separation” primarily refers to a *mental separation* from the viewpoints of the Cosmic Systems. In some extreme circumstances, however, separation may require the Believer to engage in actual physical departure from certain fellow humans, to include “**Loser**” Believers [Matt. 10:34-39]. See @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS.

MATTHEW 10:34-35

Do not think that I [Jesus Christ] came to bring peace [*eirene (exemption from the rage and havoc of war; peace between individuals)*] on the earth; I did not come to bring peace, but a sword [Bible Doctrine is dogmatic about the mechanics of salvation by grace and God’s truth and therefore a great divider of people]. For I came to set a man against his father, and a daughter against her mother, and a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law.

1 CORINTHIANS 5:9-10

I [Paul] wrote you [Believer] in my letter not to associate [*sunanamignumi (to keep company with) – keep friendships*] with immoral people; I *did* not at all *mean* with the immoral people of this world [*kosmos – the world is primarily filled with unBelievers*], or with the covetous [*pleonektes (one eager to have what belongs to another)*] and swindlers [*harpax (an extortioner; a robber)*], or with idolaters [*eidololatres (a worshipper of false gods)*], for then you would have to go out of the world.

- (2) **Carnal Believer.** The positive [+P] volition Believer must separate from close relationships with the perpetual carnal individual who engages in lascivious activity [1 Cor. 5:11-13], e.g., those who overtly practice adultery, homosexuality, fornication, drunkenness, gossip, incest, etc. This also may include members of the “fast” party crowd who constantly seek stimulation in the details of life. “*In all this, they are surprised that you do not run with them into the same excesses of dissipation and they malign you.*” [1 Pet. 4:4]; Prov. 1:10-19; 20:19; Jer. 15:17. Ideally, the Believer should keep close company with positive [+P] volition Believers [Ps. 119:63]!

1 CORINTHIANS 5:11-13

But actually, I [Paul] wrote [grapho] to you not to associate [sunanamignumi (to keep company with)] with any so-called [onomazo (to name)] brother [adelphos – a Loser Believer] if he is an immoral person [pornos (a man who prostitutes his body to another's lust for hire)], or covetous [pleonektes (one eager to have what belongs to another)], or an idolater [eidololatres (a worshipper of false gods)], or a reviler [loidoros (one who causes mischief)], or a drunkard [methusos (one intoxicated)], or a swindler [harpax (an extortioner; a robber)]—not even to eat with such a one. For what have I to do with judging [krino] outsiders? Do you not judge [krino] those who are within the church? But those who are outside [exo], God judges [krino]. Remove the wicked man [Loser Believer] from among yourselves.

PROVERBS 20:6, 19

Many a man proclaims his own loyalty, but who can find a trustworthy man? ... He who goes about as a slanderer reveals secrets, therefore do not associate with a gossip.

- (3) **Loser Believer.** Positive [+P] volition Believers must separate from those Believers who are marked by their consistent rejection of Bible Doctrine. See 2 Thess. 3:6, 14-15; Prov. 13:20; Heb. 13:13.

2 THESSALONIANS 3:6

Now we [Paul and his traveling seminary] command [praggello (to send a command message)] you, brethren [adelphos – the Believer], in the name [anoma] of our LORD Jesus Christ, that you keep away from every brother [adelphos – the Loser Believer on negative [-N] volition to Bible Doctrine] who leads [peripateo (a lifestyle)] an unruly [ataktos (out of ranks; disorderly)] life and not according to the tradition [paradosis (what is delivered) – the Bible Doctrine] which you received [paralambano (to accept or acknowledge)] from us.

- (4) **Bible Doctrine is Compromised.** As part of his Christian Way of Life, Believers must separate from close social contact with unBelievers or other negative [-N] volition **Loser** Believers when Bible Doctrine is compromised [2 Cor. 6:14]. See @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.

2 CORINTHIANS 6:14

Do not be bound together [*heterozugeo* (to be unequally yoked)] with unbelievers [*apistos*]; for what partnership [*metoche* (a sharing)] have righteousness [*dikaiosune* – the Believer possesses God’s Righteousness [+R]] and lawlessness [*anomia* (wickedness; contempt and violation of the law) – the unBeliever rejects God’s grace and does not possess His [+R]], or what fellowship [*koinonia* (association)] has light [*phos* – the Divine Dynasphere] with darkness [*skotos* – the Cosmic Systems is where the unBeliever resides]?

- (5) **Apostate Religious Organizations.** Believers are commanded to physically separate from *apostate religious organizations* and the legalists who populate them [2 Cor. 6:17; Jn. 10:40-42; Matt. 24:1-2; 2 Tim. 3:5]. The infection of religion in a church hampers the Believer’s growth to spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1]. The positive [+P] Believer should *quickly and quietly leave* the apostate “church” without judging anyone. See @@@ RELIGION.

2 CORINTHIANS 6:17

“Therefore, come out from their midst and be separate [*aphorizo* (to mark off from others by boundaries) – separate from the evil of religion],” says the LORD. “And do not touch what is unclean; and I will welcome [*eisdechomai* (to receive kindly)] you.”

MATTHEW 24:1-2

Jesus came out from the temple and was going away when His disciples came up to point out the temple buildings to Him [*they were impressed with the grandeur of religion*]. And He said to them, “Do you not see all these things? Truly I say to you, not one stone here will be left upon another, which will not be torn down [*Rome destroyed the Temple in A.D. 70*].”

2 TIMOTHY 3:5

Holding to a form of godliness [*eusebeia* (respect towards God) – practicing religion], although they have denied its power [*dunamis* (inherent power) – rejection of Bible Doctrine]; avoid [*apotrepo* (to turn one’s self away from)] such men as these.

- (6) **Human Good.** Believers must forever guard against and separate themselves from the onslaught of human viewpoint washed in human good in all of its many manifestations [Rom. 12:1-2; 16:17-18]. See @@@ GOOD.

ROMANS 16:17

Now I [Paul] urge you, brethren, keep your eye on [*skopeo* (to mark; direct one's attention to)] those who cause dissensions [*dichostasia* (division)] and hindrances [*skandalon* (any instrument placed in the way and causing one to stumble)] contrary to the teaching [*didache* (that which is taught)] which you learned [*manthano* (to learn) – Bible Doctrine], and turn away [*ekklino* (to turn aside)] from them.

- (7) **Church and State.** There must be a separation of the functions of the local church and the State [Mk. 12:17].

MARK 12:17

And Jesus said to them [Pharisees and Herodians], “Render [*apodidomi* (to discharge what is due)] to Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and to God the things that are God's.” And they were amazed at Him.

- (8) **Do Not Flaunt.** The primary command for Believers to love other members of the human race is fulfilled by the use of *agape impersonal love*. This means that the positive [+P] volition Believer must maintain a relaxed mental attitude at all times. In addition, when a Believer physically separates, he *must do so without fanfare and not practice his* “[self] righteousness” [Matt. 6:1] before men as human ego and religion always advocate.

MATTHEW 6:1

Beware [*prosecho* (to bring a ship to land; to turn the mind to)] of practicing [*poieo* (to make)] your [the Believer] righteousness [*dikaiosisune* – legitimate actions] before men to be noticed [*theaomai* (of important persons that are looked on with admiration)] by them [the motivation is not to please God but to promote self-righteousness [-r]]; otherwise you have no reward [*misthos* (dues paid for work) – human righteousness [-r] has no rewards from God] with your Father who is in heaven [*ouranos*].

@@@ SIN

- (1) **Definition.** Sin constitutes any thinking or action by volitional creatures [human and angelic] that transgresses the Perfect Holiness of God. “*For the wages of sin is [spiritual] death*” [Rom. 6:23]. See also Rom. 3:23. See @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS; @@@ GOOD.

ROMANS 3:23

For all have sinned [*hamartano*] and fall short [*hustereo* (to be left behind in the race) – human righteousness [-r]] of the glory [*doxa* – the essence of the Holy Trinity to include His Perfect Righteousness [+R]] of God.

- (2) **All Humans Sin.** All have sinned and *all will continue to sin* – “*for there is no man who does not sin*” [1 Kngs. 8:46]; Eccl. 7:20-21; Rom. 3:10, 23; 1 Jn. 1:7-10; 2:1; 1 Cor. 3:1-3; Jer. 7:20; Ps. 119:29. This applies to Believers and unBelievers. The only exception was Jesus Christ in hypostatic union during the incarnation. Thus, since every Christian is a sinner with an Old Sin Nature, which constantly tempts the Believer to commit personal sin, it is utterly impossible not to sin. As a practical matter, the Believer will sin often and must use Rebound often. See @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION.

ECCLESIASTES 7:20

Indeed, there is not a righteous [*tsaddiyq* (just; righteous) – human works of righteousness [-r]] man on earth who continually does [Divine] good [*tob*] and who never sins [*chata*].

1 JOHN 1:8

If we [Believers] say that we have no sin [*hamartia* – the Old Sin Nature], we are deceiving [*planao* (to cause to go astray)] ourselves and the truth [*aletheia* (what is true under matter in consideration)] is not in us.

1 JOHN 1:10

If we [Church Age Believers] say that we have not sinned [*hamartano* – Believers still commit personal sins], we make Him a liar [*pseustes*] and His word [*logos* – Bible Doctrine] is not in us.

(3) **Three Expressions of Sin.** Sin comes in three categories.

(a) **Overt Sins.** See 1 Cor. 6:9-10.

1 CORINTHIANS 6:9-10

Or do you not know that the unrighteous [*adikos* (one who violates the mandates of justice) – the unBeliever] will not inherit the kingdom of God [salvation]? Do not be deceived [about unBelievers]; neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate [*malakos* (a catamite)], nor homosexuals, nor thieves, nor *the* covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor swindlers, will inherit the kingdom of God [the unBeliever and Believer both sin per the above list, but the unBeliever sinner is doomed].

(b) **Mental Attitude Sins** [MAS]. See Matt. 5:21-45.

(c) **Sins of the Tongue** [SOTT]. See Jas. 3:6.

(4) **Against God.** Other people may well be involved in the sin that a Believer commits [overt sins in particular], but *all sin is against the Perfect Holiness of God* – “*you have sinned against the LORD*” [Num. 32:23]. “*Against You, You only, I have sinned*” [Ps. 51:4]. “*When they sin against You*” [1 Kngs. 8:46]. “*Why is it that you have conceived this deed in your heart? You have not lied to men but to God*” [Acts 5:4]; Ps. 119:11; 2 Sam. 12:13. “*Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in your sight*” [Lk. 15:17-20]. Analogy: violations of a State’s criminal code are against the State.

ACTS 5:4

While it remained *unsold*, did it not remain your own? And after it was sold, was it not under your control? Why is it that you have conceived this deed in your heart [Ananias falsely claimed he had given the entire profit from a land sale to the Jerusalem Church]? You have not lied to men but to God.

2 SAMUEL 12:13

Then David said to Nathan [the Prophet], “I have sinned [*chata*] against the LORD.” And Nathan said to David, “The LORD also has taken away [*abar* (to pass over)] your sin; you shall not die [*muth* – sin unto death].”

PSALM 51:4

Against You [**God**], You only, I [**David**] have sinned and done what is evil in Your sight, so that You are justified [*tsadaq (to be righteous)*] when You speak and blameless [*zakah (to be pure)*] when You judge.

- (5) **Temptations to Sin.** Most temptations to commit personal sin originate from each person's OSN [Jas. 4:1]. Nevertheless, it is the human volition that is the *gatekeeper of the soul* and hence the responsible source of all sin. Known or unknown, the Believer wanted to do, and agreed to do, the sin before he actually committed it. See 1 Jn. 1:7-9; cf. 5:18; Mk. 7:21-23. “*Therefore do not let sin reign in your mortal body so that you obey its lusts*” [Rom. 6:12]

MARK 7:21-23

For from within, out of the heart [*kardia – the Old Sin Nature*] of men [*anthropos (mankind)*], proceed [*ekporeuomai (to go forth)*] the evil [*kakos*] thoughts, fornications, thefts, murders, adulteries, deeds of coveting and wickedness, as well as deceit, sensuality, envy, slander, pride and foolishness. All these evil things proceed from within [*esothen*] and defile [*koinoo (to make unclean)*] the man.

- (6) **Three Categories of Sin.** The Greek word *hamartia* is translated “*sin*” in the Bible. The word is used to stand for three different concepts.
- (a) **First – Adam's Original Sin.** Adam's original sin is now *passed down genetically via copulation* to all subsequent humans. “*Therefore, just as through one man sin entered into the world*” [Rom. 5:12]; Jn. 1:29.

ROMANS 5:12

Therefore, just as through one man [**Adam**] sin [*hamartia – the Old Sin Nature*] entered [*eiserchomai (to come in or go out)*] into the world [*kosmos – Satan is the ruler of the world*], and death [*thanatos (physical death with the implied idea of future misery in hell) – Spiritual Death*] through sin [*hamartia*], and so death [*thanatos (death with implied idea of future misery in hell) – Spiritual Death*] spread [*dierchomai (to travel the road which leads through a place; to pass to)*] to all men [*anthropos (mankind)*], because all sinned [*hamartano – Adam's Old Sin Nature and human personal sin*].

- (b) **Second** – **The Old Sin Nature.** From birth, the OSN *resides in the cell structure of the physical body* of all humans [Rom. 5:21; 1 Jn. 1:8].
- (c) **Third** – **Human Personal Sin.** Rom. 5:13; 1 Jn.1:10; 2:2; Eph. 1:7.
- (7) **Murder.** Murder is the ultimate overt sin [Prov. 6:16-19]. “***You shall not commit murder***” [Matt. 5:21]. See Ex. 20:13; Deut. 5:17.
 - (a) **Satan.** Satan “*was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth*” [Jn. 8:44]; 1 Jn. 3:12; Gen. 4:5.
 - (b) **Cain.** MAS motivated the first murder in history. Cain used his volition to sin. “*Then the LORD said to Cain, ‘Why are you angry? And why has your countenance fallen? If you do well, will not your countenance be lifted up? And if you do not do well, sin (Old Sin Nature) is crouching at the door; and its desire is for you, but you must master it’*” [Gen. 4:6-7]; Rom. 1:29; Gal. 5:21.
 - (c) **The Law.** The Mosaic Law prohibits murder – an unlawful killing [Ex. 2:14, *harag (murder)*; Deut. 5:17, *ratsach (murder)*]. The Hebrew word kill is *quatala (to kill)* or *qetal (to kill)* and is not prohibited.
 - (d) **Death Penalty.** Capital punishment is authorized for the State to punish murderers. See Gen. 9:6; Num. 30-31; Rom. 13:4; Matt. 26:52.
- (8) **Mental Attitude Sin.** Of the *seven worst sins listed in the Bible*, six are linked to MAS [the only overt sin listed is murder]! Prov. 6:16-19.

PROVERBS 6:16-19

There are six things which the LORD hates, yes, seven which are an abomination to Him: haughty eyes, a lying tongue, and hands that shed innocent blood, a heart that devises wicked plans, feet that run rapidly to evil, a false witness *who* utters lies, and one who spreads strife among brothers.

- (a) **Misery.** MAS cause others around you to be miserable. See Prov. 21:19; 22:24; 25:24; 29:22; Amos 1:11.
- (b) **Hinders Growth.** MAS leads to reversionism [Eph. 4:31; Col. 3:8].

- (c) **Strongest.** Jealousy is the strongest of the MAS – Hebrew *qinah* (to burn up) – and had a whole Levitical offering devoted to it [Num. 5:11-13]. Implacability, bitterness, and hatred, MAS destroy love [S.S. 8:6].
- (d) **Wreaks the Soul.** MAS can wreak the soul [Prov. 14:30; Job 4:2]. MAS reflect negative [-N] volition and rejection of Bible Doctrine. *“But when the Jews saw the crowds, they were filled with jealousy and began contradicting the things spoken by Paul, and were blaspheming”* [Acts 13:45]; Rom. 1:28-29; Acts 13:45.
- (e) **Jesus.** MAS motivated the Jewish religious leaders to plot to murder Jesus – *“because of envy they had handed Him over”* [Matt. 27:18].
- (f) **Clusters.** MAS always travel in clusters and *spawn many types of overt sins* [Prov. 24:1-2]. Anger is a strong element in chain sinning [Heb. 12:15] and is tantamount to “mental” murder [Matt. 5:21-22].

MATTHEW 5:21-22

You have heard that the ancients were told, “You shall not commit murder” and “Whoever commits murder shall be liable to the court [civil court].” But I [Jesus] say to you that everyone who is angry with his brother shall be guilty before the court [God’s judgment]; and whoever says to his brother, “You good-for-nothing [rhaka (a term of reproach)]” shall be guilty before the supreme court [God’s Discipline on sins of the tongue]; and whoever says, “You fool [moros (foolish; godless) – unbelievers that denounce the Gospel as false]” shall be guilty enough to go into the fiery hell [the Lake of Fire].

- (9) **Sins of the Tongue.** SOTT are always a result of MAS in the soul and can do *tremendous damage*. *“And the tongue is a fire, the very world of iniquity; the tongue is set among our members as that which defiles the entire body, and sets on fire the course of our life”* [Jas. 3:6] so that their *“throat is an open grave; they flatter with their tongue”* [Ps. 5:9]; Ps. 34:13.
 - (a) **High.** Of the seven worst sins listed in Prov. 6:16-19, three are SOTT.
 - (b) **Triple Play.** SOTT cause triple discipline: (1) self-induced misery to you the subject; (2) Divine Discipline Suffering; and (3) *any discipline due to the object also goes to you*. See Matt. 7:1-3; Ps. 64:8!

MATTHEW 7:1-3

Do not judge so that you will not be judged [**Divine Discipline Suffering for unconfessed sin**]. For in the way you judge, you will be judged; and by your standard of measure, it will be measured to you [**double portion Discipline**]. Why do you look at the speck [*karphos* (a twig)] that is in your brother's eye, but do not notice the log [*dokos* (a beam of timber)] that is in your own eye?

- (c) **Early Check Out.** SOTT can lead to an early death [Ps. 12:3; Jn. 5:16-17], but life is extended by avoiding SOTT [Ps. 34:12-13; 1 Pet. 3:10].
- (d) **God Protects.** God protects the Believer when the object of SOTT. *“You will be hidden from the scourge of the tongue”* [Job 5:21].
- (e) **Troublemakers.** Troublemakers are known by their SOTT. *“For we hear that some among you are leading an undisciplined life, doing no work at all, but acting like busybodies”* [2 Thess. 3:10-12]; Ps. 52:2. MAS can split nations apart [Isa. 11:13].
- (f) **Control.** Control and *mastery over SOTT is a sign of the Believer's spiritual maturity*. See Jas. 2:12-13; Col. 4:6; Eccl. 7:20-22; Matt. 16:20. *“Let no unwholesome word proceed from your mouth, but only such a word as is good for edification according to the need of the moment, so that it will give grace to those that hear”* [Eph. 4:29].

COLOSSIANS 4:6

Let your speech always be with grace, *as though* seasoned with salt [*halas – use prudence*], so that you will know how you should respond to each person.

MATTHEW 16-20

Jesus said, “Are you still lacking in understanding also? Do you not understand that everything that goes into the mouth passes into the stomach, and is eliminated? But the things that proceed out of the mouth come from the heart [*kardia – the Old Sin Nature*], and those defile [*koinoo* (profane; defile)] the man. For out of the heart come evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, slanders. These are the things which defile the man; but to eat with unwashed hands does not defile the man.”

JAMES 2:12-13

So speak and so act [Believer] as those who are to be judged by *the* law of liberty. For judgment *will be* merciless to one who has shown no mercy [*eleos* – the negative [-N] volition Believer that does not act in grace will be subject to the sin unto death and forfeit rewards]; mercy triumphs over judgment.

ECCLESIASTES 7:20-22

Indeed, there is not a righteous [*tsaddiyq* (just; righteous) – human works of righteousness [-r]] man on earth who *continually* does [Divine] good and who never sins. Also, do not take seriously all words which are spoken [the Believer must have a relaxed mental attitude grace orientation to life], so that you will not hear your servant cursing [*qalal* (to be lightly esteemed; to make despicable)] you [the grace oriented Believer will disregard their loose talk]. For you also have realized that you likewise have many times cursed others.

- (10) **Unlimited Atonement.** Jesus Christ suffered Spiritual Death as a substitute for all human sin – trillions and trillions – in every single category [Gal. 3:22]. See @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT. *But see infra* (11).

GALATIANS 3:22

But the Scripture has shut up everyone under sin [*hamartia* – the Bible clearly states that man is a sinner with an Old Sin Nature and God is Perfect], so that the promise by faith [*pistis* – salvation by faith alone in Christ alone] in Jesus Christ might be given to those who believe [*pisteuo* – saving faith].

- (11) **The Unpardonable Sin.** “Behold, all souls are Mine; ... The soul who sins (rejects the Gospel) *will die* (Spiritual Death)” [Ezk. 18:4]. Also known as “blasphemy against the [Holy] Spirit” [Matt. 12:31-32], the **unpardonable sin** is solely related to the rejection of Jesus Christ as Savior which is tantamount to rejection of the Holy Spirit’s mission of making the Gospel efficacious for salvation [Lk. 12:10; Mk. 3:28-29; Jn. 3:19-21], hence *blasphemy against the Holy Spirit is the one sin that Christ did not die for on the cross*. It is God the Holy Spirit who convicts “concerning sin, because they do not believe in Me” [Jn. 16:8-9]. “Therefore I said to you that you will die in your sins; for unless you believe that I am He, you will die in your sins” [Jn. 8:24].

MATTHEW 12:31-32

Therefore I [**Jesus Christ**] say to you, any sin and blasphemy [*blasphemia*] shall be forgiven people [**unBelievers**], but blasphemy against the [**Holy**] Spirit shall not be forgiven. Whoever speaks a word against the Son of Man, it shall be forgiven him; but whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him [**the unpardonable sin is rejection of the Holy Spirit's ministry of providing the Gospel**], either in this age or in the *age* to come.

- (12) **Rebound.** Although “*Fools mock at sin*” [Prov. 14:9], *all sin has an associated price tag* of discipline. “*God is not mocked; for whatever a man sows, this he will also reap*” [Gal. 6:7]. However, the Believer’s personal sins in time are handled through the use of the Rebound technique which converts Divine Discipline Suffering to Divine Suffering for Blessing. *See* 1 Jn. 1:9.
- (13) **Countering Sin.** Increased knowledge and application of Bible Doctrine blunts sin. *See* Ps. 119:11. *See* @@@ **MATURITY**.

PSALM 119:11

Your [**God**] word [**Bible Doctrine**] I have treasured in my heart, that I may not sin against You.

- (14) **Human Volition and Sin.**
- (a) **Free Will Choices.** All sin, know or unknown, involves the function of the human volition, either positive [**+P**] or negative [**-N**]. The original sins of Adam and Eve came from negative [**-N**] volition in their souls. They had no Old Sin Nature. After their first sin, however, they immediately acquired the Old Sin Nature.
 - (b) **Responsibility.** The Old Sin Nature never produces a sin in which the human volition was not involved. *See* @@@ **REBOUND**.
 - (c) **Ignorance is No Excuse.** Ignorance of a sin does not change the principle that a man commits a sin by *an act of his own free will*. The person wanted to do it and did it, e.g., Eve [Gen. 3:13; 1 Tim. 2:14].
-

@@@ SIN UNTO DEATH

- (1) **Definition.** The “*sin leading to [unto (KJV)] death*” [1 Jn. 5:16], also known as Divine discipline unto death, is a technical theological term to describe the imposition by God of a maximum amount of Divine Discipline Suffering to the Believer who has gone into reversionism resulting in his Physical Death. See Jn. 15:1-8; Ps. 118:17-18; Ezk. 18:21-32. The sin unto death process may take a number of years of intense suffering or it may be immediate. “*Now when he (an Old Testament prophet who disobeyed God’s instructions) had gone, a lion met him on the way and killed him, and his body was thrown on the road*” [1 Kngs. 13:24]. “*And fire came out from the presence of the LORD and consumed them (the priests Nadab and Abihu disobeyed God’s law) and they died before the LORD*” [Lev. 10:2]; Eph. 4:17-18; Rev. 3:20.

1 JOHN 5:16

If anyone sees his brother [a Believer] committing a sin not *leading* to death [*thanatos* – Physical Death], he shall ask and God will for him give life to those who commit sin [*hamartano*] not *leading* to death. There is a sin *leading* to death [*thanatos* – the sin unto death for the Believer in reversionism]; I [John] do not say that he should make request for this.

JOHN 15:1-2

I [Jesus Christ] am the true vine, and My Father is the vinedresser. Every branch [*klema* (a tender and flexible branch) – a Believer] in Me that does not bear fruit [the negative [-N] Believer in reversionism], He takes away [by the sin unto death]; and every branch that bears fruit [the positive [+P] volition Believer], He prunes it [*kathairo* (to prune trees and vines from useless shoots) – this Believer is the recipient of Divine Suffering for Blessing] so that it may bear more fruit [the testing allows the Believer to reach maturity and rewards].

- (2) **God Desires Rewards but Will Judge.** Under the Plan of God, it is God’s Divine Will for every Believer to “*press on to maturity*” [Heb. 6:1] and to receive fantastic rewards in time and eternity, *not to be judged as a worthless child of God* and die the horrible sin unto death. “*Do not complain, brethren, against one another, so that you yourself may not be judged; behold the Judge is standing right at the door*” [Jas. 5:9]; Eccl. 7:17-18; Jer. 10:23-24. Indeed, the Loser Believer is “*close to being cursed*” [Heb. 6:8].

JEREMIAH 10:23-24

I know, O LORD, that a man's way is not in himself [human viewpoint of life], nor is it in a man who walks to direct his steps. Correct me, O LORD, but with justice [*mishpat* (the act of deciding a case) – Divine Suffering for Blessing]; not with Your anger [Divine Discipline Suffering], or you will bring me to nothing [no maturity, no rewards, only the sin unto death].

ECCLESIASTES 7:17-18

Do not be excessively wicked [stay out of the Cosmic Systems] and do not be a fool [*sakal* – do not reject Bible Doctrine]. Why should you [a Believer] die before your time [*eth* – the sin unto death]? It is good that you grasp one thing [dedication to reach maturity and rewards] and also not let go of the other [living a long and fruitful life]; for the one who fears God [*yare* (to revere) – the Believer on positive [+P] volition] comes forth with both of them.

- (3) **Candidates.** Candidates for the sin unto death are those Believers *that were once positive to Bible Doctrine* but then turned away to live in the Cosmic Systems. “*No one, after putting his hand to the plow and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God*” [Lk. 9:62]; 2 Pet. 2:20-22; Num. 31:8-20; 1 Chron. 10:13-14; Rev. 3:15-16. “*Grievous punishment is for him who forsakes the way; He who hates reproof* (will not respond to God's Divine Discipline) *will die*” [Prov. 15:10]. “*I have cursed them* (Levitical priests) *... and I will spread refuse* (*peresh* (fecal matter)) *on your faces*” [Mal. 2:2-3]. Note: under no situation can any Believer lose his salvation [2 Pet. 2:1].

2 PETER 2:20

For if, after they [a Believer] have escaped the defilements [*miasma* (moral foulness)] of the world [*kosmos* – the Cosmic Systems] by the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge) – the Believer moves towards spiritual maturity by learning Bible Doctrine] of the LORD and Savior Jesus Christ [the Bible is “the mind of Christ”], they are again entangled [*empleko* (to weave)] in them and are overcome [the Believer turned to negative [-N] volition and entered into reversionism which put him back into the Cosmic Systems], the last state has become worse for them than the first [this once positive [+P] volition Believer is now a Loser Believer and instead of representing God as a light to the world, he is now under the sin unto death].

REVELATION 3:15-16

I [Jesus Christ] know your [Believers in Laodicea] deeds, that you are neither cold [*psuchros* – an unBeliever] nor hot [*zestos* (boiling hot) – a Believer on positive [+P] volition to the Word of God]; I wish [*ophelon*] that you were cold [the unBeliever can be given the Gospel] or hot [a positive [+P] volition Believer can be given Bible Doctrine]. So because you are lukewarm [*chliaros* (tepid condition) – negative [-N] volition Believer in reversionism], and neither hot nor cold, I will spit [*emeo* (vomit)] you out of My mouth [Divine Discipline Suffering leading to the horrible sin unto death].

LUKE 9:62

But Jesus said to him [the negative [-N] volition Believer], “No one, after putting his hand to the plow [a Believer that was once on positive [+P] volition to Bible Doctrine] and looking back [*opiso* – a Believer in reversionism], is fit [*euthetos* (useful)] for the kingdom of God [Loser Believers do not represent God on this earth].”

(4) **Case Histories.** Selected case histories of the sin unto death.

- (a) **Son and Mother.** The Believer engaged in the overt sin of habitual incest with his mother [1 Cor. 5:5-7]. Satan’s demons were allowed to administer the discipline.

1 CORINTHIANS 5:5

I [Paul] have decided to deliver such a one [a Believer having sexual relations with his own mother] to Satan for the destruction [*olethros*] of his flesh [*sarx* – the sin unto death], so that his [human] spirit [*pneuma*] may be saved [*sozo* (to deliver)] in the day of the LORD Jesus [at the Rapture].

- (b) **Ananias and Sapphira.** A husband and wife, for lying about giving the entire proceeds from a property sale to the Jerusalem Church. This was a demonstration of God’s protection of the early Church from mental attitude sins. When individually confronted with their sin by Peter, each “*fell down and breathed*” their “*last*” [Acts 5:1-10]. The two had approbation lust and envied Barnabas who had sold his property and given all the funds to the Church [Acts 4:36-37].

- (c) **Hymenaeus and Alexander.** For perverting Bible Doctrine [1 Tim. 1:19-20, 2 Tim. 2:17-18]. Among other false teachings, apostates Hymenaeus and Philetus claimed that the Rapture had already occurred.

1 TIMOTHY 1:19-20

Keeping faith [**Bible Doctrine**] and a good conscience, which some [**Loser Believers**] have rejected and suffered shipwreck in regard to their faith. Among these are Hymenaeus and Alexander, whom I [**Paul**] have handed over to Satan [**sin unto death**], so that they will be taught not to blaspheme.

- (d) **King Saul.** For staying in reversionism. *“So Saul died for his trespass which he committed against the LORD, because of the word of the LORD which he did not keep; and also because he asked counsel of a medium, making inquiry of it”* [1 Chron. 10:13-14]; 1 Sam. 13:9-14; 28:19. King Saul committed suicide. See @@@ **REVERSIONISM**.

1 SAMUEL 28:19

Moreover the LORD will also give over Israel along with you [**King Saul**] into the hands of the Philistines, therefore tomorrow you and your sons [**all were Believers**] will be with me [**the Prophet Samuel who was brought back from Paradise in Hell to speak to Saul**].

- (e) **King Hezekiah.** For going into reversionism [Isa. 30:1-3; 31:1-2]. *“Thus says the LORD, ‘Set your house in order, for you shall die and not live’”* [Isa. 38:1-6]. The Rebound recovery of Hezekiah: *“Then Hezekiah turned his face to the wall and prayed to the LORD.”*
- (f) **King David.** For “Operation Bathsheba” where King David almost died the *“sin unto death”* [1 Jn. 5:16, KJV], but came back after Rebound and then studying Bible Doctrine on a consistent basis. See 2 Sam. 12:13; Ps. 30:1-10; 32:3-5; 38:17-18; 42:1-11; 51:1-19.

2 SAMUEL 12:13

Then David said to Nathan [**the Prophet**], “I have sinned against the LORD.” And Nathan said to David, “The LORD also has taken away [**abar (to pass over)**] your sin; you shall not die [**muth – sin unto death**].”

PSALM 30:2-3

O LORD my God, I [David] cried to You for help, and You healed me [after David's Rebound]. O LORD, You have brought up my soul from Sheol [Sheol (designation for the abode of the dead) – David almost died the sin unto death and as a Believer his soul/spirit would have then gone to Paradise in Hell]; You have kept me alive, that I would not go down to the pit [death].

- (g) **Hananiah.** For distorting the Word of God and proclaiming lies as a false Prophet [Jer. 28:15-17].

JEREMIAH 28:16-17

Therefore thus says the LORD, “Behold I am about to remove you from the face of the earth [Hannah told the Jews to revolt against Babylon]. This year you are going to die [muth – Physical Death], because you have counseled rebellion against the LORD.” So Hananiah the prophet died [the sin unto death] in the same year in the seventh month.

- (h) **Moses.** For not circumcising his eldest son – “*the LORD met him (Moses) and sought to put him to death*” [Ex. 4:24-26].
- (5) **Unconfessed Sin.** Unconfessed sin over a prolonged period of time can culminate with the “*sin unto death*” [1 Jn. 5:16, KJV]; 1 Cor. 11:30-31. In such a case there are three categories of progressive Divine Discipline Suffering to include the final stage, the “*sin unto death*”: (1) weakness in the mind/body; (2) illness in the mind/body; and (3) Physical Death or “sleep.” Paul develops this pattern in his Rebound exhortation to the mostly negative [-N] volition Believers in Corinth. See Eccl. 12:1-6; Ps. 32:3-5.

PSALM 32:3-5

When I [King David] kept silent [David refused to name his sins in Rebound], my body wasted away through my groaning all day long. For day and night Your hand [Divine Discipline Suffering] was heavy upon me; my vitality was drained away as with the fever heat of summer. Selah. I acknowledged my sin to You [David finally uses Rebound], and my iniquity I did not hide; I said, “I will confess my transgressions to the LORD;” and You forgave the guilt of my sin. Selah.

1 CORINTHIANS 11:30-31

For this reason many among you [Believers] are [1] weak [*asthenes* (weak; infirm; feeble) – physical/mental weakness is the warning stage of Divine Discipline Suffering] and [2] sick [*arrhostos* (without strength; sick) – physical illness under added Divine Discipline Suffering is the intensive stage], and [3] a number sleep [the sin unto death where the Believer dies]. But if we judged [*diakrino* (to try) – evaluate self, use Rebound] ourselves rightly, we would not be judged [by God's Divine Discipline Suffering].

- (6) **Solutions.** Those Believers under the sin unto death [see *supra* (4)] must first *Rebound* and then, like David, *immediately go on a crash course of learning and relearning Bible Doctrine*. Thus, the parable of the prodigal son who was “*dying here with hunger*” but “*came to his senses*,” used Rebound, and then went back “*to his father*” [Lk. 15:11-32]. King Solomon wrote about his own hard learned experiences in *Ecclesiastes*. See @@@ **RUNNING**.
- (a) **Son and Mother.** The Believer under the sin unto death for having sex with his mother in 1 Cor. 5:1-5, used Rebound for his sins and then wanted to learn Bible Doctrine. When the Corinth Church refused him reentry, Paul ordered the legalists in Corinth to “*forgive and comfort*” [2 Cor. 2:1-11] and let him back in the Church. He was not killed off by the “*sin unto death*” [1 Jn. 5:16, KJV].
- (b) **King Hezekiah.** In Isa. 38:1-3, King Hezekiah recognized his status of sinfulness, used Rebound, and returned to learning the Word. He was given another 15 years of life.

ISAIAH 38:1-3

In those days Hezekiah became mortally ill [under the sin unto death]. And Isaiah the prophet the son of Amoz came to him and said to him, “Thus says the LORD, ‘Set your house in order, for you shall die and not live.’” Then Hezekiah turned his face to the wall and prayed to the LORD [Rebound], and said, “Remember now, O LORD, I beseech You, how I have walked [Hezekiah had achieved some level of spiritual maturity] before You in truth and with a whole heart, and have done what is good in Your sight.” And Hezekiah wept bitterly [*gadol* (greatly) – emotion is not a requirement].

@@@ SLEEP

- (1) **Definition.** The primary Greek word for sleep is *koimao*. Use of the word “*sleep*” in the Bible often refers to *Christian Physical Death*. See Ps. 13:3; Jn. 11:11-14; 1 Cor. 11:30; 15:6; 51-55; 1 Thess. 4:13-16; 5:1. When Physical Death occurs the Believer’s soul/spirit goes to Heaven and his mortal, bodily remains return to the dust. “*Then the dust will return to the earth as it was, and the spirit will return to God who gave it*” [Eccl. 12:7]; Gen. 3:19. The Believer is fully conscious and in great contentment waiting for his promised indestructible “*resurrection*” [Phil 3:11] body and any eternal “*rewards*” [1 Cor. 3:14] which he will get at the Rapture followed by the Judgment Seat of Christ. “*But now Christ has been raised from the dead, the first fruits of those who are asleep*” [1 Cor. 15:20]. See @@@ DEATH.

1 CORINTHIANS 15:51-54

Behold, I [Paul] tell you a mystery; we [Believers] will not all sleep [*koimao* – Physical Death], but we will all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet [*salpigx* – this trumpet closes out the Church Age at the Rapture]; for the trumpet will sound, and the dead [*nekros* (physical death) – Church Age Believers who have died] will be raised imperishable [*aphthartos* (immortal) – resurrection bodies], and we [Believers then living at the Rapture] will be changed [*allasso* – all living Believers will get resurrection bodies]. For this perishable [human body] must put on the imperishable, and this mortal must put on immortality. But when this perishable will have put on the imperishable, and this mortal will have put on immortality, then [at the Rapture] will come about the saying that is written, “Death [*thanatos* (with the implied idea of future misery in hell)] is swallowed up in victory [*nikos* (to utterly vanquish)].”

JOHN 11:11-14

This He said, and after that He said to them, “Our friend Lazarus has fallen asleep [*koimao*]; but I go, so that I may awaken him [*exupnizo* (to wake up) – Jesus would reanimate Lazarus who had been dead for 4 days] out of sleep.” The disciples then said to Him, “LORD, if he has fallen asleep, he will recover.” Now Jesus had spoken of his death, but they thought that He was speaking of literal sleep. So Jesus then said to them plainly, “Lazarus is dead [*apothnesko* (the natural death of a man)].”

1 CORINTHIANS 15:6

After that [Jesus Christ risen from the dead first appeared to the disciples in His resurrection body] He [Jesus Christ in His resurrected body] appeared [horao (to stare with the eyes; a panoramic view)] to more than 500 brethren [Believers in A.D. 30] at one time, most of whom remain [meno – Paul is writing this circa A.D. 55] until now, but some have fallen asleep [koimao (to sleep; to die)].

1 THESSALONIANS 4:13-14

But we [Paul and his traveling seminary team] do not want you [Believers] to be uninformed [agnoeo (to be ignorant)], brethren [adelphos], about those who are asleep [koimao – Church Age Believers that have died are always described as being in a state of sleep], so that you will not grieve [lupeo (to affect with sadness)] as do the rest who have no hope [elpis (confident expectation) – unBelievers]. For if we believe [pisteuo] that Jesus died [apothnesko (to be subject to eternal misery in hell)] and rose [anistemi (to rise up) – in His resurrection body] again, even so God will bring with Him those who have fallen asleep in Jesus [the dead Church Age Believers in their resurrection bodies].

- (2) **Describes Reversionism.** The word sleep sometimes refers to the status quo of the negative [-N] volition **Loser** Believer in the *state of reversionism*. “*So then let us not sleep as others do, but let us be alert and sober*” [1 Thess. 5:5-7]. Also known as Operational Death, this **Loser** Believer is apathetic to or largely rejects Bible Doctrine and is warned that “*it is already the hour for you to awaken from sleep*” [Rom. 13:11]; Eph. 5:14-17; Isa. 51:17. If he refuses to awaken, he is a candidate for the “*sin unto death*” [1 Jn. 5:16, KJV].

1 THESSALONIANS 5:6-7

So then let us not sleep [katheudo – the sleep of Operational Death of the Loser Believer in reversionism] as others do [Loser Believers on who refuse Bible Doctrine], but let us be alert [gregoreuo (to watch)] and sober [nepho (to be calm and collected)]. For those who sleep do their sleeping at night [nux], and those who get drunk [methusko (to intoxicate)] get drunk [methuo (to be drunken)] at night [nux – but positive [+P] volition Believers keep walking in the light of Bible Doctrine].

EPHESIANS 5:14-17

For this reason it says, “Awake, sleeper [the Believer in Operational Death], and arise from the dead [nekros – Temporal Death of the Believer can be immediately cured by Rebound], and Christ will shine on you.” Therefore be careful how you walk [peripateo – the Believer’s lifestyle], not as unwise men [asophos] but as wise [apply Bible Doctrine], making the most of your time [karios – time is short in this life], because the days are evil [poneros – Satan is the ruler of the world and seeks to deceive the Believer as part of the Angelic Conflict]. So then do not be foolish [aphron (without reason)], but understand [suniami (to bring together)] what the will of the LORD is [The Plan of God is for the Believer to reach spiritual maturity which glorifies God].

- (3) **Sin Unto Death.** Sleep as a consequence of the Believer dying the “*sin unto death*” [1 Jn. 5:16, KJV]; 1 Cor. 11:30. See @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH. Note: the Believer is still saved. See @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY.

1 CORINTHIANS 11:30

For this reason [dia (on account of)] many among you [Believers] are [1] weak [asthenes (weak; infirm; feeble) – physical/mental weakness is the warning stage of Divine Discipline Suffering] and [2] sick [arrhostos (without strength; sick) – physical illness under added Divine Discipline Suffering is the intensive stage], and [3] a number sleep [koimao (to die; to sleep)].

- (4) **Soul Sleep.** There is *no such thing* as “soul sleep.” When the Believer dies his human soul/spirit is fully conscious in Heaven waiting for the Rapture. See Rev. 21:4; 2 Cor. 12:2-4 [Paul in the Third Heaven]. See @@@ HEAVEN.

REVELATION 21:4

And He [God] will wipe away [exaleipho (to anoint or wash in every part; to erase)] every tear [dakru] from their [the Believer] eyes; and [in Heaven] there will no longer be any death [thanatos (with the implied idea of future misery in hell)]; there will no longer be any mourning [penthos], or crying [krauge], or pain [ponos (great trouble)]; the first [protos (first in time)] things have passed away [aperchomai (to go away; depart)].

@@@ SOTERIOLOGY

- (1) **Definition.** Soteriology is the theological term for the *study of all the associated doctrines of salvation* and speaks to how the work of Jesus Christ on the cross removed/satisfied the barriers that separate Perfect [+R] God from imperfect [-r] man. There are several components of Soteriology.
 - (a) **Reconciliation.** As a Believer with God's [+R] imputed to him at the point of salvation, there is now "*peace*" [Heb. 13:20] between Perfect [+R] God and the formerly imperfect [-r] unBeliever.
 - (b) **Redemption.** The Believer is bought with a price, the Atonement work of Christ. *See* Eph. 1:7; 1 Pet. 1:18-19; Col. 1:14, 20; Rev. 5:9.
 - (c) **Justification.** The Believer is fully justified/vindicated by God's Righteousness [+R] imputed to his soul/spirit [Rom. 5:9].
 - (d) **Sanctification.** The Believer has absolute positional acceptance with God. *See* Heb. 10:10; 13:12; Eph. 5:26.
 - (e) **Expiation.** God's Perfect Justice is satisfied by the work of Christ on the cross. The Believer is "*washed ... in the blood*" [Rev. 1:5; 7:14].
 - (f) **Propitiation.** Jesus paid the required price of Spiritual Death for all sin. "*For the wages of sin is [spiritual] death*" [Rom. 6:23]; 3:2-26.
 - (g) **Heirship.** Believers are adult adopted sons [Rom. 8:16-17; Gal. 4:7].
- (2) **Barriers Removed.** There are four barriers that condemn mankind at birth.
 - (a) **Barrier One: Spiritual Death.** All humans are *born without a human spirit and in a state of Spiritual Death*. *See* Gen. 2:17; Eph. 2:1; Rom. 5:12; 6:23; 2 Cor. 5:14; 1 Cor. 15:22. Furthermore, God imputes Adam's original sin [a real imputation] to the genetically formed Old Sin Nature to all humans at birth, ensuring that no man can work for his own salvation. This barrier of Spiritual Death is removed by the substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ [1 Pet. 2:24; 3:18; 2 Cor. 5:21], a judicial imputation by God the Father to Perfect Jesus Christ while on the Roman cross. *See* @@@ SALVATION.

- (b) **Barrier Two: Personal Sin.** All humans, to include Believers, *commit personal sin* during their lives. See Rom. 1:18-32; 3:9-23; Gal. 5:19-21; 1 Tim. 1:14-16; 1 Jn. 1:8-10. This barrier is removed by unlimited atonement, a judicial imputation by God to Jesus Christ on the cross.
 - (c) **Barrier Three: The Curse of the Law.** The *curse of the Mosaic Law* barrier is removed by Redemption. See Eph. 2:15; 1 Tim. 1:8-11; Rom. 3:9-23; 4:15; 5:20; 7:14; Gal. 3:10-11. See @@@ MOSAIC LAW.
 - (d) **Barrier Four: The Holiness of God.** The *Perfect Holiness of God* barrier is removed by Propitiation. God can now accept [save] anyone who believes in Jesus Christ because they possess forever His Perfect Righteousness [+R]. See Rom. 3:23; 1 Jn. 2:2; Jas. 2:23.
- (3) **Minus Side of Salvation.** While much of the doctrine of Soteriology speaks to the *historical removal of the barriers between God and man* by the salvation work of Perfect Jesus Christ on the cross, this is only the *minus* part of salvation. In other words, the grace work under the Plan of God to remove certain barriers only qualifies every human as a potential candidate for salvation – the full benefits of Soteriology are bestowed only on the person who believes in Jesus Christ by faith alone in Christ alone which then enters him immediately into the Kingdom of God – the grace *plus* side of salvation. *“I am the resurrection and the life; he who believes in Me will live even if he dies, and everyone who believes in Me will never die”* [John 11:21-26].
- (4) **Plus Side of Salvation.** The following baseline Divine work performed for those that respond to the Gospel and exhale faith [belief] in Jesus Christ.
 - (a) **Regeneration.** Among the Forty Things given to the Believer at salvation, God the Holy Spirit *creates a human spirit* for the new Believer so that God can impute His own eternal life to that Believer. See Tit. 3:57; Rom. 6:23; 1 Jn. 5:11; Jn. 3:1-18; 17:2; 1 Pet. 1:23.
 - (b) **Imputation [+R].** Due to the absolute insufficiency of man’s [-r], God *imputes His Perfect Righteousness* [+R] to the Believer. See Gen. 15:6; 2 Cor. 5:21; Rom. 3:22; 4:6; 1 Pet. 2:24; Jer. 23:6; Ps. 11:7; 1 Jn. 4:15; 1 Cor. 1:30; Phil. 3:9. This justification element of salvation ensures that there is absolutely no compromise to the Perfection of God to accept the Believer into Heaven.

– RECONCILIATION –

- (1) **Definition.** The Greek word for reconciliation is *katallasso* (to reconcile those who are at variance; to transfer from one state to another). Reconciliation is directed towards imperfect [-r] man.
- (2) **Enemies of God.** All unBelievers are “*enemies*” [Rom. 5:10] of God from their physical birth and in *Satan’s family*. In order to be entered into the Royal Family of God as His children, reconciliation must be accomplished between Perfect [+R] God and imperfect [-r] man [Col. 1:21; Eph. 2:11-15]. To God, all unBelievers are “*illegitimate children*” *nothos* (bastard) [Heb. 12:8].
- (3) **God Desires Reconciliation.** All members of the human race were selected by God to come into existence. Further, His Directive Will is that there should be reconciliation between Perfect God and imperfect man [1 Tim. 2:4].
- (4) **Peace Offering.** In the Old Testament the concept of reconciliation was taught by the “*peace offering*” [Lev. 7:11-38; 8:15]. The coming future Messiah would bring the peace of reconciliation between Perfect God and imperfect man [Isa. 57:19-21; Acts 10:34-36].
- (5) **Two Categories.** There are two categories of reconciliation: (1) for all mankind *as a potential* to be reconciled to their Creator; and (2) for the Believer as a *reality, who is reconciled* to his Creator. See 2 Cor. 5:18-19; Col. 1:19-22; Rom. 5:8-11; Eph. 2:13-17.

2 CORINTHIANS 5:18-19

Now all *these* things are from God, who reconciled [*katallasso* (to reconcile those who are at variance)] us [*the Believer*] to Himself through [*dia* (by means of)] Christ [*work of Christ on the cross*] and gave us [*Paul and his traveling team of Pastor/Teachers*] the ministry [*diakonia* (those who by the command of God proclaim and promote God among men)] of reconciliation [*katallage*], namely, that God was in Christ reconciling the world [*kosmos – under the doctrine of unlimited atonement Jesus Christ died for all humans in the world*] to Himself, not counting [*logizomai* (to reckon; to make an account of)] their trespasses [*paraptoma* (sin)] against them, and He has committed [*tithemi* (to set forth)] to us the word [*logos*] of reconciliation [*katallage – this is a key element of Soteriology*].

COLOSSIANS 1:20

And through [*dia* (by means of)] Him [Jesus Christ] to reconcile [*apokatalasso* (to bring back a former state of harmony) – the barrier between God and man is removed] all things to Himself, having made peace [*eirenopoieo* – between Perfect God and imperfect man] through [*dia* (by means of)] the blood [*aima* – the substitutionary work of Christ on the cross] of His cross [*stauros*]; through Him, *I say*, whether things on earth [*ge*] or things in heaven [*ouranos* – Heaven is currently open to both saved and certain types of fallen angels].

– REDEMPTION –

- (1) **Definition.** Redemption holds that all humans are born spiritually dead and must be *redeemed out of this condition of slavery* – *apolutrosis* (to purchase the freedom of a slave) [Rom. 3:4]. Believers are purchased – “*I have found a ransom*” [Job 33:23-24] – from the “*slave*” [Jn. 8:31-36] market of sin by the work of the LORD Jesus Christ. Redemption is directed towards sin.

JOHN 8:34-36

Jesus answered them [the Jews that had believed in Jesus], “Truly [*amen* (of a truth)], truly, I say to you, everyone who commits sin is the slave of sin. The slave does not remain in the house forever [the unbeliever will suffer Physical Death and then go to Hell]; the son [Believer] does remain forever [in Heaven]. So if the Son [Jesus Christ] makes you free [*eleutheroo* (to make free; to set a liberty) – from Spiritual Death and Hell], you will be free [*eleutheros* (freeborn)] indeed [*ontos* (in reality; truly)].”

JOB 33:23-24

If there is an angel [*malak* – the LORD Jesus Christ] as mediator [*luts* – Jesus Christ is the only qualified mediator as He is true God and true humanity] for him [mankind], one out of a thousand [idiom for only one], to remind a man what is right [*yosher* (what is due)] for him [man owes God perfect Righteousness [+R]], then let him [God] be gracious to him [the Believer], and say, “Deliver him from going down to the pit [*shachath* – Hell], I have found [*matsa* (to secure)] a ransom [*kopher* (price of a life; ransom) – Jesus Christ paid the price on the cross].”

- (2) **Free a Slave.** *Only a free man can buy or free a slave.* The “*free*” [Jn. 8:36] Perfect man Jesus Christ, paid the full price for the freedom of all “slaves” [human beings] by His substitutionary Spiritual Death for sin while on the cross. See Ps. 34:22; Gal. 3:13; 1 Pet. 1:18-19; Heb. 2:14; 9:12, 22. Since Adam in the Garden, Jesus of Nazareth was the only human brought into the world free from sin and He remained absolutely Perfect in His humanity during all His life on earth. See @@@ **HYPOSTATIC UNION.**

GALATIANS 3:13

Christ redeemed [*exagorazo* (by payment of a price to recover from the power of another)] us [*Believers*] from the curse [*katara* (an execration; curse)] of the Law [*nomos – the Mosaic Law demands Perfection*], having become a curse [*katara*] for us—for it is written, “Cursed [*epikataratos* (accursed)] is everyone who hangs [*kremannumi* (to be suspended)] on a tree [*xulon* (wood; that made out of wood) – the prediction of where Christ’s work of salvation would occur, on a Roman cross].”

HEBREWS 2:14

Therefore, since the children share in flesh and blood [*humans*], He Himself likewise also partook of the same [*the Son of God became a true human*], that through death [*thanatos* (death, with the implied idea of future misery in Hell – *Spiritual Death of Jesus Christ on the cross*)] He might render powerless him who had the power of death, that is, the devil.

- (3) **In Suffering.** Redemption is a doctrine that can be applied by the Believer in times of personal pressure, testing, and suffering [Job 19:25-26].

JOB 19:25-26

As for me [*Job*], I know [*yada* (to learn to know)] that my Redeemer [*gaal – the Savior who would come and pay the price for salvation*] lives, and at the last [*acharyon* (later; subsequent time)] He will take His stand [*qum* (to arise)] on the earth [*aphar* (dry earth) – the 1st Advent of Jesus Christ]. Even after my skin is destroyed [*Physical Death returns the human body to the dust*], yet from my flesh [*bawar* (of the body) – Job will have an indestructible eternal resurrection body] I shall see [*chazah* (to behold)] God [*elohim – LORD JESUS Christ at the 2nd Advent*].

- (4) **Results in Adoption.** Redemption results in *an adult* “*adoption as sons*” [Eph. 1:5] for all Believers by God [Gal. 4:4-6] [*uiothesia* (an adult son officially taken into the family)] and the bestowing of an eternal inheritance to these children of God [Heb. 9:15].

GALATIANS 4:4-5

But when the fullness of the time [*chronos* (a period of time, long or short)] came, God sent forth [*exapostello* (to send forth)] His Son [*Jesus Christ*], born of a woman, born under the Law, so that He might redeem [*exagorazo* (to buy back)] those who were under the Law, that we might receive [*apolambano* (of what is due or promised)] the adoption as sons [*uihothesia* (an adult son officially taken into the family)].

- (5) **Redemption Rituals.** Redemption was *communicated in the Old Testament* rituals by shedding the blood of innocent animals which portrayed Christ’s sacrifice, “*without shedding of blood there is no forgiveness*” [Heb. 9:22].
- (6) **Blood of Christ.** The Blood of Jesus Christ, refers directly to His work on the cross and is the *purchase price* for the Believer’s redemption. See 1 Pet. 1:18-19; Eph. 1:7; Col. 1:14; 1 Jn. 1:7. See @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST.

1 PETER 1:18-19

Knowing that you were not redeemed [*lutroo* (to release on receipt of a ransom)] with perishable things like silver or gold from your futile [*mataios* (empty; devoid of force)] way of life [*anastrophe* – the evil of religion cannot provide salvation] inherited from your forefathers, but with precious blood [*aima* – via substitutionary Spiritual Death], as of a lamb unblemished [*amomos* (faultless)] and spotless [*aspilos* – Jesus was Perfect in His humanity and thus qualified to go to the cross], the blood of Christ.

EPHESIANS 1:7

In Him [*Jesus Christ*] we have redemption [*apolutrosis* (a releasing effected by payment of ransom)] through His blood [*aima* – the substitutionary work of Christ on the cross], the forgiveness [*aphesis* (release from bondage or imprisonment)] of our trespasses, according to the riches [*ploutos*] of His grace [*charis*].

- (7) **Justification.** Redemption is the *basis for justification*. “*For you have been bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body*” [1 Cor. 6:20]; Rom. 3:24; Ps. 34:22.

PSALM 34:22

The LORD redeems [*padah* (to pay a ransom)] the soul [*nephesh*] of His servants [**Believers**], and none of those who take refuge in Him will be condemned [*asham* (to be incriminated) – because the Believer has the Perfect Righteousness [+R] of God, eternal security is guaranteed].

- (8) **Atonement.** Redemption relates directly to the Atonement where Jesus Christ was the true human substitute for all sin. See 1 Pet. 3:18; 2 Cor. 5:21.

– JUSTIFICATION –

- (1) **Definition.** The *Believer is vindicated* by receiving the imputation of God’s own Righteousness [+R] to his soul at the exact point of salvation [Rom. 3:20-22; 4:1-5, 25; 5:1, 17; 8:29-30; 2 Cor. 5:21; Ps. 11:7; 1 Pet. 2:24]. God then looks at the Believer’s [+R] and fully accepts him. “*Much more then, having now been justified by His blood, we shall be saved from the wrath of God through Him*” [Rom. 5:9]. What the Righteousness [+R] of God demands the Justice of God must always execute. In summary, God sees His own [+R] in the Believer and must accept it! See Gal. 2:16.

ROMANS 3:20-22

Because by the works of the Law [*nomos* – the Mosaic Law] no flesh [*sarx* – the unBeliever] will be justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous)] in His [God] sight [God can only accept His Perfect Righteousness [+R]]; for through the Law comes the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge)] of sin [*hamartia* – in terms of salvation, the Mosaic Law can only show that man is a sinner]. But now apart from the Law the righteousness [*dikaiosis* – the Perfect Righteousness [+R] of the Trinity] of God has been manifested [*phaneroo* (to make manifest or visible)], being witnessed by the Law and the Prophets [they taught this Bible Doctrine], even the righteousness of God through [*dia* (by means of)] faith in Jesus Christ for all those who believe [*pisteuo* – the Believer receives God’s Perfect [+R]]; for there is no distinction [Jews and Gentiles alike are saved by faith alone in Christ alone].

GALATIANS 2:16

Nevertheless knowing that a man [*anthropos* (mankind)] is not justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – acceptable to God] by the works [*ergon*] of the Law [the Mosaic Law cannot provide God's Righteousness [+R]] but through [*dia* (by means of)] faith [*pistis* – saving faith] in Christ Jesus, even we have believed [*pisteuo*] in Christ Jesus, so that we may be justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous)] by faith [*pistis* – as a result of saving faith the Believer receives the [+R] of God] in Christ and not by the works of the Law; since by the works of the Law no flesh [*sarx* – unBeliever] will be justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous)].

- (2) **Based on Grace.** Justification is *based on grace* [Rom. 3:24; Tit. 3:7]. This is the Divine *plus* factor in the formula of salvation. See @@@ GRACE.

TITUS 3:7

So that being justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – the Believer receives God's Righteousness [+R]] by His grace [*charis*] we would be made heirs [*kleronomos* (one who receives his allotted possession)] according to the hope [*elpis* (confidence)] of eternal [*aionios* (without beginning or end)] life.

- (3) **Belief in Christ.** Justification is only accomplished by belief in Jesus Christ – “*salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus*” [2 Tim. 3:15]; Matt. 11:19; Lk. 7:35. It is the result of the ministry of the Holy Spirit.
- (4) **Instantaneous.** The Believer is “*justified by faith*” [Rom. 3:28] at *the moment he believes in Jesus Christ* [Gal. 3:24; Rom. 5:1].

GALATIANS 3:24

Therefore the Law [*nomos* – Mosaic Law] has become our tutor [*paidagogos*] to lead us to Christ, so that we may be justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – the Believer receives God's Righteousness [+R]] by faith [*pistis* – saving faith in Christ].

- (5) **Not by Mosaic Law.** Justification does not occur via keeping the Mosaic Law nor by any human “*deeds which we have done in righteousness*” [Tit. 3:5]; Rom. 3:20, 27-30; Gal. 2:16; 2 Tim. 1:9; Eph. 2:8-9; Acts 15:11.

ROMANS 3:27-28

Where then is [human] boasting? It is excluded. By what kind of law? Of works? No, but by a law of faith [*pistis*]. For we [Paul and his seminary team] maintain [*logizomai* (to calculate)] that a man is justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – the Believer receives God’s Righteousness [+R]] by faith [*pistis* – saving faith is the avenue to salvation] apart from works of the Law.

- (6) **Christ Raised.** Jesus Christ was raised from the dead because of the Believer’s justification [Rom. 4:25]. See @@@ RESURRECTION.

ROMANS 4:25

He [Jesus Christ] who was delivered over [*paradidomi* (to give into the hands of another)] because [*dia* (the grounds or reason by which something is or is not done)] of our transgressions [*paraptoma*], and was raised because of our justification [*dikaiosis* (the act of God declaring men free from guilt and acceptable to Him)].

– SANCTIFICATION –

- (1) **Definition.** Sanctification is the Believer’s *absolute position of acceptance* by God. Sanctification in three concepts: (1) Positional Sanctification; (2) Experiential Sanctification; and (3) Ultimate Sanctification.
- (2) **Positional Sanctification.** **PHASE I** in the Plan of God starts when the unBeliever believes in the LORD Jesus Christ as Savior and becomes a Believer. Mechanics are via the dry baptism of God the Holy Spirit [Eph. 4:4-5; 1 Cor. 12:13; Acts 11:15-17]. See @@@ HOLY SPIRIT.

EPHESIANS 4:4-5

There is one body [*soma* – all Believers are in Union with Christ] and one [Holy] Spirit [God the Holy Spirit is the agent of salvation], just as also you were called [*kaleo* (to utter with a loud voice)] in one [*heis*] hope [*elpis* (confidence)] of your calling; one LORD [*kurios* (God) – the LORD Jesus Christ the Savior], one faith [*pistis* – salvation is only by faith alone in Christ alone], one baptism [*baptisma* – the dry baptism mechanics of the Holy Spirit in salvation].

- (a) **Stable.** Positional Sanctification in the Trinity cannot be lost “*to those who have been sanctified in Christ Jesus, saints*” [1 Cor. 1:2]; Rom. 8:38-39; 1 Cor. 1:30; 6:11. Positional Sanctification is the basis for the formation of the Royal Family of God [2 Thess. 2:13].

2 THESSALONIANS 2:13

But we [Paul and his seminary team] should always give thanks to God for you, brethren beloved [*agapao (to love dearly)*] by the LORD, because God has chosen [*aihreomai (to take for oneself)*] you from the beginning [*arche – God knew who would believe*] for salvation [*soteria (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven*] through sanctification [*hagiasmos*] by the [Holy] Spirit and faith [*pistis – saving faith*] in the truth [*aletheia – the Gospel*].

- (b) **New Species.** Positional Sanctification makes every Believer a “*new creature*” [2 Cor. 5:17] – species. See @@@ NEW SPECIES.
- (c) **Equality.** Positional Sanctification provides for *equal privilege and equal opportunity under Predestination and Election*. All Believers can reach spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1] in the Plan of God.
- (d) **No Second Death.** Positional Sanctification protects the Believer from the “*second death*” [Rev. 20:6, 14; 21:8] and the Great White Throne Judgment for all unBelievers [Rev. 20:11-15; Rom. 8:1; Jn. 3:18; 5:24].
- (e) **Eternal Life.** Positional Sanctification qualifies the Believer to have “*eternal life*” [Tit. 3:7] and to live with God forever and ever in the new Heaven. See Tit. 3:7; Rom. 6:23; Jn. 17:2; 1 Jn. 5:11-12, 20.
- (f) **ID with Christ.** Positional Sanctification is the basis for Retroactive Positional Truth – the Believer is *identified with Jesus Christ in His death* and fully rejects human works. See Rom. 6:1-8; Col. 2:12; 3:3.
- (g) **All Believers Share.** (1) Destiny of Christ [Eph. 1:5]; (2) Sonship [2 Tim. 2:1; Gal. 3:26]; (3) Transference into the Kingdom [Col. 1:13]; (4) Heirship [Rom. 8:16-17]; (5) Sanctification [1 Cor. 1:2, 30]; (6) Kingship [2 Pet. 1:11]; (7) Priesthood [Heb. 10:10-14]; (8) Election [Eph. 1:4]; (9) Eternal Life [1 Jn. 5:11-12]; and (10) God’s [+R] [2 Cor. 5:21]. See @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST.

- (h) **Characteristics of Positional Sanctification.** It is *not an emotion or experience*. It is not progressive and can't be improved on as it is obtained in total at the second of salvation. No human merit is involved, and it is eternal in nature. Positional sanctification is understood through learning Bible Doctrine.
- (3) **Experiential Sanctification.** **PHASE II** in the Plan of God. *The Believer's life from the point of salvation to his Physical Death.* The Believer is commanded to live inside the Divine Dynasphere which requires that he stay in Fellowship with God the Holy Spirit and then learn and apply Bible Doctrine. See @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.
- (4) **Ultimate Sanctification.** **PHASE III** in the Plan of God. The Believer at the point of the receipt of his own "*resurrection*" [Phil. 3:11] body and *extending on out into all eternity*. The Old Sin Nature is removed [1 Cor. 1:8; Gal. 5:5; Eph. 1:4; Rom. 8:28-29] and "*rewards*" [1 Cor. 3:14; 22 Jn. 8] are distributed to the **Winner** Believer at the Judgment Seat of Christ.

– EXPIATION –

- (1) **Definition.** Expiation refers to the fact that the requirement of Perfect Righteousness [+R] from Perfect *God is satisfied*. Atonement has been made by Jesus Christ for all. Again, man owes God perfect Righteousness [+R] if he is to live with Perfect God [Col. 2:14; Ps. 22:6 – Jesus was the *tola* worm crushed for us]. This cannot be accomplished by religion.
- (2) **Blood of Christ.** The Blood of Christ is the basis for Rebound. See Rev. 1:5; 1 Jn. 1:7, 9; Col. 2:14-15; Lev. 4-5; Ps. 22:1-6. See @@@ REBOUND.

COLOSSIANS 2:14

Having canceled out [*exaleipho* (to wipe away)] the certificate of debt [*cheirographon* – sinful man [-r] owes perfection to a Perfect [+R] God] consisting of decrees [*dogma* – the Mosaic Law condemns mankind] against us [Perfect God can only condemn imperfect man], which was hostile to us; and He [Jesus] has taken it out of [*airo* (to bear away)] the way, having nailed it to [*proseloo* (to fasten with nails)] the cross [*stauros* – Jesus Christ took the judgment of all sin in His own body on the cross so that the Believer now only uses the grace provisions of Rebound for personal sins].

- (3) **Atonement Made by Christ.** The penalty of personal sin was paid for in full by the LORD Jesus Christ. A lifetime of personal sins – past, present, and future – from each person was paid for by Perfect Jesus Christ on the cross. *He was our substitute and had each Believer in mind when bearing sin.*

– PROPITIATION –

- (1) **Definition.** God is satisfied – Propitiated – by the work of Jesus Christ who “*offered Himself without blemish to God*” [Heb. 9:14] on the cross. *See* Rom. 3:25-26; Col. 1:19-22; 1 Jn. 2:1-2; Eph. 1:7; Heb. 12:2. Again, this fact is appropriated by the unBeliever by faith in Christ and is the basis for the imputation of God’s Perfect Righteousness [+R] so “*that we might become the righteousness of God in Him*” [2 Cor. 5:21]; Rom. 3:25-26; 4:6; 1 Pet. 2:24; Jer. 23:6; Ps. 11:7; 1 Jn. 4:15. *See* @@@ CROSS.

ROMANS 3:25-26

Whom God displayed publicly [*Jesus on the Roman cross in A.D. 30*] as a propitiation [*hilasterion (relating to appeasing)*] in His blood [*the substitutionary work of Christ to bear all sin*] through faith [*pistis – salvation faith*]. *This was* to demonstrate His righteousness, because in the forbearance of God He passed over the sins previously committed [*proginomai – all sins that occurred before the cross were held in abeyance*]; for the demonstration [*endeixis (proof)*], *I say*, of His righteousness [*Perfect Plan of God*] at the present time, so that He would be just and the justifier [*dikaioo (to render righteous)*] of the one [*the Believer*] who has faith in Jesus.

- (2) **Holiness Barrier.** The barrier of the Holiness of God is removed. *What the Righteousness of God demands the Justice of God must execute!* Now, with the imputation of God’s [+R] to the Believer at salvation the Justice portion of God’s Holiness can *abundantly bless* the Believer. *See* @@@ GRACE.
- (3) **Mercy Seat.** Propitiation was taught in the Old Testament via the annual sacrifice on the “*mercy seat*” [Ex. 25:17-22; 37:6-9] of the ark. The “*ark*” itself held representations of sin – “*a golden jar holding the manna, and Aaron’s rod which budded, and the tables of the covenant*” [Heb. 9:4]. The animal blood sprinkled on the Mercy Seat signified the work of Christ on the cross to cover sin [Lev. 16:13-16]. The two angels on the lid portrayed the Justice and Righteousness of God = God’s Holiness.

– HEIRSHIP –

- (1) **Definition.** Heirship is based on “*the death of the one who made it*” [Heb. 9:16-17]. Christ’s Spiritual Death on the cross was undertaken for the Believer to inherit great blessings [Rom. 5:8; 1 Cor. 15:3-4]. Christ is the heir of all things [Heb. 1:2, 4] and heirship is based on sonship. *See* Jn. 1:12; Rom. 8:16-17; Gal. 3:26-29; 4:6-7. Thus, since salvation qualifies every Believer for heirship [Col. 1:12; Rev. 21:7], all Believers are guaranteed “*eternal life*” [Tit. 3:7; 1 Jn. 5:11-12].

GALATIANS 3:26-29

For you are all sons [*uihos*] of God [*theos*] through faith [*pistis* – the means of salvation is by faith alone in Christ alone] in Christ Jesus. For all of you who were baptized [*baptizo*] into Christ [*the dry baptism of God the Holy Spirit*] have clothed yourselves with Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek [*ethnos*], there is neither slave nor free man, there is neither male nor female; for you are all one in Christ Jesus. And if you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham’s descendants, heirs [*kleronomos* (one who receives his allotted portion by right of sonship)] according to promise [*epaggelia* (the act of promising a good) – salvation by grace].

ROMANS 8:16-17

The [*Holy*] Spirit [*pneuma*] Himself testifies [*summartureo* (to bear witness)] with our [*human*] spirit [*pneuma*] that we are children [*teknon*] of God, and if children, heirs [*kleronomos* (one who receives his allotted portion by right of sonship)] also, heirs of God and fellow heirs [*sugkleronomos*] with Christ, if indeed we suffer with *Him* [*sumpascho* (to feel pain together) – Divine Suffering for Blessing to the positive [+P] volition Believer] so that we may also be glorified [*sundoxazo* (to glorify together)] with *Him* [*the Believer at spiritual maturity receives rewards*].

- (2) **Predestination and Election.** Heirship is directly related to Predestination and Election. *See* Eph. 1:11; Heb. 9:15. *See* @@@ PLAN OF GOD.
- (3) **Down Payment.** The Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit – “*sealed in Him with the Holy Spirit of promise*” [Eph. 1:13-14] – guarantees a future.
-

@@@ SOUL & SPIRIT

– THE HUMAN SOUL –

- (1) **Definition.** At birth, God activates for each human being an immortal soul which is *immaterial, yet real*. “*O God, God of the spirits [ruach (soul life; breath of life)] of all flesh*” [Num. 16:22]. The biological body, which is *material and real*, houses the *invisible soul in the cranium*. At Physical Death, the body disintegrates into the natural elements, “*the dust will return to the earth*” [Eccl. 12:7], but the soul will then go to a designated place [depending on whether or not the person was a Believer or an unBeliever] assigned by God. See Isa. 42:5; Mk. 8:36; Lk. 9:25; 2 Pet. 1:13-15; 2 Cor. 5:8; Mic. 6:7; Ezk. 18:4; Job 33:4; Ps. 34:22. Note: God cares for animals, but they lack a soul. “*Should I not have compassion on Nineveh, ... as well as many animals?*” [Jon. 4:11]. “*I would surely have killed you just now, and let her (Balaam’s donkey) live*” [Num. 22:33]. “*Look at the birds of the air ... yet your heavenly Father feeds them*” [Matt. 6:26]. “*A righteous man has regard for the life of his animal*” [Prov. 12:10].

JOB 33:4

The Spirit of God has made me [biological life], and the breath [neshamah] of the Almighty gives me life [chayah (to give life) – human soul life].

2 PETER 1:13-15

I [Peter] consider it right, as long as I am in this *earthly dwelling [skenoma (a tent; the dwelling place of the soul for the human body)]*, to stir you up by way of reminder, knowing that the laying aside [apothesis (a putting off)] of my earthly dwelling is imminent, as also our LORD Jesus Christ has made clear to me. And I will also be diligent that at any time after my departure you will be able to call these things [Bible Doctrine] to mind.

2 CORINTHIANS 5:8

We [Believers] are of good courage, I [Paul] say, and prefer rather to be absent [ekdemeo (to go or live abroad)] from the body [soma – at Physical Death the soul/spirit departs the body] and to be at home [endemeo (to be among one’s own people)] with the LORD [kurios (God) – in the Third Heaven].

ISAIAH 42:5

Thus says God the LORD, who created the heavens and stretched them out, who spread out the earth and its offspring, who gives breath [*neshamah*] to the people on it and spirit [*ruach* (soul life)] to those who walk in it.

EZEKIEL 18:4

Behold, all souls [*nephesh* (the human soul)] are Mine [*God*]; the soul of the father as well as the soul of the son is Mine. The soul who sins will die [*muth*].

- (2) **Activated at Birth.** The human soul, *psuche* in the Greek and *nephesh* in the Hebrew, is *activated by God* via *breathing* the “*breath of life*” at the *point of physical birth into the viable fetus when it emerges from the mother’s womb*. In the very first case, God “*breathed* (*naphach* (to blow; to breathe) ... *the breath neshamah* (breath) *of life*” into Adam’s biological body and he “*became a living being* (*nephesh* (soul))” [Gen. 2:7]. See Eccl. 12:7.

GENESIS 2:7

Then the LORD God formed [*yatsar* (to form something out of existing materials)] man of dust from the ground [*biological life*], and breathed [*naphach* (to blow; to breathe)] into his nostrils the breath [*neshamah* (breath)] of life [*chay* (living) – *here it is in the plural and should be translated* (lives)]; and man became a living being [*nephesh* (soul)].

- (3) **Shadow Image.** The essence of the soul is made in the *tselem* (shadow image) “*of God*” [Gen. 1:26-27], emphasizing that just as God has Sovereignty, so too, *God provided man with volitional sovereignty* [Isa. 43:7; Prov. 2:2].

GENESIS 1:26-27

Then God [*elohim*], said, “Let Us [*first person plural – all members of the Trinity*] make man in Our [*possessive determiner belonging to the speaker and one or more other people*] image [*tselem* (shadow image; a thing that is a shadow of the reality; resemblance) – *the human soul with its volition*], according to Our likeness [*demuth* (pattern; model)] ... God created [*bara* (to make something out of nothing) – *the human soul*] man in His own image, in the image of God He created [*barah*] him; male and female He created them.

ECCLESIASTES 12:7

Then [**Physical Death**] the dust [*aphar – the elements of biological life*] will return to the earth as it was, and the spirit [*ruach (soul life)*] will return to God who gave [*nathan (to bestow)*] it.

- (4) **Essence of the Soul.** The human soul has an identifiable essence consisting of *five main components*, that are interlocked together in a complex “wiring system,” housed in the cranium of the mortal body [Job. 38:36; Prov. 23:7].

I AM — SELF-AWARENESS, CONSCIOUSNESS

I FEEL — APPRECIATOR, EMOTION

I THINK — MENTALITY

I OUGHT — MORAL REASONING, CONSCIENCE

I WILL — FREE WILL, VOLITION

– The Human Soul –

- (a) **Self-awareness.** All humans can realize their “*name, rank, and serial number*” and are cognizant of the fact that they are a unique being apart from all others in time and space – “*for his life is in him*” [Acts 20:10].
- (b) **Emotion.** The emotion exists as a part of the soul for appreciation and entertainment purposes. Feelings are not thinking but they can respond to the impressions in the mentality. See @@@ EMOTION.
- (c) **Mentality.** Consisting of a conscious, a memory, and a subconscious.

JOB 38:36

Who has put wisdom in the innermost being [*tuchah*] or given understanding to the mind [*wekviy*]?

PROVERBS 23:7

For as he thinks within himself, so he is [a person actually “is” what he thinks]. He says to you [words without right thinking], “Eat and drink!” But his heart is not with you.

1. **Conscious Thinking.** The brain is called the *nous* (mind) where conscious thought, occurs. “*And I will say to my soul, ‘Soul, you have many goods laid up for many years to come; take your ease, eat, drink and be merry’*” [Lk. 12:19]. The thinking side of the brain, where vocabulary and categorical concepts are developed, is also called the *kardia* (heart) [the Hebrew equivalent is *leb*]. Both words are used for thinking [Prov. 15:13-15; 17:22; 18:15; 19:1-2; 23:7; 27:19; Ps. 22:15; Job 38:36; Eph. 1:18]. For the Believer, the right lobe of the brain is where Bible Doctrine *gnosis* is transformed into *epignosis* (full knowledge). *Since the most important thinking is God’s: “Therefore, prepare your minds for action”* [1 Pet. 1:13].
 2. **Frame of Reference.** Linked to the heart, the memory center stores thoughts in the mentality [Lk. 2:19; Lam. 3:20-24; Ps. 119:6]. This is the place where *epignosis* is stored for the Believer [Prov. 4:4; 1 Cor. 2:9]. “*Make your ear attentive to wisdom, incline your heart to understanding*” [Prov. 2:2].
 3. **The Subconscious.** The subconscious is the compartment for the storage of impressions that don’t exist in the conscious mind. It is the place of dreams. Also, things that the conscious mind can’t or won’t deal with are dumped into the subconscious.
- (d) **Conscience.** This is the place for *determining right from wrong* via norms and standards that are acquired in life and, for the Believer, via the applicable provisions of Bible Doctrine. See Prov. 23:7; 27:19; Job 38:20; 1 Tim. 1:19-20; Rom. 7:15; Dan. 1:8; 2 Cor. 5:11; Isa. 7:3, 15-17. For the Believer, the conscience [*suneidesis* (the soul as distinguishing between what is morally good and bad)] operates in two spheres: (1) towards God and His Word; and (2) towards all mankind. “*Therefore, to the one who knows the right thing to do and does not do it, to him it is sin*” [Jas. 4:17]. See @@@ SIN.

PROVERBS 23:7

For as he thinks within himself, so he is [a person “is” what he thinks]. He says to you, “Eat and drink!” But his heart [*leb*] is not with you.

1 TIMOTHY 1:19-20

Keeping faith and a good conscience [*suneidesis* – applying Bible Doctrine to life], which some [Loser Believers] have rejected [*apotheomai* (to thrust away)] and suffered shipwreck in regard to their faith [*pistis* – the Loser Believer does not retain Bible Doctrine]. Among these are Hymenaeus and Alexander [both in the status quo of reversionism], whom I [Paul] have handed over [*paradidomi* (to give into the hands)] to Satan [sin unto death], so that they will be taught [*paideuo* (to train children)] not to blaspheme.

ISAIAH 7:16

For before the boy [Shear-Jashub, the young son of Isaiah] will know *enough* to refuse evil and choose good [using his conscience], the land whose two kings you dread will be forsaken [before Shear-Jashub would be old enough to know the difference between right from wrong both the Northern Kingdom of Israel and the Kingdom of Syria would be destroyed by the Assyrians].

1. **Convicts of Sin.** The conscience convicts mankind of human sin, both individually and collectively. “*And He, when He comes, will convict the world concerning sin and righteousness and judgment*” [Jn. 16:8]; Rom. 2:15; 7:15; 13:5.

ROMANS 7:15

For what I [Paul] am doing [*katergazomai* (something on the inside working out)], I do not understand [Paul wants to stay in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit, not sin]; for I am not practicing what I *would* like to *do*, but I am doing [*poieo* – succumbing to the Old Sin Nature to sin] the very thing I hate.

2. **Norms.** Norms form to “*cleanse your conscience from dead works to serve the living God*” [Heb. 9:14]; 2 Tim. 1:3; Rom. 1:9; 9:1; 1 Tim. 1:5, 19; 3:9. To “*keep a good conscience*” when “*slandered*” [1 Pet. 3:16]. See 1 Pet. 2:18-19; Rom. 2:15.

ROMANS 2:15

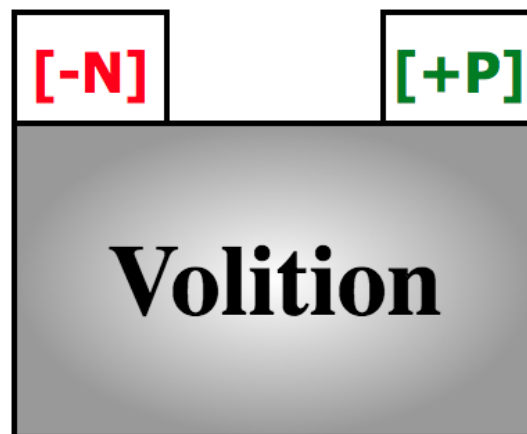
In that they show the work of the Law written in their hearts, their conscience [*suneidesis* (distinguishing between what is morally good and bad)] bearing witness and their thoughts alternately accusing or else defending them.

3. **Happiness in Complying With the Conscience.** See 2 Cor. 1:12; Prov. 15:13-15; Acts 24:16.

2 CORINTHIANS 1:12

For our [Paul's traveling seminary team of Pastor/Teachers] proud confidence is this: the testimony of our conscience [*suneidesis*], that in holiness and godly sincerity, not in fleshly wisdom [*sophia* – human viewpoint in the Cosmic Systems] but in the grace of God, we have conducted ourselves in the world, and especially toward you.

4. **Legalism.** False norms in the conscience produce legalism. See 1 Cor. 8:7; Prov. 18:12; 1 Tim. 4:1-2 [destroys the conscience].
- (e) **Volition.** With its Positive [+P] and Negative [-N] poles [by analogy, a car battery], the **Volition**, or *free will, is the key factor in human existence*. With sovereignty of choice, the individual's positive [+P] volition determines his salvation and his subsequent growth to maturity. "*Seek the LORD and His strength; Seek His face continually*" [1 Chron. 16:11]. "*With all my heart I have sought you*" [Ps. 119:10].



– Human Free Will –

“The LORD looks at the heart” [1 Sam. 16:7]; Prov. 2:2, 10; 18:15. *“I have set the LORD continually before me; because He is at my right hand, I will not be shaken”* [Ps. 16:8]. See Lk. 13:24; Mk. 6:6; Acts 3:23; Jn. 5:39-40; 7:17; 10:27; Ps. 119:20, 30-32; Jos. 24:15; Rev. 22:17; Deut. 1:43; Prov. 21:2, 10; 8:17; Lk. 13:34; Matt. 7:7-8; 23:37; Isa. 65:12; Jer. 32:33; Jas. 4:8; Ph. 14.

JOSHUA 24:15

If it is disagreeable in your sight to serve the LORD, choose for yourselves today whom you will serve: whether the gods which your fathers served which were beyond the River [to worship the idols of Egypt and other concepts of religion], or the gods of the Amorites in whose land you are living; but as for me [Joshua] and my house, we will serve the LORD.

PHILEMON 14

But without your consent [volitional decisions from the free will] I [Paul] did not want to do anything, so that your goodness would not be, in effect, by compulsion but of your own free will.

MATTHEW 7:7-8

Ask, and it will be given to you [positive [+P] volition]; seek [zeteo (to seek in order to find) – positive [+P] volition], and you will find; knock [positive [+P] volition], and it will be opened to you. For everyone who asks receives, and he who seeks finds, and to him who knocks it will be opened [God wants all to be humans saved and all Believers to reach spiritual maturity].

PROVERBS 8:17

“I [God] love those who love me [Bible Doctrine]; and those who diligently seek [shachar (to look earnestly) – the Believer with positive [+P] volition decisions from the free will] me will find me.”

PSALM 119:20

My soul [nephesh] is crushed with longing [taabah (positive desire) – positive [+P] volition] after Your ordinances at all times.

JEREMIAH 33:3

Call [*qara* (to call out) – positive [+P] volition] to Me [God] and I will answer you, and I will tell [*nagad* (to be conspicuous; to make known)] great [*gadol* (large in magnitude and extent)] and mighty things [Bible Doctrine], which you do not know.

JOHN 7:17

If anyone is willing [*thelo* – positive [+P] volition] to do His [God's] will, he will know of the teaching [*didache* – Bible Doctrine], whether it is of God or whether I [Jesus Christ] speak from Myself.

JAMES 4:8

Draw near to God [positive [+P] volition] and He will draw near to you. Cleanse your hands, you sinners [use Rebound]; and purify your hearts [seek Bible Doctrine], you double-minded [*dipsuchos* – the negative [-N] volition Believer in the Cosmic Systems].

JOHN 10:27

My [Jesus'] sheep [*probaton* – the Believer on positive [+P] volition] hear My voice [Winner Believer responds to grace], and I know them, and they follow [positive [+P] volition to Bible Doctrine] Me.

MARK 6:6

And He [Jesus from His humanity] wondered [*thaumazo* (to be astonished; to wonder) – what person would reject God's grace salvation offer?] at their unbelief [*apistia* (unbelief) – these negative [-N] volition unBelievers rejected the Gospel]. And He was going around the villages teaching.

JOHN 5:39-40

You [religious unBelievers] search the Scriptures because you think that in them you have eternal life; it is these that testify [*martureo*] about Me [Jesus Christ provides salvation]; and you are unwilling [negative [-N] volition] to come to Me so that you may have life [*zoe* – eternal life].

DEUTERONOMY 1:43

So I [Moses] spoke to you [the Jewish people], but you would not listen [negative [-N] volition from the free will]. Instead you rebelled against the command of the LORD, and acted presumptuously [zud (to deal arrogantly)] and went up into the hill country [where they were defeated with great loss].

LUKE 13:34

O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, *the city* that kills the prophets and stones those sent to her! How often I [Jesus Christ] wanted [God's Directive Will to save them] to gather your children together, just as a hen *gathers* her brood under her wings, and you would not *have it* [negative [-N] volition from the free will]!

JEREMIAH 32:33

They [majority of the people in Judah] have turned *their* back [oreph – negative [-N] volition] to Me [God] and not *their* face [paniym – they are not on positive [+P] volition]; though *I* taught them, teaching again and again, they would not listen and receive instruction [God sent many teachers to proclaim Bible Doctrine to include the Prophet Jeremiah].

ISAIAH 65:12

I [God] will destine [manah (to assign)] you [apostate Jews who rejected Bible Doctrine] for the sword [Divine Discipline], and all of you will bow down to the slaughter. Because I called, but you did not answer [negative [-N] volition]; I spoke, but you did not hear [shama (to hear; to obey)]. And you did evil in My sight and chose [bachar – negative [-N] volition] that in which I did not delight [chaphets (to desire) – they chose life in the Cosmic Systems of Satan].

REVELATION 22:17

The [Holy] Spirit and the bride say, “Come.” And let the one who hears say, “Come.” And let the one who is thirsty [dipsao (to be thirsty) – on positive [+P] volition in their soul] come; let the one who wishes [thelo (to will)] take the water [hudor – the water is the Gospel of salvation] of life without cost [dorea (a gift) – a grace gift from God].

- (5) **Temptation to Sin.** The soul is influenced to commit sin from two general sources: (1) the Cosmic System; and (2) the Old Sin Nature.
- (a) **Cosmic Systems.** Personal volitional choices for or against various environmental temptations. *See* Rom. 1:22-24; Mic. 7:3; Lk. 15:28.

MICAH 7:3

Concerning evil, both hands do it well. The prince asks, also the judge, for a bribe, and a great man speaks the desire of his soul [*nephesh* – negative [-N] volition]; so they weave it together.

LUKE 15:28

But he [the older brother of the “Prodigal Son” parable] became angry and was not willing [*thelo* – negative [-N] volition] to go in [his father had thrown a welcome home feast for the younger son]; and his father [God the Father in the parable] came out and *began* pleading [God desires that all Believers stay out of the Cosmic Systems] with him.

- (b) **Old Sin Nature Temptations.** Inherent flaws emanating from the Old Sin Nature. *See* Rom. 5:12; 7:15-25; Ps. 51:5. Not only is human biological life in the womb contaminated by the OSN at conception [from the male’s 23 chromosomes], but Adam’s original sin is also imputed by God to the OSN at birth. While it is not a sin to be tempted, it is the human volition that determines whether or not to sin [Job 21:25; Prov. 21:10; Zech. 11:8; Ps. 10:6, 13; 55:21]. *See* @@@ REBOUND.

PROVERBS 21:10

The soul [*nephesh*] of the wicked desires [negative [-N] volition decisions from the free will] evil; his neighbor finds no favor in his eyes.

- (6) **Volitional Battleground.** *Thinking is the battleground for control* of the Believer’s soul and where Satan attacks. “*For as he thinks within himself, so he is*” [Prov. 23:7]. “*Watch over your heart with all diligence*” [Prov. 4:23]. The Believer either thinks the Divine viewpoint and lives in the Divine Dynasphere, or he thinks Satan’s viewpoint and lives in the Cosmic Systems. *See* Gen. 4:7; Matt. 10:28; Rom. 12:2; 1 Pet. 2:11.

GENESIS 4:7

If you [God speaking to Cain] do well, will not *your countenance* be lifted up? And if you do not do well, sin is crouching at the door; and its desire [*teshuqah* (desire, longing, craving)] is for you, but you must master [*marshal* (to rule) – use positive [+P] volition to refuse the temptations from the Old Sin Nature and the Cosmic Systems] it.

ROMANS 12:2

And [Believer] do not be conformed [*suschematizo* (to conform one's self to another's pattern)] to this world [Satan's Cosmic Systems], but be transformed [*metamorphoo* – the Believer is expected to reject the Cosmic Systems and transform himself to the status of spiritual maturity] by the renewing [*anakainosis* (a renewal; complete change for the better to another form)] of your mind [*nous* – the transformation of the positive [+P] volition Believer's thinking to understand and know God's thinking requires maximum Bible Doctrine in the soul/spirit], so that you may prove [*dokimazo* (to test; to prove)] what the will of God is [the Believer is commanded to reach maturity], that which is good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] and acceptable [*euarestos* (well pleasing)] and perfect [*teleios* (to make complete)].

- (7) **Soul Breathing.** The **Winner** Believer's soul is equated to spiritual lungs designed to take in Bible Doctrine [*the inhale*] and to then respond to God [*the exhale*]. See Ps. 42:1. See @@@ OPERATION Z.

PSALM 42:1

As the deer pants [*arag* (to long for)] for the water brooks, so my soul [*nephesh*] pants [*arag* – the positive [+P] volition Believer desiring to know God] for You, O God.

- (8) **Emotion.** The thinking mentality *kardia* (heart) is meant to control the human emotion [2 Cor. 6:11-12]. The emotion is supposed to be the responder and appreciator to things in the mentality, *not the leader of the mentality*. Thus, if the emotion continuously dominates over the mentality, the Believer cannot grow to spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1]. See Jer. 17:10; 20:12; Rev. 2:23; Ps. 26:1-2; Deut. 29:4; Isa. 13:7-8. See @@@ EMOTION.

2 CORINTHIANS 6:11-12

Our [Paul and his traveling seminary team] mouth has spoken freely to you [they taught many Bible classes], O Corinthians, our heart [*kardia*] is opened wide. You are not restrained [*stenochoreo* (to be in a narrow place) – from learning Bible Doctrine] by us, but you are restrained in your own affections [*splagchnon* – negative emotion].

- (9) **Misery.** The soul is the place of misery when scar tissue grows from the Believer's negative [-N] volitional decisions towards learning and applying Bible Doctrine. “*My soul cleaves to the dust; revive me according to Your word*” [Ps. 119:25]; Job 21:25; Ps. 6:1-3; 10:6; 106:15; 119:28, 81; Jer. 17:5, 9; 29:19; *Ecclesiastes*. See @@@ REVERSIONISM.

PSALM 6:1-3

O LORD, do not rebuke [*yakach* (to judge, reprove)] me in Your anger, nor chasten me in Your wrath [Divine Discipline Suffering to the Believer]. Be gracious to me, O LORD, for I *am* pining away; heal me, O LORD, for my bones are dismayed [after Rebound the suffering is converted to Suffering for Blessing to advance to spiritual maturity]. And my soul [*nephesh*] is greatly dismayed; but You, O LORD—how long?

JOB 21:25

While another dies with a bitter soul [*nephesh* – self induces misery because of negative [-N] volition], never even tasting *anything* good.

JEREMIAH 17:5

Thus says the LORD, “Cursed is the man who trusts [*batach* (to have confidence in)] in mankind [to solve his problems] and makes flesh [the Old Sin Nature and human solutions washed in good works and religion] his strength, and whose heart [*leb*] turns away from the LORD [negative [-N] volition to Bible Doctrine].”

- (10) **Capacity to Love.** The soul is the area for the capacity to love [1 Sam. 18:1; 1 Pet. 1:22]. Capacity to love rests in positive [+P] volition thinking, not in emotion. Good emotion can respond to true love. See @@@ LOVE.

- (11) **Departs the Body.** At Physical Death the soul departs from the mortal body [Phil. 1:21-25; 2 Cor. 5:8; Job 27:8; Ps. 16:10; Lk. 12:19-21]. For the Believer the *human soul/spirit await a resurrection body*. “*And I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded because of their testimony of Jesus*” [Rev. 20:4]. For the unBeliever the human soul resides in a compartment of Hell pending judgment at the Great White Throne Judgment [Rev. 20:11-15] and sentenced to the eternal Lake of Fire. “*Do not fear those who kill the body but are unable to kill the soul; but rather fear Him (God) who is able to destroy both soul and body in hell (Lake of Fire)*” [Matt. 10:28].

JOB 27:8

For what is the hope of the godless [unBeliever] when he is cut off [*batsa – Physical Death*], when God requires his life [*nephesh (soul)*]?

2 CORINTHIANS 5:8

We [Believers] are of good courage, I [Paul] say, and prefer rather to be absent [*ekdemeo (to go or live abroad)*] from the body [*at Physical Death the human soul/spirit departs the body*] and to be at home [*endemeo (to be among one’s own people)*] with the LORD [*in Heaven*].

- (12) **Soul Only is Saved.** Only the Believer’s soul is saved – “*to make atonement for your souls*” [Lev. 17:11] – *not his human body* [Ps. 19:7; 34:22; 71:23; Mk. 8:36-37; Heb. 10:39; 1 Pet. 1:9]. The mortal *body disintegrates* following Physical Death – “*then the dust will return to the earth as it was, and the spirit will return to God who gave it*” [Eccl. 12:7]. Believers will get a new supernatural resurrection body which will house their soul/spirit.

PSALM 34:22

The LORD redeems [*padah (to pay a ransom)*] the soul [*nephesh*] of His servants [Believers], and none of those who take refuge in Him will be condemned [*asham (to be incriminated) – eternal security is guaranteed*].

PSALM 71:23

My lips will shout for joy when I sing praises to You; and my soul [*nephesh*], which You have redeemed [*padah (to pay a ransom)*].

– THE HUMAN SPIRIT –

- (1) **Definition.** The human spirit, Hebrew *ruach* [sometimes this word is used to describe the human soul] and Greek *pneuma*, is *created by God the Holy Spirit at salvation and is the possession of the Believer only*. See Jn. 3:4-8; 1 Cor. 2:11-12; 1 Thess. 5:23; Zech. 12:1; Jas. 3:15. At the moment of faith alone in Jesus Christ alone the human “*spirit*” [Rom. 8:16-17] is *created and attached permanently* to the new Believer’s human soul. The human spirit allows the Believer to now comprehend spiritual phenomena, i.e., Bible Doctrine, and grow to “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1]. See *infra* (b) and (c).

ROMANS 8:16-17

The [*Holy*] Spirit [*pneuma*] Himself testifies [*summartureo* (to bear witness)] with our [*human*] spirit [*pneuma*] that we are children [*teknon*] of God, and if children, heirs [*kleronomos* (one who receives his allotted portion by right of sonship)] also, heirs of God and fellow heirs [*sugkleronomos*] with Christ, if indeed we suffer with *Him* [*sumpascho* (to feel pain together) – *Divine Suffering for Blessing to the positive [+P] volition Believer*] so that we may also be glorified [*sundoxazo* (to glorify together)] with *Him* [*the Believer at spiritual maturity receives rewards*].

1 CORINTHIANS 2:11

For who among men knows the *thoughts* of a man [*a Believer*] except the spirit [*pneuma*] of the man which is in him [*only the Believer has a human spirit*]? Even so the *thoughts* of God no one knows except the Spirit of God [*the Holy Spirit provides the thoughts of the Trinity in the Bible to the Believer*].

- (a) **Eternal Life.** In all dispensations, God imputes His eternal life to the human spirit at salvation [Jn. 3:5-8; Rom. 8:10; 2 Tim. 4:22; 1 Jn. 5:20; 1 Cor. 6:17]. See @@@ FORTY THINGS.

ROMANS 8:10

If Christ is in you, though the body is dead because of sin, yet the [*human*] spirit [*pneuma*] is alive because of righteousness [*dikaiousune* – *the Righteousness [+R] of God is imputed to the human spirit*].

JOHN 3:5-7

Jesus answered [Nicodemus], “Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born of water [water of the Gospel] and the Spirit [pneuma – the salvation ministry of the Holy Spirit imputing a human spirit] he cannot enter into [eiserchomai (to come in or go out)] the kingdom of God. That which is born of flesh [sarx] is flesh [the unBeliever is born in Spiritual Death with an OSN], and that which is born of the [Holy] Spirit [pneuma] is spirit [pneuma – the Believer receives a human spirit]. Do not be amazed that I said to you, ‘You must be born again [anothen (of things which come from heaven)].’”

- (b) **Comprehend.** The human spirit is necessary for the Believer to *comprehend Bible Doctrine* – “*combining spiritual thoughts with spiritual words*” [1 Cor. 2:10-16]; Jas. 3:14-15; Rom. 8:16; Eph. 4:17-18. Note: unBelievers can comprehend the utility and truth of the Divine Institutions without a human spirit.

1 CORINTHIANS 2:10-13

For to us [Believer] God revealed *them* through the Spirit [Holy Spirit]; for the Spirit searches all things, even the depths of God. For who among men knows the *thoughts* of a man except the [human] spirit [pneuma] of the man [Believer] which is in him? Even so the *thoughts* of God no one knows except the Spirit of God. Now we have received, not the spirit [pneuma (the disposition or influence which fills and governs the soul of any one) – the Cosmic Systems under Satan] of the world, but the [Holy] Spirit who is from God, so that we may know the things freely given to us by God, which things we [Paul and his team] also speak, not in words taught by human wisdom [human viewpoint and religion], but in those taught by the [Holy] Spirit, combining spiritual [pneumatikos (relating to the human spirit)] *thoughts* with spiritual words [only a human spirit understands spiritual concepts].

- (c) **Foolishness to the UnBeliever.** The *unBeliever has no human spirit* and is only a “*natural* [psuchikos (soulish)]” [Jas. 3:15] man, and although he can hear or read the words of the Bible and understand them as academic, *gnosis* (knowledge), without a human spirit they are complete “*foolishness to him*” [1 Cor. 2:14-16] and are rejected in every single instance of exposure [Eph. 4:17-18]. Note: the unBeliever can understand the Divine Institutions. See @@@ OPERATION Z.

1 CORINTHIANS 2:14-16

But a natural [*psuchikos* (soulish) – the unBeliever has a soul but no human spirit] man [*anthropos* (mankind)] does not accept [*dechomai* (to take with the hand)] the things of the Spirit [*pneuma*] of God [the Holy Spirit is the author of Bible Doctrine], for they are foolishness [*moria*] to him; and he cannot understand [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] them, because [*hoti* (on account of)] they are spiritually [*pneumatikos* (relating to the human spirit) – understanding Bible Doctrine requires a human spirit] appraised [*anakrino* (to examine; to investigate; to evaluate)]. But he who is spiritual [*pneumatikos* (relating to the human spirit) – the Believer has a human spirit and here is in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit] appraises all things, yet he himself is appraised by no one [the Law of Liberty in the Christian Way of Life]. For who has known [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] the mind [*nous* (the mind, comprising alike the faculties of perceiving and understanding)] of the LORD [*kurios* (God) – the thinking of Jesus Christ is Bible Doctrine], that he [any given person] will instruct [*sumbibazo* (to cause to coalesce)] Him [God]? But we [Paul and his traveling seminary] have [*echo* (to have and to hold)] the mind of Christ [these Pastor/Teachers knew Bible Doctrine and were ready to teach it].

EPHESIANS 4:17-18

So this I [Paul] say, and affirm together with the LORD, that you [Believers] walk [*peripateo* (a lifestyle)] no longer just as the Gentiles [*ethnos* – the unBelievers] also walk [in the Cosmic Systems], in the futility [*mataiotes* (devoid of truth)] of their mind [*nous*], being darkened [*skotoo* (blackout)] in their understanding [the unBeliever cannot understand Bible Doctrine as they have no human spirit], excluded [*apallotrio* (to be shut out from intimacy) – the unBeliever is not in the family of God] from the life of God [the unBeliever cannot enter the Divine Dynasphere] because of the ignorance [*agnoia* (lack of knowledge) – no desire in their negative [-N] volition] that is in them, because of the hardness [*porosis* (the covering with a callus) – those humans on negative [-N] volition] of their heart [*kardia* – the soul of the unBeliever].

- (2) **Soul and Spirit.** The Bible clearly *distinguishes between* the human soul [which all humans possess] and the human spirit [which only Believers possess]. See Lk. 1:46-47; Heb. 4:12; 1 Cor. 2:11-14.

HEBREWS 4:12

For the word of God [**Bible Doctrine**] is living [*zao* (true life)] and active [*energes* (powerful)] and sharper than any two-edged sword [*machaira* (short Roman sword)], and piercing as far as the division [*merismos* (separation)] of soul [*psuche*] and spirit [*pneuma* – the human spirit of the Believer], of both joints and marrow, and able to judge the thoughts and intentions of the heart.

LUKE 1:46-47

And Mary said: “My soul [*psuche*] exalts the LORD, And my spirit [*pneuma* – the human spirit of the Believer] has rejoiced in God my Savior.”

- (a) **Trichotomous.** A Believer in his mortal body is a trichotomous [three-part] being with a: (1) human soul; (2) human spirit; and (3) physical body [1 Thess. 5:23; Zech. 12:1; Phm. 25; Matt. 26:41; Heb. 4:12; Tit. 3:5; Job 32:8; Prov. 20:27; Eph. 4:23-24]. His soul and spirit remain united forever and will dwell in a “*resurrection*” [Phil. 3:11] body.

1 THESSALONIANS 5:23

Now may the God of peace Himself sanctify [*hagiazō* (to purify internally by the renewing of the soul) – God’s desire for the Believer to reach maturity] you entirely; and may your spirit [*pneuma* – the human spirit] and soul [*psuche*] and body [*soma*] be preserved complete, without blame [*reaching maturity*] at the coming of our LORD Jesus Christ [*at the Rapture*].

- (b) **Dichotomous.** An unBeliever is a dichotomous [two-part] being with a *soul and a physical body only* [1 Cor. 2:11-14; Jude 19].
- (c) **Adam.** Adam, created by God with a body, soul, and spirit, went from a trichotomous being [Gen. 2:7] to a dichotomous being [Spiritual Death at the point of the original sin caused the loss of his human spirit]. Without a human spirit Adam had no relationship with God [Gen. 2:16-17; 3:7-10]. However, when Adam believed in the Gospel by faith in the coming Messiah [Christ as “*seed of the woman*”] per Gen. 3:15, he then went back to a trichotomous being. He regained his human spirit [but also acquired an Old Sin Nature]. The same occurred with Eve.
-

@@@ SUFFERING

- (1) **Definition.** The general causes of suffering and problems in life for all humans – Believers and unBelievers – *emanate from one of four categories*: (1) Physical; (2) People; (3) System; or (4) Thought. Examples of suffering include: loss of health [Job 2:4]; administration of justice; natural disasters, privation; gossip; violence; violation of privacy; social matters such as being lonely, bored, rejected, or ostracized by friends, family, or spouse; and mental attitude sins, which produce hatred, jealousy, bitterness, and implacability. *See @@@ PROBLEMS.*
- (2) **Impacts the Believer.** For the Believer, suffering *never leaves one the same*. He is either a very bitter **Loser** Believer or a smarter, grateful, and “*content*” [Phil. 4:11] **Winner** Believer. *See Phil. 3:10-16.*

PHILIPPIANS 3:10-14

That I [Paul] may know Him [the mind of Jesus Christ] and the power of His resurrection [*anastasis* – the power that raised Christ from death is available to all Believers] and the fellowship of His sufferings [*pathema* – the categories of Divine Suffering for Blessing], being conformed to His death; in order that I may attain to the resurrection from the dead [an indestructible resurrection body and eternal rewards]. Not that I have already obtained it [*lambano* (to lay hold of) – the highest level of spiritual maturity] or have already become perfect [*teleioo*], but I press on [*dioko* (to run swiftly in order to catch a thing)] so that I may lay hold of that for which also I was laid hold of by Christ Jesus. Brethren, I do not regard myself as having laid hold of it yet; but one thing I do: forgetting [*epilanthanomai* (forgetting; no longer caring for; given over to oblivion)] what lies behind [Paul’s past failures were dealt with by Rebound] and reaching forward to what lies ahead [*emprosthen* (in the sight of)], I press on [*dioko* – in the Christian Way of Life] toward the goal [*skopos* (a distance mark looked at)] for the prize [*brabeion* (the award to the victor in the games) – eternal rewards] of the upward call [*klesis* (invitation)] of God in Christ Jesus [the Plan of God desires the best and highest for all Believers].

- (3) **Categories of Suffering.** While some categories of suffering are different for Believers and unBelievers, *most are exactly the same*. “*Therefore let him who thinks he stands take heed that he does not fall. No temptation has overtaken you but such as is common to man*” [1 Cor. 10:13].

- (a) **Suffering in Time.** Both Believer and unBeliever.
- (b) **Suffering in Eternity.**
 - 1. **UnBeliever.** The separation from God in the “*lake of fire*” is absolute [Rev. 20:12-15]. See @@@ JUDGMENT.
 - 2. **Believer.** There is *no suffering in Heaven* [Rev. 21:4].

REVELATION 21:4

And He [God] will wipe away [*exaleipho* (to anoint or wash in every part)] every tear from their [Believer] eyes; and [in Heaven] there will no longer be any death [*thanatos* (with the implied idea of future misery in hell)]; there will no longer be any mourning, or crying, or pain; the first [*protos* (first in time)] things have passed away [*aperchomai* (to go away)].

– CHRISTIAN DIVINE DISCIPLINE SUFFERING –

- (1) **Self-Induced Misery Suffering.**
 - (a) **Law of Volitional Responsibility.** *A man will reap what he sows!* Accordingly, “*sow the wind*” and “*reap the whirlwind*” [Hos. 8:7]. “*God is not mocked; for whatever a man sows, this he will also reap*” [Gal. 6:7]. This concept is general in nature and also applies to the unBeliever in his life choices. In short, you do it to yourself!

HOSEA 8:7

For they [Israel] sow the wind and they reap the whirlwind [*self-induced problems and/or Divine Discipline Suffering*]. The standing grain has no heads; it yields no grain. Should it yield, strangers would swallow it up.

- (b) **Bad Thinking.** Most all Christian suffering results from the Believer’s *own wrong thoughts, decisions, and actions*. In short, the Believer rejects the authority of Bible Doctrine to show him the way he should conduct his life and substitutes the evil thinking of the Cosmic Systems and human good [Gal. 5:7]. See @@@ AUTHORITY.

GALATIANS 5:7

You [**Believers in Galatia**] were running [*trecho* (of those who run in a race course)] well [**they were advancing in the Christian Way of Life**]; who hindered [*egkopto* (to impede one's course by cutting off his way)] you from obeying the truth [***aletheia* – these Believers hindered themselves by getting into the Cosmic Systems**]?

- (c) **Violation of the Divine Institutions.** Those who ignore or reject the Divine Institutions are ***guaranteeing suffering to individuals, families, and nations***. “***When the righteous increase, the people rejoice, But when the wicked man rules, people groan***” [Prov. 29:2]

(2) **Divine Discipline Suffering.**

- (a) **To Retool.** God employs Divine Discipline Suffering in ***progressive stages*** to get the negative [**-N**] volition Believer to reorient to the Plan of God. “***My son, do not reject the discipline of the LORD Or loath His reproof, For whom the LORD loves he reproves, Even as a father corrects the son in whom he delights***” [Prov. 3:11-12]; Heb. 12:5-13; Rev. 3:16, 19-20; Job 5:17-18; Ps. 7:12-16; 30:5; 119:67; Nah. 1:3.

HEBREWS 12:6, 10-11

For those whom the LORD loves [***agapao*** (to love dearly) – **all Believers possess God's Righteousness [+R]**] He disciplines [***paideuo*** (of a father punishing a son) – **Divine Discipline Suffering**], and He scourges [***mastigoo*** (to flog with a whip)] every son whom He receives [***paradechomai*** (to acknowledge as one's own)]. ... but He *disciplines us* for *our* good, so that we may share His holiness [**advance to maturity**]. All discipline for the moment seems not to be joyful, but sorrowful; yet to those who have been trained by it, afterwards it yields the peaceful fruit of righteousness.

JOB 5:17-18

Behold, how happy is the man whom God reproves [**Divine Discipline Suffering**], So do not despise the discipline [***musar*** (chastening; correction)] of the Almighty. For He inflicts pain, and gives relief; He wounds, and His hands *also* heal [**the purpose is to get the Believer back to Bible Doctrine**].

PSALM 7:12-16

If a man does not repent [**Rebound**], He will sharpen His sword; He has bent His bow and made it ready [**Divine Discipline Suffering**]. He has also prepared for Himself deadly weapons; He makes His arrows fiery shafts. Behold, he travails [*chabal*] with wickedness, and he conceives mischief and brings forth falsehood. He has dug a pit and hollowed it out, and has fallen into the hole which he made. His mischief will return upon his own head, and his violence will descend upon his own pate [*godgod (crown of the head)*].

PSALM 30:5

For His anger [*aph (wrath)* – **Divine Discipline Suffering**] is but for a moment, His favor [*ratson (goodwill)*] is for a lifetime [**God wants all Believers to reach maturity**]; Weeping may last for the night, But a shout of joy [*rinnah (praise in proclamation)*] comes in the morning.

NAHUM 1:3

The LORD is slow [**Divine Discipline Suffering**] to anger and great in power, And the LORD will by no means leave *the guilty* unpunished. In whirlwind and storm is His way, And clouds are the dust beneath His feet.

- (b) **Positive Testimony.** Because Divine Discipline Suffering seeks to *return the Believer back* to the Plan of God the ultimate testimony of all **Winner** Believers will be Ps. 119:67 and Ps. 119:71.

PSALM 119:67

Before I [**Believer in reversionism**] was afflicted [**Divine Discipline Suffering**] I went astray [*shagag – the Believer rejected Bible Doctrine*], But now [*attah (at this time)*] I keep [*shamar (to guard; to watch; to keep)*] Your word [**the Believer returns to Bible Doctrine**].

PSALM 119:71

It is good for me that I was afflicted [*anah – warning Divine Discipline Suffering*], That I may learn Your statutes [*choq (a prescribed task) – the full realm of Bible Doctrine*].

- (c) **The Stages of Divine Discipline Suffering.** Designed to alert the Loser Believer to return to Bible Doctrine, the *Bible identifies three progressive stages of suffering*. See 1 Cor. 11:30.

1 CORINTHIANS 11:30

For this reason many among you are [1] weak [*asthenes* (weak; infirm; feeble) – physical/mental weakness is the warning stage of Divine Discipline Suffering] and [2] sick [*arrhostos* (without strength; sick) – intensive stage of Divine Suffering], and [3] a number sleep [*koimao* (to die; to sleep) – sin unto death where the Believer dies].

1. **Warning Divine Discipline Suffering Stage.** To alert the Believer that he must orient himself back to the Christian Way of Life. See Rev. 3:20; 1 Cor. 11:30-31.

REVELATION 3:20

Behold, I [Jesus Christ] stand at the door [Believer's volition] and knock [warning Divine Discipline]; if [Third Class Condition] anyone hears [*akouo* (to consider what is or has been said)] My voice and opens the door [positive [+P] volition to Doctrine], I will come in to him and will dine [*deipneo* (to have supper) – Fellowship with Jesus Christ] with him, and he with Me.

2. **Intensive Divine Discipline Suffering Stage.** Involves greater levels of suffering to include *dramatic levels of physical or mental illness* in order to get the Believer to realize the worthlessness of living in the Cosmic Systems. See Ps. 88:1-18; Rev. 3:19; 1 Cor. 11:30; Lam. 3:1-3. God allowed an “*evil spirit*” [1 Sam. 18:10; 19:9] to torment King Saul's thinking as he sought to murder David. See @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS.

REVELATION 3:19

Those whom I [God] love [*phileo* (personal love) – all Believers], I reprove [*elegcho* (to correct)] and discipline [*paideuo* (a father punishing his son)]; therefore be zealous [*zeloo* (to burn with zeal; to be heated or to boil) – be on positive [+P] volition to Bible Doctrine] and repent [*metanoeo* (change the mind) – get out of the Cosmic Systems].

LAMENTATIONS 3:1-3

I [Jeremiah] am the man who has seen affliction [intensive Divine Discipline Suffering] because of the rod [*shebet* (club, of a shepherd's implement)] of His [God] wrath. He has driven me and made me walk In darkness and not in light. Surely against me He has turned His hand repeatedly all the day.

PSALM 88:7-8

Your wrath has rested upon me [Heman the Ezrahite], And You have afflicted me with all Your waves [*mishbar* (breakers) – intensive Divine Discipline Suffering]. Shelah. You have removed my acquaintances far from me; You have made me an object of loathing to them; I am shut up and cannot go out.

3. **Dying Divine Discipline Suffering Stage.** This final stage of suffering is termed the “*sin unto death*” [1 Jn. 5:16, KJV], where God marks the **Loser** Believer for *painful Physical Death* with only a limited window to recover [1 Cor. 11:30; Prov. 15:10].

PROVERBS 15:10

Grievous punishment is for him who forsakes the way [Loser Believer in reversionism]; He who hates reproof [Loser Believer who will not respond to God] will die [the sin unto death].

4. **The Solution.** 1 Cor. 11:30 [*supra*], covers all three progressive stages of *Divine Discipline Suffering* to the Believer, and in 1 Cor. 11:31-32, the solution is provided – *evaluate self, keep close accounts, and immediately Rebound* or “*your sin will find you out*” [Num. 32:23]. See Eph. 4:17-18.

1 CORINTHIANS 11:31-32

But if we judged [*diakrino* (make a distinction; judge)] ourselves rightly [constant evaluation and Rebound], we would not be judged [*krino* – Divine Discipline Suffering]. But when we are judged, we are disciplined [*paideuo* (of a father punishing his son)] by the LORD, so that we will not be condemned along with the world [*kosmos* – God uses Divine Discipline to correct and motivate the Believer not condemn him].

– CHRISTIAN DIVINE SUFFERING FOR BLESSING –

- (1) **Designed For Blessing.** All Divine Disciple Suffering is *designed to bless the Believer*. See 1 Pet. 1:6-8; 4:14; 5:8-9; Ps. 6:1-3; 30:5; 119:67; Jas. 1:3. While Divine Discipline Suffering seeks to return the negative [-N] volition Believer to the Plan of God, *Divine Suffering for Blessing* [also called “*trials*” or “*testing*”] pushes the positive [+P] Believer forward to spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1] so he then can be entered as a subject matter expert witness in the Angelic Conflict. “*Now it came about after these things, that God tested Abraham*” [Gen. 22:1]. See *infra* (6).

1 PETER 5:8-9

Be of sober *spirit*, be on the alert [*gregoreuo* (to give strict attention)]. Your adversary [*antidikos* (an opponent in a lawsuit) – in the Angelic Conflict], the devil, prowls around like a roaring [*oruomai* – Satan uses fear as a tool of attack] lion, seeking someone to devour [*katapino* (to swallow up; to destroy) – Satan wants all Believers in the Cosmic Systems]. But resist him, firm in your faith [*pistis* – apply Bible Doctrine], knowing that the same experiences of suffering [*pathema* – Divine Suffering for Blessing to the positive [+P] volition Believer] are being accomplished by your brethren who are in the world [*kosmos* – Satan is the ruler of the world but he cannot stop the positive [+P] volition Believer from reaching spiritual maturity].

1 PETER 1:6-8

In this you [*Believers*] greatly rejoice, even though now for a little while, if necessary [*dei* (it is necessary)], you have been distressed by various trials [*peirasmos* (putting to proof) – Divine Suffering for Blessing], so that the proof of your faith [*pistis* – testing the retained Bible Doctrine], being more precious than gold which is perishable [*apollumi* – but Bible Doctrine remains], even though tested [*dokimazo* (to test)] by fire [*pur* – Suffering for Blessing so the positive [+P] volition Believer reaches spiritual maturity], may be found to result in praise and glory [*doxa* – the rewards bestowed to the Believer at the Judgment Seat of Christ] and honor at the revelation [*apokalupsis* (manifestation) – at the Rapture] of Jesus Christ; and though you have not seen Him, you love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] Him [the ability to love Jesus is via Bible Doctrine], and though you do not see Him now, but believe in Him, you greatly rejoice with joy inexpressible and full of glory.

- (2) **Divine Testing.** In *Divine Suffering for Blessing*, God never sends the Believer more “*testing*” [1 Cor. 10:12-13] than he can bear, and with the testing God always provides the way out – the Believer need only apply the Bible Doctrine that he has already retained in his soul/spirit to the problems and testings. “*The testimony of the LORD is sure, making wise the simple*” [Ps. 19:7]. See Jas. 1:12.

1 CORINTHIANS 10:12-13

Therefore let him who thinks [*dokeo* (to be of opinion)] he stands [*the Believer using human viewpoint*] take heed that he does not fall [*pipto* (to descend from a higher place to a lower place)]. No temptation [*peirasmōs* (a test; an experiment; a putting to proof by trial) – *Suffering*] has overtaken [*lambano* (to grab)] you [*the Believer*] but such as is common to man [*anthropinos* (applied to things belonging to mankind)]; and God is faithful [*pistos*], who will not allow you to be tempted [*peirazo* (tested) – *Divine Suffering for Blessing to the positive [+P] volition Believer*] beyond what you are able [*dunamai* – *the test will not exceed the Believer’s level of spiritual maturity*], but with the temptation [*peirasmōs*] will provide [*poieo* (to make)] the way of escape [*ekbasis* (the way out; an egress)] also [*the Believer must apply the applicable Divine problem solving devices to the test*], so that you will be able to endure it [*hupophero* (to bear by being under; to undergo; to bear patiently) – *pass the test and receive rewards in time and in the eternal state in Heaven*].

JAMES 1:12

Blessed is the man [*positive [+P] volition Believer*] who perseveres under trial [*peirasmōs* – *Divine Suffering for Blessing*]; for once he has been approved [*dokimos* (acceptable; pleasing) – *God approves the Believer who reaches spiritual maturity*], he will receive [*lambano* (to take with the hand)] the crown [*stephanos* (a wreath given as a prize)] of life [*fantastic eternal rewards*] which *the LORD* has promised to those who love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] Him [*the positive [+P] volition Believer who reaches maturity loves the LORD*].

- (3) **Divine Assets.** *Divine Suffering for Blessing* forces the positive [+P] Believer to rely completely on the Divine assets he has stored up in his soul by the intake of Bible Doctrine. When God allowed a demon to torment Paul, he used the wrong solutions at first, to include prayer, but then applied “*grace*” [2 Cor. 12:1-8]. See @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES.

2 CORINTHIANS 12:1-8

:1-4

“**boasting**” – *kauchaomai* (to boast with confidence, not arrogance).

“**out of body**” – *exots*. This is an autobiography of Paul’s stoning in A.D. 43, in Lystra [14 years earlier] recorded in Acts 14:19-20. Whether Paul was dead or alive, he was in the Third Heaven. This experience was a huge source of potential pride and a hindrance to his reaching the top level of spiritual maturity.

:6-8

“**foolish**” – *aphron* (a non-thinker). Paul will not boast in the experience.

“**exalting myself**” – *huperairomai* (arrogance through pride).

“**thorn**” – *skolops* (anything that is pointed). This pain was extreme.

“**messenger**” – *aggelos* (an angel). A demon.

“**torment**” – *kolaphizo* (to punch with the fist).

“**implored the LORD three times**” – Paul at first used the wrong approach.

2 CORINTHIANS 12:9-10

And He has said to me [Paul], “My grace is sufficient [*arkeo* (to be possessed of unfailing strength)] for you, for power [*dunamis* – living inside the Divine Dynasphere] is perfected [reaching spiritual maturity] in weakness [Divine Suffering for Blessing].” Most gladly, therefore, I will rather boast about my weaknesses, so that the power of Christ may dwell [*episkenoo* (to fix a tent)] in me. Therefore I am well content with weaknesses, with insults, with distresses, with persecutions, with difficulties, for Christ’s sake; for when I am weak [testing], then I am strong [using the problem solving devices].

2 CORINTHIANS 4:16-18

Therefore we do not lose heart, but though our outer man [mortality] is decaying, yet our inner man [spiritual growth to maturity] is being renewed day by day. For momentary, light [*elaphros* (light in weight)] affliction [thlipsis – Divine Suffering for Blessing] is producing for us an eternal weight [*baros* (heaviness)] of glory [rewards] far beyond all comparison, while we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen; for the things which are seen are temporal, but the things which are not seen are eternal.

(4) **Specific Purposes.**

- (a) **Glorify God.** *Divine Suffering for Blessing* allows the positive [+P] volition **Winner** Believer to glorify God during the Angelic Conflict by reaching spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1] under the Plan of God and receiving “*rewards*” [2 Jn. 8] – “*My Father is glorified by this*” [Jn. 15:8]. Because God is worthy of the Believer’s total love, thinking, and respect, to think about God the Believer needs to reach maturity by the intake of Bible Doctrine that is then *tested* by *Divine Suffering for Blessing*. “*And not only this, but we also exult in our tribulations, knowing that tribulation brings about perseverance; and perseverance, proven character; and proven character, hope*” [Rom. 5:3-4]; Jas. 1:2-4; 1 Pet. 2:18-20; 4:12-14; Jn. 15:1-8; Rom. 8:16-17; Lk. 15:20-21; Heb. 5:8; Phil. 2:8; Col. 3:22-24. *See infra* (6)!

JAMES 1:2-4

Consider it all joy [the problem solving device of sharing God’s Happiness], my brethren [Believer], when you encounter [*peripipto* (to fall into as to be encompassed)] various trials [*peirasmos* (testing) – undeserved Divine Suffering for Blessing results in reaching spiritual maturity], knowing that the testing [*dokimion* (to prove)] of your faith [*pistis* – Bible Doctrine in the Believer’s soul/spirit] produces endurance [*hupomone* (constancy)]. And let endurance have its perfect [*teleios* (brought to its end)] result, so that you may be perfect and complete [*holokleros* (complete in all its parts)], lacking in nothing [at the status of maturity].

1 PETER 4:12-14

Beloved [*agapetos* – fellow Believers], do not be surprised at the fiery ordeal [*purosis* (testing)] among you, which comes upon you for your testing [*peirasmos* – Divine Suffering for Blessing to the positive [+P] volition Believer], as though some strange thing were happening to you; but to the degree that you share the sufferings of Christ, keep on rejoicing, so that also at the revelation [*apokalupsis* (manifestation)] of His glory [*doxa* – at the Rapture followed by the Judgment Seat of Christ, where rewards are bestowed] you may rejoice with exultation. If you are reviled for the name of Christ [the Cosmic Systems hates grace], you are blessed, because the Spirit [*pneuma* – Holy Spirit] of glory and of God rests on you.

JOHN 15:1-8

I [Jesus Christ] am the true [alethinos (truthful; that which has the title and the real nature)] vine [ampelos], and My Father is the vinedresser [georgos]. Every branch [klema (a tender and flexible branch) – a Believer] in Me that does not bear [phero (to carry)] fruit [karpos (the fruit of trees or vines) – the negative [-N] volition Believer in reversionism living in the Cosmic Systems], He takes away [by administering the sin unto death]; and every branch that bears fruit [the positive [+P] volition Believer to Bible Doctrine], He prunes it [kathairo (to prune trees and vines from useless shoots) – a Believer who is the recipient of Divine Suffering for Blessing] so that it may bear [phero] more [polus (much)] fruit [the Believer reaches spiritual maturity and receives rewards]. You [Believers] are already clean [katharos (purified by fire; clean; pure) – all Believers have eternal salvation secured] because of the word [logos – the Gospel] which I have spoken to you. Abide [meno (remain)] in Me, and I in you [the Believer walking in the Christian Way of Life]. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself unless it abides in the vine, so neither can you unless you abide in Me [the Believer must take in Bible Doctrine]. I am the vine, you are the branches; he who abides in Me and I in him [positive [+P] volition to Bible Doctrine], he bears much fruit [Divine Good and rewards], for apart from Me you can do nothing. If anyone does not abide [meno] in Me, he is thrown [ballo] away [exo (out)] as a branch and dries up [xeraino]; and they gather them, and cast them into the fire [pur] and they are burned [kaio – the Loser Believer on negative [-N] volition to Bible Doctrine dies the sin unto death]. If you abide in Me, and My words [rhema (that which is or has been uttered by a living voice)] abide in you [Bible Doctrine], ask whatever you wish, and it will be done for you. My Father is glorified [doxazo] by this, that you bear much fruit [in the Angelic Conflict], and so prove to be My disciples [mathetes].

- (b) **Illustrate a Point of Bible Doctrine.** Hosea, a Prophet to the Northern Kingdom of Israel circa 720 B.C., was commanded by God to marry a prostitute and to care for her and the children she gave birth to, even though Hosea knew they were not his offspring. “*Go take to yourself a wife of harlotry and have children of harlotry; for the land commits flagrant harlotry, forsaking the LORD*” [Hos. 1:2]. This situation demonstrated the negative [-N] volition of the Jews in the Northern Kingdom and God’s extreme grace faithfulness and forbearance to them despite their constant rejection of Him at every turn.

- (c) **Witness.** *Divine Suffering for Blessing* to witness to unBelievers about Christ. “*Keep your behavior excellent among the Gentiles, so that ... as they observe them, glorify God in the day of visitation*” [1 Pet. 2:12]; 1 Cor. 2–3.
- (d) **Growing Believers.** *Divine Suffering for Blessing* to be able to help other less advanced Believers in their spiritual life [2 Cor. 1:3-5].
- (e) **Love God.** *Divine Suffering for Blessing* so the Believer can love God apart from the things that He gives him and to manifest the “*fruit*” [Col. 1:10] of the Holy Spirit. “*Suffer hardship with me, as a good soldier of Christ Jesus*” [2 Tim. 2:3]; 2 Cor. 4:8-11; Rom. 8:16-17.

ROMANS 8:16-17

The [Holy] Spirit Himself testifies [*summatureo* (to bear witness)] with our [human] spirit [*pneuma*] that we are children of God, and if children, heirs [*kleronomos* (one who receives his allotted portion by right of sonship)] also, heirs of God and fellow heirs with Christ, if indeed we suffer with *Him* [*sumpascho* – Divine Suffering for Blessing] so that we may also be glorified with *Him* [the mature Believer receives rewards].

- (5) **Thieme’s Growth Stages.** R. B. Thieme Jr., developed a teaching tool consisting of basic growth stages to “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1] by means of *Divine Suffering for Blessing*.
 - (a) **Spiritual Self-Esteem + Providential Preventive Suffering = Spiritual Autonomy.** The Believer’s self-esteem is not derived from self but from knowing that he has a unique relationship with God. SSE is far superior to human self-esteem.
 - (b) **Spiritual Autonomy + Momentum Testing = Spiritual Maturity** [various levels]. In the Christian Way of Life, the Believer will face totally helpless situations in life, instances where the roof falls in. These are grand moments that the Believer prepares for and anticipates. How the Believer handles these great opportunities for his spiritual growth will depend entirely on the Bible Doctrine in his soul/spirit and his positive [+P] volition to employ the relevant Bible Doctrine he has retained to the test[s]. See @@@ MATURITY.

- (6) **Spiritual Maturity + Evidence Testing = Super Spiritual Maturity.** The highest level of *Divine Suffering for Blessing* is *evidence testing*, designed to place the Believer as a *subject matter expert witness exhibit* in the Angelic Conflict, e.g., Antipas “*My witness, My faithful one*” [Rev. 2:13]; “*so great a cloud of witnesses*” [Heb. 12:1]; Acts 1:8; Rom. 8:36.
- (a) **High Level.** Bringing the “*mature*” [Eph. 4:13] Believer to the highest level of Spiritual Maturity. See @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT.
 - (b) **Examine.** Satan cross-examines [*tests*] the subject matter expert witness presented by God. See Zech. 3:1-2; Job 1:6-12; Matt. 4:1-11.
 - (c) **Types of Tests.** Expert witness testing can come in one of two forms.
 - 1. **Relationship with the Plan of God Test.** Illustration of Jesus Christ who passed a three-part test as recorded in Matt. 4:1-11. “*Then Jesus was led up by the [Holy] Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted by the devil.*” His subsequent maximum testings were unique events far beyond those faced by any Believer.
 - a. **Jesus’ Relationship With the Holy Spirit** – Matt. 4:1-4. Jesus was tempted to use His own Deity – “*command that these stones become bread.*” Jesus countered with Bible Doctrine. He was extremely hungry but only employed miracles to announce His 1st Advent as the Messiah, not to feed all the people in the world. Jesus rejected human good at every turn. His mission was not to bring “equality” to the world, but to provide salvation.
 - b. **Jesus’ Relationship With Bible Doctrine** – Matt. 4:5-7. Satan tempted the humanity of Christ by a false application of Bible Doctrine regarding God’s angelic protection. Jesus correctly responded that the Believer must always follow God’s will. See @@@ ANGELS.
 - c. **Jesus’ Relationship With the Plan of God** – Matt. 4:8-10. Satan attempted to get Jesus to bypass the cross and go directly to a so-called Satanic crown of rulership and power. See @@@ PLAN OF GOD.

2. **Relationship with Life Test.** Illustrated by Job’s three-part test which God allowed Satan to administer. “*Then the LORD said to Satan, ‘Behold, all that he has is in your power, only do not put forth your hand on him’*” [Job 1:12]. (1) **Loss of Prosperity Test** [Job 1] – Job passed; (2) **Loss of Health Test** [Job 2:1-10] – Job passed; and (3) **People Test** [Job 2:11–42:5] – Job flunked this mental attitude test several times until passing it in Job 42:5.
- (7) **Overview.** (1) The mind of the LORD Jesus Christ [1 Cor. 2:16] is *formed* in the Believer at **SSE** – Gal. 4:19. (2) Christ is *at home* in the heart at **SA** – Eph. 3:16-17. (3) Christ is *exalted in the body* at **SM** – Phil. 1:20-21; 3:12-14. (4) Christ is *glorified to the maximum* at **SSM** – 2 Tim. 4:7-8. For “*when I am weak (testing), then I am strong (growing)*” [2 Cor. 12:10].

START	WEAKNESS	STRENGTH
Spiritual Self-esteem	Providential Preventative Suffering	Spiritual Autonomy
Spiritual Autonomy	Momentum Testing Suffering	Spiritual Maturity
Spiritual Maturity	Evidence Testing Suffering	Super Spiritual Maturity
	$SSE + PPS = SA$	
	$SA + MTS = SM$	
	$SM + ETS = SSM$	

– Thieme Testing Chart –

- (8) **Two Learning Methods.** Every Believer learns something about God via:
- (a) **Hard Way.** The “School of Hard Knocks” where he experiences the consequences of his bad decisions and *Divine Discipline Suffering*.

- (b) **Easy Way.** The “University of Bible Doctrine” for the **Winner** Believer who anticipates *Divine Suffering for Blessing*. Stay focused on the @@@ **PLAN OF GOD**.

- | | | | |
|----|--------------------------|-------|------------------|
| 1. | Childhood | _____ | Freshman |
| 2. | Spiritual Self-Esteem | _____ | Sophomore |
| 3. | Spiritual Autonomy | _____ | Junior |
| 4. | Spiritual Maturity | _____ | Senior |
| 5. | Super Spiritual Maturity | _____ | Graduate Student |

– University of Bible Doctrine –

- (9) **Solutions to Suffering.**
- (a) **Negative [-N] Solutions.** The Believer stays in the Cosmic Systems. See @@@ **COSMIC SYSTEMS**.
- (b) **Positive [+P] Solutions.** The Believer uses the problem solving devices to include: (1) Rebound [1 Jn. 1:9]; (2) Faith/Rest technique; (3) Hope; and (4) *agape impersonal love* [1 Cor. 13:11-13]. In short, the Believer *employs the appropriate* Bible Doctrine to the testing.
- (10) **Pastor/Teacher Suffering.** The Pastor/Teacher gets *Divine Suffering for Blessing* to stay focused on Bible Doctrine [2 Cor. 12:9-10]. He also gets extra *Divine Discipline Suffering* when he strays from his mission. See 2 Tim. 2:9-10, 12; Jas. 3:1; 2 Cor. 5:11. See @@@ **PASTOR/TEACHER**.
- (11) **Never Complain or Explain.** In all types of Divine Suffering – for correction or for blessing – the Believer should *never complain and never explain*. He should Rebound and “keep his mouth shut.” See Col. 1:10-11.

@@@ THANKSGIVING

- (1) **Definition.** Thanksgiving is the act of *rendering gratitude* to God for His matchless grace and unfathomable mercy [grace in action]. “*The precepts (Bible Doctrine) of the LORD are right, rejoicing the heart*” [Ps. 19:8]; 2 Cor. 9:15; Rev. 7:12. Thanksgiving can be internal or a public acknowledgment celebration in which the goodness, graciousness, and lovingkindness of God are extolled. See 1 Chron. 16:7-36; 2 Cor. 9:15. See @@@ GRACE.

2 CORINTHIANS 9:15

Thanks [*charis*] be to God for His indescribable gift [*dorea (a gift without cost) – Jesus Christ who provided salvation*]!

REVELATION 7:12

Saying, Amen, [*amen (to believe)*] blessing [*eulogia (praise)*] and glory and wisdom [*sophia (broad and full of intelligence)*] and thanksgiving [*eucharistia*] and honor and power [*dunamis (inherent power)*] and might, *be* to our God forever and ever. Amen.

- (2) **Normal Attitude.** A mental attitude of thanksgiving should be the *standard mental attitude* of the **Winner** Believer as part of the Royal Family of God. “*Give thanks to Him, bless His name*” [Ps. 100:1]; Eph. 5:20; Jn. 6:11; 1 Thess. 5:18; Col. 3:17.

1 THESSALONIANS 5:18

In everything give thanks [*eucharisteo (to be grateful) – the positive [+P] volition Believer gives thanks for Divine Suffering for Blessing*]; for this is God’s will for you in Christ Jesus [*to reach maturity and receive rewards*].

COLOSSIANS 3:17

Whatever you [*the positive [+P] volition Believer*] do in word [*logos*] or deed [*ergon*], *do* all in the name of the LORD Jesus, giving thanks [*eucharisteo*] through [*dia (by means of)*] Him to God the Father [*God the Father made the Plan of God in order to provide salvation to all and growth to the Believer to spiritual maturity*].

- (3) **Providing Capacity.** While people can always engage in emotion without thought, it is impossible to fulfill the Biblical commands to be thankful to God apart from Bible Doctrine resident in the soul/spirit [Col. 2:7; 3:15; Ps. 100:3-5]. Accordingly, true thanksgiving increases with spiritual maturity.

COLOSSIANS 3:15

Let the peace [*eirene* (a state of tranquility) – Believer moving to maturity] of Christ rule [*brabeuo* (to be an umpire)] in your [the Believer] hearts, to which indeed you were called [*kaleo* (to invite)] in one body; and be thankful [*eucharistos*].

PSALM 100:4-5

Enter His gates [the place where Bible Doctrine was taught by the Prophets] with thanksgiving and His courts with praise. Give thanks to Him, bless His name. For the LORD is good; His lovingkindness is everlasting and His faithfulness to all generations [the Plan of God].

COLOSSIANS 2:7

Having been firmly rooted [*rhizoo* (to strengthen with roots)] and now being built up [Believer growing to spiritual maturity] in Him [Jesus Christ] and established [*bebaioo* (to make firm)] in your faith [*pistis* – Bible Doctrine], just as you were instructed [*didasko* – teaching by the Pastor/Teacher], and overflowing with gratitude.

- (4) **Priestly Function.** As a Royal Priest in the Church Age, the Believer reflects thanksgiving as a *normal part* of his Christian Way of Life. See Ps. 107:22; 116:17; Amos 4:5. See @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.

PSALM 107:22

Let them also offer sacrifices of thanksgiving, and tell of His works with joyful singing.

- (5) **God's Glorification.** Thanksgiving is directly related to God's glorification in time and eternity. See 2 Cor. 9:10-11; Dan. 2:23; Jn. 11:41-42; Rom. 1:8; Phil. 1:3; 2 Tim. 1:2. See @@@ RAPTURE & SECOND ADVENT.

JOHN 11:41-42

So they removed the stone [**which sealed up the tomb of Lazarus**]. Then Jesus raised His eyes, and said, “Father, I thank [*eucharisteo (to give thanks)*] You that You have heard [*akouo*] Me. I knew that You always hear Me; but because of the people standing around I said it [**Jesus commanded Lazarus back to life and to come out of the tomb as proof that He was the promised Messiah**], so that they may believe that You sent Me.”

- (6) **Giving of Money.** The expression of thanksgiving to God can include the giving of money or other material things. See @@@ GIVING.
- (7) **Thanksgiving For Others.** Others are thankful for the *visible impact* made by the positive [+P] volition Believer. “*I thank my God in all remembrance of you*” [Phil. 1:3]; 1 Thess. 3:9; 2 Thess. 2:13.
- (8) **Thanksgiving in Prayer.** Since God has a Perfect plan for each Believer to reach “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1], the Believer is thankful for all things that come his way in prosperity or in suffering. “*If we have food and covering, with these we shall be content*” [1 Tim. 6:8]; Phil. 4:6; Col. 4:2-4.

PHILIPPIANS 4:6

Be anxious [*merimnao (to be troubled with cares)*] for nothing, but in everything by prayer and supplication [*deesis (prayer request)*] with thanksgiving [*eucharistia*] let your requests be made known to God.

COLOSSIANS 4:2-4

Devote yourselves [**Believers in Colossae**] to prayer, keeping alert in it with *an attitude* of thanksgiving; praying at the same time for us [**Paul and his traveling seminary team**] as well, that God will open up to us a door for the word, so that we may speak forth the mystery of Christ, for which I have also been imprisoned; that I may make it clear in the way I ought to speak.

- (9) **Thanksgiving in Food.** Food is to be eaten by the Believer with thanksgiving through prayer. The food is “*sanctified by means of the word of God and prayer*” [1 Tim. 4:3-5]. See @@@ PRAYER.

@@@ THEOPHANY

- (1) **Definition.** Theophany refers to those appearances of Jesus Christ in the Old Testament *before His incarnation*. He appeared as a man, as a phenomenon of nature, and as the Angel of the LORD – *malak Jehovah*.
- (2) **God's Name.** The Hebrew Tetragrammaton [four letters] – **JHWH** – stands for the sacred name of God. Adding supposed vowels, it is translated as either *Jehovah* or *Yahweh* (the self-existing one). The *Jews would not pronounce the letters* in reverence to Perfect God. Instead, they would either substitute *adonay* (LORD) in the singular or simply translate *Jehovah* as LORD, Deut. 6:4.

DEUTERONOMY 6:4

Hear O Israel! The LORD [*Jehovah* – in the singular, Jesus Christ as God] is our God [*elohim* – in the plural, referring to all the Trinity].

- (3) **Jesus Christ is God.** Jesus Christ is called *Jehovah*. See Isa. 6:3; 9:6-7; 40:3; Jer. 23:5-6; Zech. 12:10; Jdg. 6:22.

ISAIAH 40:3

A voice is calling, “Clear the way for the LORD [*Jehovah*] in the wilderness; make smooth in the desert a highway for our God [*elohim*].”

- (4) **Angel of Jehovah.** The Angel of *Jehovah* is identified as being equivalent to *Jehovah*. See Gen. 16:7-13; 22:11-18; 31:11-13; 32:24-32; 48:15-16; Hos. 12:4; Ex. 3:2-6 [cf. Acts 7:30-35]; 13:21; 14:19; Jdg. 6:11-23; 13:9-20.

EXODUS 3:2-5

The angel [*malak*] of the LORD [*Jehovah*] appeared to him [*Moses*] in a blazing fire from the midst of a bush; and he looked, and behold, the bush was burning with fire, yet the bush was not consumed. So Moses said, “I must turn aside now and see this marvelous sight, why the bush is not burned up.” When the LORD saw that he turned aside to look, God [*elohim*] called to him from the midst of the bush and said, “Moses, Moses!” And he said, “Here I am.” Then He said, “Do not come near here; remove your sandals from your feet, for the place on which you are standing is holy [*qodesh*] ground.”

- (5) **Distinct.** The Angel of *Jehovah* is distinct from *Jehovah* God the Father or *Jehovah* God the Holy Spirit as the first and third persons in the Trinity. Jesus is also termed the “*Son of Man*” [Dan. 7:13] which is the title He used most often for Himself during the incarnation. See Gen. 24:7, 40; Ex. 23:20-24; 32:34; Num. 20:16; Isa. 63:9; 1 Chron. 21:15-18; Zech. 1:9-13. Therefore, Jesus Christ, as the third member of the Trinity, is the Angel of *Jehovah*.

NUMBERS 20:16

But when we [the Jews] cried out to the LORD [*Jehovah – God the Father*], He heard our voice and sent an angel [*malak – Jesus Christ as a member of the Trinity*] and brought us out from Egypt; now behold, we are at Kadesh, a town on the edge of your territory.

ZECHARIAH 1:9-13

Then I [*Zechariah’s vision*] said, “My lord [*adon (lord; master) – this one of the communicating angels*], what are these?” And the angel who was speaking to me said to me, “I will show you what these are.” And the man who was standing among the myrtle trees [*Jesus Christ in a Theophany*] answered and said, “These are whom the LORD [*Jehovah (the self-existing one) – the Holy Spirit member of the Trinity*] has sent to patrol [*halak*] the earth.” So they answered the angel [*malak*] of the LORD [*Jehovah (the self-existing one) – Jesus Christ as a member of the Trinity*] who was standing among the myrtle trees and said, “We have patrolled the earth, and behold, all the earth is peaceful and quiet.” Then the angel of the LORD [*Jehovah*] said, “O LORD [*Jehovah*] of hosts [*tsaba (armies) – Jesus Christ as a member of the Trinity*], how long will You have no compassion for Jerusalem and the cities of Judah, with which You have been indignant these seventy years?” The LORD [*Jehovah – Jesus Christ*] answered the angel who was speaking with me [*Zechariah*] with gracious words, comforting words.

- (6) **Angel of Jehovah is Christ.** The Angel of *Jehovah* is the 2nd person of the Trinity per *supra* (5). The 2nd person of the Trinity is visible God in the New Testament [Jn. 1:18; 6:46; 1 Tim. 6:16; 1 Jn. 4:12]. Since the Father and Holy Spirit cannot be seen, the Angel of *Jehovah is the LORD Jesus Christ as a Theophany*. “*When Gideon saw that he was the angel of the LORD, he said, ‘Alas, O LORD God (God the Father)! For now I have seen the angel of the LORD (Jesus Christ) face to face’*” [Jdg. 6:22]; Ex. 33:20; Jdg. 13:22.

JOHN 6:46

Not that anyone has seen [*horao* (to see with the eyes)] the Father [*pater*], expect the One who is from God [*Jesus Christ*]; He has seen the Father.

- (a) **Incarnation.** The Angel of *Jehovah* never appears after the incarnation and both the Angel of *Jehovah* and Jesus Christ are sent by the Father.
- (b) **Redeemer.** The Angel of *Jehovah* is the Redeemer of humans [Job 33:23-24].

JOB 33:23-24

If there is an angel *as* mediator [*luts* – Jesus Christ is the only mediator as He is true God and true humanity] for him [*mankind*], one out of a thousand [*idiom for only one*], to remind a man what is right for him [*man owes God +R*], then let him [*God*] be gracious to him [*the Believer*], and say, “Deliver him from going down to the pit [*shachath* – Hell], I have found a ransom [*kopher* (price of a life; ransom) – Jesus Christ paid the price on the cross].”

- (7) **Theophany Appearances of Jesus Christ.** (1) Abraham, as a man [Gen. 18:1-33] and as the angel of the LORD [Gen. 22:11]; (2) Joshua, as a man [Jos. 5:13-15]; (3) Exodus Jews, as the Cloud of the LORD [Ex. 40:38]; (4) Exodus Jews, as the Pillar of the LORD [Ex. 14:19]; (5) Moses, as a burning bush [Ex. 3:2; Acts 7:30]; (6) Balaam, as an angel [Num. 22:22]; (7) Jacob, as a man [Gen. 32:24-32]; (8) Moses and the Elders, as a man [Ex. 24:9-11]; (9) Ezekiel, as a man [Ezk. 1:23-28]; (10) Daniel’s friends and Daniel, as a man [Dan. 3:18-25; 10:5-6]; (11) Jews, as the Shekinah Glory [Ex. 25:17-22; Lev. 16:2, 13]; (12) Gideon, as the angel of the LORD [Jdg. 6:22]; (13) Manoah, as the angel of the LORD [Jdg. 13:22]; and (14) Hagar, as the angel of the LORD. “*Have I even remained alive here after seeing Him?*” [Gen. 16:7-13].

DANIEL 10:5-6

I [*Daniel*] lifted my eyes and looked, and behold, there was a certain man [*iysh* – Jesus Christ] dressed in linen, whose waist was girded with a belt of pure gold of Uphaz. His body also was like beryl, his face had the appearance of lightning, his eyes were like flaming torches, his arms and feet like the gleam of polished bronze, and the sound of his words like the sound of a tumult.

JOSHUA 5:13-15

Now it came about when Joshua [general of the Jewish army] was by Jericho, that he lifted up his eyes and looked, and behold, a man [*iysh* – Jesus Christ], was standing opposite him with his sword drawn in his hand, and Joshua went to him and said to him, “Are you for us or for our adversaries?” He said, “No; rather I indeed come now *as* captain [*sar* (commanding general)] of the host [*tsaba* (army of angelic beings)] of the LORD [*Jehovah*].” And Joshua fell on his face to the earth, and bowed down, and said to him, “What has my lord [*adonay* (title spoken in place of *Jehovah*)] to say to his servant?” The captain of the LORD’s [*Jehovah*] host [*tsaba*] said to Joshua, “Remove your sandals from your feet, for the place where you are standing is holy [*qodesh* (separated apart as sacred) – God is Perfect].” And Joshua did so.

EXODUS 25:17-22

You [Hebrews] shall make a mercy seat of pure gold, two and a half cubits long and one and a half cubits wide. You shall make two cherubim [*kerub* (an angelic being)] of gold, make them of hammered work at the two ends of the mercy seat. Make one cherub at one end and one cherub at the other end; you shall make the cherubim *of one piece* with the mercy seat at its two ends. The cherubim shall have *their* wings spread upward, covering the mercy seat with their wings and facing one another; the faces of the cherubim are to be *turned* toward the mercy seat. You shall put the mercy seat on top of the ark, and in the ark you shall put the testimony which I will give to you. There I [Jesus Christ] will meet with you; and from above the mercy seat, from between the two cherubim which are upon the ark of the testimony, I will speak to you about all that I will give you in commandment for the sons of Israel.

- (8) **The God of Israel.** The *LORD Jesus Christ is the God of Israel*. See Ps. 138:2; Lk. 1:68; Isa. 12:2; 43:11; 45:15; Deut. 6:4-5.

DEUTERONOMY 6:4-5

Hear [*shama*], O Israel! The LORD [*Jehovah*] is our God [*elohim*], the LORD [*Jehovah*] is one [*echad* (one of a kind) – Jesus Christ is the unique person of the universe]! You shall love the LORD [*Jehovah*] your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your might.

@@@ TIME

- (1) **Definition.** God created *time as a measurement of events* and processes and He sets it out into segments called dispensations [Act 1:7-8]. In fact, God *is* time. See @@@ PLAN OF GOD; @@@ HISTORY.

ACTS 1:7-8

He [Jesus Christ] said to them [His disciples], “It is not for you to know times [chronos (periods)] or epochs [karios (a measure of time)] which the Father has fixed [tithemi (to set)] by His own authority [exousia (power of choice)]; but you will receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you [the day of Pentecost begins the Church Age]; and you shall be My witnesses [martus – witnessing] both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and even to the remotest part of the earth.”

- (2) **Arrival of the Promised Messiah.** In the exact timing of the Perfect Plan of God, the promised God/Man in hypostatic union *came into the world* and went to the cross in order to provide an eternal life relationship for all those positive [+P] volition humans that respond to grace throughout every generation. The “*man Jesus Christ, who gave himself as a ransom for all, the testimony given at the proper time*” [1 Tim. 2:5-6]; Gal. 4:4-5; 1 Tim. 2:6; Heb. 10:5-7; Acts 2:23. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS.

ACTS 2:23

This *Man* [Jesus Christ], delivered over by the predetermined plan [boule (to purpose)] and foreknowledge of God [the Plan of God], you [religious Jewish leadership desired to murder Jesus] nailed to a cross by the hands of godless men [anomos (unlawful wicked) – unBelievers] and put *Him* to death [anairo (physical death by murder)].

GALATIANS 4:4-5

But when the fullness of the time [chronos (a period of time, long or short)] came, God sent forth His Son [Jesus Christ], born of a woman, born under the Law, so that He might redeem [exagorazo (to buy back)] those who were under the Law, that we might receive the adoption as sons [uihothesia (an adult son officially taken into the family)].

HEBREWS 10:5-7

Therefore, when He [Jesus Christ] comes into the world [*kosmos*], He says, “Sacrifice and offering You [God the Father] have not desired [*thelo* (to take delight in; to desire) – the rituals of the Mosaic Law are teaching tools only and cannot provide salvation], but a body [*soma*] You [God the Holy Spirit provided 23 pure chromosomes] have prepared [*katartizo* (to equip; to arrange)] for Me [Jesus]; in whole burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin You have taken no pleasure. Then I said, ‘Behold, I [Jesus Christ] have come (in the scroll of the book it is written of Me) [all the Old Testament prophecies about Christ] to do your will [*thelema* (what one determines shall be done) – to die on the cross], O God [God the Father].’”

1 TIMOTHY 2:6

Who gave Himself [Jesus Christ] as a ransom for all [unlimited atonement], the testimony given at the proper time [*karios* – God’s timing is always perfect].

- (3) **Salvation Time.** In the Perfect Plan of God all those positive [+P] volition humans are given the Gospel of *salvation at the exact proper time*, some early in their life and others later – “*who saved us and called us ... to His own purpose ... from all eternity*” [2 Tim. 1:9]. “*He says, ‘At the acceptable time I listened to you, and on the day of salvation I helped you’*” [2 Cor. 6:2]; 2 Pet. 3:7-9; Gal. 4:4-7. For the unBeliever, his wrong priorities result in damnation. “*But God said to him, ‘You fool! This very night your soul is required of you’*” [Lk. 12:20]. See @@@ SALVATION.

2 PETER 3:7-9

But by His word the present heavens and earth are being reserved for fire, kept for the day of judgment [*krisis* (a decision given in a trial)] and destruction of ungodly men [unBelievers at the Great White Throne Judgment]. But do not let this one *fact* escape your notice, beloved, that with the LORD one day is like a thousand years, and a thousand years like one day. The LORD is not slow about His promise, as some count slowness, but is patient toward you, not wishing for any to perish [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely) – God’s will is that all should receive salvation] but for all to come to repentance [*metanoia* (to change the mind) – about Christ and receive salvation].

- (4) **The Believer's Time.** In eternity past God *ordained a set number of days* for each Believer, right up to the day of their Physical Death. “*My times are in Your hand*” [Ps. 31:15]; 39:5; 139:16. See @@@ DEATH.

PSALM 139:16

Your eyes [God] have seen my unformed substance [*golem (embryo; fetus)*]; and in Your book [*the Plan of God*] were all written the days that were ordained *for me*, when as yet there was not one of them.

- (5) **Segmented Time.** God's timing is *segmented into fixed categories* of normal living and as the Believer grows older, he must joyfully accept the fact that will move on from one category of experiences to the other as part of the Plan of God [Eccl. 3:1-8]. “*He has made everything appropriate in its time. He has also set eternity in their heart, yet so that man will not find out the work which God has done from the beginning even to the end*” [Eccl. 3:11].

ECCLESIASTES 3:1-8

There is an appointed time for everything. And there is a time for every event under heaven. A time to give birth and a time to die; a time to plant and a time to uproot what is planted. A time to kill and a time to heal; a time to tear down and a time to build up. A time to weep and a time to laugh; a time to mourn and a time to dance. A time to throw stones and a time to gather stones; a time to embrace and a time to shun embracing. A time to search and a time to give up as lost; a time to keep and a time to throw away. A time to tear apart and a time to sew together; a time to be silent and a time to speak. A time to love and a time to hate; a time for war and a time for peace.

- (6) **Time and Grace.** Time is a logistical grace provision for all Believers, but is specifically *oriented and tailored around* the positive [+P] volition Believer as he advances to “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1]. See Lam. 3:20-24; Jas. 4:13-14.

JAMES 4:13-14

Come now, you who say, “Today or tomorrow we will go to such and such a city, and spend a year there and engage in business and make a profit.” Yet you do not know what your life will be like tomorrow. You are *just* a vapor that appears for a little while and then vanishes away.*

* However, this verse does not apply to the positive [+P] volition Believer – he has fantastic “*rewards*” [1 Cor. 3:14; 2 Jn. 8] and impact as a subject matter expert witness in the Angelic Conflict. See @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT.

(7) **Timing is Everything.**

- (a) **Purpose.** For each Believer, God has a *specific plan and purpose* for their participation in the Angelic Conflict. Thus, *His timing is perfect* while the Believer’s timing is not. See Eccl. 3:1; 7:17; 1 Pet. 4:2. See DIVINE GUIDANCE.

1 PETER 4:2

So as to live the rest of the time [*chronos* (either a short or long period of time)] in the flesh [*sarx* – the human body] no longer for the lusts [*epithumia*] of men [*those in the Cosmic Systems*], but for the will [*thelema*] of God [*to reach spiritual maturity*].

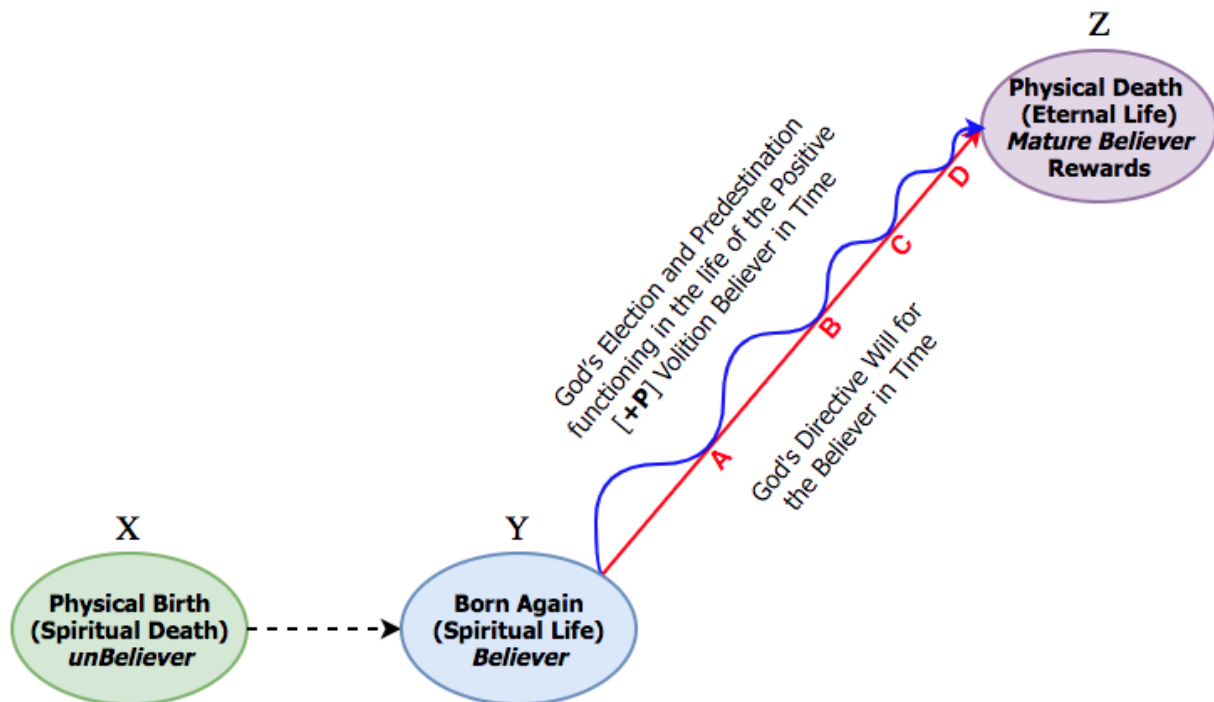
- (b) **Luck?** Since God’s ultimate Sovereign desire is for the Believer to reach spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1] there is *no such thing as luck*. God will “*exalt*” and use the positive [+P] volition Believer in His own perfect timing – “*at the proper time*” [1 Pet. 5:5-7] in His Plan. See Jas. 4:14; Heb. 5:12.

1 PETER 5:6-7

Therefore humble yourselves [*the positive [+P] volition Believer*] under the mighty hand of God, that He may exalt [*hupsoo* (to lift up; to promote to the very summit of opulence and prosperity)] you at the proper time [*kairos* (due measure of time) – use Faith/Rest to wait on the LORD], casting all your anxiety [*merimna* (worries)] on Him, because He cares [*melo*] for you.

HEBREWS 5:12

For though by this time you [*Loser Believers*] ought to be teachers [*didaskalos* – given the quantity and quality of Bible teaching], you have need again for someone [*Pastor/Teacher*] to teach you the elementary principles of the oracles [*logion* (the words or utterances of God)] of God, and you have come to need milk and not solid food [*advanced Doctrine*].



– Tracking The Positive **[+P]** Volition **Winner** Believer –

- (c) **Big Picture.** The Believer should always keep the *big picture in mind* and rely on God for perfect timing [2 Tim. 4:6-8]. See **@@@ PLAN OF GOD.**

2 TIMOTHY 4:6-8

For I [**Paul**] am already being poured out as a drink offering, and the time of my departure has come [**the Romans would execute him soon**]. I have fought [*agonizomai* (to enter a contest in the games)] the good [*kalos* (beautiful to look at)] fight [*agon* (the place of contest) – **in the Angelic Conflict**], I have finished the course [*dromos* (the course of life) – **Paul had reached the high ground of spiritual maturity**], I have kept [*tereo* (to attend to carefully)] the faith [*pistis* – **Bible Doctrine**]; in the future there is laid up for me the crown [*stephanos* (a wreath of garland given as a prize to victors in the public games)] of righteousness, which the LORD, the righteous Judge, will award to me on that day [*hemera* – **Paul's rewards at the Judgment Seat of Christ**]; and not only to me, but also to all who have loved [*agapao* (to love dearly)] His appearing [**all Believers who reach maturity**].

- (d) **Bad Timing.** The Believer getting into the Cosmic Systems is always bad timing. Right priorities must always put Bible Doctrine first, not the cares of the world to *include even normal concerns* in business, family, or logistics [Jas. 4:13-14]. See @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS.
- (e) **Wait on the LORD's Timing.** See the case of Joseph who was unjustly accused of rape and wrongfully thrown into an Egyptian prison where he at first relied on the LORD to sustain him, but later failed to wait on God's perfect timing to get him out of jail [Gen. 40; Prov. 3:5-6]. Ultimately, Joseph learned to *rely on God's timing* and rose to power.

PROVERBS 3:5-6

Trust in the LORD [*Jehovah*] with all your heart and do not lean [*shaan (trust in)*] on your own understanding [*biynah (discernment)*]. In all your ways acknowledge Him, and He will make your paths [*orach (path; road)*] straight.

- (8) **Day by Day.** God gives the Believer a *day and then another day* and so on in order that Bible Doctrine can be taken into "*our inner man ... day by day*" [2 Cor. 4:16]. See Ps. 25:5; 90:12; 119:97; Prov. 23:17; 2 Cor. 4:16; Rom. 14:5-7; Matt. 4:4; Jas. 1:21; 4:13-15.

PSALM 25:5

Lead me [*Winner Believer*] in Your truth and teach [*lamad (to be trained)*] me, for You are the God of my salvation [*yesha – the Plan of God*]; for You I wait [*qavah (to wait or look eagerly for)*] all the day.

PSALM 90:12

So teach [*yada (to learn to know)*] us to number our days [*mindful of the shortness of life, the Winner Believer prioritizes*], that we may present [*bo (to come with)*] to You [*God*] a heart of wisdom [*chokmah – the positive [+P] volition Believer who reaches spiritual maturity*].

- (9) **Shortened Days.** Time *is lost* to the negative [*-N*] volition Believer through Divine Discipline Suffering [Ps. 89:49; 90:9; 102:3, 23-24]. The sin of arrogance destroys and shortens the use of days for the negative [*-N*] volition **Loser** Believer [Jas. 4:13-14; Prov. 27:1; 1 Jn. 2:9-11; Heb. 3:13].

HEBREWS 3:13

But encourage one another day after day, as long as it is *still* called “Today [*semeron* (this very day)],” so that none of you [**Believer**] will be hardened [*turn against Bible Doctrine*] by the deceitfulness of sin [*hamartia – the works of the Old Sin Nature*].

- (10) **Long Days.** Consistently taking in Bible Doctrine and growing to maturity results in *length of days* for the **Winner** Believer. See Prov. 3:1-2; 10:27; 13-17; Eph. 6:2; Ex. 20:12; Ps. 34:11-14; Eccl. 7:17-18. See @@@ LIFE.

PROVERBS 10:27

The fear [*yirah* (respect)] of the LORD prolongs [*yasaph* (to add; to increase)] life [*yom* (days) – the life of the Believer on positive [+P] volition to Bible Doctrine], but the years of the wicked will be shortened.

PSALM 34:12-14

Who is the man who desires life and loves *length of days* that he may see good [*Divine rewards*]? Keep your tongue from evil [*stay out of the Cosmic Systems*] and your lips from speaking deceit [*use Rebound*]. Depart from evil and do good [*tob – Divine Good*]; seek peace and pursue it.

ECCLESIASTES 7:17-18

Do not be excessively wicked [*rasha – stay out of the Cosmic Systems*] and do not be a fool [*sakal – do not reject Bible Doctrine*]. Why should you [**a Believer**] die [*muth*] before your time [*eth – the sin unto death*]? It is good that you grasp one thing [*Bible Doctrine*] and also not let go of the other [*living a long and fruitful life to maturity and receive rewards*]; for the one who fears God [*yare* (to revere) – **Winner Believer**] comes forth with both of them.

- (11) **Buy Back Time.** The **Winner** Believer organizes and prioritizes his life by redeeming – “*buy*” [Rev. 3:18] *back time* – by means of learning and applying Bible Doctrine. See Jas. 4:3-17; Ps. 90:12, 14; Eph. 5:15-18; 1 Pet. 1:6, 17; 1 Cor. 7:29-31; Matt. 6:34. See also Heb. 5:12-14, describing a **Loser** Believer saved for a long period of time but without knowledge of Bible Doctrine.

REVELATION 3:18

I [Jesus Christ] advise you [the Church at Laodicea] to buy from Me gold [chusion (gold which lies embedded in the earth) – Bible Doctrine is gold in the earth] refined by fire [the job of the Pastor/Teacher is to take the ore, refine it into gold coins, and give it to the congregation as their spiritual money] so that you may become rich [Believers at maturity], and white garments so that you may clothe yourself [with fantastic rewards], and *that* the shame of your nakedness will not be revealed [phaneroo (to make manifest or visible) – at the Judgment Seat of Christ the Believer will not be ashamed of his rewards]; and eye salve to anoint your eyes so that you may see [the Believer only sees God through Bible Doctrine].

EPHESIANS 5:15-18

Therefore be careful how you walk, not as unwise men but as wise, making the most of your time, because the days are evil [Satan is a time stealer]. So then do not be foolish [aphron (without reason)], but understand what the will of the LORD is [reaching maturity glorifies God]. And do not get drunk with wine, for that is dissipation, but be filled with the Spirit [Rebound].

- (12) **Never a Bad Day.** Because Believers are part of the “*fullness of the times, that is, the summing up of all things in Christ, things in the heavens and things on the earth*” [Eph. 1:9-10], the **Winner** Believer fits himself into God’s timing and knows that every day is designed for his blessing and advancement by means of putting Bible Doctrine in his soul/spirit and applying it to the exigencies of life. “*You did not choose Me but I chose you, and appointed you that you would go and bear fruit and that your fruit would remain*” [Jn. 15:16]. “*This is a day which the LORD has made; Let us rejoice and be glad in it*” [Ps. 118:24]. Again, the **Winner** Believer never has a **bad** day even when circumstances are adverse, for He knows that God will protect him and provide an open door at the right time for all things in his life. “*Delight yourself in the LORD; and He will give you the desires of your heart*” [Ps. 37:4]; Matt. 6:27; Isa. 50:4. *See infra* (13).

MATTHEW 6:27

And who of you by being worried [merimnao (to be anxious)] can add a *single* hour to his life [helikia (term or length of life)]?

PSALM 118:24

This is the day which the LORD has made; Let us rejoice and be glad in it.

ISAIAH 50:4

The LORD God has given Me [Jesus] the tongue of disciples, that I may know how to sustain the weary one with a word [*dabar (speaking)*]. He awakens Me morning by morning, He awakens My ear to listen as a disciple.

- (13) **Satan Steals Time.** Seek Bible Doctrine *while there is still time*. Time is very short and with old age comes the breakdown of the faculties for thinking and retaining the Word of God [1 Pet. 1:24-25]. Indeed, at Physical Death, the opportunity for advancement to spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1] in the Christian Way of Life ends. Because *Satan is a time stealer* who seeks to distract the Believer at every opportunity, the Believer must “*seek the LORD while He may be found; call upon Him while He is near*” [Isa. 55:6].

1 PETER 1:24-25

For, “All flesh [*sarx – all humanity*] is like grass, and all its glory like the flower of grass. The grass withers, and the flower falls off, but the word of the LORD [*Bible Doctrine*] endures forever [*aion (eternity)*].” And this is the word which was preached [*eugangelizo (to bring good news)*] to you.

- (14) **Suffering in Time.** God can only demonstrate His grace via suffering for Blessing for the **Winner** Believer to reach spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1] in this very short lifetime. “*And He has said to me, ‘My grace is sufficient for you, for power (to reach maturity) is perfected in weakness’*” [2 Cor. 12:7-10]. See 2 Cor. 4:16-17; Ps. 102:1-3. See @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT.

2 CORINTHIANS 4:16-17

Therefore we do not lose heart, but though our outer man is decaying, yet our inner man [*spiritual growth in the soul/spirit*] is being renewed day by day. For momentary, light affliction [*thilpsis – Divine Suffering for Blessing*] is producing for us an eternal weight of glory [*doxa – eternal rewards*], far beyond comparison.

@@@ TRINITY

- (1) **Definition.** The Trinity refers to the *three co-equal, co-eternal* Divine Persons of the Godhead. God is one in essence but three in personality. When the essence or attributes of the Godhead are the subject then God is referred to as “*one*” [Gal. 3:20]; Jas. 2:19; Jn. 10:30; Ex. 20:3; Deut. 6:4; 1 Tim. 2:5-6; Matt. 22:37. When one or more of the Divine Persons are the subject, then the Godhead is revealed as three distinct “persons” – God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit. *See* 2 Cor. 13:14; Matt. 28:19.

2 CORINTHIANS 13:14

The grace of the LORD Jesus Christ, and the love [*agape (to love dearly)*] of God [*God the Father*], and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit, be with you [*Believers in Corinth*] all.

MATTHEW 28:19

Go therefore and make disciples [*matheteuo*] of all the nations, baptizing [*baptizo – the identification of Believers with the Plan of God*] them in the name of the Father [*pater*] and the Son [*uihos*] and the Holy Spirit.

(2) **Views of Existence.**

- (a) **Polytheism.** There is a plurality of “gods” such as found in Greek mythology or Hinduism.
- (b) **Pantheism.** God and the universe are one. This “god” has no personality or attributes.
- (c) **Evolution.** (1) *Theistic* Evolution says God created original materials but “evolution” [chance, mutation, and natural selection] is the primary method of development. (2) *Atheistic* Evolution holds that matter is eternal and self-developing through chance and that there is no God.
- (d) **Materialism.** A belief that denies the existence of God and contends that matter is eternal and life is simply a byproduct. Communism adheres to this idea, *but see* the scientific *Anthropic Principle* which affirms that the complexity of the universe and life demands a Creator.

- (e) **Idealism.** The human mind is the only rational entity in existence and material things are merely impressions. There is simply no answer in terms of a God, or as to why He may or may not exist.
- (f) **Positivism.** Accepts nothing that can't be proven by human evidence through rationalism or empiricism.
- (g) **Monotheism.** A belief in only a single “god” in person/essence. Islam is the largest movement of this religion.
- (h) **Deism.** God created but then completely abandoned His creation and has no further contact or connection.
- (i) **Biblical Theism.** God created everything in existence and holds all things together. He also controls history and reveals Himself to mankind [Ps. 14:1; 100:3]. See @@@ **PLAN OF GOD.**

PSALM 100:3

Know that the LORD Himself is God; it is He who made [*awah (to make; to fashion)*] us, and not we ourselves; *we are* His people [*Believers*] and the sheep of His pasture.

PSALM 14:1

The fool [*nabal – the unBeliever atheist*] has said in his heart, “There is no God.” They are corrupt [*shachath (to pervert)*], they have committed abominable deeds; there is no one who does good [*tob – Divine Good*].

- (3) **Hide the Ball.** God does not *hide the ball* – “*that which is known about God is evident within them; for God made it evident to them*” [Rom. 1:18-25]. While human reason can comprehend that a supernatural and supreme being exists, human intellect cannot understand the person or essence of God. Therefore, over all time God has revealed his Perfect character and nature to humans on positive [**+P**] volition through a variety of means. Tragically, however, most of humanity superimpose their own ideas set in “religion” and human good on the God of reality revealed in Scripture and have absolutely no desire to know the truth about their Creator [Isa. 55:8-9]. “*The creature*” [Rom. 1:25] that they actually worship is the narcissist Satan.

ROMANS 1:18-25

For the wrath [*orge* – God’s attitude towards the unBeliever] of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness [*asebeia* (unBelievers)] and unrighteousness of men who suppress [*katecho* (to hold back; detain)] the truth [*aletheia* – rejecting the Plan of God] in unrighteousness, because that which is known about God is evident [*phaneros* (apparent)] within them; for God made it evident to them. For since the creation of the world His invisible attributes [*aoratos* (unseen)], His eternal [*aidios*] power and divine nature, have been clearly seen, being understood [*noieo* (to perceive with the mind)] through what has been made, so that they are without excuse [*anapologetos* (without a defense)]. For even though they knew God, they did not honor Him as God or give thanks, but they became futile [*mataioo* (to make empty)] in their speculations [*dialogismos* (a man deliberating with himself)], and their foolish [*asunetos* (without understanding)] heart was darkened [*skotizo* (deprived of light) – those with negative [-N] volition in their souls]. Professing [*phasko* (to allege)] to be wise [*sophos* (skilled; an expert) – by means of human good], they became fools [*moraino* (to be foolish)], and exchanged the glory of the incorruptible [*aphthartos*] God for an image in the form of corruptible man and of birds and four-footed animals and crawling creatures [*making up their own ideas about God from the influences of religion*]. Therefore God gave them over in the lusts [*epithumia* (cravings)] of their hearts [*kardia* – the Old Sin Nature controls them completely] to impurity [*akatharsia* (uncleanness in a moral sense)], so that their bodies would be dishonored [*atimazo* (shamefully)] among them. For they exchanged the truth of God for a lie [*pseudos* (an intentional falsehood) – religion, human good, and the Cosmic Systems], and worshiped and served [*latreuo* (to serve for hire)] the creature rather than the Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen.

ISAIAH 55:8-9

“For My [God] thoughts [*machashabah* (thought; plan; purpose) – the essence of the Holy Trinity] are not your [mankind’s] thoughts [of human good], nor are your ways [the Cosmic Systems and the evil of religion] My ways [the Plan of God to provide salvation by grace during the Angelic Conflict],” declares the LORD. “For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are My ways higher [*gabahh* (to be exalted)] than your ways and My thoughts than your thoughts.”

- (4) **God Revealed in the Bible.** “*‘My thoughts are not your thoughts, nor are your ways My ways,’ declares the LORD*” [Isa. 55:8]. Through the Bible, God reveals all that the positive [+P] volition **Winner** Believer can comprehend about Him in this mortal body [Ps. 139:6].

PSALM 139:6

Such knowledge [*daath* (perception; knowledge) – about God] is too wonderful [*piliy* (incomprehensible)] for me; it is *too* high, I cannot attain to it [*we know only what God reveals to us*].

- (5) **Analogy of Light – Trinity.** Every single ray of light is pure white and yet it contains all three primary colors [red, blue, and yellow]. The color that an object appears is that light wave which is reflected. The Bible often uses light as an illustration of the Trinity [Jn. 8:12; 9:19-21; 1 Tim. 6:16]. Light is one substance but it is composed of three properties, a perfect analogy to the Trinity: (1) actinic, short wavelengths that are neither seen nor felt, e.g., x-rays, represent **God the Father**; (2) aluminiferous, wavelengths that are seen and felt, represent **God the Son**; and (3) calorific, wavelengths not seen but felt, e.g., heat, represent **God the Holy Spirit**.

1 TIMOTHY 6:16

Who [God] alone possesses immortality and dwells in unapproachable light [*phos – the Trinity is absolute Perfection*], whom no man has seen or can see [God the Father]. To Him [*as the author of the Plan of God*] be honor and eternal dominion [*kratos* (strength; power)]! Amen.

- (6) **Light and Darkness.** The Bible also uses **Light** and **Darkness** to contrast the Perfect essence of the Trinity [Light] with all else, which is imperfect [Darkness]. “*This is the message we have heard from Him and announce to you, that God is Light, and in Him there is no darkness at all*” [1 Jn. 1:5; Jn. 3:19-21; 8:12; Isa. 9:2; 59:9-10; Ps. 97:11].

ISAIAH 9:2

The people who walk [*halak* (a lifestyle)] in darkness will see a great light [*Jesus Christ at the 1st Advent*]; those who live in a dark land [*Judea at the time of Christ was extremely apostate*], the light will shine on them.

JOHN 3:19-21

This is the judgment [*krisis* (at a trial)], that the Light [*phos* – Jesus Christ the God/man in hypostatic union] has come into the world [*kosmos* – Satan is the ruler of the world], and men [*anthropos* (mankind) – unBelievers] loved [*agapao* (to be well pleased with; to love dearly)] the darkness [*skotos* (of night darkness)] rather than the Light [*phos* – Jesus Christ], for their deeds [*ergon*] were evil [*poneros* (of a bad nature) – the unBeliever with his own righteousness [-r] is in the Cosmic Systems and is attracted only to human good]. For everyone who does [*prasso* (to practice)] evil [*phaulos* (worthlessness; wickedness)] hates [*miseo* (to detest)] the Light [the unBeliever loves religion and hates grace], and does not come to the Light for fear that his deeds will be exposed [*elegcho* (to refute, generally with shame) – the human works of the unBeliever are not acceptable to God]. But he [the Believer saved by faith and possessing the Righteousness [+R] of God] who practices [*poieo* (to produce)] the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – the Believer on positive [+P] volition to learning Bible Doctrine] comes to the Light, so that his deeds [*ergon* – Divine Good production] may be manifested [*phaneroo* (to make visible)] as having been wrought [*ergazomai* (to work out)] in God.

ISAIAH 59:9-10

Therefore justice is far from us, and righteousness [*tsedaqah*] does not overtake us [the Jews of the Southern Kingdom of Judah]; we hope for light [*or* (light of day)], but behold, darkness [*choshek*], for brightness, but we walk in gloom [*aphelah* (darkness) – the negative [-N] volition Believer walking in the Cosmic Systems]. We grope along the wall like blind men, we grope like those who have no eyes; we stumble at midday as in the twilight, among those who are vigorous we are like dead men [without Bible Doctrine to light the way there is only darkness].

- (7) **Plural Words for God.** The Hebrew word *elohim* is translated “**God**” in the Old Testament, but it actually is a plural masculine noun and means “**Gods**” [with the *im* ending], indicating the Holy Trinity. In addition, the Trinity is directly referenced in Gen. 1:26-27; 3:22; 11:7, with plural nouns and verbs used in referring to the three Persons of the Godhead speaking in agreement on various topics of discussion. “**Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness**” [Gen. 1:26].

GENESIS 1:26-27

Then God [*elohim*] said, “Let Us [first person plural – all three members of the Trinity are in agreement] make [*asah* (to make something out of something) – this indicates the creation of a personality] man [*adam* (mankind)] in Our [possessive determiner belonging to the speaker and one or more other people] image [*tselem* (shadow image; a thing that is a shadow of the reality; resemblance) – the shadow image is the human soul], according to Our likeness [*demuth* (pattern; model)]; and let them rule over the fish of the sea and over the birds of the sky and over the cattle and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth.” God created [*barah* (to make something out of nothing) – this always refers to the human soul] man in His own image [*tselem* (shadow image; a thing that is a shadow of the reality)], in the image [*tselem*] of God He created [*barah* (to make something out of nothing)] him; male and female He created [*barah*] them.

- (8) **Tetragrammaton.** The term Tetragrammaton stands for the *four letters* – *yud, hey, vav, hey* [**YHWH** or **JHWH**] – that the Hebrews used for the sacred name of God [vowel points are added for *Yehovah* or *Jehovah*] in the singular. The Jews would not pronounce the name in a display of reverence and instead employed the term *adonay* (LORD). The exact Greek equivalent to the Hebrew *adonay* (LORD) is *kurios* (LORD).
- (9) **Scriptures for the Trinity.** There are numerous Biblical passages regarding the Trinity. See 1 Jn. 5:7; 2 Cor. 13:14; Matt. 28:19; Isa. 6:3, 8; 48:16; Gen. 1:26; 3:22; 1 Pet. 1:2; Jn. 14:16-17, 26; 15:26; Tit. 3:4-6; Rev. 1:4-6; 1 Cor. 12:4-6; Eph. 4:4-6; Acts 2:23; 10:28.
 - (a) **God the Father and the God the Son.** [Ps. 2:7; Jn. 10:30; Eph. 1:17].
 - (b) **God the Son and God the Holy Spirit.** [Tit. 3:5-6; 2 Tim. 1:13-14; Acts 16:6-7; Rom. 8:9; 1 Cor. 6:11; Matt. 3:16].
 - (c) **God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit.** [Matt. 28:19; 2 Cor. 13:14; Eph. 2:18; Heb. 9:14; 1 Pet. 1:2; Jn. 15:26].
- (10) **Holy Spirit is God.** The 3rd Person of the Trinity is God the Holy Spirit. See Acts 5:3-4; 1 Cor. 3:16; 2 Cor. 3:17; Ps. 143:10; Gen. 1:2; Isa. 6:8-9; cf. Acts 28:25; Isa. 63:10; Jer. 31:31-34; cf. Heb. 10:15-17.

1 CORINTHIANS 3:16

Do you [Believer] not know that you are a temple of God and *that* the Spirit of God dwells [*oikeo* (to dwell inside)] in you?

- (11) **Visible Member.** The *2nd Person of the Trinity is Jesus Christ*. He is the only visible member of the Trinity. See Jn. 1:1-5, 14-18; 6:46; 8:12; 12:45; 14:9; 20:28-29; Col. 1:19; 2:9; 1 Tim. 6:16; 1 Jn. 4:12; Heb. 1:3-4. Except for Jesus Christ no living human has ever seen the Father or the Holy Spirit.

HEBREWS 1:3

And He [Jesus Christ] is the radiance [*apaugasma* (reflected brightness)] of His glory [*doxa* – all three members of the Trinity share the exact same essence] and the exact representation of His nature [*hupostasis* (the thing put under; substructure) – in hypostatic union Jesus Christ is still God], and upholds all things by the word [*rhema* (that which has been uttered by a living voice)] of His power. When He had made purification [*katharismos* (a cleansing from sins)] of sins [*hamartia* – unlimited atonement], He sat down at the right hand of the Majesty on high [Operation Footstool].

JOHN 1:1-5

In the beginning was the Word [*logos* – Jesus Christ], and the Word was with God [*theos*], and the Word was God. He [Jesus Christ] was in the beginning with God [Jesus Christ in the Trinity]. All things came into being [*ginomai* (to come into existence)] through [*dia* (by means of)] Him, and apart from Him nothing came into being that has come into being. In Him was life [*zoe*], and the life was the Light [*phos*] of men [the only means of salvation]. The Light [*phos* – the Plan of God] shines in the darkness [*skotia* (darkness due to want of light) – the Cosmic Systems], and the darkness did not comprehend [*katalambano* (to lay hold of with the mind) – negative [-N] volition to grace rejects God] it.

- (12) **Context Determines.** In most cases it is clear which member of the Trinity is being referenced in a particular Bible passage. In other instances, however, the context of the passage will determine which member of the Trinity is being referenced, e.g., Jesus Christ in Rom. 10:13. “*And it will come about that whoever will call on the name of the LORD Will be delivered*” [Joel 2:32].

- (13) **Language of Accommodation.** The Bible uses *anthropopathisms* [human emotions and thoughts] and *anthropomorphisms* [human attributes] to relate God in language of accommodation to assist in understanding His attitude or action. See Num. 23:6; Gen. 6:6; Ex. 32:14; Jdg. 2:18; 1 Sam. 15:35; Ps. 90:13; Jer. 15:6; Amos 7:3, 6; Mal. 1:1-3; Prov. 15:3; Rev. 2:1; Heb. 8:9.

MALACHI 1:3

But I [God] have hated [*wane (to hate)*] Esau [*Esau was not a Believer and did not have God's Righteousness [+R]*], and I have made his mountains a desolation and *appointed* his inheritance for the jackals of the wilderness.

PROVERBS 15:3

The eyes [*ayin (physical eye)*] of the LORD are in every place, watching the evil [*ra – unBelievers*] and the good [*tob – Believers*].

- (14) **Church Age Indwelling.** In the Church Age mystery each member of the Trinity Indwells the body of the Believer: (1) God the Father [Jn. 14:23; Eph. 4:6; 2 Jn. 9]; (2) God the Son [Jn. 14:20; 17:22-23; Rom. 8:10; 2 Cor. 13:5; Gal. 2:20; 1 Jn. 2:24; Col. 1:27]; and (3) God the Holy Spirit [Rom. 8:11; 1 Cor. 3:16; 6:19-20; 2 Cor. 6:16]. See @@@ MYSTERY.
- (15) **Role in Salvation.** Each member of the Trinity has a different function in the Plan of God *for salvation*. See @@@ PLAN OF GOD.
- (a) **Father.** The Father *planned the salvation mechanics* [Matt. 26:39; Jn. 4:34; 5:17; 6:29; 12:44; 1 Cor. 8:6; Eph. 3:11]. His title of “God the Father” refers to and reflects His part in the Plan of God.

EPHESIANS 3:11

This was in accordance with the eternal purpose [*prothesis (setting forth of a thing)*] which He [God the Father] carried out [*poieo (to produce)*] in Christ Jesus our LORD.

- (b) **Son.** The Son of God *executed the salvation mechanics* [Matt. 26:39; Jn. 4:34; 5:17, 30; 1 Pet. 2:24; 3:18; Rom. 5:8; Heb. 10:7]. His title “God the Son” emphasizes His subordination to the Plan of God.

1 PETER 2:24

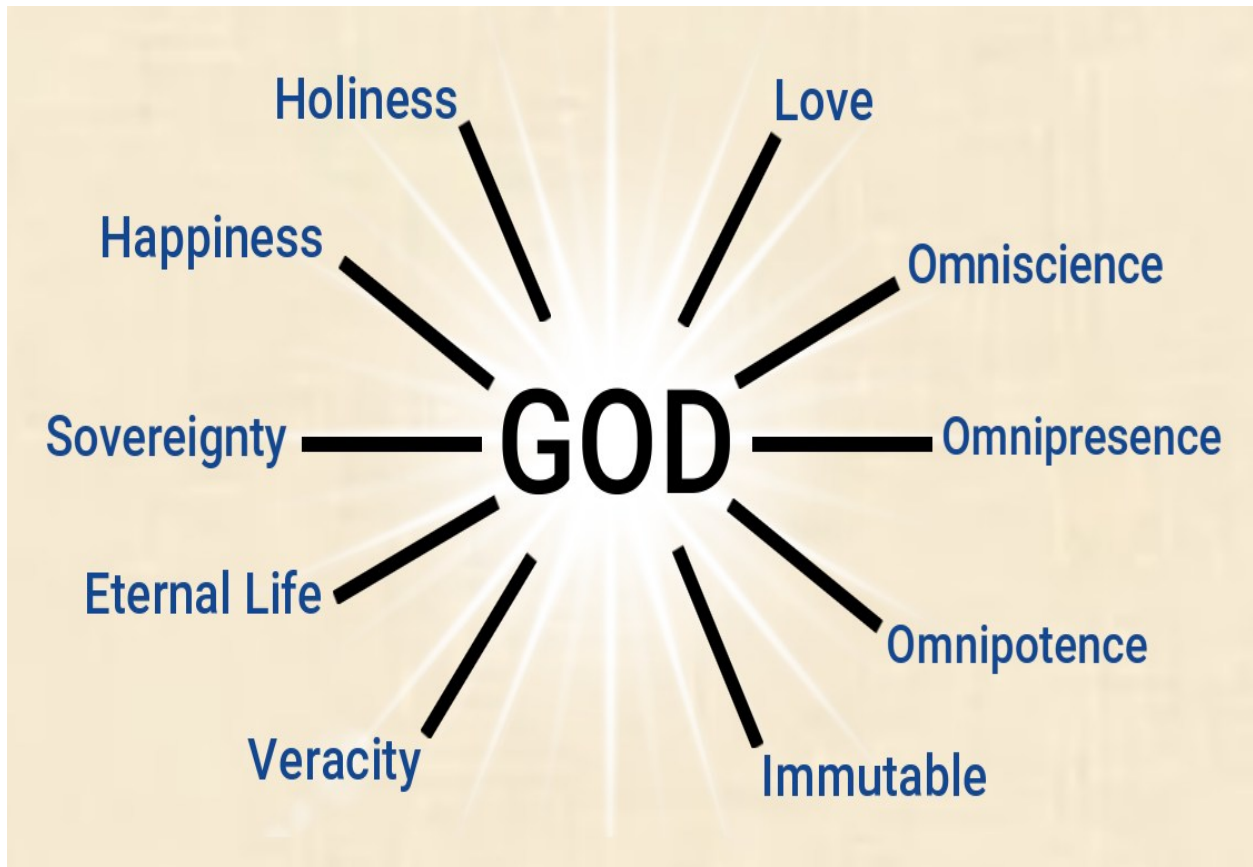
And He Himself [Jesus Christ] bore [*anaphero* (to carry; to lift up one's self)] our sins [*hamartia*] in His body [*soma* – sin bearing took place in the humanity of Jesus] on the cross [*xulon* (that which is made of wood) – Christ suffered Spiritual Death while on the cross], so that we [all Believers] might die to [*apogenomenos* (to be removed from)] sin [*hamartia* – the influence of the Old Sin Nature is broken] and live to righteousness [*dikaiosune* – the positive [+P] volition Believer living inside the Divine Dynasphere]; for by His wounds [*molops* (wound that trickles with blood) – the substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus Christ which occurred while He was still alive on the cross] you were healed [*iaomai* (to cure; to bring about salvation) – salvation was provided].

- (c) **Holy Spirit.** The Holy Spirit *spreads the information* about the salvation mechanics to mankind [Jn. 3:4-8; 16:8-11]. His title God the “*Holy Spirit*” [1 Cor. 6:19] reflects His mission in the Plan of God to get the message of the Gospel to all those that are on positive [+P] volition to obtain union with their Creator.

JOHN 3:5-6

Jesus answered [Nicodemus], “Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born [*gennao* (to be born)] of water [*hudor* – the water of the Gospel] and the Spirit [*pneuma* – the salvation ministry of God the Holy Spirit to save the unBeliever] he cannot enter into [*eiserchomai* (to come in or go out)] the kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh [*sarx*] is flesh [the unBeliever], and that which is born of the [Holy] Spirit [*pneuma*] is spirit [*pneuma* – the Believer's human spirit given at the point of salvation].”

- (16) **Ten Divine Attributes.** The Bible reveals that the essence of God has ten distinct attributes which each member of the Trinity *possesses exactly alike* and *cannot be compromised*. For example, “*For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him shall not perish, but have eternal life*” [Jn. 3:16]. In turn, the Greek word *doxa* (glory) almost always refers to the complete essence of the Trinity. For “*all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, being justified as a gift by His grace through the redemption which is in Christ Jesus*” [Rom. 3:23-24]; “*Holy and awesome is His name*” [Ps. 111:9].



– The Ten Attributes of the Trinity –

– SOVEREIGNTY –

- (1) **Self Determining Being.** God is the Supreme Being of everything and has complete Sovereignty in all His thinking and actions. “*But He does according to His will in the host of heaven and among the inhabitants of the earth; and no one can ward off his hand*” [Dan. 4:35]. He “*upholds all things by the word of His power*” [Heb. 1:3]; Deut. 4:39; Ps. 83:18; Isa. 17:24; 45:5-6; 2 Chron. 20:6; Jn. 1:1-3; Col. 1:15-16; Heb. 8-9; Rom. 9:13-17.
- (2) **King of Heaven and Earth.** God is the absolute ruler of everything, seen and unseen. “*Even from eternity I am He, and there is none who can deliver out of My hand; I act and who can reverse it?*” [Isa. 43:13]; Ps. 8:1; 47:2; 50:10-12; 93:1; Matt. 6:13; Heb. 8:1; Rev. 4:2-3; 17:14; 19:13-17; 1 Tim. 6:15-16; Isa. 40:14-15; Jn. 5:17.

ISAIAH 40:14-15

With whom did He [God] consult and *who* gave Him understanding? And *who* taught Him in the path of justice [*mishpat* – God is absolute Justice] and taught Him knowledge and informed Him of the way of understanding? Behold, the nations are like a drop from a bucket, and are regarded as a speck of dust on the scales; behold, He lifts up the islands like fine dust.

PSALM 8:1

O LORD, our LORD, how majestic is Your name in all the earth [*erets*], who have displayed Your splendor [*hod* (honor)] above the heavens [*shamayim*]!

- (3) **God is Infinite.** God has no beginning or ending. “*I am the Alpha and the Omega*” [Rev. 1:8]. “*I AM WHO I AM*” [Ex. 3:14; 6:3 – the “*self-existing One*”]. See Acts 5:39; Ps. 147:5.

PSALM 147:5

Great is our LORD and abundant in strength [*koach* (power)]; His understanding [*tabun* (intelligence; the faculty of understanding)] is infinite [*mispar* (innumerable)].

- (4) **God is Self-Determining.** See Isa. 46:10; 55:11; Jer. 30:24; Acts 1:7-8; Lam. 3:33; Ps. 135:6; Job 9:12; Dan. 4:35; Prov. 21:1; Ezk. 20:3; Heb. 6:17-20; Rom. 9:8-17; 1 Cor. 12:11 [the Holy Spirit]. “*But our God is in the heavens; He does whatever He pleases*” [Ps. 115:3].

JOB 9:12

Were He [God] to snatch away [*chathaph* (to take away)], who could restrain [*shub* (to turn back)] Him? Who could say to Him, “What are you doing?”

EZEKIEL 20:3

Son of man [the Prophet Ezekiel receiving a vision], speak to the elders of Israel and say to them, Thus says the LORD [*adonay* (Lord)] God [*Jehovah* (the self-existing One)], “Do you come to inquire of Me? As I live,” declares the LORD God, “I will not be inquired of by you.”

ROMANS 9:8-17

That is, it is not the children of the flesh [*sarx* – **unBelievers**] who are children of God, but the children of the promise [*epaggelia* (the act of promising a good or blessing) – **salvation by faith in the coming Christ**] are regarded as descendants. For this is the word of promise: “At this time I will come, and Sarah shall have a son.” And not only this, but there was Rebekah also, when she had conceived *twins* by one man, our father Isaac; for though *the twins* were not yet born and had not done [*prasso* (to practice)] anything good or bad [*phaulos* (wicked)], so that God’s purpose [*prothesis* (setting forth a thing)] according to *His* choice [*ekloge* (the act of picking out; choosing)] would stand, not because of works [*ergon* – **salvation cannot be obtained by human works of religion**] but because of Him who calls [*kaleo* – **the salvation ministry of the Holy Spirit calls from eternity past all humans that go on positive [+P] volition towards God in their soul**], it was said to her, “The older will serve the younger.” Just as it is written, “Jacob I loved [*agapao* (to love dearly) – **because Jacob believed in the coming Messiah for salvation and received God’s Righteousness [+R] he was under God’s personal love**], but Esau I hated [*miseo* (to detest) – **Esau rejected salvation**].” What shall we say then? There is no injustice [*adikia* (unrighteousness of heart or life)] with God, is there? May it never be! For He says to Moses, “I will have mercy [*eleeo* (grace in action)] on whom I have mercy, and I will have compassion [*oikteiro*] on whom I have compassion [**God saves all humans on positive [+P] volition**].” So then it *does* not *depend* on the man who wills [*thelo* (to have in mind) – **human works for salvation**] or the man who runs [*trecho* – **human works for salvation**], but on God who has mercy [*eleeo* – **grace in action to all who would accept the free gift of salvation set out from eternity past**]. For the Scripture says to Pharaoh, “For this very purpose I raised you up, to demonstrate My power in you, and that My name might be proclaimed throughout the whole earth.”

ISAIAH 55:11

So will My word [*dabar* – **Bible Doctrine is the mind of God**] be which goes forth from My mouth; it will not return to Me empty [*reyqam* (in an empty condition)], without accomplishing what I desire [*chaphets* (to delight in) – **the Plan of God is fixed by God in eternity past and cannot be broken**], and without succeeding [*tsalach* (to advance; to prosper)] *in the matter* for which I sent it.

ACTS 1:7-8

He [Jesus] said to them [His disciples], “It is not for you to know times [chronos (periods)] or epochs [karios (a measure of time)] which the Father [pater – God the Father] has fixed [tithemi (to set)] by His own authority [exousia (power of choice)]; but you will receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you [the day of Pentecost when the Church Age began]; and you shall be My witnesses [martus – witnessing] both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and even to the remotest part of the earth.”

– HOLINESS –

- (1) **Righteousness and Justice.** God’s **Righteousness** [+R] + God’s **Justice** = God’s **Holiness**. God is “*Holy, Holy, Holy*” [Isa. 6:3]. “*I the LORD am holy*” [Lev. 20:26]. “*Yet You are Holy*” [Ps. 22:3]. “*By those who come near Me I will be treated as holy*” [Lev. 10:3]. “*You shall be Holy, for I am Holy*” [1 Pet. 1:16; Lev. 19:2]. See Ps. 47:8; cf. 89:14, 35; 97:2; Amos 5:7; 6:12; Isa. 28:17; 30:18. The two golden cherubs placed on top of the Ark, with their faces turned toward one another looking down at the center of the mercy seat represented the “*righteousness and justice*” of God [Prov. 2:9; Ps. 89:14]. Kept in the Holy of Holies, the Ark was made of acacia wood [representing the humanity of Jesus Christ] and covered in pure gold [representing the Deity of Jesus Christ]. Inside the Ark were three items representing sin: “*a golden jar holding the manna, and Aaron’s rod which budded, and the tables of the covenant*” [Heb. 9:4]. The animal blood from the sacrifice on the Day of Atonement was sprinkled on the “*mercy seat*” [Lev. 16:3] by the High Priest. The ritual spoke of the work of the coming Messiah, covering sin and satisfying the Perfect **Holiness** of the Trinity. See Ex. 25:9-10; Lev. 16–17.

PSALM 89:14

Righteousness [*tsedeq*] and justice [*mishpat* (sentence, decision of judgment)] are the foundation of Your throne [*kisse* (seat of honor)]; lovingkindness [*chesed* (mercy)] and truth [*emeth* (faithfulness; truth)] go before You.

ISAIAH 28:17

I [God] will make justice [*mishpat*] the measuring line and righteousness [*tsedaqah* (justification; righteousness as vindicated)] the level; then hail will sweep away the refuge of lies and the waters will overflow the secret place.

PSALM 89:35

Once I [God] have sworn by My holiness [*qodesh* – His Righteousness and Justice equals His Holiness]; I will not lie [the Davidic Covenant] to David.

ISAIAH 30:18

Therefore the LORD longs to be gracious [*chanan* (to be gracious)] to you, and therefore He waits on high to have compassion [*racham* (to love deeply; to have mercy)] on you. For the LORD is a God of justice [*mishpat* (the act of deciding a case)]; how blessed [*esher*] are all those who long [*chakah* (to wait)] for Him [all unBeliever humans on positive [+P] volition will be saved and all Believers on positive [+P] volition will reach maturity].

- (2) **Absolute Righteousness [+R].** “*For the LORD is righteous, He loves righteousness; the upright* (the Believer with God’s [+R]) *will behold His face*” [Ps. 11:7]. “*He loves righteousness and justice*” [Ps. 33:5]; 1 Sam. 2:2; Lev. 19:2; Ps. 111:9; 116:5; Ex. 9:27; 2 Chron. 12:6; Ezra 9:15; Rom. 10:2-4; Rev. 3:7; 4:8; 6:10; 1 Pet. 1:16.

ROMANS 10:2-4

For I [Paul] testify about them [various Gentiles] that they have a zeal [*zelos* (excitement of mind)] for God [they are deeply into religion], but not in accordance with knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge) – they have no Bible Doctrine]. For not knowing about God’s righteousness [*dikaiosune* – the Perfect nature of the Trinity] and seeking to establish their own [salvation by human works], they did not subject themselves to the righteousness of God [the Plan of God for salvation]. For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness [*dikaiosune* – the Believer receives God’s Righteousness [+R]] to everyone who believes [*pisteuo* – salvation by grace provides Forty Things to include the [+R] of God].

- (3) **Absolute Divine Good.** God is absolute Divine Good and can only produce Divine Good. “*No one is good except God alone*” [Mk. 10:18]. “*You are good and do good; Teach me Your statutes*” [Ps. 119:68]. “*Good and upright is the LORD; Therefore He instructs sinners in the way*” [Ps. 25:8]. “*O taste and see that the LORD is good; How blessed is the man who takes refuge in Him!*” [Ps. 34:8]. See Ps. 86:5; Lk. 18:19; Matt. 19:16-17.

- (4) **His Holiness is Perfect.** “*God sits on His holy throne*” [Ps. 47:8]. “*Which one of you convicts Me of sin?*” [Jn. 8:46]. See Jer. 23:6; Rom. 1:17; 10:3; Deut. 32:4; Ps. 9:7; 11:7; 97:6; 111:3; Jn. 17:25; 1 Jn. 2:29; Matt. 5:48.

MATTHEW 5:48

Therefore you [all humans] are to be perfect [*teleios* – by receiving His Perfect Righteousness [+R]], as your heavenly Father is perfect [*teleios*].

DEUTERONOMY 32:4

The Rock [*tsur* (giant boulder) – Jesus Christ the Savior]! His work is perfect [*tamiym* (complete; whole) – Jesus’ salvation work on the cross], for all His [God the Father under the Plan of God] ways are just [*mishpat* (right)]; a God of faithfulness and without injustice [*evel* (iniquity; injustice) – under the doctrine of unlimited atonement God desires all humans to be saved], righteous [*tsaddiyq* (just; righteousness) – the Righteousness [+R] of God is uncompromising] and upright [*yashar* (straight) – God is Perfect in all His ways] is He.

- (5) **Righteous in Actions.** “*As for God, His way is blameless*” [2 Sam. 22:31]; Deut. 32:4; 2 Sam. 22:31; Ps. 119:137; 145:17; Dan. 9:14; Rev. 19:2, 11.
- (6) **Righteousness Given to Believers.** God’s own Righteousness [+R] is given to “*everyone who believes (in Christ)*” [Rom. 10:4]; 1:16-17; 3:22; 4:6; 9-10; Gen. 15:6; Phil. 3:9; 2 Cor. 5:21; 2 Chron. 19:7; Matt. 5:48; Jas. 2:23.

ROMANS 10:4

For Christ is the end of the law [*nomos*] for righteousness [*dikaiosune* – the Believer receives God’s Righteousness [+R]] to everyone who believes [*pisteuo* – salvation by grace provides Forty Things to include the critical [+R] of God].

ROMANS 4:6

Just as David also speaks of the blessing on the man to whom God credits righteousness [*dikaiosune* – God’s Righteousness [+R]] apart from [*choris* (without any)] works [*ergon* – human works of religion].

PHILIPPIANS 3:9

And [Paul] may be found in Him [Christ], not having a [self] righteousness [dikaiosune – human righteousness [-r]] of my own derived from *the* Law [nomos – Mosaic Law], but that which is through [dia (by means of)] faith [pistis – saving faith] in Christ, the righteousness [dikaiosune] which comes from God [God's Righteousness [+R] imputed to the Believer] on the basis of faith [pistis – the [+R] is imputed to the Believer at the point of saving faith].

ROMANS 3:22

Even *the* righteousness [dikaiosune – God's Righteousness [+R] is imputed to the Believer at salvation] of God through faith in Jesus Christ for all those who believe [pisteuo]; for there is no distinction [diastole (difference)].

GENESIS 15:6

Then he [Abram] believed [aman] in the LORD [yehovah (the self-existing one) – Jesus Christ]; and He reckoned [chashab (to credit; to impute)] it to him as righteousness [tsedaqah (righteousness as vindicated) – Abraham received God's Righteousness [+R] which made him acceptable to God].

2 CORINTHIANS 5:21

He [God the Father] made Him [Jesus Christ] who knew no sin [hamartia – Jesus never committed a sin and had no Old Sin Nature] to be sin [He took the judgment for all sin while on the cross] on our behalf [hyper (as a substitute for)], so that we might become the righteousness [dikaiosune – God's Perfect Righteousness [+R] is imputed to the Believer making him acceptable for salvation] of God in Him.

- (7) **God is Fair.** See 2 Chron. 19:7; Deut. 32:4; Job 37:23; Ps. 19:9; 50:6; 58:11; 89:14; Isa. 45:21; Rom. 2:11; Heb. 10:30-31; 12:23; Acts 10:34. “*He is exalted in power and He will not do violence to justice and abundant righteousness*” [Job 37:23].

ROMANS 2:11

For there is no partiality [time (valuing by which the price is fixed)] with God.

2 CHRONICLES 19:7

Now then let the fear [*pachad* (terror; dread)] of the LORD be upon you; be very careful what you do, for the LORD our God will have no part in unrighteousness [*evel*] or partiality or the taking of a bribe.

- (8) **Justice is Our Point of Contact.** *For the Believer, God's Justice is his point of contact* not His: (1) **Love** – religious groups that stress emotional “love” focus primarily on human good; (2) **Sovereignty** – religious groups that focus on “healings” and so-called miracles; or (3) **Omniscience** – the fatalism of hyper-Calvinism focuses on the inevitability of human choice and denies the functioning of human free-will.
- (9) **Justice Blesses or Curses.** What the Righteousness [+R] of God demands the Justice of God will perform/execute, *for blessing or for cursing*. See Jn. 3:17-21; Rom. 5:9; Gal. 4:24-25; 2 Sam. 22:22-28.

JOHN 3:17-18

For God did not send [*apostello* – at the 1st Advent of Christ] the Son into the world to judge [*krino*] the world [*kosmos* – the world here refers to all unBelievers], but that the world might be saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – all humans have equal opportunity to enter into the Kingdom of Heaven] through Him [the work of Christ on the cross]. He who believes [*pisteuo* – by faith] in Him [Jesus Christ] is not judged [*krino* – only the unBeliever is judged at the Great White Throne Judgment and sent to the Lake of Fire]; he who does not believe has been judged [*krino*] already, because he has not believed in the name [*onoma*] of the only begotten [*monogenes* (single of its kind; uniquely born)] Son of God [the unBeliever is unacceptable to the Justice of God because he does not possess the Righteousness [+R] of God].

– LOVE –

- (1) **Absolute Love.** The fantastic integrity of His *agape impersonal* love to the unBeliever *motivated His actions to make and then offer a free salvation plan* to save all mankind and bring them into the Kingdom of Heaven. Then, for Believers, God's personal love provides equal opportunity for fantastic “*full rewards*” [2 Jn. 8; 1 Cor. 3:14] both during life and on into the eternal state, forever and ever. See 1 Jn. 4:8-10, 16; Rom. 5:8-10; Jn. 3:16.

- (2) **Expressed in Grace.** God's *agape impersonal love* towards mankind is expressed in His perfect and matchless grace. See Rom. 5:8-10; Jn. 3:16; 1 Jn. 2:15; 3:1. See @@@ GRACE.

JOHN 3:16

For God so loved [*agapao – impersonal love*] the world [*kosmos – the world of all mankind*], that He gave His only begotten [*monogenes (single of its kind; uniquely born)*] Son [*Jesus Christ*], that whoever believes [*pisteuo – in Christ for salvation*] in Him shall not perish [*apollumi (to put out of the way entirely; to utterly destroy) – separation from God in Hell*], but have eternal [*aionios (without beginning and end)*] life.

ROMANS 5:8-10

But God demonstrates [*sunistao (to put together by way of composition; to show; to prove)*] His own love [*agape – impersonal love*] toward us, in that while we were yet sinners [*hamartolos – the unBeliever under Spiritual Death*], Christ died [*apothnesko (of violent death; of eternal death; to be subject to eternal misery in hell) – Spiritual Death*] for us [*Believers*]. Much more [*polus mallon (it stands to greater reason)*] then, having now been justified [*dikaioo (to render righteous) – the Believer has the Righteousness [+R] of God*] by His blood [*aima – the substitutionary work of Christ on the cross*], we shall be saved [*sozo (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven*] from the wrath of God through [*dia (by means of)*] Him [*Jesus Christ*]. For if while we were enemies [*echthros – as unBelievers prior to salvation*] we were reconciled [*katallasso (to receive one into favor)*] to God through [*dia (by means of)*] the death [*thanatos (death with the implied idea of future misery in hell)*] of His Son, much more, having been reconciled [*katallasso – the Believer receives God's [+R]*], we shall be saved [*sozo (to deliver) – to deliver to the status of a resurrection body and the potential rewards for the positive [+P] volition Believer who reaches maturity*] by His life.

- (3) **Personal Love.** Believers *cannot be separated* from God's *personal love* [Rom. 5:8-10; 8:38-39]. God has a *maximum personal love for all Believers because they all have His Righteousness [+R]* imputed to them at the moment of faith alone in Christ alone and for no other reason. Thus, God loves all Believers exactly the same regardless of their spiritual growth. The other issue is whether the Believer ever *develops the capacity to love God*.

– ETERNAL LIFE –

- (1) **Absolute Existence.** There never was a time when God did not exist. God is time. *See* Ex. 3:14; Deut. 32:40; Job 36:26; Isa. 43:10, 13; Lam. 5:19; Ps. 92:8; 93:2; Jn. 17:3; 1 Jn. 5:20; Heb. 7:3; 13:8; Rev. 1:8; 22:13.

PSALM 93:2

Your [**God**] throne is established from of old; You are from everlasting [*olam* (forever; eternity)].

ISAIAH 43:10

“You are My witnesses [*ed* (a witness that provides testimony) – the Believer in the Angelic Conflict],” declares the LORD, “And My servant whom I have chosen [*bachar* (to elect) – **Jesus Christ**], so that you may know [*yada* (to learn to know)] and believe [*aman*] Me and understand [*biyn* (to perceive; to understand)] that I am He. Before Me there was no God formed [*yatsar*], and there will be none after Me [**Satan’s desire to be God**].”

- (2) **Jesus Christ.** Jesus Christ is eternal life. *See* Jn. 1:1-3, 30; 8:57-58.

JOHN 8:57-58

So the Jews said to Him [**Jesus Christ**], “You are not yet fifty years old, and have You seen Abraham?” Jesus said to them, “Truly [*amen* (of a truth)], truly, I say to you, before Abraham was born [*ginomai* (to come into existence)], I am [*eimi* (to be)].”

- (3) **Believers Have Eternal Life.** All Believers *receive God’s Eternal Life at salvation*. *See* 1 Jn. 5:11-12; Jn. 3:16, 24, 36; 6:47; 8:12; 11:25-26. The “*free gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our LORD*” [Rom. 6:23].

1 JOHN 5:11-12

And the testimony is this, that God has given us [**all Believers**] eternal [*aionios* (without beginning and end)] life [*zoe*], and this life is in His Son [**Jesus Christ**]. He who has the Son has the life; he who does not have the Son of God does not have the life.

– OMNISCIENCE –

- (1) **Infinite in Wisdom.** “*He counts the number of the stars; He gives names to all of them*” [Ps. 147:4]; 1 Sam. 16:7; Ps. 44:21-22; 50:11; 1 Jn. 3:20; Rom. 11:33; Jer. 17:10; 51:15; Matt. 6:8; Prov. 3:19; 5:21; Rev. 19:12.

REVELATION 19:12

His eyes *are* a flame of fire, and on His head *are* many diadems; and He has a name written *on Him* which no one knows except Himself [**infinity wisdom**].

- (2) **All Knowing.** See Eccl. 3:11; 1 Sam. 2:3; Heb. 4:13; Ezk. 11:5; Matt. 10:29-30; Ps. 139:1-6, 12; 147:4; Job 26:6; 31:4; 34:21; 37:16; 42:2; Zech. 4:10; Jn. 16:30; 21:17; Lk. 12:7. He knows the end from the beginning [Isa. 41:26; 42:9; 43:9; 46:10; 65:24; Acts 2:23; 15:18; 1 Pet. 1:2; Prov. 17:3; Jn. 6:24; Matt. 11:20-24; Ps. 44:21; 90:2; 103:17; Heb. 4:13; Jer. 1:5]. Jesus knew all things [Matt. 9:4; Jn. 2:24; 21:6-7. Holy Spirit – 1 Cor. 2:10-11; Acts 5:3-4].

ECCLESIASTES 3:11

He [**God**] has made everything appropriate [**yapheh (beautiful)**] in its time. He has also set eternity in their heart, yet so that man will not find out [**matsa**] the work which God has done from the beginning even to the end.

ISAIAH 42:9

“Behold, the former things [**rishon (former of time)** – **God’s Directive Decrees in the Plan of God**] have come to pass, now I [**God**] declare new things; before they spring forth I proclaim [**shama**] *them* to you.”

ISAIAH 65:24

It will also come to pass that before they [**the positive [+P] volition Believer**] call, I [**God**] will answer; and while they are still speaking, I will hear.

LUKE 12:7

Indeed [**Jesus Christ speaking**], the very hairs of your head [**all Believers**] are all numbered. Do not fear; you are more valuable than many sparrows.

JEREMIAH 1:5

“Before I formed you [**Jeremiah**] in the womb [*beten* (belly; womb)] I knew you [**God in His Omniscience knew all about Jeremiah in eternity past**], and before you were born I consecrated [*qadash* (to set apart)] you [**Jeremiah, a positive [+P] volition Believer was selected to be a Prophet to Judah**].”

HEBREWS 4:13

And there is no creature hidden [*aphanes* (not manifested)] from His [**God**] sight [*enopion* (in the presence of)], but all things are open and laid bare to the eyes of Him with whom we have to do [**all humans must account to God**].

JOHN 2:24

But Jesus, on His part, was not entrusting Himself to them, for He knew all men [**the nature of man is under the power of the Old Sin Nature**].

– OMNIPRESENCE –

- (1) **God is Everywhere.** See Jer. 23:24; Jn. 14:23; Acts 17:24; 1 Kngs. 8:27; Isa. 66:1; Deut. 4:39; Prov. 15:3; Ps. 139:7-12.

1 KINGS 8:27

But will God indeed dwell on the earth? Behold, heaven [*shamayim*] and the highest heaven [*shamayim*], cannot contain [*kul* (to measure; to contain)] You, how much less this house [**Jewish Temple**] which I [**Solomon**] have built!

PSALM 139:7

Where can I go from your Spirit? Or where can I flee from Your presence? If I ascend to heaven, You are there; If I make my bed in Sheol, behold You are there.

- (2) **Deity Not Reduced.** Deity cannot be reduced to one point or have anything to do with sin except to condemn it [1 Pet. 2:24; Isa. 53:6].
- (3) **Holy Spirit.** He is everywhere. See Ps. 139:7; Acts 5:3-4; 2 Chron. 16:9.

– OMNIPOTENCE –

- (1) **All Powerful.** God can do “*anything*” [Gen. 18:14] compatible with His essence. *See* Ps. 24:8; 74:13; 93:1-2; 147:5; Isa. 40:26; 50:2; Jer. 27:5; 32:19, 27; Job 26:7; 42:2; Rom. 19:6; Gen. 17:1; 18:14; Rev. 4:8; 2 Chron. 16:9; 25:8; 1 Jn. 5:14-15; Deut. 32:39. *He cannot be complicated by absurdity.*

GENESIS 18:14

Is anything too difficult [*pala (to be beyond one's power)*] for the LORD? At the appointed time I will return to you [*Abraham*], at this time next year, and Sarah will have a son.

PSALM 93:1

The LORD reigns [*malak (to be king)*], He is clothed with majesty; the LORD has clothed and girded Himself with strength [*oz*]; indeed, the world [*tebel*] is firmly established, it will not be moved [*mot (to be overthrown)*].

DEUTERONOMY 32:39

See now that I [*God*], I am He, and there is no god besides Me; it is I who put to death and give life. I have wounded and it is I who heal, and there is no one who can deliver from My hand.

- (2) **Upholds All Things.** In the LORD Jesus Christ “*all things hold together*” [Col. 1:16-17]. “*And He ... upholds all things by the word of His power*” [Heb. 1:3]. *See* 1 Chron. 29:11-12; Ps. 33:9; Rom. 13:1; Jn. 1:1-5; Rev. 1:8.

JOHN 1:2-5

He [*Jesus Christ*] was in the beginning with God. All things came into being [*ginomai (to come into existence)*] through Him, and apart from Him nothing came into being that has come into being. In Him was life, and the life was the Light [*phos – the only way of salvation is through faith alone in Jesus Christ*] of men. The Light shines in the darkness [*skotia (darkness due to want of light) – metaphor used for ignorance of Divine things and a love for the Cosmic Systems*], and the darkness [*negative [-N] volition in the unBeliever*] did not comprehend it.

- (3) **Holy Spirit is All Powerful.** *See* Gen. 1:2; Lk. 1:35; Acts 1:8.
- (4) **Ensures His Promises.** Omnipotence ensures the absolute fulfillment of all God's promises. *See* Isa. 43:13; Matt. 19:26; Mk. 10:27; Lk. 1:37; 2 Cor. 4:7; 2 Pet. 1:3; 1 Jn. 2:25; Tit. 1:2; Phil. 3:10; 1 Cor. 1:24; Rom. 1:16-17; 4:21.
- (5) **For Believers.** The same power that raised Jesus Christ from the dead is available to every Believer [Jn. 3:16]. All precedence for the Church Age is taken from Jesus who lived in the Divine Dynasphere. *See* Eph. 3:20; Col. 1:10-11; 2 Thess. 1:11; 1 Cor. 1:17-18; 2:5; 1 Pet. 1:5; Phil. 4:13.

PHILIPPIANS 4:13

I can do all things through Him who strengthens me.

COLOSSIANS 1:10-11

So that you will walk in a manner worthy of the LORD, to please *Him* in all respects, bearing fruit [**rewards**] in every good [**agathos – Divine Good**] work and increasing [**auxano (to cause to grow)**] in the knowledge [**epignosis – Bible Doctrine retained in the soul**] of God; strengthened with all power, according to His glorious might, for the attaining of all steadfastness [**hupomone – reaching maturity**] and patience [**makrothumia – using the problem solving devices**]; joyously.

– VERACITY –

- (1) **Absolute Truth.** *God is the Truth!* “*You have ransomed me, O LORD, God of truth*” [Ps. 31:5]. “*He could swear by no one greater, He swore by Himself*” [Heb. 6:13]. “*God is true*” [Jn. 3:33]. “*All the paths of the LORD are lovingkindness and truth*” [Ps. 25:10]. *See* Deut. 32:4; 33:4; 86:15; 119:160; Rev. 3:14; 15:3; 19:11; 21:5; Dan. 4:37; 2 Sam. 7:28; Jn. 14:6; 17:17; Eph. 1:13; Jer. 42:5; Num. 23:19.

NUMBERS 23:19

God is not a man, that He should lie, Nor a son of man, that He should repent [**nacham (to be sorry)**]; Has He said, and will He not do it? Or has He spoken, and will He not make it good?

- (2) **God Cannot Lie.** “*The judgments of the LORD are true they are righteous altogether*” [Ps. 19:9]; 1 Jn. 5:20; Heb. 6:18; Tit. 1:2; Ezk. 20:9-22; Jer. 49:13.

TITUS 1:2

In the hope [*elpis* (confidence) – Hope I of the problem solving devices] of eternal life, which God, who cannot lie [*apseudes*], promised [*egaggelio*] long ages ago.

HEBREWS 6:18

So that by two unchangeable [*ametathetos* (unalterable)] things [God's essence in the Trinity and His word] in which it is impossible for God to lie [*pseudomai* (to speak deliberate falsehoods)], we who have taken refuge [those who have believed in Christ for salvation] would have strong encouragement to take hold of the hope [*elpis* (confidence) – Hope I of the problem solving devices] set before us [eternal security].

1 JOHN 5:20

And we know that the Son of God has come, and has given us understanding [*dianoia*] so that we may know Him who is true; and we are in Him who is true, in His Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God and eternal life.

- (3) **His Word First.** God puts His word above His name. All God's “*words are faithful and true*” [Rev. 21:5]; Ps. 138:2.

PSALM 138:2

I will bow down toward Your holy temple and give thanks to Your name for Your lovingkindness and Your truth; for You have magnified Your word [Bible Doctrine] according [*al* (above; over)] to all Your name.

– IMMUTABLE –

- (1) **God is Static.** God does not change in any respect whatsoever, either as revealed in the Old Testament or in the New Testament. “*For I, the LORD, do not change*” [Mal. 3:6]; Isa. 40:28; Ps. 102:26-27; Heb. 1:10-12; 13:8; Jas. 1:17; Rev. 19:11. *See infra* (5).

HEBREWS 1:12

And like a mantel You will roll them up; like a garment they will also be changed [**God will destroy the old universe and create a new one**]. But You are the same, and Your years will not come to an end [*ekleipo (to cease)*].

- (2) **Unchangeable Word.** God's Word is unchangeable. *See* Ps. 119:89; 138:2; 148:6; Jn. 10:35; Isa. 40:8; 1 Pet. 1:24-25; Heb. 7-21; Rom. 2:11.

HEBREWS 7:21

For they indeed became priests without an oath, but He [**God**] with an oath through the One who said to Him, "The LORD has sworn and will not change His mind [*metamellomai*], 'you are a priest forever.'"

1 PETER 1:25

"But the word of the LORD [**Bible Doctrine**] endures [*meno (to remain)*] forever [*aion (eternity)*]." And this is the word which was preached [*eugangelizo (to bring good news)*] to you.

- (3) **Faithful in Promises.** *See* Isa. 55:10-11; Num. 23:19; 1 Kngs. 8:56; 2 Cor. 1:20; Tit. 1:2; Heb. 10:23; 11:11; Deut. 7:9; 1 Jn. 2:25. For example, God is faithful to forgive [1 Jn. 1:9; Ps. 32:5; 51:4; 86:5]. *See* @@@ FAITH.

1 JOHN 1:9

If [**Third Class Condition – maybe the Believer will or maybe he won't**] we confess [*homologeo (to declare oneself guilty; to name or cite as in a court case)*] our sins [*hamartia – the known sin*], He [**God the Father**] is faithful [*pistos – God does the same thing every time*] and righteous [*dikaios – on the basis of the Believer having the Righteousness [+R] of God*] to forgive [*aphiemi*] us our [**known**] sins and to cleanse [*katharizo*] us from all unrighteousness [*adikia – unknown sin as well as decontamination from human good*].

- (4) **Salvation and Testing.** God is "*a faithful Creator in doing what is right*" [1 Pet. 4:19]. In keeping the Believer saved [2 Tim. 2:12-13; 1 Cor. 1:9; 1 Thess. 5:24] and to deliver the Believer through testing [1 Cor. 10:12-13].

1 CORINTHIANS 10:13

No temptation has overtaken you [**the Believer**] but such as is common to man; and God is faithful [*pistos*], who will not allow you to be tempted [*peirazo* (tested) – **Divine Suffering for Blessing to the positive [+P] volition Believer**] beyond what you are able [*dunamai* – **the test will not exceed the Believer's level of spiritual maturity**], but with the temptation [*peirasmōs* (a putting to proof by trial)] will provide [*poieo* (to make)] the way of escape [*ekbasis* (the way out; an egress)] also [**the Believer must apply the applicable problem solving devices to the test**], so that you will be able to endure it [*hupophero* (to bear by being under; to undergo; to bear patiently) – **pass the test and receive rewards**].

- (5) **Jesus Christ is the Same.** The LORD Jesus Christ is forever the “*same*” [Heb. 13:8]. This is true of all members of the Trinity. The God of the “Old Testament” is exactly the same as the God of the “New Testament.”

HEBREWS 13:8

Jesus Christ *is* the same yesterday [*chthes*] and today [*semeron* (this very day)] and forever [*aion* (eternity)].

– HAPPINESS –

- (1) **Perfect Happiness.** There never was a time when God was not happy and nothing can make God “unhappy” – “*according to the glorious gospel of the blessed God*” [1 Tim. 1:11]. See @@@ **HAPPINESS**.
- (2) **Sharing God's Happiness.** The “*mature*” [Eph. 4:13; Heb. 5:14] Believer can share the very Happiness [+H] of God – “*the joy of the LORD*” [Neh. 8:10]; Ps. 16:11; 31:7; 43:4. “*These things I (Jesus Christ) have spoken to you so that My joy may be in you, and that your joy may be full*” [Jn. 15:11].

PSALM 16:11

You [**God**] will make known [*yada*] to me [**the positive [+P] volition Believer**] the path of life; in Your presence is fullness of joy; in Your right hand there are pleasures forever [*netsach* (everlasting; perpetuity)].

@@@ UNION WITH CHRIST

- (1) **Definition.** All Church Age Believers have a *fixed and permanent position* “*in [the LORD Jesus] Christ*” [2 Cor. 5:17; Eph. 1:3-6; 2:5-6]. The Believer’s old position in life from his birth, “*in Adam all die*” [1 Cor. 15:22], is now replaced with his new position in Union with Christ – “*so also in Christ all will be made alive*” [1 Cor. 15:22] – where the Believer is now “*united with Him*” [Rom. 6:5] and shares the: (1) **Destiny of Christ** [Eph. 1:5]; (2) **Sonship** [Jn. 1:12; 2 Tim. 2:1; Gal. 3:26]; (3) **Kingdom as Royalty** [Col. 1:13; 2 Pet. 1:11; 2 Tim. 2:11-12]; (4) **Heirship** [Rom. 8:16-17; 1 Pet. 1:4]; (5) **Sanctification** [1 Cor. 1:2, 30; Eph. 1:4]; (6) **Priesthood** [1 Pet. 2:5, 9; Heb. 10:10-14]; (7) **Election** [Eph. 1:4-5]; (8) **Eternal Life** [1 Jn. 5:11-12]; and (9) **Perfect Righteousness** [+R] [2 Cor. 5:21].

ROMANS 6:5

For if we have become united [*sumphutos* (born together with)] with *Him* in the likeness [*homoïoma* (something made in the likeness of something)] of His [*Jesus Christ*] death [*thanatos*], certainly we shall also be *in the likeness* of His resurrection [*anastasis* – *the Believer receives a resurrection body exactly like Jesus*’].

EPHESIANS 2:6

And raised us [*Believers*] up with Him [*Union with Christ*], and seated us [*sugkathizo* (to cause to sit down together)] with Him in the heavenly [*epouranios* (existing in heaven – *the Third Heaven*)] places in Christ Jesus.

2 CORINTHIANS 5:17

Therefore if anyone is in Christ, *he is* a new creature [*ktisis*]; the old [*archaios* (that which has been from the beginning) – *the enslavement to the Old Sin Nature and Spiritual Death*] things passed away [*parerchomai* (to lose power over)]; behold, new things [*kainos* (a new unprecedented thing) – *the Forty Things given the Believer at salvation*] have come.

- (2) **Dry Baptism.** The Holy Spirit *baptizes* [identifies] each Believer as in “*one body*,” which is part of the mystery doctrine of the Church Age, into Union with Christ [Eph. 4:4-5; 1 Cor. 11:25; 12:13; Gal. 3:27].

EPHESIANS 4:4-5

There is one body [soma – all Believers are in Union with Christ] and one [Holy] Spirit, just as also you were called [kaleo (to utter with a loud voice)] in one hope [elpis (confidence)] of your calling; one LORD [kurios (God) – Jesus Christ the Savior], one faith [pistis – salvation by faith alone in Christ alone], one baptism [baptisma – the dry baptism mechanics executed by God the Holy Spirit at salvation].

1 CORINTHIANS 11:25

In the same way *He [Jesus] took the cup also after supper, saying, “This cup is the new covenant [diatheke (a compact) – the Church Age mystery doctrine of Union with Christ] in My blood [aima – the substitutionary work of Christ on the cross]; do this, as often as you drink it, in remembrance [anamnesis (recollection)] of Me.”*

- (a) **Predicted.** Jesus predicted this dry baptism – “*not many days from now*” [Acts 1:5]; Jn. 14:20; Matt. 16:15. It started off the Church Age in spectacular “grand opening” demonstrations of short termed supernatural acts [Acts 11:15-17]. See @@@ BAPTISM.
- (b) **Positional Truth.** The Holy Spirit’s dry baptism is the basis for Current Positional Truth [Eph. 1:3-6; Col. 3:1] when the Believer is entered into Union with Christ. See @@@ HOLY SPIRIT.

EPHESIANS 1:5-6

He predestined [*proorizo (a predetermined plan)*] us [*God’s provisions also included getting the Winner Believers to spiritual maturity*] to adoption [*uihothesia (adult adoption)*] as sons through Jesus Christ to Himself [*Union with Christ*], according to the kind intention of His will, to the praise of the glory of His grace, which He freely bestowed on us in the Beloved.

- (3) **Christ and the Church.** Synonyms for Jesus Christ and the Church.

- (a) **Last Adam/New Creation** – Gal. 6:15; 1 Cor. 15:45-47; 2 Cor. 5:17.
- (b) **Head/Body** – Eph. 1:22-23; 2:16; 4:4-5; 5:23; Col. 1:18, 24; 2:19.

- (c) **Great Shepherd/Sheep** – Jn. 10:27-28; 1 Pet. 5:4; Heb. 13:20; Rev. 5:6; 7:17; 13:20; Ps. 23:1.
- (d) **True Vine/Branch** – Jn. 15:1-11. The main vine [Christ] supports the branch [Believer] and Bible Doctrine flows into the branch from the vine so the positive [+P] Believer can produce “*fruit*” [Gal. 5:22].
- (e) **Cornerstone/Stones in Building** – Matt. 16:18; Eph. 2:19-22; 1 Pet. 2:4-8 [Peter liked this analogy]. *See also* 1 Cor. 3:11.

MATTHEW 16:18

I [Jesus] also say to you that you are Peter [*petros* (little rock chip)], and upon this rock [*petra* (gigantic rock) – Jesus Christ is the foundation cornerstone of salvation, the Church, and all Believers] I will build My church [*ekklesia*]; and the gates [*pule* (likened to a vast prison)] of Hades will not overpower [*katischuo* (to prevail)] it.

EPHESIANS 2:19-22

So then you are no longer strangers [*xenos* (a foreigner)] and aliens [*paroikos*], [the Believer is no longer an unBeliever] but you are fellow citizens [*sumpolites* (possessing the same citizenship)] with the saints [*hagios* (separated ones)], and are of God’s household [Union with Christ], having been built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets [proclaimed the Gospel to save], Christ Jesus Himself being the corner stone, in whom the whole building, being fitted together, is growing into a holy temple in the LORD, in whom you also are being built together into a dwelling of God in the Spirit [God the Holy Spirit’s ministry to reach maturity].

- (f) **High Priest/Royal Priest** – Heb. 10:10-14; 1 Pet. 2:5, 9. “*For it is fitting to have such a high priest*” [Heb. 7:26]. “*He has made us to be a kingdom of priests*” [Rev. 1:6].
- (g) **Groom/Bride** – 2 Cor. 11:2; Eph. 5:25-32; Rev. 19:6-8; 22:17.
- (h) **King/Royal Family of God** – “*King of kings*” [Rev. 17:14; 19:16]; Eph. 1:22-23; Col. 2:10; Rom. 8:17.

@@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT

- (1) **Definition.** Under the concept of *unlimited atonement* Jesus Christ provided an *absolute equal opportunity for all humans to be saved* by suffering substitutionary Spiritual Death, bearing in His own body on the cross the just punishment of sins – past, present, and future – of every human who ever lived. Thus, *anyone* who desires to be with their Creator and be saved will be given the Gospel and will be saved! See @@@ SALVATION.
- (2) **God's Directive Will.** God *desires that all humans should be saved* – “*for the Son of Man did not come to destroy men's lives, but to save them*” [Lk. 9:56]; Matt. 22:14; 1 Tim. 2:3-4; 2 Pet. 3:9; Tit. 2:11; Lk. 2:10-11. The 1st Advent of Christ was to bring salvation. The 2nd Advent is to bring judgment. “*But he Pharisees and the lawyers rejected God's purpose for themselves*” [Lk. 7:30]. See @@@ JUDGMENT.

MATTHEW 22:14

For many are called [*kletos* (to invite to a banquet) – the salvation ministry of God the Holy Spirit], but few are chosen [*eklektos* – most humans reject salvation by grace].

1 TIMOTHY 2:3-4

This is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Savior [*soter* (the one who provides eternal deliverance into the Kingdom of God)], who desires all men [*anthropos* (mankind) – God's will is that the unBeliever receives salvation] to be saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – enter into the Kingdom of Heaven] and to come to the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge)] of the truth [*aletheia* – once saved, God's will is for the Believer to reach spiritual maturity].

2 PETER 3:9

The LORD is not slow about His promise [*the Rapture*], as some count slowness, but is patient [*makrothumeo* (to persevere patiently)] toward you, not wishing [*boulomai* (to will deliberately)] for any to perish [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely) – the will of God is for all humans to be saved and none go to Hell] but for all to come to repentance [*metanoia* (a change of mind) – reject the lies of religion and accept God's grace gift of salvation].

- (3) **Penalty of Sin.** The penalty or “*wages of sin is [spiritual] death*” [Rom. 6:23] – eternal separation from God. In Gen. 2:17, Adam and the woman [Eve] were told that the day they disobeyed God and committed the first sin that “*dying (Spiritual Death) you will die (Physical Death)*.” The Hebrew word *muth* is repeated twice in Gen. 2:17, to indicate that the consequences of the first death, *spiritual death*, would eventually result in their *physical death* [Rom. 5:12; 1 Cor. 15:21-22]. Since then, all subsequent people, with the single exception of the humanity of Jesus Christ, have been born spiritually dead with an OSN, making it impossible for any person to obtain salvation by human works. “*For the love of Christ controls us, having concluded this, that one died for all, therefore all died*” [2 Cor. 5:14].
- (4) **Bible Verses.** Jesus died for *all the sins* of the entire human race, Believers and unBelievers. “*He Himself bore our sins in His body on the cross*” [1 Pet. 2:24]. “*Christ died for the ungodly*” [Rom. 5:6]. “*He (God) made Him (Jesus) who knew no sin to be sin on our behalf*” [2 Cor. 5:21]; Jn. 1:29; 3:16; 12:32; Heb. 1:2-4, 2:9; 9:26; 10:10; 1 Tim. 2:3-6; 4:10; Gal. 1:4; Rev. 5:9; 1 Jn. 2:2; 1 Pet. 3:18; 2 Pet. 2:1; 2 Cor. 5:14-15; Eph. 1:7; Rom. 5:8-10.

JOHN 3:16

For God so loved [*agapao – impersonal love*] the world [*kosmos – the world of all mankind*], that He gave His only begotten [*monogenes (single of its kind; uniquely born)*] Son [*Jesus Christ*], that whoever believes [*pisteuo – faith alone in Jesus Christ alone for salvation*] in Him shall not perish [*apollumi (to put out of the way entirely; to utterly destroy) – separation from God in Hell*], but have eternal [*aionios (without beginning and end)*] life.

JOHN 12:32

And I [*Jesus*], if I am lifted up [*hupsoo (to lift up on high)*] from the earth [*ge – on the Roman cross*], will draw all men to Myself [*unlimited atonement makes all humans candidates for salvation*].

1 TIMOTHY 2:6

Who gave Himself [*Jesus Christ*] as a ransom [*antilutron (what is given in exchange as the price of redemption)*] for all [*pas – unlimited atonement*], the testimony *given* at the proper time.

HEBREWS 2:9

But we do see Him [**Jesus Christ**] who was made for a little while lower than the angels [*aggelos*], *namely*, Jesus, because of the suffering [*pathema* (extreme suffering)] of death [*thanatos* (with the implied idea of future misery in hell) – **Spiritual Death**] crowned with glory [*doxa*] and honor, so that by the grace [*charis*] of God He might taste [*geuomai* – **the cup of the sins of the world**] death [*thanatos* – **Spiritual Death**] for everyone [*pas* – **unlimited atonement**].

REVELATION 5:9

And they [**senior angels**] sang a new song, saying, “Worthy are You [**Jesus Christ**] to take the book and to break its seals; for You were slain [*sphazo* (to put to death by violence)], and purchased [*agorazo* (to do business in the market place) – **under Soteriology God is satisfied with the work of Christ on the cross**] for God with Your blood [*aima* – **the substitutionary Spiritual Death**] *men* from every tribe and tongue and people and nation.”

1 TIMOTHY 2:3-4

This is good and acceptable in the sight of God [*theos*] our Savior [*soter* (the one who provides eternal deliverance into the Kingdom of God)], who desires [*thelo* (to intend)] all men [*anthropos* (mankind) – **God’s will is that the unBeliever receives salvation**] to be saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – **enter into the Kingdom of Heaven**] and to come to the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge)] of the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – **once saved, God’s will is for the Believer to reach spiritual maturity**].

HEBREWS 9:26

Otherwise, He [**Jesus Christ**] would have needed to suffer often since the foundation of the world; but now once at the consummation of the ages [**Jesus Christ came at the right moment to bear all of the trillions of sins for all of humanity – once and for all**] He has been manifested to put away sin [**by unlimited atonement**] by the sacrifice [*thusia* (a victim sacrificed)] of Himself [**Jesus Christ’s solo work in sin bearing was sufficient and need never be repeated**].

GALATIANS 1:4

Who gave Himself [Jesus Christ] for our sins [*hamartia* – Christ bore all human sin on the cross] so that He might rescue [*exaireo* (to pluck out)] us [all humans who respond to grace] from this present evil [*poneros* (wicked)] age [*aion* – Satan is the ruler of the world], according to the will [*thelema* – the Plan of God developed in eternity past to provide salvation] of our God and Father.

HEBREWS 10:10

By this will [the Plan of God specifically designed to save humans] we [Believers] have been sanctified [*hagiazō* (to separate from profane things) – all Believers are in union with Jesus Christ] through [*dia* (by means of)] the offering [*prosphora* (the act of offering)] of the body [*soma* – all sin was imputed to the humanity of Christ in His body while hanging on the Roman cross] of Jesus Christ once for all [*ephapax* (once for all) – under unlimited atonement Jesus Christ provided the equal opportunity for salvation for every human who ever lived].

2 CORINTHIANS 5:14-15

For the love [*agape* (to love dearly)] of Christ controls us [Believers], having concluded [*krino* (to be of opinion)] this, that one [Christ] died [*apothnesko* (of a violent death; of eternal death; to be subject to eternal misery in hell) – Spiritual Death] for all, therefore all died [*apothnesko* – all humans are born spiritually dead]; and He died [*apothnesko*] for all [the doctrine of unlimited atonement], so that they who live [Believers] might no longer live for themselves [Believers are to live the Christian Way of Life and advance to maturity], but for Him who died [*apothnesko*] and rose again [resurrection] on their behalf.

JOHN 1:29

The next day he [John the Baptist] saw Jesus coming to him and said, “Behold, the Lamb of God who takes away [*airo* (to move from its place)] the sin [*hamartia* – Spiritual Death and sin] of the world [*kosmos* – Jesus Christ provided unlimited atonement for all humans to give everyone an equal opportunity for salvation]!”

HEBREWS 1:3-4

And He [Jesus Christ] is the radiance of His glory [*doxa* – all three members of the Trinity share the same essence] and the exact representation of His nature [*hupostasis* (the thing put under; substructure) – in hypostatic union Jesus Christ is still God], and upholds all things by the word of His power. When He had made purification [*katharismos* (a cleansing from sins) – the work of Christ on the Roman cross] of sins [unlimited atonement], He sat down at the right hand of the Majesty on high [Operation Footstool], having become as much better than the angels [a superior resurrection body than angels], as He has inherited a more excellent name than they.

1 JOHN 2:2

And He Himself [Jesus Christ] is the propitiation [*hilasmos* (an appeasing)] for our sins [*hamartia* – all personal sins of the Believer]; and not for ours only, but also for *those of the whole* [*holos* (completely)] world [*kosmos* – under unlimited atonement Jesus Christ bore all human sin].

- (5) **At the Great White Throne.** Because Jesus Christ died for all sins, the unBeliever's sins are not the basis for his indictment and final trial at the Great White Throne Judgment of Rev. 20:11-15. Per double jeopardy, *sin is never mentioned*. In fact, the Divine indictment is that the unBeliever does not have God's Righteousness [+R] acquired only through faith in Jesus Christ. The unBeliever's personal righteousness [-r] is *insufficient* to allow for an eternal relationship with Perfect [+R]. Thus, with their names "*blotted out of the book of life*" the unBeliever is not "*recorded with the righteous*" [Ps. 69:28] but is "*judged from the things which were written in the books according to their [good] deeds*" [Rev. 20:12] and "*thrown into the lake of fire*" [Rev. 20:15]. By dying on the cross Jesus Christ alone holds "*the keys of death and of Hades*" [Rev. 1:18], but the unBeliever rejects Him and God's grace.

REVELATION 20:14-15

Then death [*thanatos* – Spiritual Death] and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. This is the second death, the lake of fire [eternal separation from God]. And if anyone's name was not found written in the book of life [unBelievers are blotted out of the Book of Life], he was thrown into the lake of fire.

@@@ WALKING

- (1) **Definition.** The concept of “*walking*” is a metaphor for the *general lifestyle of an individual*. The primary Greek words are *peripateo*, *poreuomai*, and *stoicheo* (to march in ranks). For the Believer, stable walking should describe the positive [+P] volition Believer living in the Plan of God. “*Now therefore, O LORD, the God of Israel, keep with Your servant David my father that which You have promised him saying, ‘You shall not lack a man to sit on the throne of Israel, if only your sons take heed to their way to walk before Me as you have walked’*” [1 Kngs. 8:25]; Jer. 10:23-24.

JEREMIAH 10:23-24

I know, O LORD, that a man’s way is not in himself [human viewpoint of the Cosmic Systems is not God’s way], nor is it in a man who walks to direct his steps. Correct me, O LORD, but with justice [Divine Suffering for Blessing]; not with Your anger [Divine Discipline], or you will bring me to nothing [no reaching maturity, no rewards – only the sin unto death].

- (2) **Rebound.** The actual mechanics of walking *requires energy and motion*, where after a step forward the balance is quickly recovered by a next step in a particular direction, and so on. This is an analogy to the Believer operating in the Devil’s world during the Angelic Conflict and using Rebound on a regular basis in order to keep oriented to grace and *in balance*. At a minimum, this means the Believer ensures that he is “*filled with the [Holy] Spirit*” [Eph. 5:18] and is living the Christian Way of Life. “*Therefore be careful how you walk, not as unwise men, but as wise*” [Eph. 5:15-18]; Jas. 4:13-15.

EPHESIANS 5:15-18

Therefore be careful how you walk [*peripateo*], not as unwise men but as wise [apply Bible Doctrine], making the most of your time, because the days are evil [*poneros – Satan is the ruler of the world and seeks to deceive the Believer as part of the Angelic Conflict*]. So then do not be foolish, but understand what the will of the LORD is [the Plan of God is for the Believer to reach maturity which glorifies God]. And do not get drunk [*methusko* (to intoxicate)] with wine, for that is dissipation [*asotia* (a dissolute life) – self-induced suffering], but be filled with the Spirit [stay in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit via Rebound].

- (3) **Light the Way.** The **Winner** Believer understands that he is now guided in his thinking by the “**Light**” [Jn. 8:12] of Jesus Christ and “**sees**” all things round about him by means of Bible Doctrine, having been liberated from the dark thinking of the Cosmic Systems. He walks in a relaxed and orderly pace, **letting life come to him**. “**Your word is a lamp to my feet and a light to my path**” [Ps. 119:105]. “**In Him was life, and the life was the Light of men. The Light shines in darkness, and the darkness does not comprehend it**” [Jn. 1:4-5]; Eph. 5:8; Isa. 50:10. “**For you were formerly in darkness, but now you are the Light in the LORD; walk as children of Light**” [Eph. 5:8].

JOHN 8:12

Then Jesus again spoke to them, saying, “I am the Light of the world [**kosmos – providing salvation**]; he who follows Me will not walk [**peripateo**] in the darkness, but will have the Light of life [**eternal security and Bible Doctrine**].”

ISAIAH 50:10

Who is among you that fears [**yare (respect)**] the LORD, that obeys the voice of His servant [**Isaiah**], that walks in darkness and has no light? Let him trust in the name of the LORD and rely on his God [**Faith/Rest**].

- (4) **Power Source for Bible Doctrine.** The Filling of the Holy Spirit **guides the Believer to the truths** of Bible Doctrine so that he can learn the “**mind of Christ**” [1 Cor. 2:16]. “**But when He, the Spirit of truth, comes, He will guide you into all truth ... He will glorify Me, for He will take of Mine and will disclose it to you**” [Jn. 16:13-14]. To navigate this world the Believer must energize the spiritual **power source** of being “**filled with the [Holy] Spirit**” [Eph. 5:18] [Rebound], submit themselves to the teaching of a prepared Pastor/Teacher, and grow up from the spiritual power of Bible Doctrine resident in his soul/spirit. See Ps. 143:8. See @@@ OPERATION Z. See *infra* (5).

PSALM 143:8

Let me hear Your [**God**] lovingkindness [**chesed – grace in action**] in the morning; for I trust in You; teach me the way in which I should walk; for to You I lift up my soul [**the positive [+P] Believer’s number one priority is to please God**].

(5) **Three Spheres of Walking in God's Path.**

- (a) **Walking in the Holy Spirit.** Staying in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit *by Rebound*. See Gal. 5:16-17; 6:16; Rom. 8:1-4; Eph. 5:2, 18.

GALATIANS 5:16-17

But I [Paul] say, walk [*peripateo* (lifestyle)] by the [Holy] Spirit [*pneuma* – stay in Fellowship by Rebound], and you [Believer] will not carry out the desire [*epithumia* (lust)] of the flesh [*sarx* – the influence of the Old Sin Nature]. For the flesh sets its desire against the [Holy] Spirit, and the [Holy] Spirit against the flesh; for these are in opposition to one another, so that you may not do the things that you please [*thelo* (to intend; to desire) – the Believer rejects the influences of the Old Sin Nature].

ROMANS 8:1-4

Therefore there is now no condemnation [*katakrima* (a damnatory sentence)] for those who are in Christ Jesus [Union with Christ at salvation]. For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has set you free from the law [*nomos* – legal standard] of sin and of death [*thanatos* (with the implied idea of future misery in hell)]. For what the Law [Mosaic Law] could not do, weak as it was through the flesh, God *did*: sending His own Son in the likeness [*homoioima* (resemblance)] of sinful flesh and *as an offering* for sin, He condemned [*katakrino* (to give judgment against)] sin in the flesh, so that the requirement of the Law might be fulfilled in us, who do not walk according to the flesh [the Old Sin Nature] but according to the Spirit [the Believer walking in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit].

- (b) **Walking in Faith/Rest.** The **Winner** Believer uses Bible Doctrine and *ignores/rejects what he sees and hears from the Cosmic Systems*. “*How can a young man keep his way pure? By keeping it according to Your word*” [Ps. 119:9]. See 2 Cor. 4:18; 5:7.

2 CORINTHIANS 4:18

While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen; for the things which are seen are temporal, but the things which are not seen are eternal [the truth of God's Word and Bible Doctrine].

- (c) **Walking in Bible Doctrine.** The **Winner** Believer walks wisely by applying Bible Doctrine which is his absolute Light *to see how and where he is going*. See 1 Jn. 1:7; Jn. 3:19-21; Eph. 5:15; 1 Thess. 4:1; Col. 1:10; 2:6; Ps. 1:1-2.
- (6) **Christian Way of Life.** Walking is used for the function of the spiritually “*mature*” [Eph. 4:13; Heb. 5:14] positive [+P] volition **Winner** Believer executing the Christian Way of Life and learning Bible Doctrine. Realizing the fact that “*each day has enough trouble of its own*” [Matt. 6:24], he understands the command to “*prepare your minds for action*” [1 Pet. 1:13] so that he can say with confidence: “*Even though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I fear no evil, for You are with me*” [Ps. 23:4]. See 1 Jn. 1:7; Rom. 6:34; Eph. 2:10; 4:11; Phil. 3:17.

PHILIPPIANS 3:17

Brethren, join in following my [Paul] example, and observe those who walk according to the pattern you have in us [Paul and his traveling seminary team].

EPHESIANS 2:10

For we are His workmanship [*poiema (that which has been made)*], created in Christ Jesus for good [*agathos – Divine Good*] works, which God prepared beforehand [*proetoimazo (to prepare before) – in the Plan of God He made provisions to bless all Believers with rewards*] so that we would walk in them.

- (7) **Divine Dynasphere.** Walking in God’s Divine Dynasphere: **GATE 1** [1 Thess. 2:12; 1 Jn. 1:7; 2:6; Rom. 6:4]; **GATE 2** [2 Cor. 5:7; Col. 2:6]; **GATE 3** [Eph. 4:1-2]; **GATE 4** [3 Jn. 4; Col. 1:9-10; 4:5-6]; **GATES 5-6** [Eph. 5:1-2; Acts 9:31]; and **GATE 7** [Rom. 13:13-14; Jn. 8:12].
- (8) **Winner Believer.** Walking describes the standard lifestyle of the **Winner** Believer who *sees God with the eyes of the soul*: (1) “*walk by faith, not by sight*” [2 Cor. 5:7]; (2) “*walk in newness of life*” [Rom. 6:4]; (3) “*walk in a manner worthy of the calling*” [Eph. 4:1]; (4) “*walk in a manner worthy of the LORD*” [Col. 1:10-11]; (5) “*walk properly as in the day*” [Rom. 13:13]; (6) “*walk in Him*” [Col. 2:6]; (7) “*created in Christ Jesus for good works, which God prepared beforehand so that we would walk in them*” [Eph. 2:10]; and (8) “*walk in the Light*” [1 Jn. 1:7; Eph. 5:8].

COLOSSIANS 1:10-11

So that you will walk in a manner worthy of the LORD, to please *Him* in all respects, bearing fruit [*karpophoreo* – reaching spiritual maturity which results in rewards in time and eternity] in every good [*agathos* – Divine Good] work and increasing [*auxano* (to cause to grow)] in the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge) – learning the full realm of Bible Doctrine] of God; strengthened with all power, according to His glorious might, for the attaining of all steadfastness [*hupomone* (endurance; constancy) – reaching maturity requires constant positive [+P] volition decisions] and patience [*makrothumia* – using the problem solving devices]; joyously [*chara* (gladness) – maintaining happiness and a relaxed mental attitude].

- (9) **Old Testament.** The Hebrew word *halak* (walking) with God was rooted in the *Faith/Rest technique*, but also directly referred to the Believer's lifestyle. "*Oh that My people would listen to Me, that Israel would walk in My ways!*" [Ps. 81:13]; Gen. 5:22; Ps. 1:1-2; 89:41; 119:1; Isa. 30:21; 33:15. Per Mic. 6:8, "*walk humbly with your God*" was also a title for the "*mature*" [Eph. 4:13] **Winner** Believer. Note: "*Enoch walked with God three hundred years*" [Gen. 5:22]!

MICAH 6:8

He has told you, O man, what is good; and what does the LORD require of you but to do justice [*mishpat* (deciding a case correctly) – learn and apply the full realm of Bible Doctrine from the Divine Institutions onward], to love kindness, and to walk [*halak* (lifestyle)] humbly [*tsana* (respect for authority)] with your God?

ISAIAH 30:21

Your ears will hear a word [the positive [+P] volition Believer hears Bible Doctrine] behind you, "This is the way, walk [*halak*] in it," whenever you turn to the right or to the left.

GENESIS 5:22

Then Enoch walked with God [**Believer at maturity**] three hundred years after he became the father of Methuselah, and he had *other* sons and daughters.

PSALM 119:1

How blessed are those whose way is blameless [**the Believer on positive [+P] volition to the Word**], who walk [*halak*] in the law [*torah*] of the LORD.

PSALM 1:1

How blessed is the man who does not walk [*halak*] in the counsel of the wicked, nor stand in the path of sinners, nor sit in the seat of scoffers!

- (10) **Describes Reversionism.** Walking is also used to describe **Loser** Believers who “*walk in the way which is not good, following their own thoughts (Cosmic Systems thinking)*” [Isa. 65:2]; Phil. 3:18-19; Jn. 11:10; 1 Cor. 3:3; 2 Thess. 3:6; Eph. 4:17-18; Jer. 2:5; 23:17. “*If anyone comes to you and does not bring this teaching, do not receive him into your house*” [2 Jn. 10].

PHILIPPIANS 3:18-19

For many walk [*peripateo* (a lifestyle) – **the Loser Believer in reversionism**], of whom I [**Paul**] often told you, and now tell you even weeping, *that they are* enemies of the cross of Christ, whose end is destruction [*apoleia* – **they will die the sin unto death**], whose god is *their* appetite, and *whose* glory [*doxa* – **the Loser Believer glories in human good works**] is in their shame, who set their minds on earthly things [**the Cosmic Systems**].

2 THESSALONIANS 3:6

Now we [**Paul and his traveling seminary**] command you, brethren [*adelphos* – **Believers**], in the name of our LORD Jesus Christ, that you keep away from every brother [*adelphos* – **the Loser Believer on negative [-N] volition to Bible Doctrine**] who leads [*peripateo* (a lifestyle)] an unruly [*ataktos* (out of ranks; disorderly)] life [*peripateo* (a lifestyle)] and not according to the tradition [**the Bible Doctrine**] which you received from us.

JEREMIAH 2:5

Thus says the LORD, “What injustice did your fathers find in Me [**God gave them the Promised Land**], that they went far from Me and walked [*halak*] after emptiness [*hebel* (vapor; vanity; futility)] and became empty?”

JEREMIAH 23:17

They keep saying [the false Jewish prophets regarding the threat of attack by the Chaldeans] to those who despise [*naats* (to spurn; abhor; despise)] Me [all the Jews on negative [-N] volition], the LORD has said, “You will have peace”; and as for everyone who walks in the stubbornness of his own heart, they say, “Calamity will not come upon you [the nation was obliterated in 586 B.C.]”

- (11) **Describes the UnBeliever.** Walking is also used to describe the unBeliever’s lifestyle. He is *blind and walks* in the “*darkness*” [Isa. 9:2]; Eph. 2:2; 4:17-18; Col. 3:7; 1 Pet. 4:3; 2 Pet. 2:10; Jd. 16, 18; 1 Cor. 3:3; Matt. 15:14. Note: the Believer can also think [*mataiotes* (devoid of truth)] like an unBeliever.

ISAIAH 9:2

The people who walk in darkness [unBelievers in the Cosmic Systems] will see a great light [*or* (the light of day) – Jesus Christ at the 1st Advent]; those who live in a dark land [Judea at the time of Christ was apostate], the light will shine on them.

MATTHEW 15:14

Let them [Jesus speaking of the Pharisees] alone; they are blind [*tuphos* – unBelievers in Spiritual Death] guides [*hodegos* (a leader of the way)] of the blind [the unBeliever on negative [-N] volition]. And if a blind man guides a blind man, both will fall into a pit [*bothunos* – Hell].

EPHESIANS 4:17-18

So this I [Paul] say, and affirm together with the LORD, that you [Believers] walk no longer just as the Gentiles [*ethnos* – the unBelievers] also walk [living in the Cosmic Systems], in the futility [*mataiotes* (devoid of truth)] of their mind, being darkened [*skotoo* (blackout)] in their understanding [*dianoia* – the unBeliever cannot understand Bible Doctrine], excluded [*apallotrio* (to be shut out from intimacy) – the unBeliever is not in the family of God] from the life of God because of the ignorance [*agnoia* (lack of knowledge) – no desire in their negative [-N] volition for truth] that is in them, because of the hardness [*porosis* – humans on negative [-N] volition] of their heart.

@@@ WAR

- (1) **Definition.** War is the use of physical violence between one or more groups, usually between nations. The *lawful use of violence in self-defense* embodies the principle of protection of the nation from exterior threats by hostile nations/peoples and is a valid and often commanded concept throughout the Bible. The Bible also identifies two ongoing *spiritual wars*: (1) the Believer vs. the OSN fighting for control of his soul; and (2) the mature Believer vs. Satan's Cosmic Systems. Peace is primarily used in the Bible regarding the reconciliation between Perfect God and imperfect man. *"Therefore having been justified by faith, we have peace with God through our LORD Jesus Christ"* [Rom. 5:1]. See @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT.
- (2) **War and History.** Warfare is a legitimate part of human history to maintain the freedom principles in the Divine Institutions [Eccl. 3:8; Num. 21:14]. *Armies either defend freedom or destroy it*, which means that the side that wins the war will determine much of the subsequent events. Thus, the concept of war in self-defense is moral, even though immoral acts will occur in war. *"Therefore it is said in the Book of the Wars of the LORD"* [Num. 21:14]. Jesus' parable: *"Or what king when he sets out to meet another king in battle, will not first sit down and consider whether he is strong enough with ten thousand men to encounter the one coming against him with twenty thousand?"* [Lk. 14:31].
- (3) **Millennium.** War will always exist in human history [Matt. 24:6; Mk. 13:7; Lk. 21:9; Eccl. 3:8; Num. 21:14], but *not in the Millennium*. *"And they will hammer their swords into plowshares"* [Isa. 2:4]; Mic. 4:3.

MATTHEW 24:6

You [Jesus speaking] will be hearing of wars [*polemos – hot wars*] and rumors of wars [*cold wars*]. See that you are not frightened, for *those things* must take place, but *that* is not yet the end [*the 2nd Advent*].

- (4) **For Adults.** Combat in warfare is primarily for *adult males* [Num. 1:3; 26:2]. Temporary exceptions in the Mosaic Law included newlyweds. *"When a man takes a new wife, he shall not go out with the army nor be charged with any duty. he shall be free at home one year and shall give happiness to his wife whom he has taken"* [Deut. 24:5].

- (5) **Goal of War.** The goal of war is to *destroy the enemy*. See Jos. 11:23; 14:15; Ps. 46:8-11; Isa. 37:26; 2 Kngs. 19:35; 1 Chron. 5:19-22; Lk. 13:31-32.

JOSHUA 11:23

So Joshua took [by warfare] the whole land, according to all that the LORD had spoken to Moses, and Joshua gave it for an inheritance to Israel according to their divisions by their tribes. Thus the land had rest from war.

ISAIAH 37:26

Have you not heard? Long ago I [God] did it, from ancient times I planned it. Now I have brought it to pass, that you should turn fortified cities into ruinous heaps.

- (6) **Law of War.** The Mosaic Law sets out a detailed law of war codex. See Deut. 20:1-19. There were exceptions. See @@@ DEMONISM.
- (7) **Refuse War.** In some cases, it is a sin not to go to war [Num. 32:5-23, 32]. The Biblical roster of many Old Testament **Winner** Believers is associated with their winning military victories. See Heb. 11:32-34; 2 Sam. 23:8-39.

NUMBERS 32:20-21, 23

So Moses said to them [the Hebrews], “If you will do this [fight], if you will arm yourselves before the LORD for the war, and all of you armed men cross over the Jordan before the LORD until He has driven His enemies out from before Him. ... But if you will not do so [go to war], behold, you have sinned against the LORD, and be sure your sin will find you out.”

- (8) **Train for War.** Going to war demands training and battle courage [Num. 31:3-5; Jdg. 3:2; Lk. 14:31]. Nevertheless, as Believers prepare for war through military training, they know that the “*victory belongs to the LORD*” [Prov. 21:31], “*for the battle is the LORD’s and He will give you into our hands*” [1 Sam. 17:47]; Lev. 26:7-9; 2 Sam. 22:35; Ps. 18:34; 27:3-4; 144:1.

PROVERBS 21:31

The horse is prepared for the day of battle, but victory belongs to the LORD.

PSALM 144:1

Blessed be the LORD, my rock [**Jesus Christ the cornerstone**], who trains my hands for war, *and* my fingers for battle.

LEVITICUS 26:7-9

But you [**the Hebrews**] will chase your enemies and they will fall before you by the sword; five of you will chase a hundred, and a hundred of you will chase ten thousand, and your enemies will fall before you by the sword. So I [**God**] turn toward you and make you fruitful and multiply you, and I will confirm My covenant with you.

- (9) **Peace Propaganda.** Pacifists destroy a nation from within. Pacifists ignore the testimony of history and human nature. “*New gods were chosen; then war was in the gates. Not a shield or a spear was seen among forty thousand in Israel*” [Jdg. 5:8]. See Jer. 6:14; Mic. 3:5-7; Ezk. 13:10.

JEREMIAH 6:14

They [**apostate religious leaders of Judah**] have healed the brokenness of My people superficially, saying, “Peace [**shalom**], peace,” but there is no peace.

MICAH 3:5

Thus says the LORD concerning the prophets who lead my people astray; when they have *something* to bite with their teeth [**reason to war**], they cry, “Peace,” but against him who puts nothing in their mouths they declare holy war.

- (10) **Evil Plots War.** Plotting aggressive warfare is in the heart of evil men. “*Rescue me, O LORD, from evil men; preserve me from violent men who devise evil things in their hearts; they continually stir up wars*” [Ps. 140:1-2]; Ps. 55:20-23; 68:30; 120:6-7; 140:1-2.
- (11) **Military Leadership.** Importance of good leadership [Prov. 20:18; 24:1-6].

PROVERBS 20:18

Prepare plans by consultation, and make war by wise guidance.

- (12) **Believer Protected.** See Job 38:21-23; Zech. 2:5; Rev. 7:3; Ps. 91:1-7; Isa. 54:17. This also applies to the Believer who puts “*on the full armor of God*” to engage in the spiritual war in the ongoing Angelic Conflict [Eph. 6:10-19].

ISAIAH 54:17

“No weapon that is formed against you will prosper; and every tongue that accuses you in judgment you will condemn. This is the heritage of the servants of the LORD, and their vindication is from Me,” declares the LORD.

- (13) **Anti-War Misnomer.** The classic misnomer in Matt. 26:52, supposedly in support of abolishing or condemning war, actually applies to the *capital punishment of the convicted criminal, not the abolition of war*. For example, Peter had no legal right or authority to use illegal violence against an agent of the State executing an arrest warrant against Jesus, even though the warrant was false. The accused must assert his innocence in court. See Gen. 9:6.

MATTHEW 26:52

Then Jesus said to him [Peter], “Put your sword back into its place; for all those who take up the sword [for illegal violence] shall perish [apollumi (to declare that one must be put to death) – Physical Death] by the sword [capital punishment under the Divine Institutions].”

- (14) **Commander of the Armies.** Described many times in the Old Testament as the “*LORD of hosts*” [tsaba (armies of angels)] Jesus Christ is the ultimate Commander of the Jewish Army [Isa. 6:5]; Ezk. 1:10; Jos. 5:13-15; 6:2; Zech. 12:5; Mal. 3:1.

ISAIAH 6:5

Then I [Isaiah] said, “Woe is me, for I am ruined! Because I am a man of unclean lips, and I live among a people of unclean lips; for my eyes have seen the King, the LORD of hosts [tsaba].”

- (15) **Record for Killing.** Jesus Christ holds the Old Testament record for killing the enemy in the shortest time – “*185,000*” Assyrians in 701 B.C., outside Jerusalem [2 Kngs. 19:35]. Christ will hold the all-time record for killing at His 2nd Advent [Isa. 63:1-6; Rev. 19:11-18; Zech. 14:1-21; Ezk. 39:1-29].

ISAIAH 63:1-3

Who is this who comes from Edom [Christ in a resurrection body at the 2nd Advent], with garments of glowing colors from Bozrah, this One who is majestic in His apparel, marching in the greatness of His strength? “It is I [Jesus Christ] who speak in righteousness, mighty to save [*yasha* (to deliver)].” Why is Your apparel red, and Your garments like the one who treads in the wine press? “I have trodden the wine trough alone, and from the peoples there was no man with Me. I also trod them [unBelievers at the 2nd Advent] in My anger and trampled them in My wrath; and their lifeblood [*netsach*] is sprinkled on My garments, and I stained all My raiment.”

REVELATION 19:11-16

And I [John] saw heaven opened, and behold, a white horse, and He [Jesus Christ at the 2nd Advent] who sat on it *is* called Faithful and True, and in righteousness He judges [*krino*] and wages war [*polemeo*]. His eyes *are* a flame of fire, and on His head *are* many diadems; and He has a name written *on Him* which no one knows except Himself. *He is* clothed with a robe dipped in blood, and His name is called The Word of God. And the armies which are in heaven, clothed in fine linen, white *and* clean, were following Him on white horses [Believers in resurrection bodies and angels]. From His mouth comes a sharp sword, so that with it He may strike down the nations [*ethnos*], and He will rule them with a rod of iron [the Millennium]; and He treads the wine press of the fierce wrath of God, the Almighty. And on His robe and on His thigh He has a name written, “King of Kings, and LORD of LORDS.”

- (16) **Personal Suffering.** Warfare can serve as a form of personal discipline for negative [-N] volition Believers under the concept of Divine Discipline suffering, to include the “*sin unto death*” [1 Jn. 5:16, KJV]. “*The battle went heavily against Saul, and the archers hit him; and he was badly wounded by the archers*” [1 Sam. 31:3].
- (17) **National Suffering.** Defeat in warfare can be used as a form of national Divine Discipline Suffering for the Client Nation in reversionism. “*Your men will fall by the sword and your mighty ones in battle. And her gates will lament and mourn, and deserted she will sit on the ground*” [Isa. 3:16-26]; 2 Chron. 16:9; Jer. 4:19-31; Lev. 26:30-33.

@@@ WATER

- (1) **Definition.** Other than its literal use, water illustrates: (1) Grace; (2) Salvation; (3) Rebound; (4) Bible Doctrine; (5) Judgment; and (6) Testing.
- (2) **Grace.** Water portrays the concept of God's totally free grace system as *anyone can drink* – good people, bad people, etc. *“Ho! Every one who thirsts (positive [+P] volition), come to the waters; and you who have no money come, buy and eat. Come, buy wine and milk without money and without cost”* [Isa. 55:1].
- (3) **Salvation.** Water portrays *salvation's truth*. *“This is the One who came by water and blood, Jesus Christ”* [1 Jn. 5:6]. *“Jesus said ... he who believes in Me will never thirst”* [Jn. 6:35]. See Rev. 21: 6; 22:17; Jer. 2:13; 17:13; Jn. 4:10-14; 6:35; 1 Cor. 6:11; Eph. 5:26. Water also reflects the Holy Spirit's work in the salvation process. *“Jesus answered, ‘Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born of water (Gospel) and the Spirit (the salvation ministry of God the Holy Spirit) he cannot enter into the kingdom of God”* [Jn. 3:5-7]. See Jn. 7:37; 14:16-17, 26; 16:12-14; Tit. 3:5; Ex. 17:6.

EXODUS 17:6

“Behold, I [Jesus Christ] will stand before you there on the rock [*tsur* (giant bolder)] at Horeb; and you [Moses] shall strike the rock [Christ struck for all sin], and water will come out of it, that the people may drink [recall salvation and God's promises].” And Moses did so in the sight of the elders of Israel.

REVELATION 22:17

The [Holy] Spirit and the bride say, “Come.” And let the one who hears say, “Come.” And let the one who is thirsty [positive [+P] volition] come; let the one who wishes take the water [Gospel] of life without cost [*dorea* (a gift)].

1 CORINTHIANS 6:11

Such were some of you [as unBelievers]; but you were washed [*apolouo* (to wash fully) – salvation], but you were sanctified, but you were justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – Believer receives the [+R] of God] in the name of the LORD Jesus Christ and in the [Holy] Spirit of our God.

EPHESIANS 5:26

So that He [Jesus Christ] might sanctify her [Church], having cleansed her by the washing [loutron (a bath)] of water with the word [the Gospel].

JOHN 4:14

But whoever drinks of the water that I [Jesus Christ] will give him shall never thirst; but the water that I will give him will become to him a well of water springing up to eternal [aionios (without end)] life.

- (3) **Rebound.** John the Baptist used water *in Rebound* to prepare Believers for the Messiah – “*and they were being baptized by him in the Jordan River as they confessed their sins*” [Matt. 3:6]. For all Believers, regular “*feet*” [Jn. 13:10] washing demonstrates the necessity for Believers to Rebound often.

JOHN 13:10

Jesus said to him [Peter], “He who has bathed [louo (complete bath of the whole person) – the Believer is saved only once and needs not take another “bath”] needs only to wash his feet [nipto – Believers must use Rebound many times in life], but is completely clean [katharos (purified by fire) – Believers have eternal security]; and you are clean [Peter was already a Believer], but not all of you [Judas was an unBeliever who never took the “bath”].”

- (4) **Bible Doctrine.** Water portrays *the provision of Bible Doctrine* to the Believer via the ministry of the Holy Spirit so that he can grow to spiritual maturity by drinking the “*rivers of living water*” [Jn. 7:38]. See 1 Cor. 3:6-8; Jer. 2:13; 1 Jn. 5:6, 8. “*I planted (Paul gave the Gospel), Apollos watered (Apollos taught Bible Doctrine), but God was causing the growth. So then neither the one who plants nor the one who waters is anything, but God who causes the growth*” [1 Cor. 3:6-7].

JEREMIAH 2:13

“For My people have committed two evils: They have forsaken Me, The fountain of living waters [evil one: Jews rejected salvation and those that were saved rejected Bible Doctrine], to hew for themselves cisterns, Broken cisterns [evil two: both categories embraced religion] that can hold no water.”

- (5) **Judgment.** In the great “*flood*” [Gen. 7:14-25], water judged the unBeliever and the Nephilim [half human and half demon]. See Job 26:5-6; Rev. 20:13.

JOB 26:5-6

The departed spirits [the demons that had sex with human women] tremble under the waters and their inhabitants [the Nephilim]. Naked is Sheol [Hell] before Him, and Abaddon [a senior officer demon] has no covering.

REVELATION 20:13

And the sea gave up the dead which were in it [the Nephilim killed by the Great Flood and now in Hell], and death [*thanatos* (death with the implied idea of future misery in Hell)] and Hades gave up the dead which were in them [all the unBeliever humans in Torments]; and they were judged, every one of them according to their deeds [*ergon* – the indictment at the Great White Throne Judgment lists the good deeds of the unBeliever].

- (6) **Exodus Test.** Water was used as a *testing tool* for the Exodus Hebrews. As with all their tests, they flunked the “*no water*” [Ex. 15:22-27] test.

EXODUS 15:22-24

Then Moses led Israel from the Red Sea, and they went out into the wilderness of Shur; and they went three days in the wilderness and found no water. When they came to Marah, they could not drink the waters of Marah, for they were bitter [*marah*]; therefore it was named Marah. So the people grumbled [*lun* (to complain; to murmur)] at Moses, saying, “What shall we drink?”

- (7) **Water Baptism.** Water was sometimes used as an *optional ritual* in the early Church to teach Soteriology and Union with Christ to new Believers. The Believer would “*be baptized*” [Acts 10:47] in water. See @@@ BAPTISM.

ACTS 10:47

“Surely no one can refuse the water for these to be baptized who have received the Holy Spirit just as we *did*, can he [Peter speaking to Jewish Believers]?” And he ordered them to be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ.

@@@ WEEPING

- (1) **Definition.** Weeping of tears comes from emotion responding to things in the mentality and can express sorrow or joy. *It can be good or bad.*
- (2) **Weeping of Grief.** See Jn. 11:33-37; 1 Thess. 3:13. See @@@ EMOTION.

JOHN 11:33-37

When Jesus therefore saw her [**Mary**] weeping [*klaio (to mourn; to weep)*], and the Jews who came with her *also* weeping, He was deeply moved in spirit and was troubled, and said, “Where have you laid him [**Lazarus**]?” They said to Him, “LORD, come and see.” Jesus wept [*dakruo (to shed tears) – legitimate emotion*]. So the Jews were saying, “See how He loved [*phileo (personal love)*] him!” But some of them said, “Could not this man, who opened the eyes of the blind man, have kept this man also from dying?”

- (3) **Weeping of Regret.** See 2 Sam. 18:33; 19:1-4. King David treated his son Absalom in legalism. In 2 Sam. 14:23-28, David only gave a half forgiveness to Absalom who had killed Amnon for the rape of Tamar [2 Sam. 13:32]. Absalom was later killed as a consequence of his revolt against King David.

2 SAMUEL 18:33

The king [**David**] was deeply moved and went up to the chamber over the gate and wept [*bakah (to weep bitterly)*]. And thus he said as he walked, “O my son Absalom, my son, my son Absalom! Would I had died [*muth*] instead of you, O Absalom, my son, my son!”

- (4) **Weeping and Legalism.** See Ezra 3:12-13.

EZRA 3:12-13

Yet many of the priests and Levites and heads of fathers' *households*, the old men who had seen the first temple, wept [*bakah*] with a loud voice when the foundation of this house [**the Second Temple**] was laid before their eyes, while many shouted aloud for joy, so that the people could not distinguish the sound of the shout of joy from the sound of the weeping of the people, for the people shouted with a loud shout, and the sound was heard far away.

- (5) **Blunting Weeping.** The weeping of Divine Suffering for Blessing to the Believer “*so that you will not grieve as do the rest who have no hope*” [1 Thess. 4:13-18]; Ps. 30:5.

PSALM 30:5

For His anger [Divine Discipline suffering] is but for a moment, His favor [ratson (goodwill)] is for a lifetime [God wants all Believers to reach maturity]; weeping may last for the night, but a shout of joy [rinnah (praise in proclamation)] comes in the morning.

- (6) **Rejection of Christ.** The weeping of the unBeliever who rejects Jesus Christ as Savior. See Heb. 12:17 [Esau].

HEBREWS 12:17

For you know that even afterwards, when he [Esau the unBeliever] desired to inherit the blessing, he was rejected, for he found no place for repentance [metanoia (a change of mind)], though he sought for it with tears.

- (7) **Patriotic Weeping.** A patriot weeps for the nation [Jer. 9:1; Isa. 22:3-4; Lam. 1:15-16]. Jesus “*wept*” [Lk. 19:41-44] for Jerusalem seeing massive negative [-N] volition in the Jews and the looming A.D. 70, destruction of the city.

JEREMIAH 9:1

Oh that my [Jeremiah] head were waters and my eyes a fountain of tears, that I might weep [bakah] day and night for the slain [chahal – Jeremiah witnessed the destruction of Judah in 586 B.C. by Chaldea] of the daughter of my people!

- (8) **Torments.** Weeping of unBelievers going to Hell. See Matt. 8:11-12; 22:13; 24:51; 25:30; Lk. 13:28. See @@@ HELL.

MATTHEW 8:12

But the sons of the kingdom [Jews who are unBelievers and yet have all the advantages] will be cast out into the outer darkness [skotos – the Lake of Fire]; in that place [ekei (a location)] there will be weeping [klauthmos (lamentation)] and gnashing of teeth [brugmos (utter despair)].

- (9) **No Weeping in Heaven.** There will be no more “*crying*” [Rev. 21:4] or sorrow in Heaven. See Isa. 30:19. See @@@ HEAVEN.

REVELATION 21:4

And He [God] will wipe away [*exaleipho* (to anoint or wash in every part; to erase)] every tear [*dakru*] from their [the Believer] eyes; and [in Heaven] there will no longer be any death [*thanatos* (with the implied idea of future misery in hell)]; there will no longer be any mourning [*penthos*], or crying [*krauge*], or pain [*ponos* (great trouble)]; the first [*protos* (first in time)] things have passed away [*aperchomai* (to go away; depart)].

- (10) **Jesus' Blood.** In the Garden of Gethsemane Jesus Christ expelled sweat “*like drops of blood*” [Ps. 22:1; cf. Lk. 22:42-44] as He contemplated the looming evil of Spiritual Death that awaited Him on the cross. See @@@ DEATH.

LUKE 22:42-44

Saying, “Father [*pater* – Jesus speaking from His humanity to God the Father], if You are willing [*boulomai* (to will deliberately)], remove [*paraphero*] this cup [*poterion* – the cup containing all the sins of all mankind] from Me [Jesus]; yet not My will, but Yours be done [the Plan of God for salvation].” Now an angel [*aggelos*] from heaven [*ouranos*] appeared to Him, strengthening Him. And being in agony [*agonia* (of severe mental struggles)] He was praying very fervently; and His sweat [*hidros*] became like drops [*thrombos* (a large thick drop)] of blood, falling down upon the ground.

- (11) **Loser Believer.** The weeping of the negative [-N] Believer in frustration over the adverse consequences of his unbelief in Bible Doctrine. “*Then all the congregation lifted up their voices and cried, and the people* (Hebrews of the Exodus) *wept that night*” [Num. 14:1]; Joel 1:5-6; Jas. 1:5-6.
- (12) **Against Reversionism.** Paul had tears over Believers in reversionism. “*For many walk, of whom I often told you, and now tell you even weeping, that they are enemies of the cross of Christ*” [Phil. 3:18].
- (13) **Historical Disasters.** Weeping of those caught up in historical troubles. “*My tears have been my food day and night*” [Ps. 42:3]; 1 Sam. 30:4.

@@@ WITNESSING

- (1) **Definition.** The Believer fulfilling the command from Jesus of giving the *message of salvation to the unBeliever* – the Gospel *euaggelion* (good news) – “*you shall be My witnesses ... even to the remotest part of the earth*” [Acts 1:8]. This command is apart from those who have the spiritual gift of mass evangelism [2 Cor. 5:18-20; 1 Thess. 1:4-9; 1 Pet. 4:6]. See @@@ GIFTS.

1 PETER 4:6

For the gospel [*euaggelion*] has for this purpose been preached even to those who are dead [*the spiritually dead unBeliever*], that though they are judged in the flesh as men, they may live in the spirit according to *the will of God*.

2 CORINTHIANS 5:18-19

Now all *these* things are from God, who reconciled us to Himself through Christ and gave us the ministry of reconciliation, namely, that God was in Christ reconciling the world to Himself, not counting their trespasses [*paraptoma – sin is no longer an issue*] against them, and He has committed to us the word of reconciliation [*witnessing to the unBeliever*].

1 THESSALONIANS 1:5

For our [*Paul and his team*] gospel did not come to you in word only, but also in power and *in the Holy Spirit* [*Holy Spirit's ministry of salvation*] and with full conviction [*plerophoria* (full assurance)]; just as you know what kind of men we proved to be among you for your sake.

- (2) **Executive Officer.** The Holy Spirit is the *executive officer* in salvation. See Jn. 3:6; 16:8-11; 1 Cor. 2:4-5; 13-14; Tit. 3:5. It is His job to get the Gospel to all who are on positive [*+P*] volition. Thus, it is only the Believer's *privilege to participate* in giving the Gospel as opportunity arises. “*So faith comes from hearing, and hearing by the word of Christ*” [Rom. 10:17].
- (3) **Bible Doctrine.** Bible Doctrine is the absolute norm and standard for truth and the *sole weapon of witnessing*, not human programs or phony gimmicks. “*God has made Him both LORD and Christ – this Jesus*” [Acts 2:36]; 2 Pet. 1:12-21; Rom. 1:16; 1 Cor. 1:18; 15:3-4; Lk. 16:28-31; 2 Tim. 2:8.

- (a) **Mind of Christ.** The Gospel is the very mind of the LORD Jesus Christ. *“But we have the mind of Christ”* [1 Cor. 2:16]; Jn. 6:39-40.
- (b) **The Gospel is Divine Power.** *“Christ the power of God and the wisdom of God”* [1 Cor. 1:24]; Heb. 4:2; Acts 4:33; Phil. 3:10.

HEBREWS 4:2

For indeed we [Believers] have had good news preached [*euangelizo – the Gospel*] to us, just as they [unBelievers] also; but the word [*logos – the Gospel*] they heard [*akoe*] did not profit them, because it was not united [*sugkerannumi (to mix together)*] by faith [*pistis – the unBeliever hearer of the Gospel did not believe it via faith*] in those who heard.

- (c) **Never Void.** The Gospel never returns void [Isa. 55:11; Col. 1:6] and endures forever and ever into all eternity [Lk. 21:33; 1 Pet. 1:3, 23-25].
- (4) **Personal Responsibility.** Witnessing is the responsibility of every individual born again Believer. *“For I am not ashamed of the gospel, for it is the power of God for salvation to everyone who believes”* [Rom. 1:16]; Acts 1:7-8; Eph. 6:15-20; 2 Tim. 4:5. The Believer should not argue with the unBeliever, it is simply a matter of presenting the correct information and *getting out of the way*. Just as pointing a loaded gun at someone requires no dissertation on the weapon, so too the Gospel. The Believer that enters into a heated debate about various aspects of the Bible may very well win the debate but not the soul.

ACTS 1:8

“But you [*Jesus’ disciples*] will receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you [*the day of Pentecost when the Church Age began*]; and you shall be My witnesses [*martus – Jesus Christ commands them to engage in personal witnessing*] both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and even to the remotest part of the earth.”

- (a) **Witness of the Life.** Witnessing can involve the *witness of the life* – *“you are a letter of Christ”* [2 Cor. 3:3]; 6:3; Col. 3:17; 1 Pet. 3:1-2. The unBeliever sees the *“mature”* [Eph. 4:13; Heb. 5:14] Believer’s execution of the Christian Way of Life in various situations of prosperity or adversity and is interested in learning more.

1 PETER 3:1-2

In the same way, you [positive [+P] volition Believer] wives, be submissive [*hupotasso* (obey; to be subordinate to)] to your own husbands so that even if any of them [the husband is a Believer on negative [-N] volition or perhaps an unBeliever] are disobedient [*apeitheo* (not to allow one's self to be persuaded; to refuse or withhold belief)] to the word [*logos* – Bible Doctrine], they may be won without a word by the behavior [*anastrophe* (manner of life) – the use of impersonal love] of their wives, as they observe your chaste [*hagnos* (pure from carnality)] and respectful behavior [*anastrophe* – the witness of the life in the Christian Way of Life].

(b) **Witness of the Lips to the UnBeliever.** See 2 Cor. 5:14-21; 6:2.

2 CORINTHIANS 6:2

For He [God the Holy Spirit] says, “At the acceptable time [God's timing is perfect] I [God the Holy Spirit] listened to you [the unBeliever on positive [+P] volition], and on the day of salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – when the unBeliever changed his mind and believed in Christ for salvation] I helped you [the Holy Spirit ensures Gospel hearing].” Behold, now is “the acceptable time,” behold, now is “the day of salvation.”

- (5) **Basic Requirements.** To witness in accordance with the Word of God, the Believer must be “*filled with the [Holy] Spirit*” [Eph. 5:18; Acts 1:8] and understand the *basic Gospel message* of the substitutionary death of Christ on the cross to save all humans [Isa. 53:9; Eph. 2:14-17; 1 Pet. 2:24; 2 Tim. 2:8]. The Believer who witnesses must also *fully understand the assurances of eternal security*. See Rom. 6:23; 8:38-39; 11:29; 1 Pet. 1:3-5; Jn. 3:18, 36.
- (6) **Make the Issue Clear.** The primary concept in witnessing is to *make the issue clear*.
 - (a) **Never Add to the Gospel.** False addendums like being a “good person,” feeling sorry for sin, stopping certain sins, joining a Church, getting baptized, or repenting of sin, is nonsense.
 - (b) **Give the UnBeliever the Issue of the Gospel – Jesus Christ.** Stay away from legalistic false issues. See Eph. 2:8-9; 1 Cor. 15:3-4.

1 CORINTHIANS 15:3-4

For I [Paul] delivered to you as of first importance what I also received, that Christ died [*apothnesko (to be subject to the eternal misery of hell)*] for our sins [*hamartia – Spiritual Death*] according to the Scriptures, and that He was buried [*thapto (to inter)*], and that He was raised [*egeiro (to arouse from the sleep of death)*] on the third day according to the Scriptures.

- (c) **Decision.** *Never force a decision from the unBeliever*, this is the Holy Spirit's job. Give the correct information and politely get out of the way. At most, one might ask: *What do you think about the Gospel information you have heard?* See Matt. 22:42.

MATTHEW 22:42

“What do you think [*dokeo (to be of opinion)*] about the Christ, whose son is He?” They [Pharisees] said to Him [Jesus Christ], “*The son of David.*”

- (7) **Guide for Witnessing.** A dissertation and guide for the Believer on the topic of witnessing, “*to speak to you the gospel of God amid much opposition*,” is found at 1 Thess. 2:1-16. Below are some common points:
 - (a) **False Issues.** The Believer must not get involved in false issues, e.g., circumcision [Acts 15:1-24; Gal. 5:6].
 - (b) **Alone.** The Believer should deal with the individual *alone if possible*. See Jn. 3:1-21 [Nicodemus] and Jn. 4:7-26 [the Samaritan woman].
 - (c) **Debate.** Do not debate with the unBeliever [2 Tim. 2:24-25]. Even if the Believer wins the argument, so what? The issue is belief in Christ.
 - (d) **Quota.** The Believer must avoid the concept that he must witness to X number of people daily.
 - (e) **Attitude.** Motivation to witness must come from the right mental attitude of the Believer. “*I am eager to preach the gospel to you also who are in Rome*” [Rom. 1:14-16].
 - (f) **Brag.** Never brag about witnessing experiences.

- (8) **Fisher of Men.** The analogy of *fishing* in witnessing. “*Follow Me, and I will make you fishers of men*” [Matt. 4:19].
- (a) **Desire.** Must have a desire to fish. “*But the desire of the righteous will be granted*” [Prov. 10:24].
 - (b) **Equipment.** Must have the proper equipment to go fishing. The proper understanding of the correct Bible Doctrine – the Gospel.
 - (c) **Location.** Must go where the fish [unBelievers] are located.
 - (d) **Bait.** Must know the right bait for each type of fish. Some unBelievers will respond to different approaches than others.
 - (e) **Stay Out of Sight.** This means to never make an issue out of self or other false matters such as dress, personal tastes, habits, good deeds, or personal sin [1 Cor. 9:9-23].
 - (f) **Patience.** If getting negative signals from the hearer then cut the presentation off and wait to see if a more opportune time might develop. “*Whoever does not receive you, nor heed your words, as you go out of that house or that city, shake the dust off your feet*” [Matt. 10:14].
- (9) **Principle of Prayer.** The Believer should pray for an opportunity to witness per the concept of the *open door*. “*Brethren, my heart’s desire and my prayer to God for them is for their salvation*” [Rom. 10:1]; Col. 4:3; Eph. 6:19.

EPHESIANS 6:19

And *pray* on my behalf, that utterance may be given to me in the opening of my mouth, to make known with boldness the mystery of the gospel.

- (10) **Effectual Witnessing.** Effectual witnessing belongs to “*mature*” [Heb. 5:14] Believers. “*Those who have insight will shine brightly like the brightness of the expanse of heaven, and those who lead the many to righteousness, like the stars forever and ever*” [Dan. 12:3]; Prov. 11:30; 14:5. The baby or new Believer must learn basic Bible Doctrine *before he moves out to witness*, otherwise he will invariably muddy up the water with false issues.
-

@@@ WORDS

- (1) *epignosis* – The Plan of God is for the Believer to have complete *epignosis* (full knowledge) of Bible Doctrine. To be “*filled with the knowledge (epignosis) of His will in all spiritual wisdom*” [Col. 1:9] to reach maturity. The use of the word *epignosis* stems from the fact that it surpasses the general Greek word for basic *gnosis* (knowledge). See 1 Tim. 2:4; Eph. 3:17-19.

1 TIMOTHY 2:4

Who [God] desires all men [*anthropos* (mankind) – the unBeliever] to be saved [*sozo* – salvation into the Kingdom of Heaven] and to come to the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge)] of the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – the Believer who takes in Bible Doctrine and reaches spiritual maturity].

- (a) **Real Knowledge.** In the early Church the various philosophies and religions had a false system of salvation based on a knowledge of *various rituals and works*, or *gnosis*; they were called “*gnostics*.” Gnostics denied the humanity of Jesus Christ in hypostatic union and called the Christians *pistis* (faith), denigrating Believers because Christians rejected salvation by any system of human good works or rituals. The word *epignosis* demonstrates that *Christian knowledge is far superior* as it rests totally in the full revelation of God’s Bible Doctrine. “*And this I pray, that your love may abound more and more in real knowledge (epignosis) and all discernment*” [Phil. 1:9].
- (b) **Full Knowledge.** A prepared Pastor/Teacher diligently teaches Bible Doctrine so that hearers can get *epignosis* [Tit. 1:1], the material used to build the Edification Complex of the Soul, in the soul/spirit of the positive [+P] Believer. See @@@ OPERATION Z.

TITUS 1:1

Paul, a bond-servant [*doulos* (slave)] of God and an apostle of Jesus Christ, for the faith [*pistis* – the teaching and writing of Bible Doctrine] of those chosen of God and the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge)] of the truth [*aletheia* – Bible Doctrine] which is according to godliness [*eusebeia* (respect for God) – reaching maturity].

- (c) **The Negative [-N] Volition Believer.** Living in the Cosmic Systems, he fails to acquire *epignosis* [2 Tim. 2:23-26; 3:2-7].
- (d) **Wisdom.** Only *epignosis* is used in problem solving devices [Eph. 1:7; Phm. 6; Col. 2:2-3]. The words *sophia* (wisdom) and *sunesis* (wisdom) refer to the application of *epignosis* to life.
- (e) **Rewards.** Only *epignosis* leads the Believer to “*rewards*” [1 Cor. 3:14; 2 Jn. 8]. See 2 Pet. 1:2-3; Phil. 1:9; 2 Pet. 1:8; 3:18; Col. 1:9-11.

2 PETER 1:3

Seeing that His divine power has granted to us [Believers] everything pertaining to life and godliness [*eusebeia* – reaching spiritual maturity], through the true knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge)] of Him who called [*kaleo*] us by His own glory and excellence.

- (2) *eusebia* & *teleios* – These two words stand for the goal of the Christian Way of Life to reach spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1]; 2 Pet. 1:3; Phil. 1:6; Matt. 5:48; Tit. 1:1; 1 Tim. 6:6; 2 Pet. 3:11] and for the Believer to live inside the Divine Dynasphere [1 Tim 4:8]. The enemies of *eusebia* (godliness) and *teleios* (perfect) include moral degenerates [2 Tim. 3:2-5].

MATTHEW 5:48

Therefore you are to be perfect [*teleios* (perfect) – reaching spiritual maturity], as your heavenly Father is perfect.

- (3) *pistis* – See @@@ FAITH.
- (4) *sozo* – The noun *sozo* (to deliver) and the verb *soterion* mean *to deliver the subject from one point to another point*, i.e., from point A to point B. This word is found over 100 times in the New Testament alone. Depending on the context, it is used to indicate one of the following concepts: (1) God delivering the unBeliever to *eternal salvation*; (2) God delivering the *baby Believer to the status of an adult* Believer at spiritual “*maturity*” [Heb. 6:1]; or (3) God delivering the Believer *from problems*.
- (a) **Salvation** *sozo* – Tit. 3:5. See @@@ SALVATION.

TITUS 3:5

He [God] saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven] us [Believers], not on the basis of [our] deeds [*chrestotes* (moral goodness) – human good] which we have done in righteousness [*dikaiosune* – human righteousness [-r]], but according [*kata* (according to a norm or standard)] to His mercy [*eleos* – grace in action], by the washing [*loutron* (a bath)] of regeneration [*paliggenesia* (a new birth)] and renewing [*anakainosis* (a complete change for the better)] by the Holy Spirit [the ministry of the Holy Spirit in salvation].

(b) **Maturity** *sozo* – Phil. 2:12-13. See @@@ MATURITY.

PHILIPPIANS 2:12-13

So then, my beloved [Paul writing to Believers], just as you have always obeyed [*hupakouo* (to obey commands) – positive [+P] volition Believers desiring Bible Doctrine], not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out [*katergazomai* (to do that from which something results)] your salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – to deliver self from an adolescent Believer to a mature Believer] with fear [*phobos* (respect) – the highest respect for Bible Doctrine and the Pastor/Teacher] and trembling; for it is God who is at work in you, both to will and to work for *His* good pleasure [through Predestination and Election God has made it possible for the positive [+P] volition Believer to reach maturity].

(c) **Both Salvation and Maturity** *sozo* – Jn. 10:9.

JOHN 10:9

I am [Jesus Christ] the door [*thura*]; if anyone enters [*eiserchomai* (to go in or come out)] through [*dia* (by means of)] Me [believes in Christ for salvation], he will be saved [*sozo* – enter into the Kingdom of God], and will go in and out [the lifestyle of the Believer in the Christian Way of Life] and find pasture [*nome* – learn Bible Doctrine to reach spiritual maturity].

(5) **metanoeo** – See @@@ REPENT.

@@@ WORLD

- (1) **Definition.** There are three primary Greek words used in the New Testament for the physical earth – *ge*, *kosmos*, and *aion*. However, *kosmos* is also regularly employed to represent *an evil system of thinking under the influence of Satan called the Cosmic Systems*. See Rev. 2:24.
- (2) **Creation, Chaos, Restoration.** The universe and the original earth were created by God. “*By faith we understand that the worlds were prepared by the word of God, so that what is seen was not made out of things that are visible*” [Heb. 11:3]; Isa. 45:18; Gen. 1:1. “*The heavens are Yours, the earth also is Yours; The world and all it contains, You have founded them*” [Ps. 89:11]. God did it! Yet the Bible gives few details on the mechanics.

ISAIAH 45:18

For thus says the LORD, who created the heavens (He is the God who formed the earth and made it, He established it *and* did not create it a waste place [*tohu (formless; empty)*], *but* formed it to be inhabited), “I am the LORD, and there is none else.”

- (a) **Original World.** Jesus Christ personally made the original earth in the unknown distant past [Gen. 1:1; Isa. 45:18; Jn. 1:3; Col. 1:16; Heb. 1:2-3; Job 26:7]. He also now holds it all together [Jn. 5:17; Col. 1:17].
- (b) **Ice.** As a result of Satan’s revolt, the earth became frozen in an ice pack and *void of all significant life forms*. “*Is this the man ... who made the world like a wilderness?*” [Isa. 14:16-17]; Gen. 1:1-2; 2 Pet. 3:5-6.
- (c) **Restoration.** God the Holy Spirit began the restoration process for life on the earth, called the “*six days*” [*yom*], *of restoration* [Gen. 1:1-2].
- (d) **Eden.** At some later point in time a special portion of the earth [Garden of Eden] was given to Adam to live in and rule over [Gen. 1:26-28]. However, by his one sin *Adam lost his rulership to Satan*, who now rules the entire world. See Gen. 3:6; Jn. 12:31; 14:30; 16:11; Eph. 2:2.
- (e) **New Universe.** An entirely new universe and earth will be created at the end of the Millennium. See Rev. 21; 2 Pet. 3:7, 10-12; Isa. 34:4.

- (3) **Impacted by Sin.** Original creation saw “*the circle of the earth*” [Isa. 40:22] as a perfect place. “*He ... did not create it a waste place*” [Isa. 45:18], but with the fall of Satan the world and nature were negatively altered by those sins [Isa. 14:16-17] and now collectively “*groans*” [Rom. 8:19-22] under the consequences of *both angelic sin* and the subsequent impact of *human sin*. See Gen. 3:17-19; Rom. 8:18-22. Only at the Millennium will nature once again be restored to perfection [Gen. 1:1-2]. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS.

GENESIS 1:1-2

In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth [*erets* – this action took place in the unknown past and consisted of a perfect universe and earth]. The earth was [*became*] formless [*tohu*] and void [*bohu (waste)*], and darkness [*choshek (literal darkness)*] was over [*al (covered)*] the surface of the deep [*tehom (deep waters)*] – as a consequence of the Angelic Conflict, the earth was corrupted and suffered negatively to the point of being frozen in an icepack for an unknown period of time], and the [Holy] Spirit of God was moving over the surface of the waters [*mayim* – God next restored the earth in the “six” days of restoration of life to the planet].

ROMANS 8:19-22

For the anxious longing of the creation [*the natural world*] waits eagerly for the revealing of the sons of God [*Believers in their resurrection bodies will accompany Jesus Christ at His 2nd Advent*]. For the creation was subjected to futility [*mataiotes (depravity)*] – due to the impact of demon and human sin], not willingly, but because of Him who subjected it [*the permissive will of God allowed this to occur in the Angelic Conflict*], in hope that the creation itself also will be set free [*perfect environment will exist in the Millennium*] from its slavery to corruption into the freedom of the glory of the children of God. For we know that the whole creation [*ktisis (of individual things created)*] groans [*sustenazo (to groan together)*] and suffers the pains of childbirth together until now.

- (4) **Satan Rules the World.** Since the fall of Adam, Satan is the ruler of the entire *kosmos* particularly in the context of pushing out the evil thought patterns of human good and religion. “*We know that we are of God, and that the whole world lies in the power of the evil one*” [1 Jn. 5:19; Jn. 12:31; 14:30; 16:11; 2 Cor. 4:4; Lk. 4:5-7; Eph. 2:2; Job 1:6-8].

JOHN 14:30

I [Jesus] will not speak much more with you, for the ruler [archon – Satan] of the world [kosmos] is coming, and he has nothing in Me.

JOB 1:6-8

Now there was a day when the sons of God [various types of angels] came to present themselves before the LORD [in Heaven], and Satan also came among them. The LORD said to Satan, “From where do you come?” Then Satan answered the LORD and said, “From roaming about on the earth and walking around [halak (to traverse)] on it [Satan emphasizes that he is the ruler of the world, going wherever he pleases on the earth].” The LORD said to Satan, “Have you considered My servant Job [God calls Job to Satan’s attention as part of the Angelic Conflict]? For there is no one like him on the earth, a blameless and upright man, fearing God and turning away from evil [Job was a subject matter expert witness exhibit].”

2 CORINTHIANS 4:4

In whose case the god of this world [Satan] has blinded the minds [noema (a mental perception)] of the unbelieving [apistos – the unBeliever on negative [-N] volition] so that they might not see the light of the gospel [euangelion] of the glory of Christ, who is the image [eikon (exact likeness)] of God.

COSMIC I – Arrogance, Self-Centered. This was Satan’s original attitude of pride at his revolt against God starting the Angelic Conflict. In turn, the carnal Believer is a slave to self and the OSN when in this sphere of the kosmos [2 Tim. 3:2-6; 1 Pet. 2:11; Eph. 2:3]. See @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT.

COSMIC II – Hatred of Bible Doctrine. This is Satan’s policy and attitude now; he is still the most arrogant of creatures. The Believer in this sphere of the kosmos has “fallen away” [Heb. 6:4-6] into evil [1 Jn. 3:8; 2 Tim. 3:7-8].

- (5) **Citizenship of the World.** Spiritual Death and sin are the basis of citizenship for all humans when they are born into the Devil’s world and his “domain of darkness” [Col. 1:13]. “For the wages of sin is [spiritual] death, but the free gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our LORD” [Rom. 6:23]; Jn. 1:29; 3:16; Rom. 5:12; Gal. 4:3-5. See @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS.

- (6) **God Controls History.** While Satan fills the world with his “*doctrines of demons*” [1 Tim. 4:1], propaganda of human good, and religion, *God has total control of history*. See Rev. 12:9. See @@@ HISTORY.
- (7) **Reconciled the World.** Jesus Christ is the only “*Savior of all men*” [1 Tim. 4:10] and has reconciled the world to Himself so that *salvation is open* to anyone in the world. See Jn. 1:29-30; 3:19-21; 4:42; 6:33; 11:25-27; 12:32; Lk. 2:10-11; 1 Jn. 4:1; 1 Tim. 1:1-5. “*Behold the Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world*” [Jn. 1:29]. Accordingly, one of the LORD Jesus Christ’s eternal titles is the “*Light of the World*” [Jn. 8:12]; 9:5; 12:35-36; 2 Cor. 5:18-19; 2 Sam. 2:29. See @@@ SALVATION.

JOHN 8:12

Then Jesus again spoke to them, saying, “I [**Jesus**] am the Light [*phos*] of the world [*kosmos* – only Jesus Christ provides salvation]; he who follows [*akoloutheo* (to follow one who precedes)] Me will not walk [*peripateo* (a lifestyle)] in the darkness [*skotia*], but will have the Light of life [*zoe* – salvation and the opportunity to reach spiritual maturity].”

JOHN 3:19-21

This is the judgment, that the Light [**Jesus Christ**] has come into the world [*kosmos*], and men [**unBelievers**] loved [*agapao* (to be well pleased with; to love dearly)] the darkness rather than the Light, for their deeds were evil [**the unBeliever is attracted only to human good**]. For everyone who does evil hates the Light, and does not come to the Light for fear that his deeds will be exposed [*elegcho* (to refute, generally with shame) – **the human works of the unBeliever are not acceptable to God**]. But he [**the Believer saved by faith and possessing the Righteousness [+R] of God**] who practices [*poieo* (to produce)] the truth [*aletheia* – **the Believer on positive [+P] volition to learning Bible Doctrine**] comes to the Light, so that his deeds [**Divine Good production**] may be manifested [*phaneroo* (to make visible)] as having been wrought [*ergazomai* (to work out)] in God.

1 TIMOTHY 1:15

It is a trustworthy statement, deserving full acceptance, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners, among whom I [**Paul**] am foremost *of all*.

2 CORINTHIANS 5:19

Namely, that God was in Christ reconciling the world [*kosmos* – under the doctrine of unlimited atonement] to Himself, not counting their trespasses against them, and He has committed to us the word of reconciliation.

JOHN 11:25-27

Jesus said to her [*Martha*], “I am the resurrection and the life; he who believes in Me will live even if he dies, and everyone who lives and believes in Me will never die. Do you believe this?” She said to Him, “Yes, LORD [*kurios* (God)]; I have believed [*pisteuo*] that You are the Christ [*Christos*], the Son of God, even He who comes into the world [*kosmos*].”

- (8) **Overcoming the World.** “*I have overcome the world*” [Jn. 16:11, 33]. Jesus Christ overcame the *kosmos* and *Believers can also overcome Satan’s thinking* and thwart the power of the Old Sin Nature “*because greater is He who is in you than he who is in the world*” [1 Jn. 4:4]. “*You are the light of the world ... Let your light shine before men*” [Matt. 5:14-16].

1 JOHN 4:4

You are from God, little children [*Believers*], and have overcome them; because greater is He who is in you [*the Trinity*] than he [*Satan and Cosmic Systems*] who is in the world [*kosmos*].

JOHN 16:11

And concerning judgment, because the ruler of this world [*kosmos* – Satan] has been judged [*krino* – Christ won the victory on the cross].

- (9) **Whitewashing the Devil’s World.** Believers must reject the human/demonic viewpoint of the *kosmos*. Living in the Cosmic Systems and performing deeds of human good is merely *whitewashing the Devil’s world*. See 1 Jn. 2:15-16; Rom. 12:1-2; 1 Cor. 5:9-10. Humans cannot change the world and even if they could it would not provide salvation. Instead, Believers should be model citizens, possessing “*the mind of Christ*” [1 Cor. 2:16] and to do “*your work heartily, as for the LORD*” [Col. 3:23]. See Prov. 23:7; Phil. 2:5; 4:7; 2 Tim. 1:7; 1 Cor. 2:16; 2 Cor. 5:1-8; 10:4-5; 2 Thess. 2:2.

- (10) **Seeking the World's Approval.** Reject friendship with the *kosmos* [Jas. 4:4; 1 Jn. 2:15-17]. “*Do not love the world nor the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him*” [1 Jn. 2:15]. It is not what the Believer does that makes him worldly, *it is what he thinks!* “*No one can serve two masters; for either he will hate the one and love the other, or he will be devoted to one and despise the other*” [Matt. 6:24].

JAMES 4:4

You adulteresses [*moichalis* – negative Believers], do you not know that friendship with the world [*kosmos*] is hostility toward God? Therefore whoever wishes to be a friend of the world makes himself an enemy of God.

- (11) **The World Hates.** Because Believers are “*citizens of heaven*” [Phil. 3:20] the world hates them. “*If they have called (Jesus) the head of the house Beelzebub, how much more will they malign the members (Believers) of his household!*” [Matt. 10:25-26]; Ps. 119:1; Jn. 17:14-16.

JOHN 17:14-15

I [*Jesus Christ*] have given them Your word [*Bible Doctrine*]; and the world [*kosmos*] has hated them [*Believers*], because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world [*kosmos*]. I do not ask You [*God the Father*] to take them out of the world [*Believers have a role to play in the Angelic Conflict*], but to keep them from the evil one [*Satan's Cosmic Systems*].

- (12) **Satan's End.** Satan *loses rulership of the earth at the 2nd Advent of Christ*, but Believers will go on and on in Heaven [1 Jn. 2:17; Jn. 12:31].

JOHN 12:31

Now judgment is upon this world [*kosmos*]; now the ruler of this world [*kosmos* – *Satan is the ruler of the world*] will be cast out [*ekballo*].

1 JOHN 2:17

The world is passing away, and *also* its lusts [*epithumia (desire for what is forbidden) – the Cosmic Systems*]; but the one who does the will [*thelema*] of God [*respond to the Gospel of salvation*] lives forever.
